This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

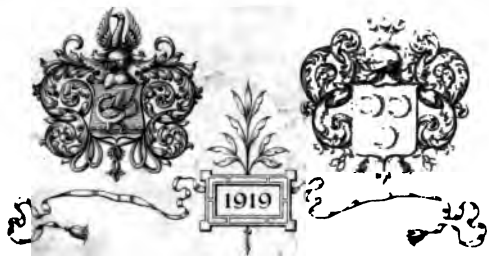
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

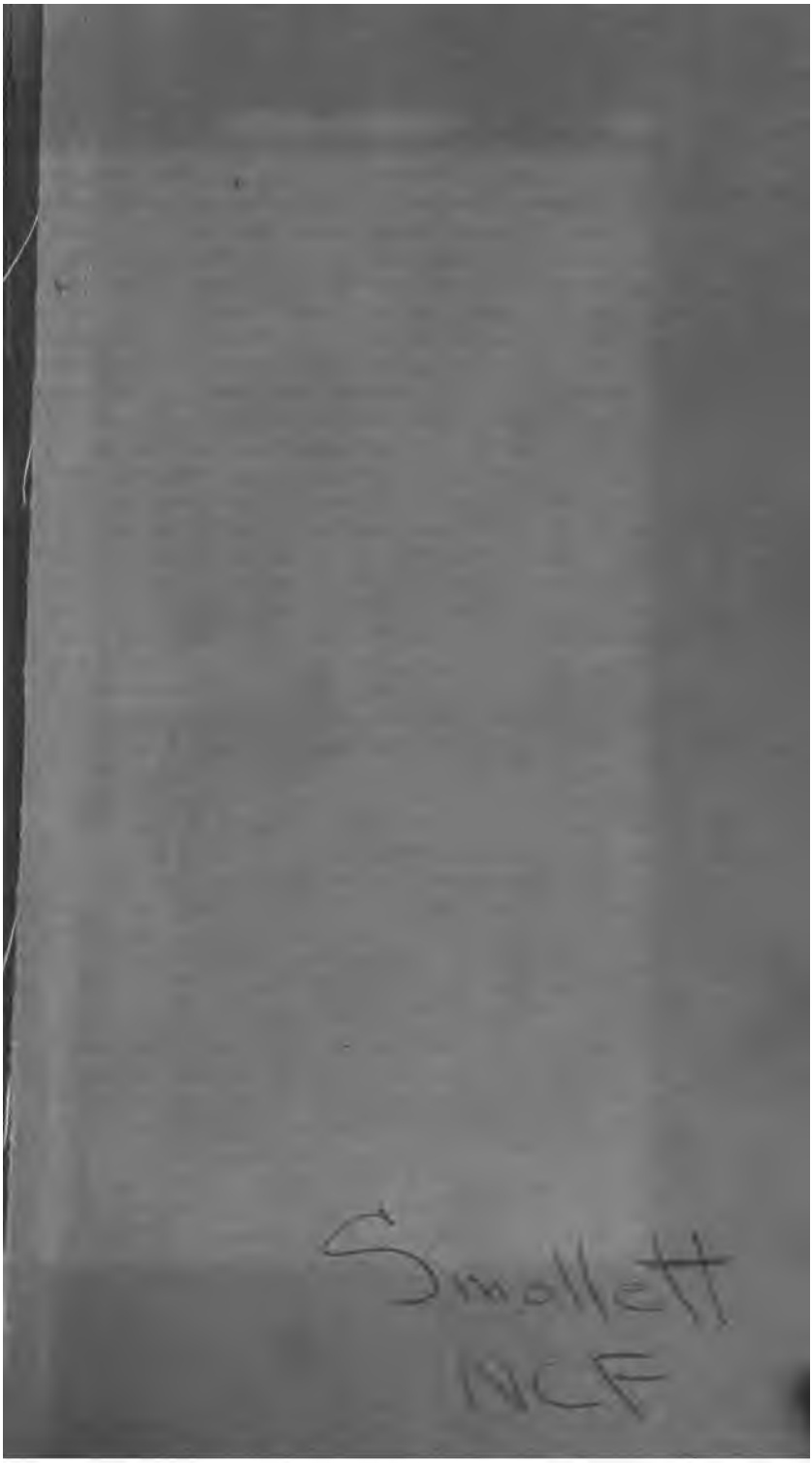
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

EARCH LIBRARIES
07609368 5



GANSEVOORT-LANSING
COLLECTION

given to the New York Public Library
Astor Lenox and Tilden Foundations
BY VICTOR HUGO PALTSITS
under the terms of the last will and testament of
CATHERINE GANSEVOORT LANSING
granddaughter of
General Peter Gansevoort, junior
and widow of the
Honorable Abraham Lansing
of Albany, New York


Smollett
NCF

Smollett (Tobias). The Miscellaneous Works of. With memoirs of his Life and Writings, by Robert Anderson. 6 vols. 8 vo, orig. mottled calf, gilt backs. London, 1796. 12.50

Old editions of the English novelists of this period are now becoming quite scarce.

THE

MISCELLANEOUS WORKS

OF

TOBIAS SMOLLETT, M. D.

WITH

MEMOIRS

OF

HIS LIFE AND WRITINGS.

BY

ROBERT ANDERSON, M. D.

IN SIX VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

Containing

THE ADVENTURES OF RODERICK RANDOM.

LONDON:

PRINTED FOR J. MUNDELL & CO. EDINBURGH;
AND FOR
J. MUNDELL, COLLEGE, GLASGOW,

1796.

19815A

GENERAL CONTENTS.

VOLUME I. *The* LIFE *of* SMOLLETT.
The ADVENTURES *of* RODERICK RANDOM.

VOLUME II. *The* ADVENTURES *of* PEREGRINE PICKLE, *Part I.*

VOLUME III. *The* ADVENTURES *of* PEREGRINE PICKLE, *Part II.*
PLAYS *and* POEMS.

VOLUME IV. *The* ADVENTURES *of* FERDINAND COUNT FATHOM.

VOLUME V. *The* ADVENTURES *of* SIR LAUNCELOT GREAVES.
TRAVELS *through* FRANCE *and* ITALY.

VOLUME VI. *The* EXPEDITION *of* HUMPHRY CLINKER.
The ADVENTURES *of an* ATOM.

CONTENTS.

Page.

THE Life of Smollett, - - - - - xiii
The Preface, - - - - - - lxvii
Apologue, - - - - - - - lxxi

ADVENTURES *of* RODERICK RANDOM.

CHAP. I. Of my birth and parentage, - - - 1
CHAP. II. I grow up—am hated by my relations—ſent to ſchool—neglected by my grandfather—maltreated by my maſter—ſeaſoned to adverſity—I form cabals againſt the pedant—am debarred acceſs to my grandfather—hunted by his heir—demoliſh the teeth of his tutor, - - - - - - - 5
CHAP. III. My mother's brother arrives—relieves me—a deſcription of him—goes along with me to the houſe of my grandfather—is encountered by his dogs—defeats them after a bloody engagement—is admitted to the old gentleman—a dialogue between them, 9
CHAP. IV. My grandfather makes his will—our ſecond viſit—he dies—his will is read in preſence of all his living deſcendents—the diſappointment of my female couſins—my uncle's behaviour, 14
CHAP. V. The ſchoolmaſter uſes me barbarouſly—I form a project of revenge, in which I am aſſiſted by my uncle—I leave the village—am ſettled at the univerſity by his generoſity, - 17
CHAP. VI. I make great progreſs in my ſtudies—am careſſed by every body—my female couſins take notice of me—I reject their invitation—they are incenſed, and conſpire againſt me—I am left deſtitute by a misfortune that befals my uncle—Gawky's treachery—my revenge, - - - - - 22
CHAP. VII. I am entertained by Mr. Crab—a deſcription of him—I acquire the art of ſurgery—conſult Crab's diſpoſition—become neceſſary to him—an accident happens—he adviſes me to launch out into the world—aſſiſts me with money—I ſet out for London, 29
CHAP. VIII. I arrive at Newcaſtle—meet with my old ſchool-fellow Strap—we determine to walk in company to London—ſet out on our journey—put up at a ſolitary ale-houſe—are diſturbed by a ſtrange adventure in the night, - - - - 36
CHAP. IX. We proceed on our journey—are overtaken by an highwayman, who fires at Strap, is prevented from ſhooting me, by a company of horſemen, who ride in purſuit of him—Strap is put to bed at an inn—adventures at that inn, - - - 43
CHAP. X. The highwayman is taken—we are detained as evidences againſt him—proceed to the next village—he eſcapes—we arrive at another inn, where we go to bed—in the night we are awaked by a dreadful adventure—next night we lodge at the houſe of a ſchool-maſter—our treatment there, - - - 48
CHAP. XI. We deſcry the waggon—get into it—arrive at an inn—our fellow-travellers deſcribed—a miſtake is committed by Strap, which produces ſtrange things, - - - 54
CHAP. XII. Captain Weazel challenges Strap, who declines the combat—an affair between the captain and me—the uſurer is fain to

Page.

give Miſs Jenny five guineas for a releaſe—we are in danger of loſing a meal—the behaviour of Weazel, Jenny, and Joey on that occaſion—an account of Captain Weazel and his lady—the captain's courage tried—Iſaac's mirth at the captain's expence, 61

CHAP. XIII. Strap and I are terrified by an apparition—Strap's conjecture—the myſtery explained by Joey—we arrive at London—our dreſs and appearance deſcribed—we are inſulted in the ſtreet—an adventure in an ale-houſe—we are impoſed upon by a waggiſh footman—ſet to rights by a tobacconiſt—take lodgings—dive for a dinner—an accident at our ordinary, - - 69

CHAP. XIV. We viſit Strap's friend—a deſcription of him—his advice—we go to Mr. Cringer's houſe—are denied admittance—an accident befals Strap—his behaviour thereupon—an extraordinary adventure occurs, in the courſe of which I loſe all my money, 76

CHAP. XV. Strap moralizes—preſents his purſe to me—we inform our landlord of my misfortune; he unravels the myſtery—I preſent myſelf to Cringer—he recommends and turns me over to Mr. Staytape—I become acquainted with a fellow dependent, who explains the characters of Cringer and Staytape—and informs me of the method to be purſued at the Navy Office and Surgeons Hall—Strap is employed, - - - - 83

CHAP. XVI. My new acquaintance breaks an appointment—I proceed by myſelf to the Navy Office—addreſs myſelf to a perſon there, who aſſiſts me with his advice—write to the Board—they grant me a letter to the ſurgeons at the Hall—I am informed of the beau's name and character—find him—he makes me his confident in an amour—deſires me to pawn my linen for his occaſions—I recover what I lent him—ſome curious obſervations of Strap on that occaſion—his vanity, - - - 89

CHAP. XVII. I go to Surgeons Hall, where I meet with Mr. Jackſon—am examined—a fierce diſpute ariſes between two of the examiners—Jackſon diſguiſes himſelf, to attract reſpect—is detected—in hazard of being ſent to Bridewell—he treats us at a tavern—carries us to a night-houſe—a troubleſome adventure there—we are committed to the round-houſe—carried before a juſtice—his behaviour, - - - - 98

CHAP. XVIII. I carry my qualification to the Navy Office—the nature of it—the behaviour of the ſecretary—Strap's concern for my abſence—a battle between him and a blackſmith—the troubleſome conſequences of it—his harangue to me—his friend, the ſchoolmaſter, recommends me to a French apothecary, who entertains me as a journeyman, - - - 108

CHAP. XIX. The characters of Mr. Lavement, his wife, and daughter—ſome anecdotes of the family—the mother and daughter rivals—I am guilty of a miſtake that gives me preſent ſatisfaction, but is attended with troubleſome conſequences, - - 113

CHAP. XX. I am aſſaulted, and dangerouſly wounded—ſuſpect O'Donnell, and am confirmed in my opinion—concert a ſcheme of revenge, and put it in execution—O'Donnell robs his own ſervant, and diſappears—I make my addreſſes to a lady, and am miraculouſly delivered from her ſnare, - - 120

CHAP. XXI. Squire Gawky comes to lodge with my maſter—is involved in a troubleſome affair, out of which he is extricated by me—he marries my maſter's daughter—they conſpire againſt me—I am found guilty of theft—diſcharged—deſerted by my friends

Page.
—I hire a room in St. Giles's—where, by accident, I find the lady to whom I made my addreſſes, in a miſerable condition—I relieve her, - - - - 126
CHAP. XXII. The hiſtory of Miſs Williams, - - 135
CHAP. XXIII. She is interrupted by a bailiff, who arreſts and carries her to the Marſhalſea—I accompany her—bring witneſſes to prove ſhe is not the perſon named in the writ—the bailiff is fain to give her a preſent, and diſcharge her—we ſhift our lodging—ſhe reſumes her ſtory, and ends it—my reflections thereupon—ſhe makes me acquainted with the progreſs of a common woman of the town—reſolves to quit that way of life, - - 147
CHAP. XXIV. I am reduced to great miſery—aſſaulted on Towerhill by a preſs-gang, who put me on board a tender—my uſage there—my arrival on board of the Thunder man of war, where I am put in irons, and afterwards releaſed by the good offices of Mr. Thomſon, who recommends me as aſſiſtant to the ſurgeon—he relates his own ſtory, and makes me acquainted with the characters of the captain, ſurgeon, and firſt mate, - - 165
CHAP. XXV. The behaviour of Mr. Morgan—his pride, diſpleaſure, and generoſity—the œconomy of our meſs deſcribed—Thomſon's further friendſhip—the nature of my duty explained—the ſituation of the ſick, - - - 168
CHAP. XXVI. A diſagreeable accident happens to me in the diſcharge of my office—Morgan's noſe is offended—a dialogue between him and the ſhip's ſteward—upon examination, I find more cauſes of complaint than one—my hair is cut off—Morgan's cookery—the manner of ſleeping on board—I am waked in the night by a dreadful noiſe, - - - 173
CHAP. XXVII. I acquire the friendſhip of the ſurgeon, who procures a warrant for me, and makes me a preſent of clothes—a battle between a midſhipman and me—the ſurgeon leaves the ſhip—the captain comes on board with another ſurgeon—a dialogue between the captain and Morgan—the ſick are ordered to be brought upon the quarter-deck, and examined—the conſequences of that order—a madman accuſes Morgan, and is ſet at liberty by command of the captain, whom he inſtantly attacks, and pummels without mercy, - - - 177
CHAP. XXVIII. The captain enraged, threatens to put the madman to death with his own hand—is diverted from that reſolution by the arguments and perſuaſion of the firſt lieutenant and ſurgeon—we ſet ſail for St. Helen's, join the fleet under the command of Sir C—n—r O—le, and proceed for the Weſt Indies—are overtaken by a terrible tempeſt—my friend Jack Rattlin has his leg broke by a fall from the main-yard—the behaviour of Dr. Mackſhane—Jack oppoſes the amputation of his limb, in which he is ſeconded by Morgan and me, who undertake the cure, and perform it ſucceſsfully, - - - 181
CHAP. XXIX. Mackſhane's malice—I am taken up, and impriſoned for a ſpy—Morgan meets with the ſame fate—Thomſon is tampered with, to turn evidence againſt us—diſdains the propoſal, and is maltreated for his integrity—Morgan is releaſed, to aſſiſt the ſurgeon during an engagement with ſome French ſhips of war—I remain ſettered on the poop, expoſed to the enemy's ſhot, and grow delirious with fear—am comforted after the battle by Morgan, who ſpeaks freely of the captain; is overheard by the cen-

Page.

tinel, who informs againſt him, and again impriſoned—Thomſon grows deſperate, and notwithſtanding the remonſtrances of Morgan and me, goes overboard in the night, - - 190

CHAP. XXX. We lament the fate of our companion—the captain offers Morgan his liberty, which he refuſes to accept—we are brought before him, and examined—Morgan is ſent back to cuſtody, whither alſo I am remanded, after a curious trial, - 195

CHAP. XXXI. I diſcover a ſubornation againſt me, by means of a quarrel between two of the evidences; in conſequence of which I am ſet at liberty, and prevail upon Morgan to accept of his freedom on the ſame terms—Mackſhane's malice—we arrive at Jamaica, from whence in a ſhort time we beat up to Hiſpaniola, in conjunction with the Weſt India ſquadron—we take in water, ſail again, and arrive at Carthagena—reflections on our conduct there, 203

CHAP. XXXII. Our land forces being diſembarked, erect a faſcine battery—our ſhip is ordered, with four more, to batter the fort of Bocca Chica—Mackſhane's cowardice—the chaplain's frenzy—honeſt Rattlin loſes one hand—his heroiſm, and reflections on the battle—Crampley's behaviour to me during the heat of the fight, 206

CHAP. XXXIII. A breach being made in the walls, our ſoldiers give the aſſault, and take the place without oppoſition—our ſailors at the ſame time become maſters of all the other ſtrengths near Bocca Chica, and take poſſeſſion of the harbour—the good conſequence of this ſucceſs—we move nearer the town—find two forts deſerted, and the channel blocked up with ſunk veſſels; which, however, we find means to clear—land our ſoldiers at La Quinta—repulſe a body of militia—attack the caſtle of St. Lazar, and are forced to retreat with great loſs—the remains of our army are re-embarked—an effort of the admiral to take the town—the economy of our expedition deſcribed, - - 211

CHAP. XXXIV. An epidemic fever rages among us—we abandon our conqueſts—I am ſeized with the diſtemper; write a petition to the captain, which is rejected—I am in danger of ſuffocation, through the malice of Crampley, and relieved by a ſerjeant—my fever increaſes—the chaplain wants to confeſs me—I obtain a favourable criſis—Morgan's affection for me proved—the behaviour of Mackſhane and Crampley towards me—Captain Oakum is removed to another ſhip, with his beloved doctor—our new captain deſcribed—an adventure of Morgan, - 217

CHAP. XXXV. Captain Whiffle ſends for me—his ſituation deſcribed—his ſurgeon arrives, preſcribes for him, and puts him to bed—a bed is put up for Mr. Simper, contiguous to the ſtate-room, which, with other parts of the captain's behaviour, gives the ſhip's company a very unfavourable idea of their commander—I am detained in the Weſt Indies by the admiral, and go on board of the Lizard ſloop of war, in quality of ſurgeon's mate, where I make myſelf known to the ſurgeon, who treats me very kindly—I go on ſhore, ſell my ticket, purchaſe neceſſaries, and, at my return on board, am ſurpriſed at the ſight of Crampley, who is appointed lieutenant of the ſloop—we ſail on a cruize, take a prize, in which I arrive at Port Morant, under the command of my meſs mate, with whom I live in great harmony, - - 226

CHAP. XXXVI. A ſtrange adventure—in conſequence of which I am extremely happy—Crampley does me ill offices with the captain; but his malice is defeated by the good-nature and friendſhip

Page.
of the ſurgeon—We return to Port-Royal—our captain gets the command of a larger ſhip, and is ſucceeded by an old man—Brayl is provided for—we receive orders to ſail for England, - 231
CHAP. XXXVII. We depart for Europe—a miſunderſtanding ariſes between the captain and ſurgeon, through the ſcandalous aſperſions of Crampley—the captain dies—Crampley tyrannizes over the ſurgeon, who falls a victim to his cruelty—I am alſo ill uſed—the ſhip ſtrikes—the behaviour of Crampley and the ſeamen on that occaſion—I get on ſhore, challenge the captain to ſingle combat—am treacherouſly knocked down, wounded, and robbed, 237
CHAP. XXXVIII. I get up, and crawl to a barn, where I am in danger of periſhing, through the fear of the country people—their inhumanity—I am ſuccoured by a reputed witch—her ſtory—her advice—ſhe recommends me as a valet to a ſingle lady, whoſe character ſhe explains, - - - 241
CHAP. XXXIX. My reception by that lady—I become enamoured of Narciſſa—recount the particulars of my laſt misfortune—acquire the good opinion of my miſtreſs—an account of the young ſquire—I am made acquainted with more particulars of Narciſſa's ſituation—Conceive a mortal hatred againſt Sir Timothy—examine my lady's library and performances—her extravagant behaviour, 249
CHAP. XL. My miſtreſs is ſurpriſed at my learning—communicates her performances to me—I impart ſome of mine to her—am mortified at her faint praiſe—Narciſſa approves of my production—I gain an involuntary conqueſt over the cook-wench and dairy-maid—their mutual reſentment and inſinuations—the jealouſy of their lovers, - - - - 255
CHAP. XLI. Narciſſa being in danger, from the brutality of Sir Timothy, is reſcued by me, who revenge myſelf on my rival—I declare my paſſion, and retreat to the ſea ſide—am ſurrounded by ſmugglers, and carried to Boulogne—find my uncle Lieutenant Bowling in great diſtreſs, and relieve him—our converſation, 261
CHAP. XLII. He takes his paſſage in a cutter for Deal—we are accoſted by a prieſt, who proves to be a Scotchman—his profeſſion of friendſhip—he is affronted by the lieutenant, who afterwards appeaſes him by ſubmiſſion—my uncle embarks—I am introduced by the prieſt to a capuchin, in whoſe company I ſet out for Paris—the character of my fellow traveller—an adventure on the road—I am ſhocked at his behaviour, - - - 270
CHAP. XLIII. We lodge at a houſe near Amiens, where I am robbed by the capuchin, who eſcapes while I am aſleep—I go to Noyons in ſearch of him, but without ſucceſs—make my condition known to ſeveral people, but find no relief—grow deſperate, join a company of ſoldiers—enliſt in the regiment of Picardy—we are ordered into Germany—I find the fatigues of the march almoſt intolerable—quarrel with my comrade, in a diſpute about politics—he challenges me to the field, wounds, and diſarms me, - 276
CHAP. XLIV. In order to be revenged, I learn the ſcience of defence—we join Mareſchal Duc de Noailles—are engaged with the allies at Dettingen, and put to flight—the behaviour of the French ſoldiers on that occaſion—I induſtriouſly ſeek another combat with the old Gaſcon, and vanquiſh him in my turn—our regiment is put into winter quarters at Rheims, where I find my friend Strap—our recognition—he ſupplies me with money, and procures my

Page.

diſcharge—we take a trip to Paris; from whence we ſet out for London, by the way of Flanders, where we ſafely arrive, 283

CHAP. XLV. I inquire for my uncle, and underſtand he is gone to ſea—take lodgings at Charing-croſs—go to the play, where I meet with an adventure—dine at an ordinary; the gueſts deſcribed—become acquainted with Medlar and Dr. Wagtail, - 294

CHAP. XLVI. Wagtail introduces me to a ſet of fine gentlemen, with whom I ſpend the evening at a tavern—our converſation—the characters of my new companions—the doctor is roaſted—the iſſue of our debauch, - - - 308

CHAP. XLVII. Strap communicates to me a conqueſt he had made of a chandler's widow—finds himſelf miſerably miſtaken—I go to the opera—admire Melinda—am cautioned by Banter—go to the aſſembly at Hampſtead—dance with that young lady—receive an inſolent meſſage from Bragwell, whoſe metal is ſoon cooled—am in favour with my miſtreſs, whom I viſit next day; and am bubbled out of eighteen guineas, at cards—Strap triumphs at my ſucceſs, but is aſtoniſhed at my expence—Banter comes to my lodging, is very ſarcaſtic at my expence, and borrows five guineas from me, as a proof of his friendſhip, - - 319

CHAP. XLVIII. We repair to the coffeehouſe, where we overhear a curious diſpute between Wagtail and Medlar, which is referred to our deciſion—the doctor gives an account of his experiment—Medlar is roaſted by Banter at the ordinary—the old gentleman's advice to me, - - - - 328

CHAP. XLIX. I receive a challenge—the conſequences of it—the quarrel being made up, am put in arreſt, by the care and affection of Strap—but immediately releaſed upon explaining my affair—the behaviour of Mr. Oregan and his two friends—I viſit Melinda, whom I divert with an account of the duel—propoſe marriage—ſhe refers the matter to her mother, of whom I make a ſolemn demand of her daughter—the old lady's behaviour—I am diſcarded, and reſent their diſdain, - - 338

CHAP. L. I long to be revenged of Melinda—apply to Banter for his aſſiſtance—he contrives a ſcheme for that purpoſe, which is put in execution with great ſucceſs—I make an attempt on the heart of Miſs Gripewell, but am diſappointed—grow melancholy at my diſappointment, and have recourſe to the bottle—receive a billet doux—am raviſhed with the contents—find myſelf involved in an intrigue, which I imagined would make my fortune—am confounded at my miſtake, which baniſhes all thoughts of matrimony, 340

CHAP. LI. I cultivate an acquaintance with two noblemen—am introduced to Earl Strutwell—his kind promiſe and invitation—the behaviour of his porter and lacquey—he receives me with an appearance of uncommon affection—undertakes to ſpeak in my behalf to the miniſter—informs me of his ſucceſs, and wiſhes me joy—introduces a converſation about Petronius Arbiter—falls in love with my watch, which I preſs upon him—I make a preſent of a diamond ring to Lord Straddle—impart my good fortune to Strap and Banter, who diſabuſes me, to my utter mortification, 351

CHAP. LII. I attempt to recover my watch and jewel, but to no purpoſe—reſolve to revenge myſelf on Strutwell, by my importunity—am reduced to my laſt guinea—obliged to inform Strap of my neceſſity, who is almoſt diſtracted with the news—but nevertheleſs obliged to pawn my beſt ſword for preſent ſubſiſtence—that

Page.

ſmall ſupply being exhauſted, I am almoſt ſtupified with my misfortunes—go to the gaming table, by the advice of Banter, and come off with unexpected ſucceſs—Strap's extaſy—Mrs. Gawky waits upon me, profeſſes remorſe for her perfidy, and implores my aſſiſtance—I do myſelf a piece of juſtice by her means, and afterwards reconcile her to her father, - - 359

CHAP. LIII. I purchaſe new clothes—reprimand Strutwell and Straddle—Banter propoſes another matrimonial ſcheme—I accept of his terms—ſet out for Bath in a ſtage-coach, with the young lady and her mother—the behaviour of an officer and lawyer, our fellow-travellers, deſcribed—a ſmart dialogue between my miſtreſs and the captain, - - - - 368

CHAP. LIV. Day-breaking, I have the pleaſure of viewing the perſon of Miſs Snapper, whom I had not ſeen before—the ſoldier is witty upon me—is offended, talks much of his valour—is reprimanded by a grave gentlewoman—we are alarmed with the cry of highwaymen—I get out of the coach, and ſtand on my own defence—they ride off, without having attacked us—I purſue them—one of them is thrown from his horſe, and taken—return to the coach—am complimented by Miſs Snapper—the captain's behaviour on this occaſion—the prude reproaches me in a ſoliloquy—I upbraid her in the ſame manner—the behaviour of Mrs. Snapper at breakfaſt diſobliges me—the lawyer is witty upon the officer, who threatens him, - - - - 374

CHAP. LV. I reſolve to ingratiate myſelf with the mother, and am favoured by accident—the preciſe lady finds her huſband, and quits the coach—the captain is diſappointed of his dinner—we arrive at Bath—I accompany Miſs Snapper to the Long Room, where ſhe is attacked by Beau Naſh, and turns the laugh againſt him—I make love to her, and receive a check—ſquire her to an aſſembly, where I am bleſſed with a ſight of my dear Narciſſa, which diſcompoſes me ſo much, that Miſs Snapper, obſerving my diſorder, is at pains to diſcover the cauſe—is piqued at the occaſion, and, in our way home, pays me a ſarcaſtic compliment—I am met by Miſs Williams, who is maid and confident of Narciſſa—ſhe acquaints me with her lady's regard for me, while under the diſguiſe of a ſervant, and deſcribes the tranſports of Narciſſa, on ſeeing me at the aſſembly, in the character of a gentleman—I am ſurpriſed with an account of her aunt's marriage, and make an appointment to meet Miſs Williams next day, - 381

CHAP. LVI. I become acquainted with Narciſſa's brother, who invites me to his houſe, where I am introduced to that adorable creature—After dinner, the ſquire retires to take his nap—Freeman, gueſſes the ſituation of my thoughts, withdraws likewiſe on pretence of buſineſs—I declare my paſſion for Narciſſa—am well received—charmed with her converſation—the ſquire detains us to ſupper—I elude his deſign by a ſtratagem, and get home ſober, - - - 390

CHAP. LVII. Miſs Williams informs me of Narciſſa's approbation of my flame—I appeaſe the ſquire, write to my miſtreſs, am bleſſed with an anſwer—beg leave of her brother to dance with her at a ball; obtain his conſent and hers—enjoy a private converſation with her—am perplexed with reflections—have the honour of appearing her partner at a ball—we are complimented by a certain nobleman—he diſcovers ſome ſymptoms of paſſion for Nar-

Page.

ciſſa—I am ſtung with jealouſy—Narciſſa alarmed, retires—I obſerve Melinda in the company—the ſquire is captivated by her beauty, - - - - 400

CHAP. LVIII. Tortured with jealouſy, I go home and abuſe Strap—receive a meſſage from Narciſſa, in conſequence of which I haſten to her apartment, where her endearing aſſurances baniſh all my doubts and apprehenſions—in my retreat diſcover ſomebody in the dark, whom, ſuſpecting to be a ſpy, I reſolve to kill; but, to my great ſurpriſe, am convinced of his being no other than Strap—Melinda ſlanders me—I become acquainted with Lord Quiverwit, who endeavours to ſound me with regard to Narciſſa—the ſquire is introduced to his Lordſhip, and grows cold towards me—I learn from my confident, that this nobleman profeſſes honourable love to my miſtreſs, who continues faithful to me, notwithſtanding the ſcandalous reports ſhe has heard to my prejudice—I am mortified with an aſſurance that her whole fortune depends upon the pleaſure of her brother—Mr. Freeman condoles me on the decline of my character, which I vindicate ſo much to his ſatisfaction, that he undertakes to combat fame in my behalf. - - - - 408

CHAP. LIX. I receive an extraordinary meſſage at the door of the Long Room, which I however enter, and affront the ſquire, who threatens to take the law of me—rebuke Melinda for her malice—ſhe weeps with vexation—Lord Quiverwit is ſevere upon me—I retort his ſarcaſm—am received with the utmoſt tenderneſs by Narciſſa, who deſires to hear the ſtory of my life—we vow eternal conſtancy to one another—I retire, am awaked by a meſſenger, who brings a challenge from Quiverwit, whom I meet, engage, and vanquiſh, - - - 413

CHAP. LX. I am viſited by Freeman, with whom I appear in public, and am careſſed—am ſent for by Lord Quiverwit, whoſe preſence I quit in a paſſion—Narciſſa is carried off by her brother—I intend to purſue him, but am diſſuaded by my friend—engage in play, and loſe all my money—ſet out for London—try my fortune at the gaming table, without ſucceſs—receive a letter from Narciſſa—bilk my tailor, - - - 419

CHAP. LXI. I am arreſted—carried to the Marſhalſea—find my old acquaintance Beau Jackſon in that jail—he informs me of his adventures—Strap arrives, and with difficulty is comforted—Jackſon introduces me to a poet—I admire his converſation and capacity—am deeply affected with my misfortune—Strap hires himſelf as a journeyman barber, - - 426

CHAP. LXII. I read Melopoyn's tragedy, and conceive a vaſt opinion of his genius—he recounts his adventures, - 432

CHAP. LXIII. The continuation and concluſion of Mr. Melopoyn's ſtory, - - - - 441

CHAP. LXIV. I am ſeized with a deep melancholy, and become a ſloven—am relieved by my uncle—he prevails upon me to engage with his owners, as ſurgeon of the ſhip which he commands—he makes me a conſiderable preſent—entertains Strap as his ſteward—I take my leave of my friends, and go on board—the ſhip arves at the Downs, - - - 454

CHAP. LXV. I ſet out for Suſſex—conſult Mrs. Sagely—achieve an interview with Narciſſa—return to the ſhip—we get clear of the Channel—I learn our deſtination—we are chaſed by a large

Page.

ſhip—the company are diſmayed, and encouraged by the captain's ſpeech—our purſuer happens to be an Engliſh man of war—we arrive at the coaſt of Guinea, purchaſe 400 negroes, ſail for Paraguay, get ſafe in the river of Plate, and ſell our cargo to great advantage, - - - - - 461

CHAP. LXVI. I am invited to the villa of a Spaniſh Don, where we meet with an Engliſh gentleman, and make a very intereſting diſcovery—we leave Buenos Ayres, and arrive at Jamaica, - 470

CHAP. LXVII. I viſit my old friend Thomſon—we ſet ſail for Europe—meet with an odd adventure—arrive in England—I ride acroſs the country from Portſmouth to Suſſex—converſe with Mrs. Sagely, who informs me of Narciſſa's being in London—in conſequence of this intelligence, I proceed to Canterbury—meet with my old friend Morgan—arrive at London—viſit Narciſſa—introduce my father to her—he is charmed with her good ſenſe and beauty—we come to a determination of demanding her brother's conſent to our marriage, - - - 479

CHAP. LXVIII. My father makes a preſent to Narciſſa—the letter is diſpatched to her brother—I appear among my acquaintance—Banter's behaviour—the ſquire refuſes his conſent—my uncle comes to town—approves of my choice—I am married—we meet the ſquire and his lady at the play—our acquaintance is courted, 489

CHAP. LXIX. My father intends to reviſit the place of his nativity—we propoſe to accompany him—my uncle renews his will in my favour, determining to go to ſea again—we ſet out for Edinburgh—purchaſe our paternal eſtate—proceed to it—halt at the town where I was educated—take up my bond to Crab—behaviour of Potion and his wife, and one of my female couſins—our reception at the eſtate—Strap marries Miſs Williams, and is ſettled by my father to his own ſatisfaction—I am more and more happy, - - - - 495

THE

LIFE

OF

SMOLLETT.

In all ages in which literature has been held in eſtimation, the lives of excellent writers have been ſubjects of public curioſity; and perſons have taken pains to collect facts reſpecting them which might exhibit a view of their characters and writings.

Of the numbers of learned and ingenious men who have benefited the preſent age by their ſtudies, and added to the reputation of Great Britain by their writings, few will be found more deſerving of biographical notice than the ſubject of this narrative, whether we conſider the utility and elegance of his literary compoſitions, the force and vivacity of his mind, or the diſintereſtedneſs and independence of his ſpirit.

He who employs laborious days and ſleepleſs nights in compoſing writings, which, as they inſtruct by their intelligence, or pleaſe by their elegance, either facilitate the attainment of knowledge, or ſmooth the aſperities of life, is entitled to the grateful recollection of poſterity.

Of the perſonal hiſtory of Smollett, leſs is known than his rank in Engliſh literature might give reaſon to expect. It is ſaid, and probably with ſome truth, that the chief incidents in the early part of his life were given to the world in his novel of *Roderick Random*. Whether that report is well founded or not, it is not eaſy, nor neceſſary to know. The incidents, if real,

are certainly a good deal heightened by invention, and diſguiſed by the decorations of fiction. No credit, therefore, is due to them, as authorities, in a work of truth; and they are not followed by the preſent writer, in this attempt to relate, with the fidelity of biographical narration, what is known of his perſonal hiſtory and literary productions.

He is ſorry that the information concerning him which his inquiries have obtained, is ſo general and ſcanty, that he muſt give the hiſtory of his life to the world much more briefly than his qualifications deſerve; but he has this gratification from relating it, that, however inadequate to his merits, or unſatisfactory to his friends, it may not be altogether unacceptable to the public, who, it has been often obſerved, will always take an intereſt in thoſe perſons from whoſe writings they have derived pleaſure or inſtruction.

TOBIAS SMOLLETT was born in the old houſe of Dalquhurn, on the banks of the Leven, near the village of Renton, in the pariſh of Cardroſs, in Dumbartonſhire, in 1720. He was deſcended from an ancient family, of conſiderable property and influence in that county, which had, on many occaſions, ſignalized itſelf in behalf of the country, and been diſtinguiſhed by the moſt honourable offices in the ſtate. In 1588, the Florida, a ſhip of the Spaniſh Armada that had the military cheſt on board, was blown up by one of his anceſtors, in one of the bays of the iſland of Mull. His grandfather, Sir James Smollett, of Bonhill, was a member of the laſt parliament of Scotland, and one of the commiſſioners for framing the Treaty of Union. His father was the youngeſt of his ſons, and, according to the cuſtom of the country, received only a ſmall ſhare of Sir James's fortune. His mother, whoſe maiden name was Cunningham, was the daughter of a reſpectable family in Renfrewſhire, and a woman of diſtinguiſhed underſtanding, taſte, and elegance. His father died at an early period of life, and left his family, conſiſting of two ſons and a daughter, with a very moderate proviſion. His elder brother, whoſe name was James, embraced the military profeſſion, and periſhed at ſea, off the coaſt of America,

in the prime of life. His ſiſter was married to Alexander Telfer, Eſq. of Symington, in Lanarkſhire, and, upon the death of her couſin, James Smollett, Eſq. of Bonhill, one of the commiſſaries of Edinburgh, in 1778, ſucceeded to the family eſtate of Bonhill, now in the poſſeſſion of her ſon Alexander Smollett, Eſq. the repreſentative of the family.

He was inſtructed in the rudiments of claſſical learning, at the grammar ſchool of the neighbouring town of Dumbarton, where he diſtinguiſhed himſelf by the quickneſs of his progreſs, and diſcovered the moſt promiſing marks of that fertility of genius which characterized his future life.

After the ordinary courſe of ſchool education, he was ſent to the univerſity of Glaſgow, where he proſecuted his ſtudies with ſuch ſucceſs, that, in three years, it is ſaid, "he underſtood Greek very well, was pretty far advanced in the mathematics, and no ſtranger to moral and natural philoſophy: Logic, he made no account of; but he took much delight in the *Belles Lettres* and poetry, and had already produced ſome verſes that met with a very favourable reception."

Being born to the proſpect of no hereditary riches, the profeſſion which he was deſtined by his mother to follow, was that of phyſic; and he was put apprentice to a ſurgeon in Glaſgow, whoſe character he is ſuppoſed to have drawn, under the name of *Crab*, in the broadeſt ſtyle of caricature, in his *Roderick Random*.

He was afterwards ſent to the univerſity of Edinburgh, where he ſtudied the ſeveral branches of medicine, under the different profeſſors, with ſufficient diligence and reputation; but left the univerſity without taking a degree.

While he proſecuted his medical ſtudies at Edinburgh, he was tempted to try his powers in dramatic poetry, and wrote, in his eighteenth year, a tragedy, called *The Regicide; or, James the Firſt of Scotland*, founded on the ſtory of the aſſaſſination of that monarch by his uncle Walter Stuart Earl of Athol, in 1437.

In 1739, at the age of nineteen, he went to London, the great field of genius and exertion, with intention to

follow the profeſſion of phyſic, with no other helps than the fruitful reſources of a mind ſtored with profeſſional knowledge and general literature, a rich vein of humour, a lively imagination, and an engaging perſon and addreſs.

On his arrival in London, his tragedy, he tells us in the *preface*, with ſome recommendations from his literary friends, "was taken into the protection of one of thoſe little fellows, who is ſometimes called great men, and, like other orphans, neglected accordingly."

"Stung with reſentment," he adds, "which I miſtook for contempt, I reſolved to puniſh this barbarous indifference, and actually diſcarded my patron; conſoling myſelf with the barren praiſe of a few aſſociates, who, in the moſt indefatigable manner, employed their time and influence in collecting, from all quarters, obſervations on my piece, which, in conſequence of theſe ſuggeſtions, put on a new appearance almoſt every day, until my occaſions called me out of the kingdom."

His firſt outſet in the world appears to have been as a ſurgeon's mate in the navy. In this capacity he ſerved in the fleet, under Admiral Vernon, at the ſiege of Carthagena, in 1741.

In his *Roderick Random*, he gives an account of the management of that ill-conducted expedition, which he cenſures in the warmeſt terms, and from circumſtances which fell under his own particular obſervation. He is ſuppoſed to have been the editor of "A Compendium of Authentic Voyages, digeſted in a Chronological Series," 7 vols. 12mo, 1756; amongſt which is inſerted, *A Short Narrative of the Expedition to Carthagena*, 1741, written, by the ſuppoſed editor, with great ſpirit, but abounding with acrimony.

It was here he acquired his knowledge of the characters of ſeamen, which he has drawn in a manner ſo excellent, and at the ſame time ſo technically true, as to excite general admiration; and they have continued the model for dramatiſts and noveliſts to copy.

He continued only a ſhort time in the ſervice of the navy, being diſguſted at the drudgery to which his pro-

feſſional duty expoſed him; and, having no other employment, betook himſelf to his pen for ſubſiſtence.

It is probable that he wrote ſeveral pieces before he became known to the public by his capital productions.

His firſt publication that is known with certainty, is, *The Advice and Reproof*, two ſatires, printed in 1746 and 1747. The plan of this performance is ſimilar to that of one of Pope's ſatires: A dialogue is ſuppoſed to be carried on between the *poet* and his *friend*, who is repreſented as giving him advice, to which he anſwers with great ſpirit, and, in his replies, indulges his ſatiric vein with no ſmall degree of freedom.

In the ſame year, he expreſſed his indignation at the ſeverities exerciſed upon the Highlanders, by the royal army, after the battle of Culloden, in an exquiſite ode, intituled, *The Tears of Scotland.*

In 1748, he publiſhed his *Adventures of Roderick Random*, in 2 vols. 12mo, an hiſtorical novel, executed, he tells us in the *preface*, upon the plan of Le Sage, in his "Adventures of Gil Blas," except where he thought his particular ſituations were uncommon or extravagant, or peculiar to the country in which the ſcene is laid. The *firſt* volume, and the beginning of the *ſecond*, are ſuppoſed to conſiſt of real incident and character, "although the circumſtances are altered and diſguiſed to avoid perſonal ſatire." *Crab* and *Potion*, the two apothecaries, and *Squire Gawkey*, were characters well known in that part of the kingdom where the ſcene is laid. *Captains Oakhum* and *Whiffle*, and *Doctors Mackſhane* and *Morgan*, were alſo ſaid to be real perſons. A bookbinder and barber are ſaid to have long eagerly contended for being deſigned under the character of *Strap*, but their names are now forgotten. This novel had a rapid ſale, and laid the foundation of his fame.

About this period, or ſome time before, he wrote for Mr. Rich, manager of Covent Garden theatre, an opera, intituled *Alceſte*, which has never been performed nor printed. The muſic to it was compoſed by Handel, who, finding that no uſe was intended

it, afterwards adapted it to Dryden's leſſer Ode for St. Cecilia's Day *.

His tragedy of *The Regicide* being, as he thought, completely finiſhed, and fitted for the ſtage, he offered it to Mr. Lacey, and afterwards to Mr. Garrick and Mr. Rich; but, "after a cajoling dream of good fortune," it was ſtill unſucceſsful, and finally rejected.

This unfortunate production, after having been expoſed, during a period of ten years, to the cenſure of critics of all degrees, and, in conſequence of their ſeveral opinions, altered and amended, times without number, was publiſhed in 1749, by ſubſcription, very much, it is ſaid, to his emolument, with a *preface*, in which he exclaimed bitterly againſt falſe patrons, and the duplicity of theatrical managers; and he reſented the injury by ſevere retaliations in his future writings.

Lyttleton, Lacey, and Garrick, were the principal objects of his reſentment. The character of the former he ſatirized in his novel of *Peregrine Pickle;* and he added a *Burleſque Ode* on that nobleman's excellent "Monody" on the death of his lady.

"I and my production," ſays the *preface*, "were introduced to a late patentee [Mr. Lacey], of courteous memory, who found means to amuſe me a whole ſeaſon, and then declared it impracticable to bring it on till next year, adviſing me to make my application more early in the winter, that we might have time to correct ſuch alterations as ſhould be thought neceſſary for its ſucceſsful appearance on the ſtage. But I did not find my account in following this wholeſome advice; for to me he was always leſs and leſs at leiſure. In ſhort, after ſundry promiſes, and many evaſions, in the courſe of which he practiſed upon me the whole art of procraſtination, I demanded his final anſwer, with ſuch obſtinacy and warmth, that he could no longer reſiſt my importunity, and refuſed my tragedy in plain terms. Not that he mentioned any material objections to the piece itſelf, but ſeemed to fear my intereſt was not ſufficient to ſupport it in the repreſentation; affirming, that *no dramatic compoſition, however perfect, could ſucceed with an Engliſh*

* Hawkins's Hiſtory of Muſic, Vol. I. p. 28. Vol. V. p. 324.

audience, by its own merit, but muſt entirely depend upon a faction raiſed in its behalf."

Againſt Garrick, he made illiberal, ill-founded ſtrictures in the *preface;* and, in his *Roderick Random*, gave a very unfair repreſentation of his treatment of him reſpecting this tragedy.

The unjuſt reflections into which the warmth and impetuoſity of his temper hurried him on this occaſion, he afterwards regretted; and, in handſome terms, retracted the haſty effuſions of his diſappointment, in giving a ſketch of the liberal arts, during the reign of George II. in his *Hiſtory of England.*

"The exhibitions of the ſtage were improved to the moſt exquiſite entertainment, by the talents and management of *Garrick*, who greatly ſurpaſſed all his predeceſſors of this, and perhaps every other nation, in his genius for acting, in the ſweetneſs and variety of his tones, the irreſiſtible magic of his eye, the fire and vivacity of his action, the elegance of attitude, and the whole pathos of expreſſion.

"Candidates for literary fame appeared even in the higher ſpheres of life, embelliſhed by the nervous ſenſe and extenſive erudition of a Corke, by the delicate taſte and tender feelings of a *Lyttleton.*"

Not ſatisfied with this public declaration of his ſentiments, he acknowledged his errors, in ſtill ſtronger terms, in the following letter to Garrick, dated Chelſea, Jan. 27. 1762.

"I this morning received your Winter's Tale, and am agreeably flattered by this mark of your attention. What I have ſaid of Mr. Garrick in the *Hiſtory of England*, was, I proteſt, the language of my heart. I ſhall rejoice if he thinks I have done him barely juſtice. I am ſure the public will think I have done no more than juſtice. In giving a ſhort ſketch of the liberal arts, I could not, with any propriety, forbear mentioning a gentleman ſo eminently diſtinguiſhed by a genius that has no rival. Beſides, I thought it was a duty incumbent on me in particular to make a public atonement, in a work of truth, for wrongs done him in a work of fiction.

"Among the other inconveniencies ariſing from ill health, I deeply regret my being diſabled from a perſonal cultivation of your good-will, and the unſpeakable enjoyment I ſhould ſometimes derive from your private converſation, as well as from the public exertion of your talents; but, ſequeſtered as I am from the world of entertainment, the conſciouſneſs of ſtanding well in your opinion, will ever afford ſingular ſatisfaction to, &c."

The ſucceſs attending his novel of *Roderick Random*, encouraged him to exerciſe his abilities in that ſpecies of compoſition; and, in 1751, he publiſhed *The Adventures of Peregrine Pickle*, in 4 vols. 12mo, in which he introduced the *Memoirs* of the celebrated *Lady Vane*, the materials of which, it is ſaid, ſhe herſelf furniſhed. This epiſode, which he received a very handſome reward for inſerting, excited much attention, and contributed greatly to its ſucceſs.

Lady Vane was the daughter of Francis Hawes, Eſq. of Purley-Hall, near Reading in Berkſhire, one of the South-Sea directors in 1720, and married about the beginning of 1732, at the age of ſeventeen, to Lord William Hamilton, who, dying July 11. 1734, ſhe married, May 19. 1735, Lord Viſcount Vane of the kingdom of Ireland, with whom ſhe lived and parted, and parted and lived; and died in London, March 31. 1788, in the ſeventy-ſecond year of her age. She was reckoned the fineſt minuet dancer in England; and, in perſonal charms and accompliſhments, inferior to no woman who has appeared in the eighteenth century. To the fate of this lady, Dr. Johnſon has a ſtriking alluſion in his "Vanity of Human Wiſhes."

> Yet *Vane* could tell what ills from beauty ſpring,
> And Sedley curs'd the form that pleas'd a king.

Her life afforded a melancholy inſtance of the miſeries inſeparable from a miſapplication of ſuperior talents and elegant accompliſhments. The miſunderſtandings, elopements, and various diſgraceful ſituations to which ſhe expoſed herſelf, are too well known to be concealed, (ſeveral of them being recorded in the legal reports,) but may now, with no impropriety, be buried in oblivion.

The anecdotes reſpecting *Lady Vane*, which are in-

ſerted in *Peregrine Pickle*, produced "A Letter to Lady V—, on her Memoirs in Peregrine Pickle," 8vo, 1751. "Hiſtory of Lady Frail," 12mo, 1751; "Parallel between the character of Lady Frail and the Lady of Quality, in Peregrine Pickle," 8vo, 1751; and "Apology for the conduct of Lady Frail," 8vo, 1751; and other performances, now deſervedly neglected.

About this time, having obtained the degree of Doctor of Phyſic, he ſettled as a Phyſician at Bath, and with that view, publiſhed *An Eſſay on the External Uſe of Water, in a Letter to Dr. ——, with particular Remarks upon the preſent Method of uſing the Mineral Waters at Bath in Somerſetſhire, and a Plan for rendering them more Safe, Agreeable, and Efficacious*, 4to, 1752. The performance advanced his reputation, as a man of ſcience and taſte, but failed to conduct the phyſician to profeſſional eminence and wealth. Its value is now conſiderably diminiſhed by ſubſequent diſcoveries in pneumatic chemiſtry. This is the only profeſſional publication which is known, or ſuſpected to have proceeded from his pen.

Having been unſucceſsful, or perhaps too ſoon diſcouraged, he relinquiſhed the practice of phyſic, fixed his reſidence at Chelſea, and dedicated the whole of his time to literature.

It has been ſaid, that his want of ſucceſs in a profeſſion where merit cannot always enſure good fortune, was owing to his failing to make himſelf agreeable to the women; but his figure and addreſs, both of which were excellent, render this highly improbable. It is more likely, that his irritable temper, and his contempt for the low arts of fineſſe, ſervility, and cunning, were the real cauſes of his failure.

As an author by profeſſion, his genius and induſtry were equally conſpicuous in the ſeveral provinces of novel-writing; of writing for the bookſellers; of writing for the ſtage; and of writing for a faction in the name of the community. The bookſellers, for many years, were his principal reſource for employment and ſubſiſtence. For them he held the pen of a ready writer, in compilations, tranſlations, &c. and towards him they

were always as liberal as the public enabled them to be. They were almoſt his only Mecænaſes; and indeed a more generous ſet of men can hardly be pointed out in the trading world. By their munificence, wit and learning have perhaps received more ample, more ſubſtantial encouragement, than from all their princely or noble patrons, from Auguſtus down to Lewis XIV. The aſtoniſhing ſums which have been paid for manuſcripts by our Tonſons, our Lintots, our Millars, our Strahans, and our Cadells, are ſufficient to reſcue the venders of literature from the reproach of ſuffering the diſpenſers of knowledge to conſume themſelves in the operation.

In 1753, he publiſhed his *Adventures of Ferdinand Count Fathom*, in 2 vols. 12mo. In the *Dedication to Dr. S——*, he beſtows ſome ſtrictures on himſelf, and juſtifies the introduction of vicious characters into works of fiction, by way of expoſing them to ridicule and ſhame, with conſiderable energy and effect. This novel was not ſo generally read, on its firſt appearance, and has not ſince obtained ſuch an extenſive popularity as his *Roderick Random* and *Peregrine Pickle*.

This year, in conſequence of repeated inſults of the moſt flagrant kind, he was provoked to chaſtiſe one Peter Gordon, in ſuch a manner as to give him a handle for a proſecution in the Court of King's Bench, for an intended aſſaſſination. Of that ſuſpicion he was honourably acquitted, upon his trial, by the verdict of the jury. The Honourable Alexander Hume-Campbell, the proſecutor's counſel, having exceeded the licence of the bar, in opening the cauſe, he drew up the following "rough draught of a letter," demanding adequate reparation for the injurious treatment he had received at his hand, which he communicated to his friend Daniel Mackercher, Eſq. with a note, dated Chelſea, Feb. 23. 1753, ſignifying his intention to ſend it to Mr. Hume-Campbell, provided he thought it contained nothing actionable. It is not known whether it was ſent to that gentleman, or whether he retracted what he ſaid to Smollett's prejudice. It is preſerved here, not only as it ſhows his ſentiments concerning Mr. Hume-Camp-

bell, a celebrated counſellor, and parliamentary orator of that time; but as it exhibits ſome of the leading features of his own character.

"I have waited ſeveral days in hope of receiving from you an acknowledgment touching thoſe harſh, unjuſtifiable (and let me add), unmannerly expreſſions which you annexed to my name, in the Court of King's Bench, when you opened the cauſe depending between me and Peter Gordon; and as I do not find that you have diſcovered the leaſt inclination to retract what you ſaid to my prejudice, I have taken this method to refreſh your memory, and to demand ſuch ſatisfaction as a gentleman, injured as I am, has a right to claim.

"The buſineſs of a counſellor, is, I apprehend, to inveſtigate the truth in behalf of his client; but ſurely he has no privilege to blacken and aſperſe the character of the other party, without any regard to veracity or decorum. That you aſſumed this unwarrantable privilege in commenting upon your brief, I believe you will not pretend to deny, when I remind you of thoſe peculiar flowers of elocution which you poured forth on that notable occaſion.—Firſt of all, in order to inſpire the Court with horror and contempt for the defendant, you gave the jury to underſtand that you did not know this Dr. Smollett; and, indeed, his character appeared in ſuch a light from the facts contained in your brief, that you never ſhould deſire to know him.—I ſhould be glad to learn of what conſequence it could be to the cauſe, whether you did or did not know the defendant, or whether you had or had not an inclination to be acquainted with him?—Sir, this was a pitiful perſonality, calculated to depreciate the character of a gentleman to whom you was a ſtranger, merely to gratify the rancour and malice of an abandoned fellow who had feed you to ſpeak in his cauſe.—Did I ever ſeek your acquaintance, or court your protection? I had been informed, indeed, that you was a lawyer of ſome reputation, and, when the ſuit commenced, would have retained you for that reaſon, had not I been anticipated by the plaintiff; but, far from coveting your acquaintance, I never dreamed of exchanging a word with you on that, or any other

ſubject: you might therefore have ſpared your invidious declaration, until I had put it in your power to mortify me with a repulſe, which, upon my honour, would never have been the caſe, were you a much greater man than you really are.—Yet this was not the only expedient you uſed to prepoſſeſs the jury againſt me.—You was hardy enough to repreſent me as a perſon devoid of all humanity and remorſe; as a barbarous ruffian, who, in a cowardly manner, had, with two aſſociates as barbarous as myſelf, called a peaceable gentleman out of his lodgings, and aſſaulted him in the dark, with intent to murder.—Such an horrid imputation, publicly fixed upon a perſon whoſe innocence you could hardly miſs to know, is an outrage, for which, I believe, I might find reparation from the law itſelf, notwithſtanding your artful manner of qualifying the expreſſion by ſaying, *provided the facts can be proved.* This low ſubterfuge may, for aught I know, ſcreen you from a proſecution at law, but can never acquit you in that court which every man of honour holds in his own breaſt. I ſay, you muſt have known my innocence, from the weakneſs of the evidence which you produced, and with which you either was, or ought to have been previouſly acquainted; as well as from my general character and that of my antagoniſt, which it was your duty to have learned.—I will venture to ſay, you did know my character, and in your heart believed me incapable of ſuch brutality as you laid to my charge.—Surely I do not over-rate my own importance in affirming, that I am not ſo obſcure in life as to have eſcaped the notice of Mr. Hume-Campbell; and I will be bold enough to challenge him and the whole world to prove one inſtance in which my integrity was called, or at leaſt left in queſtion.—Have not I, therefore, reaſon to ſuppoſe that, in ſpite of your own internal conviction, you undertook the cauſe of a wretch, whoſe ingratitude, villany, and rancour are, I firmly believe, without example in this kingdom; that you magnified a ſlight correction beſtowed by his benefactor, in conſequence of the moſt inſolent provocation, into a deliberate and malicious ſcheme of aſſaſſination; and endeavoured, with all the virulence

of defamation, to deſtroy the character, and even the life, of an injured perſon, who, as well as yourſelf, is a gentleman by birth, education, and profeſſion? In favour of whom, and in conſequence of what, was all this zeal manifeſted, all this ſlander exhauſted, and all this ſcurrility diſcharged? Your client, whom you dignified with the title of Eſquire, and endeavoured to raiſe to the ſame footing with me in point of ſtation and character, you knew to be an abject miſcreant, whom my compaſſion and humanity had lifted from the moſt deplorable ſcenes of diſtreſs; whom I had ſaved from impriſonment and ruin; whom I had clothed and fed for a ſeries of years; whom I had occaſionally aſſiſted with my purſe, credit, and influence.—You knew, or ought to have known, that, after having received a thouſand marks of my benevolence, and prevailed upon me to indorſe notes for the ſupport of his credit, he withdrew himſelf into the verge of the Court, and took up his habitation in a paltry alehouſe, where he not only ſet me and the reſt of his creditors at defiance, but provoked me, by ſcurrilous and inſolent letters and meſſages, to chaſtiſe him in ſuch a manner as gave him an handle for this proſecution, in which you ſignalized yourſelf as his champion, for a very honourable conſideration.—There is ſomething ſo palpably ungrateful, perfidious, and indeed diabolical, in the conduct of the proſecutor, that, even in theſe degenerate days, I wonder how he could find an Attorney to appear in his behalf. *O Tempora! O Mores!*—After having thus ſounded the trumpet of obloquy in your preamble, and tortured every circumſtance of the plaintiff's evidence to my detriment and diſhonour, you attempted to ſubject me to the ridicule of the Court, by aſking a queſtion of my firſt witneſs, which had no more relation to the cauſe, than if you had deſired to know the name of his grandmother.—What title had you to aſk of a tradeſman, if he knew me to be an author? What affinity had this queſtion with the circumſtances of the aſſault? Was not this foreign to the purpoſe? Was it not impertinent, and propoſed with a view to put me out of countenance, and to raiſe the laugh of the ſpectators at my expence? There,

indeed, you was diſappointed, as you frequently are in thoſe little digreſſive efforts by which you make yourſelf remarkable.—Though I do not pretend to poſſeſs that ſuperlative degree of effrontery by which ſome people make a figure at the bar, I have aſſurance enough to ſtand the mention of my works without bluſhing, eſpecially when I deſpiſe the taſte, and ſcorn the principles, of him who would turn them to my diſgrace.—You ſucceeded, however, in one particular; I mean, in raiſing the indignation of my witneſs; of which you took all imaginable advantage, puzzling, perplexing, and brow-beating him with ſuch artifice, eagerneſs, and inſult, as overwhelmed him with confuſion, and had well nigh deprived me of the benefit of his evidence.—Luckily for me, the next gentleman who was called, confirmed what the other had ſwore, and proved to the ſatisfaction of the judge and jury, and even to your own conviction, that this terrible deliberate aſſaſſination was no more than a ſimple blow given to a raſcal after repeated provocation, and that of the moſt flagrant kind; that no advantage was taken in point of weapons; and that two drabs, whom they had picked up for the purpoſe, had affirmed upon oath a downright falſehood, with a view to blaſt my reputation.—You yourſelf was ſo conſcious of this palpable detection, that you endeavoured to excuſe them by a forced explanation, which, you may depend upon it, ſhall not ſcreen them from a proſecution for perjury.—I will not ſay, that this was like patronizing a couple of gypſies who had foreſworn themſelves, conſequently forfeited all title to the countenance, or indeed forbearance, of the Court; but this I will ſay, that your tenderneſs for them, was of a piece with your whole behaviour to me, which I think was equally inſolent and unjuſt: for, granting that you had really ſuppoſed me guilty of an intended aſſaſſination, before the trial began, you ſaw me in the courſe of evidence acquitted of that ſuſpicion, and heard the judge inſiſt upon my innocence in his charge to the jury, who brought in their verdict accordingly. Then, Sir, you ought in common juſtice to have owned yourſelf miſtaken, or to have taken ſome other opportunity of ex-

preſſing your concern for what you had ſaid to my diſadvantage; though even ſuch an acknowledgment would not have been a ſufficient reparation; becauſe, before my witneſſes were called, many perſons left the Court with impreſſions to my prejudice, conceived from the calumnies which they heard you eſpouſe and encourage. On the whole, you opened the trial with ſuch hyperbolical impetuoſity, and conducted it with ſuch particular bitterneſs and rancour, that every body perceived you was more than ordinarily intereſted; and I could not divine the myſterious bond of union that attached you to Peter Gordon, Eſq. until you furniſhed me with a key to the whole ſecret, by that ſtrong emphaſis with which you pronounced the words *Ferdinand Count Fathom*. Then I diſcovered the ſource of your good-will towards me, which is no other than the hiſtory of a law-ſuit inſerted in that performance, where the author takes occaſion to obſerve, that the counſel behaved like men of conſummate abilities in their profeſſion; exerting themſelves with equal induſtry, eloquence, and erudition, in their endeavours to perplex the truth, browbeat the evidence, puzzle the judge, and miſlead the jury.—Did any part of this character come home to your own conſcience? or did you reſent it as a ſarcaſm levelled at the whole Bench without diſtinction? I take it for granted, this muſt have been the origin of your enmity to me; becauſe I can recollect no other circumſtance in my conduct, by which I could incur the diſpleaſure of a man whom I ſcarce knew by ſight, and with whom I never had the leaſt diſpute, or indeed concern. If this was the caſe, you pay a very ſcurvy compliment to your own integrity, by fathering a character which is not applicable to any honeſt man, and give the world a handle to believe, that our courts of juſtice ſtand greatly in need of reformation. Indeed, the petulance, licence, and buffoonery of ſome lawyers in the exerciſe of their function, is a reproach upon decency, and a ſcandal to the nation; and it is ſurpriſing that the judge who repreſents his Majeſty's perſon, ſhould ſuffer ſuch inſults upon the dignity of the place.—But, whatever liberties of this kind are granted to the counſel, no

ſort of freedom, it ſeems, muſt be allowed to the evidence, who, by the bye, are of much more conſequence to the cauſe.—You will take upon you to divert the audience at the expence of a witneſs, by impertinent alluſions to ſome parts of his private character and affairs; but if he pretends to retort the joke, you inſult, abuſe, and bellow againſt him as an impudent fellow who fails in his reſpect to the Court.—It was in this manner you behaved to my firſt witneſs, whom you firſt provoked into a paſſion by injurious inſinuations; then you took an advantage of the confuſion which you had entailed upon him; and laſtly, you inſulted him as a perſon who had ſhuffled in his evidence. This might have been an irreparable injury to the character of a tradeſman, had not he been luckily known to the whole jury, and many other perſons in Court, as a man of unqueſtioned probity and credit. Sir, a witneſs has as good a title as you have to the protection of the Court; and ought to have more, becauſe evidence is abſolutely neceſſary for the inveſtigation of truth; whereas, the aim of a lawyer is often to involve it in doubt and obſcurity. Is it for this purpoſe you ſo frequently deviate from the point, and endeavour to raiſe the mirth of the audience with flat jokes and inſipid ſimiles? or, have you really ſo miſerably miſtaken your own talents, as to ſet up for the character of a man of humour?—For my own part, were I diſpoſed to be merry, I ſhould never deſire a more pregnant ſubject of ridicule, than your own appearance and behaviour; but, as I am at preſent in a very ſerious mood, I ſhall content myſelf with demanding adequate reparation for the injurious treatment I have received at your hands; otherwiſe I will in four days put this letter in the preſs, and you ſhall hear in another manner—not from a ruffian and an aſſaſſin—but from an injured gentleman, who is not aſhamed of ſubſcribing himſelf."

Some account of Mr. Mackercher, "the melting Scot," is given in *The Adventures of Peregrine Pickle*. He is well known, from the part he took in ſupporting the pretenſions of Mr. Anneſley, who claimed the Angle-

ſea title and eſtate. Smollett ſeems, by the following note, to have occaſionally aſſiſted him in his diſtreſs.

"I am much mortified that my raſcally ſituation will not at preſent permit me to ſend more than the trifle incloſed, as nothing could give me more pleaſure than an opportunity of ſhowing with how much friendſhip and eſteem I am, &c."

In 1755, he publiſhed a new tranſlation of *The Hiſtory of the Renowned Don Quixote, from the Spaniſh of Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra; with ſome account of the Author's Life: Illuſtrated with 28 new Copperplates, deſigned by Hayman, and engraved by the beſt artiſts*, in 2 vols. 4to. This tranſlation was undertaken in dependence upon the encouragement of a ſubſcription; and was executed, as it was ſuppoſed, with a very ſlender knowledge of the Spaniſh language, a circumſtance that expoſed him to much abuſe. He informs us, in a ſhort *Advertiſement*, that his aim in this undertaking, was to maintain that ludicrous ſolemnity, and ſelf-importance, by which the inimitable *Cervantes* has diſtinguiſhed the character of *Don Quixote*, without raiſing him to the inſipid rank of a dry philoſopher, or debaſing him to the melancholy circumſtances and unentertaining caprice of an ordinary madman; and to preſerve the native humour of *Sancho Panza* from degenerating into mere proverbial phlegm, or affected buffoonery; that he has endeavoured to retain the ſpirit and ideas, without ſervilely adhering to the literal expreſſions of the original, from which, however, he has not ſo far deviated, as to deſtroy that formality of idiom ſo peculiar to the Spaniards, and ſo eſſential to the character of the work; that the ſatire and propriety of many of the alluſions which had been loſt in the change of cuſtoms and lapſe of time, is reſtored in explanatory notes; and the whole conducted with that care and circumſpection which ought to be exerted by every author, who, in attempting to improve upon a taſk already performed, ſubjects himſelf to the moſt invidious compariſon.

If it ſhould be thought that all thoſe advantages have not been attained by the tranſlator, it ought to be remembered, that *Don Quixote* is the moſt difficult book

in the world to tranſlate, from the extreme frequency of its idiomatic phraſes; that few of even the Spaniards of the preſent day underſtand all its beauties, or can explain the obſcurities which the lapſe of time has occaſioned; and that to transfuſe all the ſpirit of *Cervantes*, his fine humour, and the beauty of his numerous alluſions, into a foreign language, is a taſk which a genius equal to that of the inimitable author himſelf could not perform, without the ſame knowledge of the country and of the times in which he lived; including alſo the moſt extenſive acquaintance with the language, idioms, cuſtoms, humorous expreſſions, provincial phraſes, and proverbial ſayings of the people for whom the tranſlation is intended.

Since, therefore, the beſt tranſlation of *Don Quixote* we can look for, muſt be executed by a perſon poſſeſſed of a genius a-kin to the author, and chiefly qualified by books, a better than Smollett's, upon the whole, cannot be expected to appear in our language. The verſion of *Jarvis*, the painter, may, in ſome reſpects, be thought more exact, but it is leſs ſpirited and elegant. The genius of Smollett comes neareſt to the great original; though it fails him in preſerving the formality of the Spaniſh idiom. In this reſpect, he is ſurpaſſed by *Motteux*, his inferior in genius; who, under the burleſque veil of farcical diſguiſe, in which he ſometimes envelopes the author, diſplays the ludicrous ſolemnity of *Don Quixote*, and the native humour of *Sancho Panza*, with more felicity of expreſſion and propriety of alluſion. *Motteux's* tranſlation fell in the way of the preſent writer when he was very young, and on that account, perhaps, it made a deeper impreſſion, and appeared more worthy of attention than it really is; yet, he doubts not but many readers who take up an *Engliſh Don Quixote*, merely to be diverted, will pronounce *Motteux's* the beſt book.

On the comparative merits of the tranſlations of *Don Quixote*, by *Motteux*, *Jarvis*, and Smollett, he is happy to coincide in opinion with the ingenious author of a late "Eſſay on the Principles of Tranſlation." His compariſon between *Motteux* and *Smollett*, with ſome

exceptions in favour of the latter, is excellent, and, though long, is too valuable to be withheld.

" *Smollett* inherited from nature a ſtrong ſenſe of ridicule, a great fund of original humour, and a happy verſatility of talent, by which he could accommodate his ſtyle to almoſt every ſpecies of writing. He could adopt, alternately, the ſolemn, the lively, the ſarcaſtic, the burleſque, and the vulgar. To theſe qualifications, he joined an inventive genius, and a vigorous imagination. As he poſſeſſed talents equal to the compoſition of original works of the ſame ſpecies with the novel of Cervantes; ſo it is not perhaps poſſible to conceive a writer more completely qualified to give a perfect tranſlation of that novel.

" *Motteux*, with no great abilities as an original writer, appears to me to have been endowed with a ſtrong perception of the ridiculous in human character, a juſt diſcernment of the weakneſſes and follies of mankind. He ſeems likewiſe to have had a great command of the various ſtyles which are accommodated to the expreſſion both of grave burleſque, and of low humour. Inferior to Smollett in inventive genius, he ſeems to have equalled him in every quality which was eſſentially requiſite to a tranſlator of Don Quixote. It may, therefore, be ſuppoſed, that the conteſt between them will be nearly equal, and the queſtion of preference very difficult to be decided. It would have been ſo, had Smollett confided in his own ſtrength, and beſtowed on his taſk that time and labour which the length and difficulty of the work required: but Smollett too often wrote in ſuch circumſtances, that diſpatch was his primary object. He found various Engliſh tranſlations at hand, which he judged might ſave him the labour of a new compoſition. Jarvis could give him faithfully the ſenſe of his author: and it was neceſſary only to poliſh his aſperities, and lighten his heavy and awkward phraſeology. To contend with Motteux, Smollett found it neceſſary to aſſume the armour of Jarvis. This author had purpoſely avoided, through the whole of his work, the ſmalleſt coincidence of expreſſion with Motteux, whom, with equal preſumption and injuſtice, he accuſes

in his preface of having 'taken his verſion wholly from the French.' We find, therefore, both in the tranſlation of Jarvis, and that of Smollett, which is little elſe than an improved edition of the former, that there is a ſtudied rejection of the phraſeology of Motteux. Now Motteux, though he has frequently aſſumed too great a licence, both in adding to, and retrenching from the ideas of his original, has, upon the whole, a very high degree of merit as a tranſlator. In the adoption of correſponding idioms, he has been eminently fortunate; and, as in theſe there is no great latitude, he has, in general, preoccupied the appropriated phraſes; ſo that a ſucceeding tranſlator, who proceeded on the rule of invariably rejecting his phraſeology, muſt have, in general, altered for the worſe. Such, I have ſaid, was the rule laid down by Jarvis, and by his copyiſt and improver Smollett, who, by thus abſurdly rejecting what his own judgment and taſte muſt have approved, has produced a compoſition decidedly inferior, on the whole, to that of Motteux *."

In 1756, he made a journey to Scotland, to viſit his mother, then reſiding with her daughter, Mrs. Telfer, at Scotſton, in Peeblesſhire, where he paſſed ſome time in the gratification of the fine feelings of affection and gratitude, which occupied ſo large a portion of his heart.

This year he began the *Critical Review*, or *Annals of Literature*, which he conducted, with much ability, till 1763, but with too much ſenſibility, when any of the unfortunate authors, whoſe works he had, it may be, juſtly cenſured, attempted to retaliate, and with a degree of acrimony that involved him in a variety of diſputes. The moſt ſerious in its conſequence, was his diſpute with Admiral Knowles, who had publiſhed a pamphlet in defence of his conduct in the expedition to Rochfort, 1758. On this performance he was ſo particularly and unguardedly ſevere, that the Admiral commenced a proſecution againſt the printer; declaring, at the ſame time, that his only reaſon for commencing an action, was to know the real author, and, if a gentleman, to inſiſt on ſatisfaction. In this affair he behaved with prudence and ſpirit. Deſirous of compro-

* Profeſſor Tytler's Eſſay on the Principles of Tranſlation, p. 178-184.

miſing the diſpute with the Admiral, in an amicable manner, he applied to his friend Mr. Wilkes, in the following letter, dated Chelſea, March 24. 1759, to interpoſe his good offices with his opponent.

"*Ecce iterum Criſpinus*.—Your generoſity with reſpect to Johnſon *, ſhall be the theme of our applauſe and thankſgiving. I ſhall be very proud to find myſelf comprehended in your league, offenſive and defenſive; nay, I conſider myſelf already as a contracting party, and have recourſe to the aſſiſtance of my allies. It is not, I believe, unknown to you, that Admiral Knowles has taken exception at a paragraph in the *Critical Review* of laſt May, and commenced a proſecution againſt the printer. Now, whatever termination the trial may have, we ſhall infallibly be expoſed to a conſiderable expence, and therefore I wiſh to ſee the proſecution quaſhed. Some gentlemen, who are my friends, have undertaken to find out, and talk with thoſe who are ſuppoſed to have influence with the ſaid Admiral; may I beg the ſame favour of you and your friends? The trial will come on in the beginning of May, and if the affair cannot be compromiſed, we intend to kick up a duſt, and die hard. In a word, if that fooliſh Admiral has any regard to his own character, he will be quiet, rather than provoke farther the reſentment of, &c."

The Admiral continued inflexible; and ſentence was about to be pronounced againſt the printer, when Smollett gallantly ſtood forth, avowed himſelf the writer of the ſtrictures in queſtion, and offered the Admiral any ſatisfaction he might demand. The conſequence was, that a proſecution was immediately commenced againſt him, and he was fined 100 l. and ſentenced to three months impriſonment in the King's Bench priſon. His ſpirited conduct on this occaſion, gained him much credit and applauſe.

His engagements in this publication likewiſe involved him in a diſpute with Grainger, who thought himſelf injuriouſly treated in the account of his "Tranſlation of Tibullus," in the *Critical Review* for December 1758, and

* Mr. Wilkes, at the interceſſion of Smollett, had procured the liberty of Dr. Johnſon's ſervant, Francis Barber, who had been impreſſed.

publiſhed "A Letter to Tobias Smollett, M. D. occaſioned by his criticiſm upon a late tranſlation of Tibullus, 8vo," 1758, in which he proves, by examples principally taken from the criticiſm on his own work, that the Editors of the *Critical Review* had broken, in every particular, their promiſes ſolemnly made to the public in the plan of their journal; "that they would revive the true ſpirit of criticiſm; that they would never condemn or extol, without having firſt carefully peruſed the performance; that they would never act under the influence of connection or prejudice; that they would not venture to criticize a tranſlation without underſtanding the original; that they would never wreſt the ſenſe, or miſinterpret the meaning of any author; that they would never, without reluctance, diſapprove even of a bad writer who had the leaſt title to indulgence; and that they would not exhibit a partial and unfair aſſemblage of the blemiſhes of any production."

On the publication of the "Roſciad," Churchill, imagining Smollett the author of the offenſive review of that performance, retaliated, with great ſpirit, in the "Apology to the Critical Reviewers."

> Whence could ariſe this mighty critic ſpleen,
> The Muſe a trifler, and her theme ſo mean?
> What had I done, that angry heaven ſhould ſend
> The bittereſt foe where moſt I wiſh'd a friend?
> Oft hath my tongue been wanton at thy name,
> And hail'd the honours of thy matchleſs fame.
> For me let hoary *Fielding* bite the ground,
> So nobler *Pickle* ſtand ſuperbly bound.
> From *Livy's* temples tear th' hiſtoric crown,
> Which, with more juſtice, blooms upon thine own, &c.

It appears, however, Churchill was miſtaken in his ſuſpicion; for Smollett, hearing that Mr. Colman had alſo accuſed him of having made an attack on his moral character in the *Critical Review*, he exculpated himſelf from the charge, in the following letter to Garrick, dated Chelſea, April 5. 1761.

"I ſee Mr. Colman has taken offence at the article in the *Critical Review* which treats of the "Roſciad," and I underſtand he ſuſpected me to be the author of that article. Had he aſked me the queſtion, I ſhould have

freely told him I was not the author of the offenſive article, and readily contributed to any decent ſcheme which might have been propoſed for his ſatisfaction: But as he has appealed to the public, I ſhall leave him and the real author to ſettle the affair between themſelves, and content myſelf with declaring to you, and that upon my honour, that I did not write one word of the article upon the "Roſciad," and that I have no ill will nor envy to Mr. Colman, whom I have always reſpected as a man of genius, and whoſe genius I ſhall always be ready and pleaſed to acknowledge either in private or in public. I envy no man of merit; and I can ſafely ſay I do not even repine at the ſucceſs of thoſe who have no merit. I am old enough to have ſeen and obſerved that we are all play-things of fortune, and that it depends upon ſomething as inſignificant and precarious as the toſſing up of a halfpenny, whether a man riſes to affluence and honours, or continues to his dying day ſtruggling with the difficulties and diſgraces of life. I deſire to live quietly with all mankind, and, if poſſible, to be upon good terms with all thoſe who have diſtinguiſhed themſelves by their merit. I muſt own that if I had examined the article upon the "Roſciad" before it was ſent to the preſs, I ſhould have put my negative upon ſome expreſſions in it, though I cannot ſee in it any reflection to the prejudice of Mr. Colman's moral character; but I have been ſo hurried ſince my enlargement that I had not time to write one article in the *Critical Review*, except that upon *Bower's Hiſtory*, and perhaps I ſhall not write another theſe ſix months. That hurry, and a bad ſtate of health, have prevented me from returning in perſon the viſit you favoured me with in the King's Bench. I beg you will accept this letter in lieu of it, and believe me that no man reſpects Mr. Garrick more than he is reſpected by his obliged humble ſervant, &c."

Beſides theſe, many other diſputes aroſe with different writers, who conſidered themſelves injured by the ſeverity of his criticiſms. Seldom a month paſſed without ſome complaints on that head, and thoſe not often couched in the moſt decent terms. But whatever reaſon he had

to complain on that account, he afterwards found that the revenge of an author was nothing compared to the rancour of the politician.

In 1757, his comedy of *The Repriſal; or, the Tars of Old England*, an after-piece of two acts, was performed at Drury-Lane theatre, and met with ſucceſs, yet not equal to what its merit might have juſtly claimed. He acknowledged himſelf "highly obliged for the friendly care of Mr. Garrick, exerted in preparing it for the ſtage, and ſtill more for his acting the part of Luſignan, in "Zara," for his benefit, on the ſixth, inſtead of the ninth night, to which he was only entitled by the cuſtom of the theatre." Being informed that attempts had been made to embroil him on this occaſion with Garrick, he juſtified himſelf from the imputation of having ſpoken diſreſpectfully of him, by the following letter:—

"Underſtanding from Mr. Derrick, that ſome officious people have circulated reports in my name, with a view to prejudiſe me in your opinion, I, in juſtice to myſelf, take the liberty to aſſure you, that if any perſon accuſes me of having ſpoken diſreſpectfully of Mr. Garrick, of having hinted that he ſolicited for my farce, or had intereſted views in bringing it upon the ſtage, he does me wrong, upon the word of a gentleman. The imputation is altogether falſe and malicious. Excluſive of other conſiderations, I could not be ſuch an idiot to talk in that ſtrain, when my own intereſt required a different ſort of conduct. Perhaps the ſame inſidious methods have been taken to inflame former animoſities, which, on my part, are forgotten and ſelf-condemned. I muſt own you have acted in this affair of the farce, with that candour, openneſs, and cordiality, which even mortify my pride, while they lay me under the moſt ſenſible obligations; and I ſhall not reſt ſatisfied until I have an opportunity to convince Mr. Garrick that my gratitude is at leaſt as warm as any other of my paſſions. Meanwhile, I profeſs myſelf, &c."

In 1758, he gave to the world his *Complete Hiſtory of England, deduced from the deſcent of Julius Cæſar, to the Treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle*, 1748, in 4 vols. 4to. This work, it is ſaid, he compoſed and prepared for the preſs,

in fourteen months; an effort to which his narrow circumſtances might have directed him; but to which nothing but the moſt diſtinguiſhed abilities, and the moſt vigorous application, could have been equal. It was reprinted the year following in 11 vols. 8vo, in weekly numbers, with engraved heads, and a *Dedication* to Pitt, then one of the Secretaries of State, and the idol of the nation. The ſale, by the uncommon arts of publication made uſe of by the publiſhers, was very extenſive, and he is ſaid to have cleared 2000l. by it, and the *Continuation*, &c. which followed, in 4 vols. 8vo, 1762, and one vol. 8vo, 1765.

During his confinement in the King's Bench priſon, he is ſaid to have written his *Adventures of Sir Launcelot Greaves*, a kind of Engliſh Quixote, in which he deſcribed ſome remarkable characters, then his fellow priſoners. This novel was firſt printed in the *Britiſh Magazine*, which he conducted in 1760 and 1761, and afterwards in 2 vols. 12mo, 1762.

When the Earl of Bute aſſumed the management of public affairs, in 1762, jealouſy took the alarm, and raiſed a general outcry againſt the adminiſtration of the day. His promotion was attended with many unpopular meaſures, and great diſſatisfaction aroſe among many orders of men. Party violence and civil diſcord diffuſed a dark cloud of implied ſuſpicion, or open averſion, over the riſing glories of a young and amiable prince, who had ſo lately aſcended the throne of his anceſtors, with the moſt enthuſiaſtic attachment of his ſubjects. How juſtly the clamour was founded, is not for the preſent writer to determine. Theſe circumſtances have been attributed by ſome to weakneſs, by others to ill deſign in the adminiſtration, and by many, to the ſuperior ſkill and verſatility of their opponents, in forming parliamentary cabal, and fomenting popular diſcontent.

The new miniſter, happy in the ſmiles of his ſovereign, whom he may be ſaid to have cultivated from his cradle, but never poſſeſſing the confidence of the people, found it neceſſary to employ ſome able writers to palliate and defend the ſteps which had led to his advancement. Smollett, among others, was engaged; and he entered on

the arduous taſk appointed for him with great ſpirit. In defence of his patron, he began a weekly paper called *The Briton*, in conjunction with other literary retainers to the miniſter; but, being offended at ſome behaviour in his friends, he relinquiſhed it with diſguſt. The firſt number of *The Briton*, the ſuſpicious vehicle of praiſe undeſerved, and miſplaced panegyric, appeared May 29th 1762, and was followed, on the other ſide, by the famous "North Briton," written by Mr. Wilkes; which, at laſt, by the force of elegant invective and ſound argument, and unwarrantable raſhneſs of the miniſter, who violated in his perſon the principles of the Engliſh conſtitution, completely defeated its opponent, and diſſolved the friendſhip which had lately ſubſiſted between the authors of the reſpective performances. Two months before the firſt number of *The Briton* appeared, Smollett wrote the following letter to Mr. Wilkes, dated Chelſea, March 28th 1762.

"My warmeſt regard, affection and attachment, you have long ago ſecured. My ſecrecy you may depend upon *. When I preſume to differ from you, in any point of opinion, I ſhall always do it with diffidence and deference. I have been ill theſe three months, but hope ſoon to be in a condition to pay my reſpects to Mr. Wilkes in perſon. Meanwhile, I muſt beg leave to trouble him with another packet, which he will be ſo good as to correct at his leiſure. That he may continue to enjoy his happy flow of ſpirits, and proceed through life with a flowing ſail of proſperity, is the wiſh, and the hope, and the confident expectation of &c."

The Briton was laid down, Feb. 12. 1763; and, on the 8th April following, the nobleman, in whoſe defence it was ſet on foot, finding the ſtream of popular diſcontent too ſtrong to be reſiſted, reſigned his office of Firſt Lord of the Treaſury, which had excited ſo much envy and clamour, and paſſed the remaining part of his days in philoſophic eaſe and tranquillity. Whatever his deſerts may be, it is certain that the tribute of public applauſe was never paid to his merits. To this moment we feel

* Relative to Mr. Wilkes's Obſervations on the Spaniſh Papers.

the fatal effects of the early prejudices conceived againſt him.

After Lord Bute ſeceded from his oſtenſible ſituation in a miniſtry, which the ſtrong arm of military interpoſition was ſcarcely able to protect, Smollett is ſaid to have experienced neglect from that nobleman, who had, in many inſtances, been found a generous patron of men of inferior importance and ability.

The neglect of his patron, and the uncomfortable ſtate of public affairs, made a deep impreſſion on his mind; and this, united to a ſedentary life, and aſſiduous application to ſtudy, having impaired his health, which had been weakly from his infancy, he went abroad, with a view to re-eſtabliſh it, in June 1763, and continued in France and Italy for about two years.

He wrote an account of his *Travels through France and Italy*, in a ſeries of letters to ſome friends, which were publiſhed in 2 vols. 8vo, 1766. In his firſt letter he mentions the motives that induced him to travel. "In gratifying your curioſity, I ſhall find ſome amuſement to beguile the tedious hours, which, without ſome ſuch employment, would be rendered unſupportable by diſtemper and diſquiet. You knew and pitied my ſituation; traduced by malice, perſecuted by faction, and overwhelmed by the ſenſe of a domeſtic calamity which it was not in the power of fortune to repair." In the courſe of his travels, he appears to have laboured under a conſtant fit of chagrin; and his letters afford a melancholy proof of the influence of bodily diſtemper over the beſt diſpoſition.

To this cynical relation of his *Travels*, Sterne is ſuppoſed to allude in the following paſſage of his "Sentimental Journey," Vol. I. p. 80. "The learned Smelfungus travelled from Boulogne to Paris—from Paris to Rome—and ſo on—but he ſet out with the ſpleen and jaundice, and every object he paſſed by was diſcoloured and diſtorted.—He wrote an account of them, but it was nothing but an account of his miſerable feelings—I met Smelfungus in the grand portico of the Pantheon—he was juſt coming out of it—'It is nothing but a huge cock-pit,' ſaid he,—'I wiſh you had ſaid nothing worſe

of the Venus Medicis,' replied I,—for in paſſing through Florence, I had heard he had fallen foul upon the goddeſs, and uſed her worſe than a common ſtrumpet, without the leaſt provocation in nature.—I popped upon Smelfungus again at Turin, in his return home, and a ſad tale of ſorrowful adventures he had to tell, wherein he ſpoke of moving accidents by flood and field, and of the cannibals which each other eat: the Anthropophagi—He had been flayed alive, and bedeviled, and worſe uſed than St. Bartholomew, at every ſtage he had come at—'I'll tell it,' ſaid Smelfungus, 'to the world.'—'You had better tell it,' ſaid I, 'to your phyſician.'

In 1769, he again entered the thorny paths of political diſcuſſion, and publiſhed his *Adventures of an Atom*, in 2 vols. 12mo; a political romance, ſuppoſed to be written in 1748, exhibiting, under *Japaneſe* names, the conduct and diſſentions of the political parties in Great Britain, from the commencement of the French war in 1754, to the diſſolution of Lord Chatham's adminiſtration in 1767-8. In this work he has found reaſon for altering his opinion of Lord Bute, as he did, in *The Continuation* of his Hiſtory for changing his ſentiments with regard to Pitt.

In 1770, his health being ſtill in a declining ſtate, he paid a viſit to his native country, with the rational hope that air and exerciſe would reſtore him to his former health and vigour. He arrived at Edinburgh in the latter end of June, and, after ſpending a few days with his mother, ſet out for Inveraray, accompanied by Mrs. Telfer, and reſided a ſhort time with his couſin, James Smollett, Eſq. of Bonhill, at his houſe of Cameron.

In 1771, not long after his return from Scotland, where his complaints appear to have met with but little alleviation, he publiſhed his *Expedition of Humphry Clinker*, in 3 vols. 12mo, in which, under the character of *Matthew Bramble*, he inſerted the obſervations he made on reviſiting his native country, and the ſcenes of infancy. The remarks which introduce his fine *Ode to Leven Water*, deſerve particular attention.

"The water of Leven, though nothing near ſo conſiderable as the Clyde, is much more tranſparent, paſ-

toral, and delightful. This charming ſtream is the outlet of Lochlomond, and, through a tract of four miles, purſues its winding courſe, murmuring over a bed of pebbles, till it joins the Frith at Dumbarton. A very little above its ſource, on the lake, ſtands the houſe of Cameron, belonging to Mr. Smollett, ſo emboſomed in oak wood, that we did not ſee it till we were within fifty yards of the door. The lake approaches on one ſide to within ſix or ſeven yards of the window. It might have been placed in a higher ſite, which would have afforded a more extenſive proſpect and a drier atmoſphere; but this imperfection is not chargeable on the preſent proprietor, who purchaſed it ready built, rather than be at the trouble of repairing his own family houſe of Bonhill, which ſtands two miles from hence, on the Leven, ſo ſurrounded with plantations, that it uſed to be known by the name of the Mavis (or thruſh) Neſt. I have ſeen the Lago di Gardi, Albano de Vico, Bolſena, and Geneva, and I prefer Lochlomond to them all; a preference which is certainly owing to the verdant iſlands that ſeem to float upon its ſurface, affording the moſt enchanting objects of repoſe to the excurſive view. Nor are the banks deſtitute of beauties which even partake of the ſublime. On this ſide they diſplay a ſweet variety of woodland, corn-field, and paſture, with ſeveral agreeable villas, emerging, as it were, out of the lake; till at ſome diſtance, the proſpect terminates in huge mountains, covered with heath, which, being in the bloom, affords a very rich covering of purple. Every thing here is romantic beyond imagination. This country is juſtly ſtyled the Arcadia of Scotland: I do not doubt but it may vie with Arcadia in every thing but climate. I am ſure it excels it in verdure, wood and water. What ſay you to a natural baſon of pure water, near thirty miles long, and, in ſome places, ſeven miles broad, and in many above a hundred fathom deep, having four and twenty habitable iſlands, ſome of them ſtocked with deer, and all of them covered with wood, containing immenſe quantities of delicious fiſh, ſalmon, pike, trout, perch, flounders, eels and powans, the laſt a delicate kind of freſh-water herring peculiar to this

lake; and finally communicating with the ſea, by ſending off the Leven, through which all thoſe ſpecies (except the powan) make their exit and entrance occaſionally.

"Incloſed I ſend you the copy of a little *Ode* to this river by *Dr. Smollett*, who was born on the banks of it, within two miles of the place where I am now writing. It is at leaſt pictureſque and accurately deſcriptive, if it has no other merit. There is an idea of truth in an agreeable landſcape taken from nature, which pleaſes me more than the gayeſt fiction which the moſt luxuriant fancy can diſplay."

This was the laſt publication he gave to the world.

With a view once more to try the effects of a warmer climate, he returned to Italy, and died near Leghorn, October 21. 1771, in the 51ſt year of his age.

After his death, his name appeared to a tranſlation of *Telemachus*, in 2 vols. 12mo, 1776. His name likewiſe appeared to a tranſlation of *Gil Blas*, in 4 vols. 12mo; and, in conjunction with Dr. Francklin, to a tranſlation of *Voltaire's Proſe Works*, in 27 vols. 8vo, 1763; but little of it was done by his own hand; he only reviſed it, and added a few notes. He was employed during the laſt years of his life, in preparing a new edition of the *Ancient and Modern Univerſal Hiſtory*, great part of which he had originally written himſelf, particularly the *Hiſtory of France, Italy, and Germany*. He wrote and compiled, beſides, a number of works for the bookſellers, to which his name does not appear.

Of the domeſtic life of Smollett, the little that is known does not exhibit a picture of happineſs. He married Miſs Laſcelles, a lady from Jamaica, by whom he had a daughter whom he tenderly loved. The death of this daughter, which happened a ſhort time before he went abroad in 1763, made an impreſſion on his mind which he never perfectly recovered.

To add to the regret which every reader of ſenſibility muſt feel at the untoward circumſtances which attended him through life, his widow was left friendleſs in a foreign country. To relieve her from ſome temporary

diſtreſs, the tragedy of "Venice Preſerved" was performed at the Theatre Royal, Edinburgh, March 3. 1784, for her benefit, and the money remitted to Italy.

On this occaſion, Houſton Stewart Nicholſon, Eſq. of Carnock, appeared in the part of Pierre; and the following prologue was ſpoken by Mr. Woods, of the Theatre Royal, Edinburgh, ſaid to be written by Profeſſor Richardſon of Glaſgow, author of "Poems chiefly Rural," and other ingenious and elegant performances.

Though letter'd Rome, and poliſh'd Greece could boaſt
The ſplendid table, and the courteous hoſt,—
The rites to ſtrangers due;—though poets ſing
This mighty warrior, or that powerful king,
The wand'rer's friend—yet ſtill, whate'er is told
By modern poets, or by bards of old,
Is rivall'd here;—for here, with joy, we ſee
The heart-felt bliſs of heav'nly charity!
See her, with rapture, ſpread her willing hands,
And throw her bleſſings into foreign lands;
Dry up the tear ſhe never ſaw to flow,
And eager catch the diſtant ſigh of woe.
In vain ſeas ſwell, and mountains riſe in vain—
A widow's groans are heard acroſs the main;
—A widow now!—Alas! how chang'd the day!—
Once the NARCISSA * of your poet's lay;
Now, fatal change! (of ev'ry bleſs bereft,
Nor child, nor friend, nor kind protector left),
Spreads on a diſtant ſhore her ſcanty board,
And humbly takes what ſtrangers can afford.
Yet link'd to you by ev'ry tender tie,
To you ſhe lifts the long-dejected eye,
And thus ſhe ſpeaks—"Who dar'd, with manly rage,
"To laſh the vices of an impious age †?
"Who dar'd to ſeize the bold hiſtoric pen,
"Paint living kings, and miniſters, as men §?
"Who ſung ſad Scotia's hapleſs ſons forlorn,
"Her broken peace, her freſheſt laurels torn ¶?
"Or who, on oaten read, by Leven's ſide,
"Sung the fair ſtream, and hail'd the dimpling tide ‖?
"Or who?—ſay he, for ſuch, I'm ſure, are here,
"Whoſe honeſt boſoms never yet knew fear;
"Sons of the north, who ſtem corruption's tide **,
"Your country's honour, and your nation's pride—
"*Lords of the lion heart and eagle eye*,
"Who heed no ſtorm that howls along the ſky—
"Say ye—whoſe lyre, to manly numbers ſtrung,
"The glorious bliſs of Independence ſung ††?

* Her fictitious name in Roderick Random. † "Advice and Reproof," a ſatire.
§ The Hiſtory of England. ¶ Ode, 1746, beginning, "Mourn happy Caledonia, mourn."
‖ Ode to Leven Water.
** Alluding to the oppoſition given by the northern counties to the corruption of fictitious votes.
†† Ode to Independence.

" Who felt that pow'r, and ſtill ador'd his ſhrine?—
" It was your SMOLLETT! Oh! he once was mine!"
Tears ſtopp'd her utt'rance, elſe ſhe would have ſaid,
" Like him be bold, in virtue undiſmay'd;
" Let Independence all your actions guide,
" Your ſureſt patron, and your nobleſt pride."

Soon after his death, a monument was erected to his memory, near Leghorn, by his wife, with the following inſcription, written by his friend Armſtrong; in a ſtrain of energetic elegance, ſorrow, and manly indignation.

Hic oſſa conduntur
TOBIÆ SMOLLETT, Scoti;
Qui, proſapia generoſa et antiqua natus,
Priſcæ virtutis exemplar emicuit;
Aſpectu ingenuo,
Corpore valido,
Pectore animoſo,
Indole apprime benigna,
Et ſere ſupra facultates munificis,
Inſignis.
Ingenio feraci, faceto, verſatili.
Omnigenæ fere doctrinæ mire capaci,
Varia fabularum dulcedine
Vitam moreſque hominum,
Ubertate ſumma ludens, depinxit.
Adverſo, interim, nefas! tali tantoque alumno,
Niſi quo ſatyræ opipare ſupplebat,
Seculo impio, ignavo, fatuo,
Quo muſæ vix niſi nothæ
Mecænatulis Britannicis
Fovebantur.
In memoriam
Optimi et amabilis omnino viri,
Permultis amicis deſiderati,
Hocce marmor,
Dilectiſſima ſimul et amantiſſima conjux
L. M.
Sacravit.

Tranſlation.

Here
Reſt the remains
of
TOBIAS SMOLLETT,
A North Briton,
Who ſprung
From an ancient and reſpectable family,
Shone forth an example
Of the virtues of former times.
Of an ingenuous countenance,
And manly make.
With a breaſt animated by the juſteſt ſpirit,

He was eminently diſtinguiſhed
For great benevolence of temper,
And a generoſity even above his fortune.
His wit had every character
Of fertile inventiveneſs,
Of true pleaſantry,
Of flexibility to every ſubject,
From his aptneſs and wonderful capacity
For every kind of learning.
The exerciſe of theſe talents
Produced a variety of pleaſing fictions,
In which,
With great exuberance of fancy,
And true humour,
He laughed at, and deſcribed
The lives and manners of men:
While,
(Shameful to relate!)
This genius,
This honour to his country,
Met with nothing
In theſe abandoned, worthleſs, inſipid times,
But what was unfavourable to him,
Except indeed
Their abundance of ſupply to his pen
Of matter of ſatire:
Times!
In which
Hardly any literary merit,
But ſuch as was in the moſt falſe or futile taſte,
Received any encouragement
From the paltry mock Mecænaſes of Britain.
In honour to the memory
Of this moſt worthy and amiable
Member of ſociety,
Sincerely regretted by many friends,
This monument
Was, by his much beloved and affectionate wife,
Dutifully and deſervedly
Conſecrated.

In 1774, a pillar was erected to his memory on the banks of the Leven, by his couſin, James Smollett, Eſq. of Bonhill, with the following nervous and claſſical inſcription, part of which proceeded from the manly, forcible, and energetic pen of Dr. Johnſon.

Siſte viator!
Si lepores ingeniique venam benignam,
Si morum callidiſſimum pictorem,
Unquam es miratus,
Immorare paululum memoriæ
TOBIÆ SMOLLETT, M. D.
Viri virtutibus hiſce
Quas in homine et cive

Et laudes et imiteris,
Haud mediocriter ornati:
Qui in literis variis verſatus,
Poſtquam felicitate ſibi propria,
Seſe poſteris commendaverat,
Morte acerba raptus
Anno ætatis 51
Eheu! quam procul a patria!
Prope Liburni portum in Italia,
Jacet ſepultus.
Tali tantoque viro, patrueli ſuo,
Cui in decurſu Lampada
Se potius tradidiſſe decuit,
Hanc Columnam,
Amoris, eheu! inane monumentum
In ipſis Levinæ ripis,
Quas verſiculis ſub exitu vitæ illuſtratas,
Primis infans vagitibus perſonuit,
Ponendam curavit
JACOBUS SMOLLETT de Bonhill.
Abi et reminiſcere,
Hoc quidem honore,
Non modo defuncti memoriæ,
Verum etiam exemplo, proſpectum eſſe;
Aliis enim, ſi modo digni ſint,
Idem erit virtutis præmium!

Tranſlation.

Stop, traveller!
If pleaſing amiable manners,
A rich and agreeable vein of wit,
A happy talent for exhibiting pictures of life and manners,
Ever commanded your admiration,
Here,
Let reflection fix your thoughts
on
TOBIAS SMOLLETT, M. D.
One more than commonly endued with thoſe virtues
Which, in a man, and a citizen,
You would praiſe, or imitate.
Who,
Having ſecured the applauſe
Of poſterity,
By a variety of literary abilites,
And a peculiar felicity of compoſition,
Was,
By a rapid and cruel diſtemper,
Snatched from this world in the 51ſt year of his age.
Far, alas! from his country
He lies interred near Leghorn, in Italy.
In teſtimony of his many and great virtues
This empty monument,
The only pledge, alas! of his affection,
Is erected
On the banks of the Leven,
The ſcene of his birth and of his lateſt poetry,

By JAMES SMOLLETT, of Bonhill,
His couſin;
Who ſhould rather have expected this laſt tribute from him.
Go, and remember
This honour was given alone to the memory of the deceaſed,
But, for the encouragement of others,
Deſerve, like him, and be alike rewarded.

His *Hiſtory of England*, with the *Continuation*, has been frequently reprinted ſince his death, in 16 vols. 8vo. A new edition of the *Continuation*, from the revolution to the death of George II. as a ſupplement to Hume, was printed in 8 vols. 8vo, 1791, with alterations. The common editions of his novels, particularly of *Roderick Random*, *Peregrine Pickle*, and *Humphry Clinker*, are too numerous to be ſpecified. His *Plays and Poems*, were collected by T. Evans, Bookſeller in the Strand, in one volume 12mo, 1784. His *Miſcellaneous Works*, conſiſting of his Plays, Poems, and Novels (except the *Adventures of an Atom*,) were collected by Mr. David Ramſay, the judicious and well-informed printer of "The Edinburgh Evening Courant," in 6 vols. 8vo, 1790, with humorous frontiſpieces by Rowlandſon. His *Poetical Works* were collected, by the preſent writer, in the 10th vol. of "The Works of the Britiſh Poets," in 13 vols. 8vo, 1793-5, with a "Biographical and Critical Preface," which is reprinted here, corrected and enlarged.

The character of Smollett has been fondly, and not inaccurately delineated in the *Epitaph* on his monument near Leghorn, and the *Inſcription* on the pillar erected to his memory on the banks of the Leven. In the dedication of *Count Fathom* to *Dr.* —— by which he meant himſelf, he has drawn his own character. His manner of living is deſcribed in *Humphry Clinker*, where young *Melford* is ſuppoſed to dine with him at his houſe in Chelſea.

"He carried me to dine with S——, whom you and I have long known by his writings. He lives in the ſkirts of the town, and every Sunday his houſe is open to all unfortunate brothers of the quill. I was civilly received, in a plain, yet decent habitation, which opened into a very pleaſant garden, kept in order; and, indeed, I

ſaw none of the outward ſigns of authorſhip, either in the houſe or the landlord, who is one of the few writers of the age that ſtand upon their own foundation, without patrimony, and above dependence. By all accounts S—— is not without weakneſs and caprice, but he is certainly good-humoured and civilized; nor do I find that there is any thing overbearing in his diſpoſition."

In his perſon and manners, Smollett was faſhioned to prepoſſeſs all men in his favour. His figure was graceful and handſome; and in his air and manner, there was a dignity that commanded reſpect, joined with a benignity that inſpired affection. With the moſt poliſhed manners, and the fineſt addreſs, he poſſeſſed a loftineſs and elevation of ſentiment and character, without pride or haughtineſs. His general behaviour bore the genuine ſtamp of true politeneſs, the reſult of an overflowing humanity and goodneſs of heart. He was a man of upright principles, and of great and extenſive benevolence. He not only embraced, but ſought and created occaſions of doing good. He was the reliever of the diſtreſſed, the protector of the helpleſs, and the encourager of merit. His converſation was ſprightly and agreeable. In the domeſtic relations, his conduct was tender, affectionate and exemplary. In his opinions of mankind, he was candid and liberal. To thoſe who were above him he allowed the due ſuperiority. To his equals and inferiors, he behaved with eaſe and affability, without the inſolence of familiarity, or the parade of condeſcenſion. With his amiable qualities and agreeable manners, he united courage and independence. In the declaration of his opinions, he was open; in his actions, he was intrepid. No danger could prevent him from ſaying or doing thoſe things which he conceived in themſelves to be right, and in their conſequences to be uſeful to his friends or to his country. He had been bred a Tory, and generally adhered to the principles of that party; but he had a ſincere love for his country, and a diffuſive benevolence for the whole human race. His experience in the world inflamed his hatred againſt vice and corruption, in proportion to his love of virtue, and zeal for the public good; and he

thought it no violation of charity to ſtigmatize vice, profligacy, and hypocriſy. But in his ſupport of perſons and meaſures, he ſometimes conſidered only the perſons and meaſures, without taking other objects and relations into the account. He was more frequently influenced by perſonal attachment, and hurried on by preſent impulſe, than guided by comparative views of real advantage, examined by impartial reaſon. His oppoſition to the great, often, in its warmth, exceeded the importance of the object. He was occaſionally miſled by a heated imagination, ſtrong reſentments, and the mortification of diſappointed hopes, into bitterneſs and party virulence, long kept alive by the indecent and irritating provocations of triumphant adverſaries. Under theſe impreſſions, his deſcriptions, as an *hiſtorian*, were often diſtorted, and his deciſions, as a *critic*, on the literary productions of ſome of his contemporaries, were ſometimes unwarrantably warped by narrow prejudice, and expreſſed in the harſh terms of coarſe contempt. Whatever end he purſued, he followed with an eagerneſs that was not neceſſary to compaſs it. The defects in his temperament, natural or habitual, made him unproſperous and unhappy. His ſenſibility was too ardent; his paſſions were too eaſily moved. His candour frequently became credulity; his liberality often ſubjected him to deception. His favours were generally beſtowed on the moſt undeſerving of thoſe who had recourſe to his aſſiſtance; not ſo much from want of diſcernment, as want of reſolution; for he had not fortitude enough to reſiſt the importunity of even the moſt worthleſs. In friendſhip, he was ardent and ſteady; but in the latter part of his life, he ſometimes very feelingly bewailed the treachery and perfidy he had experienced in conſequence of the miſtaken connections he had formed, and to which every man of warm attachments will be expoſed. In the practice of phyſic, for want of ſuppleneſs and perſeverance, he never was eminent. As an author, he was not ſo ſucceſsful as his happy genius and acknowledged merit certainly deſerved. His connections were extenſive, and his friends numerous and reſpectable. He was intimately acquainted with the moſt eminent of his poeti-

cal and literary contemporaries. He was reſpected by the world as a man of ſuperior talents, wit, and learning. But he never acquired a patron among the great, who, by his favour or beneficence, relieved him from the neceſſity of writing for a ſubſiſtence. Bookſellers may be ſaid to have been his only patrons, and from them he had conſtant employment, in tranſlating, compiling, and reviewing. Without doubt, he made a great deal of money by his writings; and had he been a rigid economiſt, and endowed with the gift of retention, he might have lived and died very independent. But his difficulties, whatever they were, proceeded not from oſtentation or extravagance. He was hoſpitable, but not oſtentatiouſly ſo; and his table was plentiful, but not extravagant. An irritable and impatient temper was his greateſt failing; but, making due allowance for a ſpirit wounded by ingratitude, and irritated by the malignant ſhafts of envy, dulneſs, and profligacy, it would be difficult to name a man ſo reſpectable for the excellencies of his mind, or amiable for the virtues of his heart.

The predominant excellencies of his intellect were, fertility of invention, vigorous ſenſe, brilliant fancy, and verſatile humour. His underſtanding was quick and penetrating, his imagination was fertile, his memory retentive, and his humour original. He ſhows in his writings that he was intimately acquainted with Greek and Roman literature, and had ſtudied, with ſucceſs, the various branches of modern learning. He was well verſed in the hiſtory and politics of Europe, and in the conſtitution of his country. The principal ſubject of his inquiry, was the human character; and, in his literary career, the repreſentation of life and manners, his principal object. Man he ſurveyed with the moſt accurate obſervation. His underſtanding, acute and vigorous, was well fitted for diving into the human mind. His humour, lively and verſatile, could paint juſtly and agreeably what he ſaw. He poſſeſſed a rapid and clear conception, with an animated and graceful ſtyle. His obſervations on life and manners, are commonly juſt, ſtrong, and comprehenſive, and his reaſoning generally

ſound and concluſive. His perceptions of beauty are vivid and diſtinct, his feelings ardent, his taſte correct. His humour, though lively and pungent, is not, perhaps, equal in ſtrength and elegance to that of Congreve, Fielding, and Swift. In chaſtity and delicacy, it is certainly inferior to that of Addiſon, but equal in purity and moral tendency, to that of his contemporary, Fielding. It is keen, ſprightly, variegated, and founded on truth. It expoſes ſucceſsfully, folly, hypocriſy, impropriety, and ſuch vices as are objects of ridicule. To trace the latent ſources of human actions, and to develope the various incongruities of conduct ariſing from them, was the favourite bent of his mind, as it was of Theophraſtus, Bruyere, Moliere, Fielding, and others; and, in deſcribing objects of this kind, whether in the way of fabulous narration or dramatic compoſition, he is ſo peculiarly happy, that, as a humorous and pleaſant painter of life and manners, he has reflected the higheſt honour on the place of his nativity, and muſt ever be conſidered by his country, among the firſt of her ſons in literary reputation.

As an author, Smollett has diſtinguiſhed himſelf as an *hiſtorian*, a *noveliſt*, a *journaliſt of travels*, a *dramatiſt*, and a *poet*; and muſt be acknowledged to have made a conſiderable addition to the general ſtock of elegant and uſeful literature.

As an *hiſtorian*, he ranks among the moſt pleaſing, though not among the moſt profound writers of our nation who have exerciſed their abilities in hiſtorical compoſition. When his *Hiſtory of England* appeared, Hume had not given to the world his narrative of the earlier events of Engliſh ſtory, which muſt be conſidered as the commencement of his ingenious apology for the families of Tudor and Stuart; and the greater diſcernment or ſuperior frivolity of the age had almoſt conſigned to oblivion, Carte and Brady, Oldmixon and Rapin. The public were in want of a conciſe, yet full, a faithful, yet animated hiſtory of England; and he had the ſatisfaction of obſerving, that his performance was received with general approbation, and read with much greater pleaſure and improvement than the dull unaffecting nar-

rations of preceding writers. Conſidering the time and circumſtances in which it was written, it is, indeed, a great effort of genius and application. Without entering into a minute detail of obſcure, diſagreeable, and unintereſting events, he has contented himſelf with a conciſe and animated abridgment of the barbarous periods, and has only enlarged upon ſubjects that are important and inſtructive. In dignity of hiſtorical compoſition, and profoundneſs of philoſophical reſearch, he is inferior to Hume; but in felicity of ſentiment, deſcription, and expreſſion, he may ſafely contend with the moſt illuſtrious of his predeceſſors. In the pages of Smollett, we do not find ſo many applications of philoſophical inquiry to the inveſtigation of facts, as in thoſe of Thucydides or Xenophon, Salluſt or Tacitus, Hume or Gibbon; but he has exhibited ſpecimens of picturesque narration and elegant expreſſion, little inferior to any which the pencil of Livy has ſketched, or the pen of Robertſon has compoſed. We do not find the induſtry of the antiquary joined with the fire of imagination, and the majeſty and elegance of diction; but a Robertſon is an uncommon perſon; nor ought we to be offended at the want of an union which cannot ordinarily be expected. Inſtead of ſearching, with indefatigable labour, into every record that can be met with, ſettling doubtful points with accuracy, bringing to light the moſt hidden facts, he ſeems principally ſolicitous to adorn and render the moſt important events acceptable, by communicating them in a graceful manner to the world. As the ſoul of hiſtory is truth, it were indeed greatly to be wiſhed that he had been at as much pains to procure authentic information, as he has been to obtain the reputation of a claſſic writer. In this laſt reſpect he has all poſſible merit; but his narration is not ſo much diſtinguiſhed for the fidelity and diligence with which it is written, as for beauty of compoſition. It is a haſty and indigeſted performance; too voluminous for an abridgment, and too imperfect for an hiſtory. It abounds with prejudices and miſrepreſentations, which no lover of liberty can forgive, and no force of genius or beauty of language can atone for. His partiality for the Tory party is ma-

nifeſt in almoſt every page; and, in ſtating the arguments which paſſed on any ſubject, he generally relates thoſe only which were urged on one ſide; which unavoidably creates a ſuſpicion of his partiality. His reflections, in many inſtances, are highly exceptionable; and in many places he ſeems to be inconſiſtent with himſelf, and to argue againſt his own principles. At one time he appears the ſanguine friend of liberty, and applauds all oppoſition againſt the ſtretches of prerogative; and yet, at another, he cenſures the reſentment which the parliament expreſſed againſt ſuch encroachments. In his account of the methods uſed to extinguiſh the rebellion, 1745, he has laviſhed all the powers of the pathos in laboured deſcriptions of horror: but he ſeems more ſolicitous to ſay what is brilliant and ſtriking, than what is juſt and authentic. In deſcribing characters, which is ſuppoſed to be his great excellence, he appears to have taken fancy rather than truth for his guide. His character of Queen Mary is inaccurate and injurious; and that of King William, is, in many reſpects, falſified by the circumſtances of his life. The great excellence of his work, is the elegance and ſpirit of the ſtyle, which is, in general, nervous, clear, fluent, bold, and florid; and the reader, who is content with acquiring only a general knowledge of our hiſtory, cannot be more agreeably inſtructed; for his manner of writing is ſo entertaining, that attention ſeldom ſleeps over his pages. But he has not performed the duties of an hiſtorical writer with ſufficient care, accuracy, and impartiality. His imagination overpowers his judgment; and he is tempted to employ his powers in the vain glow of colouring, and is more ſtudious to dazzle the imagination with a gaudy diſplay of ſplendid ornaments, than to engage the underſtanding by juſt reaſoning and ſolid reflections.

His *Continuation* is not more confuſed and inaccurate than ſuch haſty productions unavoidably muſt be. A narrative which records recent events, and delineates living characters, ſcarce comes up to the idea we form of a hiſtory. The writer is moſt likely to adhere to veracity in his relation; but we are not to expect all the freedom and impartiality we would wiſh to find in his comment upon men and meaſures. He who dares boldly to cenſure liv-

ing characters, and to expoſe the corrupt motives of their political conduct, may, perhaps, be thought to want prudence as a man; and he who is afraid to do either, may be deemed deficient in courage as an hiſtorian. Under ſuch circumſtances, Smollett has acquitted himſelf with no ſmall degree of ſkill and addreſs. If he has not been able to give all the light and information which hiſtory ſhould afford; if he has not always expreſſed himſelf with that fearleſs ſpirit which diſtinguiſhes the unbiaſſed hiſtorian, he has avoided thoſe prejudices and partial attachments which render his *Hiſtory* liable to cenſure. In his reflections on public meaſures, he diſcovers intelligence and acuteneſs, without the affectation of ſagacity; and, with reſpect to perſonal characters, he has not offered incenſe to the idols of popularity, nor heaped calumny on the victims of public aſperſion. In his account of the parliamentary debates, he is extremely copious and intereſting; but, in ſome inſtances, he deviates from the deſign, and ſtoops below the dignity of hiſtorical compoſition. In his portraiture of characters, though he muſt be acquitted of flattery and of malice, yet his fancy is not always under the due regulation of judgment. His painting is bold, glowing, and animated; yet it is ſometimes neceſſary to write the name over the picture. The ſtyle is various, elegant, and forcible; yet it is not always correct, and is now and then too luxuriant and figurative. We cannot always applaud the rectitude of his judgment, nor the preciſion of his ideas; yet we ſeldom fail to admire his vivacity of ſentiment and peculiar glow of deſcription. In his reflections on the bill for the relief of debtors, he has drawn a deſcription of a man of ſentiment and ſenſibility labouring under the miſery of impriſonment, which is ſo exquiſitely pathetic, that it is impoſſible to read it without ſhedding tears of ſympathy at every line. At the ſame time, he is greatly to be blamed for commemorating events too unimportant to fill the pages of hiſtory.

As a writer of that ſpecies of modern romance which has been denominated a *novel*, he is entitled to the praiſe of being one of the greateſt that our nation has produced. He ranks with Defoe, Richardſon, and Fielding, the great maſters of proſaic fiction; and though we cannot

ſay that he has ſurpaſſed them, he has entered into a noble competition. His novels exhibit a ſeries of odd, extravagant, but natural pictures of life and manners, drawn with the deſcriptive fidelity of a Hogarth. He has painted the characters, and ridiculed the follies of life, with equal ſtrength, humour, and propriety. The ſtyle is characterized by a juſt ſelection of appropriate terms and deſcriptive expreſſions; of "proper words in proper places." But he is not without faults. His characters are ſometimes overcharged, his humour is often coarſe, and he has exhibited ſome ſcenes which may corrupt a mind unſeaſoned by experience. His ſyſtem of youthful profligacy, as exemplified in ſome of his libertines, is without excuſe. Profligates, bullies, miſanthropes, gamblers, and duelliſts, are among his favourite characters. His writings, however, are of a moral tendency; they have ſpirit, humour, and morality, and diſplay the beauties of that genius which allures and rewards the attention of the diſcreet reader. Unguarded as they are in many of their repreſentations, they are highly entertaining, and will always be read with pleaſure.

His *Adventures of Roderick Random* is a novel of firſt rate merit. It is written in ſuch a manner as to pleaſe all times and all people. It exhibits a natural, lively, and entertaining repreſentation of the difficulties to which a friendleſs orphan is expoſed, from his own want of experience, as well as from the ſelfiſhneſs, malice, and baſe indifference of mankind. The mean ſcenes in which he is involved, are deſcribed with true humour; and every reader finds entertainment in viewing thoſe parts of life where the manners and paſſions are undiſguiſed by affectation, ceremony, or education, and the whimſical peculiarities of diſpoſition appear as nature has implanted them. The baſe purpoſes of hypocriſy, cant, ſelfiſh plauſibility, cunning, and pretended friendſhip, are expoſed in a maſterly manner; and the inconſiſtencies that flow from the motley and repugnant qualities which are often whimſically blended together by the folly of men, are deſcribed with infinite humour and ſagacity. Many of his characters are drawn from real life. The originals of *Gawkey*, *Strap*, *Crab*, *Potion*, *Oakhum*, *Whiffle*, *Macklhane*, and *Morgan*, were, in his own time, known and pointed

out: but ſhort as the time is ſince the publication of this novel, it at preſent derives no advantage from that ſource, and owes its celebrity to its intrinſic merit alone. In deſcribing ſea characters, he is peculiarly happy. *Trunnion*, *Hatchway*, and *Pipes*, of *Peregrine Pickle*, are highly finiſhed originals; but *Lieutenant Bowling* exceeds them, and perhaps equals any character that has yet been painted by the happieſt genius of ancient or modern times. This is indeed nature itſelf. As well as the ladder of promotion, his very name has long become proverbial for an honeſt blunt ſeaman, unacquainted with mankind, and the ways of the world. The moral tendency of the ſtory none can deny. It is written with the pureſt intentions of promoting virtue, and correcting the ordinary follies of life. But in the accompliſhment of this purpoſe, it is to be feared that ſcenes are laid open which it would be ſafer to conceal from youthful and inexperienced readers. The baſe purpoſes of fraud and duplicity are expoſed; but a due attention to the common duties of life, decent deportment, purity of manners, and the appearance of morality and ſeriouſneſs, are brought into diſcredit and ſuſpicion. Such repreſentations, it is to be feared, may be diſadvantageous to early virtue; dear-bought experience having long convinced us, how very narrow the defiles between ridiculed rectitude and flagitious conduct.

His *Adventures of Peregrine Pickle* relate, in language, by turns, eaſy, elegant, and pathetic, a ſucceſſion of events, forming a natural and well-drawn picture of human life; which the thoughtleſs may peruſe with advantage, and the prudent with emotions of triumph. From the wild unlucky boy, teazing his aunt and the commodore, and heading a rebellion at ſchool againſt his maſter, we trace the headſtrong youth, of pride unbroken, and unbridled appetite, plunging into folly, vice, and diſſipation, waſting his ſubſtance, injuring the woman of all others he loved, and, at laſt, pining in priſon. In this forlorn condition, deteſting the world, abhorring himſelf, and loving *Emilia* to diſtraction, he proteſts to her brother, "that he had broke off all connections with mankind, and that he impatiently longed for the hour of his diſſolution, which, if it ſhould not ſoon arrive by the courſe of nature, he was reſolved to haſten it with his

own hands, rather than be expoſed to the contempt and more intolerable pity of a raſcally world." He remains for ſome time obſtinately bent on this frantic determination, notwithſtanding the zealous efforts of expoſtulating friendſhip; and but for the unexpected payment of a large debt which had been given up as loſt, and was almoſt forgotten, would probably have ſacrificed himſelf to that ſullen irrational independence, the too frequent infatuation of the preſent day, which leads us into habits of miſery and ruin, and without imparting to us ſufficient ſtrength of mind to reſiſt temptation or ſtruggle with calamity, commences in folly, and concludes with ſelf-deſtruction. Rouſed by the voice of friendſhip, and again reſtored to affluence, he returns with a ſtern reluctance, founded on a ſenſe of his own unworthineſs and vicious imprudence, to ſociety and love; convinced that, after all the buſtle of pleaſure, and the glitter of wealth, real happineſs is only to be found in moderate enjoyment, domeſtic tranquillity, and ſocial virtue. This work is equal to *Roderick Random* in original invention, intereſting combination of incident, fine ridicule, and uſeful application to the purpoſes of life, and is, perhaps, ſuperior to it in genuine humour and profound learning. His feaſt given by the *Republican Doctor*, after the manner of the ancients, is well managed, and replete with rich ſtrokes of humour and pointed ſatire; which, in the rancour of Toryiſm, he directed with eagerneſs againſt his Whig-opponent, Akenſide. Yet, in this epiſode, and other parts of the work, he has, with ſome juſtice, been thought low, indelicate, and immoral; but it ſhould be recollected, that in delineations of certain circumſtances, and certain characters, it is difficult for the author, who draws from nature and real life, to avoid ſhocking the faſtidious eye of nicety and ſcrupulous decorum. The path of humour is pleaſant and inviting; but it is a dangerous one, and too often leads us aſtray into the by-roads of indelicacy, as well as ill-nature. It is of the nature of all humour, to be ſometimes groſs and ſometimes inelegant. Smollett's taſte for ridicule and ſatire, as has been already obſerved, was ſtrong, but indelicate, which made him not over-curious in the choice of his topics: His ſtyle in picturing his characters, therefore, though maſterly, is ſometimes without that elegance of

hand which is required to correct and allay the force of his colouring. In this reſpect, the dialogue between *Pipes* and the hedge-nymph his maſter had accidentally picked up on the road, and afterwards introduced into company as a fine lady, is culpably obſcene, though the ſtory is well told, and the character well imagined. The behaviour of *Pickle* to *Hornbeck* is alſo highly injuſtifiable; not ſatisfied with injuring that unfortunate huſband beyond repair, he adds perſonal violence to inſult. Yet, with theſe, and other drawbacks, on the ſcore of morality, the preſent writer cannot but conſider *Peregrine Pickle*, contrary to the general opinion, as a firſt-rate novel, whoſe merits far exceed the modern puny productions of frivolous faſhion and fickly ſentiment, which load the ſhelves of our circulating libraries, and teach nonſenſe and iniquity to our wives and daughters. It is not, however, to be put into the hands of young perſons without diſtinction and reſerve; but when the judgment is ripened by reflection, and the morals out of danger, it will afford much uſeful inſtruction, as well as rational and elegant amuſement.

His *Adventures of Ferdinand Count Fathom*, and *Sir Launcelot Greaves*, are ſtill in the liſt of what may be called reading novels, but there is no injuſtice in placing them in a rank below *Roderick Random* and *Peregrine Pickle*. Invention, character, compoſition, incident, humour, and knowledge of mankind, are to be found in both; but ſituations are deſcribed which are hardly poſſible, and characters are painted, which, if not altogether unexampled, are at leaſt incompatible with modern manners, and which ought not to be, as the ſcenes are laid in modern times. The hiſtory of *Count Fathom*, though improbable, is pleaſing, and, upon the whole, not immoral, though in ſome places very indelicate. It is profeſſedly written to unfold the myſteries of fraud, to inſtruct the ignorant, and entertain the vacant; but the characters of that profligate adventurer and his wicked aſſociates, are repreſented in ſuch horrible features, that humanity is ſhocked, and the imagination is diſguſted. The repreſentation of a virtuous character, in oppoſition to the adventurer, contributes, indeed, in ſome degree, to relieve the attention from a ſucceſſion of flagitious objects, and by contraſt, heightens the expreſſion, and gives a *relief* to

the moral of the whole. But, the advantage of introducing vicious and profligate characters, into a moral production, by way of expoſing them to ſhame and ridicule, may be reaſonably doubted; for a ſeries of crimes and follies may give a mind unſeaſoned by experience, an inſight into vice which the good moral drawn from them may not prevent being put in practice. In many parts of this novel, it muſt be acknowledged, he has delightfully copied the ſtyle and manner of his maſter Le Sage; and it may be aſſerted, without hazard of contradiction, that his deſcription of *Fathom's* adventure in Chap. XX. and XXI. is wrought up to a pitch of horror which rivals, if not exceeds, the moſt terrible touches in the "Caſtle of Otranto," ſurpaſſes every thing of the kind which we find in "The Romance of the Foreſt," or "The Myſteries of Udolpho." The hiſtory of *Sir Launcelot Greaves*, though ſtill more improbable, has great merit, and is truly original in the execution, notwithſtanding that the hint is borrowed from Don Quixote. There are many characters well drawn, many diverting incidents, and many fine ſtrokes of genius, nature, and paſſion. But ſome of the humorous characters are exaggerated beyond all bounds of probability; and certain perſons are too often introduced, particularly *Captain Crowe*, whoſe appearance is ſometimes diſguſting. It is written with the ſame vivacity and energy of expreſſion which characterize his other productions.

His *Adventures of an Atom* belong to the claſs of compoſitions in fictitious hiſtory, in the form, rather than the ſubſtance of the work, which is all true in the main, though the circumſtances are occaſionally heightened by the decorations of fancy, or tinged by the dark hues of political prejudice. Having characterized the chiefs that diſputed the adminiſtration of *Japan* (England), he profeſſes to give "a plain narration of hiſtorical incidents, without pretending to philoſophize like *Hume*, or dogmatize like *Smollett*." The characters of the Whig party are, in general, drawn with unwarrantable ſeverity. Political prejudice never appears more juſtly reprehenſible, than when it attempts to caſt a veil over diſtinguiſhed merit, and loads exalted characters with obloquy. Though the work, for ingenuity and contrivance in the compoſition,

is inferior, upon the whole, to his former productions, it is written, for the moſt part, with his uſual energy and felicity of expreſſion. His compariſon of the *Council Board* to the allegorical *Table of Cebes*, is well managed; and his digreſſions on *alchemy*, *magic*, *necromancy*, *ſorcery*, or *witch-craft*, diſplay that peculiar combination of profound learning and genuine humour which forms the baſis of ludicrous compoſition.

In his *Expedition of Humphry Clinker*, he has carefully avoided the faults which may be juſtly charged to *Count Fathom* and *Sir Launcelot Greaves*. It conſiſts of a ſeries of letters written by different perſons to their reſpective correſpondents, in the manner of Richardſon. It has no extravagant characters, nor unnatural ſituations; on the contrary, an admirable knowledge of life and manners is diſplayed, and moſt uſeful leſſons are given, applicable and intereſting to very common ſituations. It has all the ſpirit and vigour of his former works, and is evidently the production of a mind enriched and mellowed by experience, and ſoftened, but not ſoured by misfortune. In the conduct of the characters of *Liſmahago*, *Tabitha Bramble*, and *Humphry Clinker*, there are many touches which occaſion the moſt exquiſite merriment. The whole work, indeed, abounds with ſituations of the truly comic kind; the incidents and characters are unfolded with fine turns of ſurpriſe, and it is among the few works of invention produced by the Engliſh writers, which will always continue in requeſt.

A very obvious ſimilitude is obſervable between the three heroes of Smollett's chief productions. *Roderick Random*, *Peregrine Pickle*, and *Matthew Bramble*, are all brothers of the ſame family. The ſame ſatiric, cynical diſpoſition, the ſame generoſity and benevolence, are the diſtinguiſhing and characteriſtical features of all three; but they are far from being ſervile copies or imitations of each other. He ſeems to have deſcribed his own character at the different ſtages and ſituations of his life.

Roderick Random, *Peregrine Pickle*, and *Humphry Clinker*, are undoubtedly efforts of genius and fancy, which rival the maſterly productions of the moral, the ſublime, the pathetic, but tireſome Richardſon, with all his profound and accurate knowledge of the various workings

of the human heart, and the ingenious, the humorous, but diffuſe Fielding, with all his wit, learning, and knowledge of mankind. That Fielding repeatedly diſplays a thorough acquaintance with nature, and that innumerable paſſages may be pointed out in Richardſon, which do equal credit to the goodneſs of his heart and the depth of his underſtanding, cannot be denied; yet, after peruſing the wire-drawn pages of "Pamela," "Clariſſa," and "Grandiſon," or the common-place introductory diſcuſſion and diffuſe narrative of "Joſeph Andrews," "Tom Jones," and "Amelia," we never quit them with ſo much reluctance, as we feel in cloſing the pages of Smollett, who, with leſs regularity of fable, and without introducing ſo much of what may be called fine writing, poſſeſſes, in an eminent degree, the art of rouſing our feelings, and fixing the attention of his readers.

As a *journaliſt of travels*, he was petulant, illiberal, and almoſt on every occaſion loſt his temper; but ſome excuſe is to be made for a frame convulſed by the pangs of diſeaſe, a ſpirit wounded by ingratitude, and a life embittered by diſappointment and domeſtic calamity. Under ſuch impreſſions, perhaps, he ought not to have written; but where is the man, who having once found ſolace in a purſuit, will not naturally ſeek for comfort and conſolation in the ſame path? With theſe defects, the relation of his *Travels* deſerves to be mentioned with reſpect. It is formed upon no hypotheſis, but experiment; a man of ſenſe diveſted of partiality, reaſoning with freedom upon every occurrence, and exhibiting a naked view of objects and characters. It is executed upon an ethic plan, calculated to deſtroy error and falſe taſte, to introduce and improve an acquaintance with men and things, to diſplay a comparative ſketch of human life, and to eſtabliſh true notions of life and living.

"I chiefly conſulted," ſays Lord Gardenſtone in his "Travelling Memorandums,"—"Keyſler, Moore, and Smollett. I was beſt pleaſed with my old and excellent friend Smollett. Teſty and diſcontented as he is, he writes with perſpicuity. His obſervations are generally ſenſible, and even his oddities are entertaining."

As a *dramatiſt*, his genius is of a leſs conſiderable character than might be expected from his unrivalled talent

for the deſcription of life and manners. He was in poſſeſſion of humour and of a peculiar kind of fancy. His wit had every character of fertile invention, true pleaſantry, and flexibility to every ſubject. He was capable of delineating the individual object with peculiar happineſs. But he beheld his powers in a light which deceived him, when he aimed at bringing his characters into the buſineſs of the ſtage, and creating a dramatic ſeries of events. Here his judgment, but not his genius, failed him. His *Regicide*, though reckoned undramatic, excels, in language and ſituation, and every other dramatic requiſite, moſt of the tragedies which were preſented to the public at the time. It is animated, nervous, and pathetic. The character of the virtuous, brave, but unfortunate *Dunbar*, is finely contraſted with the headſtrong, fierce, ambitious *Stuart*, while the amiable *Eleonora*, eſteeming the firſt, but, in ſpite of herſelf, loving the latter, is diſtracted between her paſſion and her duty. Yet, with all its merits, it was never able to procure admiſſion on the ſtage. It is cenſured by Churchill, with great ſatirical ſeverity, in the following lines of his "Apology to the Critical Reviewers."

Who ever read the *Regicide*, but ſwore
The author wrote as man ne'er wrote before.
Others for plots and underplots may call,
Here's the right method—have no plot at all.
Who can ſo often in his cauſe engage,
The tiny pathos of the Grecian ſtage.
While horrors riſe, and tears ſpontaneous flow,
As tragic ha! and no leſs tragic oh!
To praiſe his nervous weakneſs all agree,
And then for ſweetneſs, who ſo ſweet as he?
Too big for utterance when ſorrows ſwell,
The too big ſorrows flowing tears muſt tell.
But when theſe flowing tears muſt ceaſe to flow,
Why—then the verſe muſt ſpeak again, you know.

In his *Repriſal*, written profeſſedly for the theatre, he evinces dramatic powers, which, if he had perſevered in writing for the ſtage, might have obtained him equal diſtinction in this department of literature. His comic genius has ſhown itſelf very conſpicuouſly in this little piece. The characters of *Oclaber*, *Maclaymore*, *Champignon*, and *Block*, are natural and entertaining, and as finely diſtinguiſhed as in any dramatic piece in the Engliſh language.

To ſuit the ungenerous pride of a London rabble, our Gallic neighbours are too much debaſed, and treated with illiberal contempt; though *Lieutenant Lyon's* concluding ſpeech makes ſome amends for this fault.

As a *poet*, his compoſitions are ſo excellent in their kind, as to make us regret that they are not more numerous: Lively, humorous, witty, elegant, tender, pathetic, and ſublime; happy and ſucceſsful in whatever the univerſality of his genius prompted him to undertake; his ſpirit, his ſentiment, his language, are full of nature, enthuſiaſm, and ſimplicity, and while a love of poetry remains among us, muſt always pleaſe the reader of taſte and ſenſibility.

His *Ode to Independence*, the greateſt effort of his genius, ranks with the lyric compoſitions of Dryden, Akenſide, Collins, and Gray. It is written in the true ſpirit of lyric poetry. It is bold, various, ardent, and impetuous. It abounds with animated ſentiments, glowing images, and nervous and energetic expreſſions. The introduction is poetical and abrupt.

> Thy ſpirit, Independence, let me ſhare,
> Lord of the lion heart and eagle eye;
> Thy ſteps I follow with my boſom bare,
> Nor heed the ſtorm that howls along the ſky.

The picture exhibited in theſe lines is ſtriking, becauſe the circumſtances are happily choſen, briefly and diſtinctly delineated. It is ſublime, becauſe the images are few, and in themſelves great and magnificent. The *lion heart and eagle eye*, ſuggeſt an idea of the high ſpirit and commanding aſpect of *Independence*; and the poet following with *boſom bare*,' denotes, in a picturesque manner, the eagerneſs and enthuſiaſm of the votary. After a brief addreſs to *Independence*, imploring his protection, he ſees, in idea, the high object of his adoration, and, in a ſtrain of poetry, exceedingly wild and romantic, he rehearſes his birth, education, and qualities.

> Deep in the frozen regions of the north,
> A goddeſs violated brought thee forth,
> Immortal *Liberty*, whoſe look ſublime
> Hath bleach'd the tyrant's cheek in every varying clime!

Liberty, according to the poet's acceptation, means the ſecurity of our lives and poſſeſſions, and freedom from

external force. *Independence* is of higher import, and denotes that internal ſenſe and conſciouſneſs of freedom, which beget magnanimity, fortitude, and that becoming pride, which leads us to reſpect ourſelves, and do nothing unworthy of our condition. *Liberty*, therefore, is, with perfect propriety, ſaid to be the mother of *Independence*, and *Diſdain* his father—*Diſdain* ariſing from indignation againſt an oppreſſor, and triumph on having fruſtrated or eſcaped his malice. This ſtern perſonage is ſtrongly characterized in the following deſcription:

Of ample front, the portly chief appear'd,
The hunted bear ſupplied a ſhaggy veſt,
The drifted ſnow hung on his yellow beard,
And his broad ſhoulders brav'd the furious blaſt.

Men may enjoy liberty without independence; they may be ſecure in their perſons and poſſeſſions, without feeling any uncommon elevation of mind, or any ſenſe of their freedom. But, if their liberty is attacked, they are alarmed; they feel the value of their condition; they are moved with indignation againſt their oppreſſors; they exert themſelves, and, if they are ſucceſsful, or eſcape the danger that threatened them, they triumph; they reflect on the happineſs and dignity conferred by freedom; they applaud themſelves for their exertions; become magnanimous and independent. There is, therefore, no leſs propriety in deducing the origin of *Independence* from *Diſdain* and *Liberty*, than fixing the era of her birth. Our Saxon anceſtors, free, ſimple, and inoffenſive, were attacked, eſcaped the violence of their adverſary, reflected on the felicity of their condition, and learned independence.

The education of *Independence*, and the ſcene of his nativity, are ſuited to his illuſtrious lineage, and to the high achievements for which he was deſtined.

The light he ſaw in Albion's happy plains,
Where, under covert of a flow'ring thorn,
While Philomel renew'd her warbled ſtrains,
The auſpicious fruit of ſtol'n embrace was born—
The mountain dryads ſeiz'd with joy
The ſmiling infant, to their charge conſign'd;
The Doric muſe careſs'd the favourite boy;
The hermit Wiſdom ſtor'd his opening mind.

The imagery in theſe lines is ſoft and agreeable, the language ſmooth, and the verſification harmonious.

In the ſecond antiſtrophe, he celebrates his heroic and beneficent actions, and returns, at the end of the third ſtrophe, to acknowledge, with gratitude, the protection he had requeſted, and the power of *Independence*, in preſerving him untainted by the debaſing influences of grandeur, and the admiration of vain magnificence. Animated with this reflection, and conſcious of the dignity annexed to an independent ſtate of mind, he inveighs againſt theſe *minions of Fortune*, who would impoſe upon mankind by the oſtentation of wealth, and the parade of pageantry.

In fortune's car behold that minion ride,
With either India's glittering ſpoils oppreſt:
So moves the ſumpter-mule in harneſs'd pride,
That bears the treaſure which he cannot taſte.
For him let venal bards diſgrace the bay,
And hireling minſtrels wake the tinkling ſtring;
Her ſenſual ſnares let faithleſs pleaſure lay;
And all her jingling bells fantaſtic folly ring;
Diſquiet, doubt, and dread, ſhall intervene;
And nature, ſtill to all her feelings juſt,
In vengeance hang a damp on every ſcene,
Shook from the baleful pinions of diſguſt.

Theſe lines, embelliſhed by fancy, and recommended to the ear by harmony, are the invective of truth and honeſt indignation.

The laſt antiſtrophe has an air of ſoftneſs, benignity, and mildneſs, that leaves a very pleaſing effect on the mind of the reader, animated with ſentiments of public virtue, glowing with ſelf-approbation, and fired with all the ardour and enthuſiaſm of the poet.

His poems on occaſional ſubjects are marked with the different diſpoſitions which muſt have prevailed at different times of his life. His *Advice* and *Reproof* bear teſtimony to his political and literary prejudices, but they abound in manly ſentiments, and indignant ſatire, expreſſed in forcible and elegant language. His elegantly-plaintive *Love-Elegy* is pure nature. It is tender, ſentimental, and pathetic; and the happy ſimplicity and unaffected manner, intereſt and charm the reader of natural taſte. His *Tears of Scotland* ought not to be mentioned without every commendation. It diſcovers a genius equally fitted for the pathetic and the ſublime. Whatever may be thought of the ſubject, it unites a glow of poetical en-

thuſiaſm, with a high degree of that eloquent ſimplicity, which appears ſo eaſy, and which is yet ſo difficult to imitate. The following paſſage, among others, is exquiſitely tender and beautiful.

> The pious mother doom'd to death,
> Forlaken wanders o'er the heath;
> The bleak wind whiſtles round her head,
> Her helpleſs orphans cry for bread;
> Bereft of ſhelter, food, and friend,
> She views the ſhades of night deſcend,
> And ſtretch'd beneath th' inclement ſkies,
> Weeps o'er her tender babes, and dies.

His *Ode to Leven Water* diſcovers delicacy of ſentiment, and pictureſque deſcription, joined to ſimplicity of taſte. The images are paſtoral and pleaſing, and the verſification correct and harmonious. He celebrates his native ſtream with all the elegant ſimplicity of an Arcadian ſhepherd. His *Odes to Mirth* and *Sleep*, are not of the higheſt kind, but they have enthuſiaſm, and ſpirit, and propriety of verſification. His *Songs* are ſpirited, ingenious, and witty; a few are elegant, tender, and pathetic.

THE PREFACE.

OF all kinds of ſatire, there is none ſo entertaining and univerſally improving, as that which is introduced, as it were, occaſionally, in the courſe of an intereſting ſtory, which brings every incident home to life; and, by repreſenting familiar ſcenes in an uncommon and amuſing point of view, inveſts them with all the graces of novelty, while nature is appealed to in every particular.

The reader gratifies his curioſity in purſuing the adventures of a perſon in whoſe favour he is prepoſſeſſed; he eſpouſes his cauſe, he ſympathiſes with him in diſtreſs, his indignation is heated againſt the authors of his calamity; the humane paſſions are inflamed; the contraſt between dejected virtue and inſulting vice appears with greater aggravation; and every impreſſion having a double force on the imagination, the memory retains the circumſtance, and the heart improves by the example. The attention is not tired with a bare catalogue of characters, but agreeably diverted with all the variety of invention; and the viciſſitudes of life appear in their peculiar circumſtances, opening an ample field for wit and humour.

Romance, no doubt, owes its origin to ignorance, vanity and ſuperſtition. In the dark ages of the world, when a man had rendered himſelf famous for wiſdom or valour, his family and adherents availed themſelves of his ſuperior qualities, magnified his virtues, and repreſented his character and perſon as ſacred and ſupernatural. The vulgar eaſily ſwallowed the bait, implored his protection, and yielded the tribute of homage and praiſe even to adoration; his exploits were handed down to poſterity with a thouſand exaggerations; they were repeated as incitements to virtue; divine honours were

paid, and altars erected to his memory, for the encouragement of thoſe who attempted to imitate his example; and hence aroſe the heathen mythology, which is no other than a collection of extravagant romances. As learning advanced, and genius received cultivation, theſe ſtories were embelliſhed with the graces of poetry; that they might the better recommend themſelves to the attention, they were ſung in public, at feſtivals, for the inſtruction and delight of the audience; and rehearſed before battle, as incentives to deeds of glory. Thus tragedy and the epic muſe were born, and, in the progreſs of taſte, arrived at perfection. It is no wonder that the ancients could not reliſh a fable in proſe, after they had ſeen ſo many remarkable events celebrated in verſe, by their beſt poets; we therefore find no romance among them, during the era of their excellence, unleſs the Cyropœdia of Xenophon may be ſo called; and it was not till arts and ſciences began to revive, after the irruption of the Barbarians into Europe, that any thing of this kind appeared. But when the minds of men were debauched, by the impoſition of prieſtcraft, to the moſt abſurd pitch of credulity, the authors of romance aroſe, and, loſing ſight of probability, filled their performances with the moſt monſtrous hyperboles. If they could not equal the ancient poets in point of genius, they were reſolved to excel them in fiction, and apply to the wonder rather than the judgment of their readers. Accordingly they brought necromancy to their aid, and inſtead of ſupporting the character of their heroes by dignity of ſentiment and practice, diſtinguiſhed them by their bodily ſtrength, activity, and extravagance of behaviour. Although nothing could be more ludicrous and unnatural than the figures they drew, they did not want patrons and admirers, and the world actually began to be infected with the ſpirit of knight-errantry, when Cervantes, by an inimitable piece of ridicule, reformed the taſte of mankind, repreſenting chivalry in the right point of view, and converting romance to purpoſes far more uſeful and entertaining, by making it aſſume the ſock, and point out the follies of ordinary life.

The ſame method has been practiſed by other Spaniſh and French authors, and by none more ſucceſsfully than by Monſieur Le Sage, who, in his Adventures of Gil Blas, has deſcribed the knavery and foibles of life, with infinite humour and ſagacity. The following ſheets I have modelled on his plan, taking the liberty, however, to differ from him in the execution, where I thought his particular ſituations were uncommon, extravagant, or peculiar to the country in which the ſcene is laid. The diſgraces of Gil Blas are, for the moſt part, ſuch as rather excite mirth than compaſſion: he himſelf laughs at them; and his tranſitions from diſtreſs to happineſs, or at leaſt eaſe, are ſo ſudden, that neither the reader has time to pity him, nor himſelf to be acquainted with affliction. This conduct, in my opinion, not only deviates from probability, but prevents that generous indignation which ought to animate the reader againſt the ſordid and vicious diſpoſition of the world.

I have attempted to repreſent modeſt merit ſtruggling with every difficulty to which a friendleſs orphan is expoſed, from his own want of experience, as well as from the ſelfiſhneſs, envy, malice, and baſe indifference of mankind. To ſecure a favourable prepoſſeſſion, I have allowed him the advantages of birth and education, which, in the ſeries of his misfortunes, will, I hope, engage the ingenuous more warmly in his behalf; and though I foreſee, that ſome people will be offended at the mean ſcenes in which he is involved, I perſuade myſelf the judicious will not only perceive the neceſſity of deſcribing thoſe ſituations to which he muſt of courſe be confined, in his low ſtate, but alſo find entertainment in viewing thoſe parts of life, where the humours and paſſions are undiſguiſed by affectation, ceremony, or education; and the whimſical peculiarities of diſpoſition appear as nature has implanted them. But I believe I need not trouble myſelf in vindiating a practice authoriſed by the beſt writers in this way, ſome of whom I have already named.

Every intelligent reader will, at firſt ſight, perceive, I have not deviated from nature in the facts, which are

all true in the main, although the circumſtances are altered and diſguiſed, to avoid perſonal ſatire.

It now remains to give my reaſons for making the chief perſonage of this work a North Briton; which are chiefly theſe: I could at a ſmall expence beſtow on him ſuch education as I thought the dignity of his birth and character required, which could not poſſibly be obtained in England, by ſuch ſlender means as the nature of my plan would afford. In the next place, I could repreſent ſimplicity of manners in a remote part of the kingdom, with more propriety than in any other place near the capital; and, laſtly, the diſpoſition of the Scots, addicted to travelling, juſtifies my conduct in deriving an adventurer from that country.

That the delicate reader may not be offended at the unmeaning oaths which proceed from the mouths of ſome perſons in theſe memoirs, I beg leave to premiſe, that I imagined nothing could more effectually expoſe the abſurdity of ſuch miſerable expletives, than a natural and verbal repreſentation of the diſcourſe in which they occur.

APOLOGUE.

A YOUNG painter, indulging a vein of pleaſantry, ſketched a kind of converſation-piece, repreſenting a bear, an owl, a monkey, and an aſs; and to render it more ſtriking, humorous, and moral, diſtinguiſhed every figure by ſome emblem of human life.

Bruin was exhibited in the garb and attitude of an old, toothleſs, drunken ſoldier; the owl perched upon the handle of a coffee-pot, with ſpectacles on his noſe, ſeemed to contemplate a newſpaper; and the aſs, ornamented with a huge tye-wig (which, however, could not conceal his long ears), ſat for his picture to the monkey, who appeared with the implements of painting. This whimſical groupe afforded ſome mirth, and met with general approbation, until ſome miſchievous wag hinted that the whole was a lampoon upon the friends of the performer; an inſinuation which was no ſooner circulated, than thoſe very people who applauded it before began to be alarmed, and even to fancy themſelves ſignified by the ſeveral figures of the piece.

Among others, a worthy perſonage in years, who had ſerved in the army with reputation, being incenſed at the ſuppoſed outrage, repaired to the lodgings of the painter, and, finding him at home, "Hark ye, Mr. Monkey (ſaid he), I have a good mind to convince you, that, though the bear has loſt his teeth, he retains his paws, and that he is not ſo drunk but he can perceive your impertinence—'Sblood! Sir, that toothleſs jaw is a damned ſcandalous libel—but don't you imagine me ſo chop-fallen as not to be able to chew the cud of reſentment." Here he was interrupted by the arrival of a learned phyſician, who, advancing to the culprit with fury in his aſpect, exclaimed, "Suppoſe the augmentation of the aſs's ears ſhould prove the diminution of the baboon's—nay, ſeek not to prevaricate, for by the

was for ſome time inconſolable for the loſs of her off-ſpring; when all of a ſudden, ſhe beheld it return with equal violence, and enter the earth beneath her feet, whence immediately ſprung up a goodly tree covered with bloſſoms, the ſcent of which operated ſo ſtrongly on her nerves, that ſhe awoke. The attentive ſage, after ſome deliberation, aſſured my parents, that their firſt-born would be a great traveller; that he would undergo many dangers and difficulties, and at laſt return to his native land, where he would flouriſh in happineſs and reputation. How truly this was foretold, will appear in the ſequel. It was not long before ſome officious perſon informed my grandfather of certain familiarities that paſſed between his ſon and houſekeeper, which alarmed him ſo much, that a few days after, he told my father it was high time for him to think of ſettling; and that he had provided a match for him, to which he could in juſtice have no objections. My father, finding it would be impoſſible to conceal his ſituation much longer, frankly owned what he had done, and excuſed himſelf for not having aſked the conſent of his father, by ſaying, he knew it would have been to no purpoſe; and that, had his inclination been known, my grandfather might have taken ſuch meaſures as would have effectually put the gratification of it out of his power: He added, that no exceptions could be taken to his wife's virtue, birth, beauty, and good ſenſe; and as for fortune, it was beneath his care. The old gentleman, who kept all his paſſions (except one) in excellent order, heard him to an end with great temper; and then calmly aſked, how he propoſed to maintain himſelf and ſpouſe? He replied, he could be in no danger of wanting, while his father's tenderneſs remained, which he and his wife ſhould always cultivate with the utmoſt veneration; that he was perſuaded his allowance would be ſuitable to the dignity and circumſtances of his family, and to the proviſion already made for his brothers and ſiſters, who were happily ſettled under his protection. "Your brothers and ſiſters (ſaid my grandfather) did not think it beneath them to conſult me in an affair of ſuch importance as

matrimony; neither (I ſuppoſe) would you have omitted that piece of duty, had not you ſome ſecret fund in reſerve, to the comforts of which I leave you, with a deſire that you will this night ſeek out another habitation for yourſelf and wife, whither, in a ſhort time, I will ſend you an account of the expence I have been at in your education, with a view of being reimburſed. Sir, you have made the grand tour—you are a polite gentleman—a very pretty gentleman—I wiſh you a great deal of joy, and am your very humble ſervant." So, ſaying, he left my father in a ſituation eaſily imagined. However, he did not long heſitate; for, being perfectly well acquainted with his father's diſpoſition, he did not doubt that he was glad of this pretence to get rid of him; and his reſolves being invariable as the laws of the Medes and Perſians, he knew it would be to no purpoſe to attempt him by prayers and entreaties; ſo, without any further application, he betook himſelf, with his diſconſolate bedfellow, to a farmhouſe, where an old ſervant of his mother dwelt: There they remained for ſome time in a ſituation but ill adapted to the elegance of their deſires, and tenderneſs of their love; which, nevertheleſs, my father choſe to endure, rather than ſupplicate an unnatural and inflexible parent: But my mother, foreſeeing the inconveniences to which ſhe muſt have been expoſed, had ſhe been delivered in this place (and her pregnancy was very far advanced), without communicating her deſign to her huſband, went in diſguiſe to the houſe of my grandfather, hoping that her tears and condition would move him to compaſſion, and reconcile him to an event which was now irrevocably paſt. She found means to deceive the ſervants, and was introduced as an unfortunate lady, who wanted to complain of ſome matrimonial grievances; it being my grandfather's particular province to decide in all caſes of ſcandal. She was accordingly admitted into his preſence; where diſcovering herſelf, ſhe fell at his feet, and, in the moſt affecting manner, implored his forgiveneſs; at the ſame time, repreſenting the danger that threatened not only her life, but that of his own grandchild, which was

about to ſee the light. He told her, he was ſorry that the indiſcretion of her and his ſon had compelled him to make a vow, which put it out of his power to give them any aſſiſtance: That he had already imparted his thoughts on that ſubject to her huſband, and was ſurpriſed that they ſhould diſturb his peace with any further importunity. This ſaid, he retired. The violence of my mother's affliction had ſuch an effect on her conſtitution, that ſhe was immediately ſeized with the pains of child-bed; and had not an old maid-ſervant, to whom ſhe was very dear, afforded her pity and aſſiſtance, at the hazard of incurring my grandfather's diſpleaſure, ſhe and the innocent fruit of her womb muſt have fallen miſerable victims to his rigour and inhumanity. By the friendſhip of this poor woman, ſhe was carried up to a garret, and immediately delivered of a man-child, the ſtory of whoſe unfortunate birth he himſelf now relates. My father being informed of what had happened, flew to the embraces of his darling ſpouſe, and, while he loaded his offspring with paternal careſſes, could not forbear ſhedding a flood of tears, on beholding the dear partner of his heart (for whoſe eaſe he would have ſacrificed the treaſures of the eaſt) ſtretched upon a flock-bed in a miſerable apartment, unable to protect her from the inclemencies of the weather. It is not to be ſuppoſed, that the old gentleman was ignorant of what paſſed, though he affected to know nothing of the matter, and pretended to be very much ſurpriſed, when one of his grandchildren, by his eldeſt ſon deceaſed, who lived with him as his heir apparent, acquainted him with the affair: He determined, therefore, to obſerve no medium, but immediately (on the third day after her delivery) ſent her a peremptory order to be gone, and turned off the ſervant who had preſerved her life. This behaviour ſo exaſperated my father, that he had recourſe to the moſt dreadful imprecations; and, on his bare knees, implored that Heaven would renounce him, if ever he ſhould forget or forgive the barbarity of his ſire. The injuries which this unhappy mother received from her removal in ſuch circumſtances, and the want of neceſſaries where ſhe lodg-

ed, together with her grief and anxiety of mind, ſoon threw her into a languiſhing diſorder, which put an end to her life. My father, who loved her tenderly, was ſo affected with her death, that he remained ſix weeks deprived of his ſenſes; during which time, the people where he lodged carried the infant to the old man, who relented ſo far, on hearing the melancholy ſtory of his daughter-in-law's death, and the deplorable condition of his ſon, as to ſend the child to nurſe; and he ordered my father to be carried home to his houſe, where he ſoon recovered the uſe of his reaſon. Whether this hard-hearted judge felt any remorſe for his cruel treatment of his ſon and daughter, or (which is more probable) was afraid his character would ſuffer in the neighbourhood, he profeſſed great ſorrow for his conduct to my father, whoſe delirium was ſucceeded by a profound melancholy and reſerve. At length he diſappeared, and, notwithſtanding all imaginable inquiry, could not be heard of; a circumſtance which confirmed moſt people in the opinion of his having made away with himſelf in a fit of deſpair. How I underſtood the particulars of my birth, will appear in the courſe of theſe memoirs.

CHAPTER II.

I grow up—am hated by my relations—ſent to ſchool—neglected by my grandfather—maltreated by my maſter—ſeaſoned to adverſity—I form cabals againſt the pedant—am debarred acceſs to my grandfather—hunted by his heir—I demoliſh the teeth of his tutor.

THERE were not wanting ſome who ſuſpected my uncles of being concerned in my father's fate, on the ſuppoſition that they would all ſhare in the patrimony deſtined for him; and this conjecture was ſtrengthened by reflecting, that, in all his calamities, they never diſcovered the leaſt inclination to ſerve him; but, on the contrary, by all the artifices in their power, fed his father's reſentment, and ſupported his reſolution of leaving him to miſery and want. But people of judgment

treated this inſinuation as an idle chimera; becauſe, had my relations been ſo wicked as to conſult their intereſt by committing ſuch an atrocious crime, the fate of my father would have extended to me too, whoſe life was another obſtacle to their expectation. Meanwhile, I grew apace; and as I ſtrongly reſembled my father, who was the darling of the tenants, I wanted nothing which their indigent circumſtances could afford: But their favour was a weak reſource againſt the jealous enmity of my couſins; who, the more my infancy promiſed, conceived the more implacable hatred againſt me; and, before I was ſix years of age, had ſo effectually blockaded my grandfather, that I never ſaw him but by ſtealth; when I ſometimes made up to his chair, as he ſat to view his labourers in the field: On which occaſions, he would ſtroke my head, bid me be a good boy, and promiſe to take care of me. I was ſoon after ſent to ſchool at a village hard by, of which he had been dictator time out of mind; but as he neither paid for my board, nor ſupplied me with clothes, books, and other neceſſaries I required, my condition was very ragged and contemptible; and the ſchoolmaſter, who, through fear of my grandfather, taught me *gratis*, gave himſelf no concern about the progreſs I made under his inſtruction. In ſpite of all theſe difficulties and diſgraces, I became a good proficient in the Latin tongue; and as ſoon as I could write tolerably, peſtered my grandfather with letters to ſuch a degree, that he ſent for my maſter, and chid him ſeverely for beſtowing ſuch pains on my education, telling him, that if ever I ſhould be brought to the gallows for forgery, which he had taught me to commit, my blood would lie on his head. The pedant, who dreaded nothing more than the diſpleaſure of his patron, aſſured his Honour, that the boy's ability was more owing to his own genius and application, than to any inſtruction or encouragement he received; that, although he could not diveſt him of the knowledge he had already imbibed, unleſs he would empower him to diſable his fingers, he ſhould endeavour, with God's help, to prevent his future improvement. And, indeed, he punctually performed what he

had undertaken; for, on pretence that I had writ impertinent letters to my grandfather, he cauſed a board to be made with five holes in it, through which he thruſt the fingers and thumb of my right-hand, and faſtened it by whip-cord to my wriſt, in ſuch a manner as effectually debarred me the uſe of my pen. But this reſtraint I was freed from in a few days, by an accident which happened in a quarrel between me and another boy, who, taking upon him to inſult my poverty, I was ſo incenſed at his ungenerous reproach, that, with one ſtroke of my machine, I cut him to the ſkull, to the great terror of myſelf and ſchool-fellows, who left him bleeding on the ground, and ran to inform the maſter of what had happened. I was ſo ſeverely puniſhed for this treſpaſs, that, were I to live to the age of Methuſalem, the impreſſion it made on me would not be effaced; no more than the antipathy and horror I conceived for the mercileſs tyrant who inflicted it. The contempt which my appearance naturally produced in all who ſaw me, the continual wants to which I was expoſed, and my own haughty diſpoſition, impatient of affronts, involved me in a thouſand troubleſome adventures, by which I was at length inured to adverſity, and emboldened to undertakings far above my years. I was often inhumanly ſcourged for crimes I did not commit; becauſe, having the character of a vagabond in the village, every piece of miſchief, whoſe author lay unknown, was charged upon me. I have been found guilty of robbing orchards I never entered, of killing cats I never hurted, of ſtealing gingerbread I never touched, and of abuſing old women I never ſaw. Nay, a ſtammering carpenter had eloquence enough to perſuade my maſter, that I fired a piſtol, loaded with ſmall ſhot, into his window; though my landlady and the whole family bore witneſs, that I was a-bed faſt aſleep at the time when this outrage was committed. I was once flogged for having narrowly eſcaped drowning, by the ſinking of a ferry-boat in which I was paſſenger; another time for having recovered of a bruiſe occaſioned by a horſe and cart running over me; a third time for being bit by a baker's dog. In ſhort,

whether I was guilty or unfortunate, the correction and ſympathy of this arbitrary pedagogue were the ſame. Far from being ſubdued by this infernal uſage, my indignation triumphed over that ſlaviſh awe which had hitherto enforced my obedience; and the more my years and knowledge increaſed, the more I perceived the injuſtice and barbarity of his behaviour. By the help of an uncommon genius, and the advice and direction of our uſher, who had ſerved my father in his travels, I made a ſurpriſing progreſs in the claſſics, writing, and arithmetic; ſo that, before I was twelve years old, I was allowed by every body to be the beſt ſcholar in the ſchool. This qualification, together with a boldneſs of temper, and ſtrength of make, which had ſubjected almoſt all my contemporaries, gave me ſuch influence over them, that I began to form cabals againſt my perſecutor, and was in hopes of being able to bid him defiance in a very ſhort time. Being at the head of a faction conſiſting of thirty boys, moſt of them of my own age, I was determined to put their metal to trial, that I might know how far they were to be depended upon, before I put my grand ſcheme in execution: With this view, we attacked a body of ſtout apprentices, who had taken poſſeſſion of a part of the ground allotted to us for the ſcene of our diverſions, and who were then playing at nine-pins on the ſpot: but I had the mortification to ſee my adherents routed in an inſtant, and a leg of one of them broke in his flight, by the bowl, which one of our adverſaries had detached in purſuit of us. This diſcomfiture did not hinder us from engaging them afterwards in frequent ſkirmiſhes, which we maintained by throwing ſtones at a diſtance, wherein I received many wounds, the ſcars of which ſtill remain. Our enemies were ſo haraſſed and interrupted by theſe alarms, that they at laſt abandoned their conqueſt, and left us to the peaceable enjoyment of our own territories. It would be endleſs to enumerate the exploits we performed in the courſe of this confederacy, which became the terror of the whole village; inſomuch, that when different intereſts divided it, one of the parties commonly courted the aſſiſtance of

Roderick Random (by which name I was known) to caſt the balance, and keep the oppoſite faction in awe. Meanwhile, I took the advantage of every play-day to preſent myſelf before my grandfather, to whom I ſeldom found acceſs, by reaſon of his being cloſely beſieged by a numerous family of his female grandchildren, who, though they perpetually quarrelled among themſelves, never failed to join againſt me, as the common enemy of all. His heir, who was about the age of eighteen, minded nothing but fox-hunting, and, indeed, was qualified for nothing elſe, notwithſtanding his grandfather's indulgence, in entertaining a tutor for him at home, who at the ſame time performed the office of pariſh-clerk. This young Acteon, who inherited his grandfather's antipathy to every thing in diſtreſs, never ſet eyes on me, without uncoupling his beagles, and hunting me into ſome cottage or other, whither I generally fled for ſhelter. In this Chriſtian amuſement, he was encouraged by his preceptor, who, no doubt, took ſuch opportunities to ingratiate himſelf with the riſing ſun, obſerving that the old gentleman, according to the courſe of nature, had not long to live, for he was already on the verge of fourſcore. The behaviour of this raſcally ſycophant incenſed me ſo much, that one day, when I was beleagured by him and his hounds in a farmer's houſe, where I had found protection, I took aim at him (being an excellent markſman) with a large pebble, which ſtruck out four of his fore teeth, and effectually incapacitated him for doing the office of a clerk.

CHAPTER III.

My mother's brother arrives—relieves me—a deſcription of him—he goes along with me to the houſe of my grandfather—is encountered by his dogs—defeats them after a bloody engagement—is admitted to the old gentleman—a dialogue between them.

About this time, my mother's only brother, who had been long abroad, lieutenant of a man of war, arrived

in his own country; where, being informed of my condition, he came to ſee me, and, out of his ſlender finances, not only ſupplied me with what neceſſaries I wanted for the preſent, but reſolved not to leave the country until he had prevailed on my grandfather to ſettle ſomething handſome on me for the future. This was a taſk to which he was by no means equal, being entirely ignorant not only of the judge's diſpoſition, but alſo unacquainted with the ways of men in general, to which his education on board had kept him an utter ſtranger. He was a ſtrong built man, ſomewhat bandy-legged, with a neck like that of a bull, and a face which (you might eaſily perceive) had withſtood the moſt obſtinate aſſaults of the weather. His dreſs conſiſted of a ſoldier's coat altered for him by the ſhip's tailor, a ſtriped flannel jacket, a pair of red breeches, japanned with pitch, clean gray worſted ſtockings, large ſilver buckles that covered three fourths of his ſhoes, a ſilver-laced hat whoſe crown overlooked the brims about an inch and a half, a black bob wig in buckle, a check ſhirt, a ſilk handkerchief, an hanger with a braſs handle girded to his thigh by a tarniſhed laced belt, and a good oak plant under his arm. Thus equipped, he ſet out with me (who by his bounty made a very decent appearance), for my grandfather's houſe, where we were ſaluted by Jowler and Cæſar, whom my couſin, young maſter, had let looſe at our approach. Being well acquainted with the inveteracy of theſe curs, I was about to betake myſelf to my heels, when my uncle ſeized me with one hand, brandiſhed his cudgel with the other, and at one blow laid Cæſar ſprawling on the ground; but finding himſelf attacked at the ſame time in the rear by Jowler, and fearing Cæſar might recover, he drew his hanger, wheeled about, and, by a lucky ſtroke, ſevered Jowler's head from his body. By this time, the young fox-hunter and three ſervants, armed with pitch-forks and flails, were come to the aſſiſtance of the dogs, whom they found breathleſs upon the field; and my couſin was ſo provoked at the death of his favourites, that he ordered his attendants to advance, and take vengeance on their executioner, whom he loaded with

all the curſes and reproaches his anger could ſuggeſt. Upon which my uncle ſtepped forward with an undaunted air, at the ſight of whoſe bloody weapon his antagoniſts fell back with precipitation, when he accoſted their leader thus: "Lookee, brother, your dogs have boarded me without provocation—what I did was in my own defence. So you had beſt be civil, and let us ſhoot ahead, clear of you." Whether the young ſquire miſinterpreted my uncle's deſire of peace, or was enraged at the fate of his hounds beyond his uſual pitch of reſolution, I know not; but he ſnatched a flail from one of his followers, and came up with a ſhow of aſſaulting the lieutenant, who, putting himſelf in a poſture of defence, proceeded thus: "Lookee, you lubberly ſon of a w——e, if you come athwart me, 'ware your gingerbread work, I'll be foul of your quarter, d——n me." This declaration, followed by a flouriſh of his hanger, ſeemed to check the progreſs of the young gentleman's choler, who, looking behind him, perceived his attendants had ſlunk into the houſe, ſhut the gate, and left him to decide the contention by himſelf. Here a parley enſued, which was introduced by my couſin's aſking, "Who the d——l are you?—What do you want?—Some ſcoundrel of a ſeaman (I ſuppoſe) who has deſerted, and turned thief. But don't think you ſhall eſcape, ſirrah—I'll have you hanged, you dog, I will—your blood ſhall pay for that of my two hounds, you ragamuffin. I would not have parted with them to ſave your whole generation from the gallows, you ruffian, you." "None of your jaw, you ſwab—none of your jaw (replied my uncle)—elſe I ſhall trim your laced jacket for you—I ſhall rub you down with an oaken towel, my boy—I ſhall." So ſaying, he ſheathed his hanger and graſped his cudgel. Meanwhile, the people of the houſe being alarmed, one of my female couſins opened a window, and aſked what was the matter? "The matter! (anſwered the lieutenant) no great matter, young woman. I have buſineſs with the old gentleman, and this ſpark, belike, won't allow me to come along-ſide of him, that's all."—After a few minutes pauſe, we were admitted, and conducted to my

grandfather's chamber, through a lane of my relations, who honoured me with very ſignificant looks, as I paſſed along. When we came into the judge's preſence, my uncle, after two or three ſea-bows, expreſſed himſelf in this manner: "Your ſervant—your ſervant. What cheer, father? what cheer?—I ſuppoſe you don't know me—may-hap you don't—My name is Tom Bowling—and this here boy, you look as if you did not know him neither—'tis like you mayn't. He's new rigged, i'faith; his cloth don't ſhake in the wind ſo much as it wont to do. 'Tis my nephew, d'ye ſee, Roderick Random,—your own fleſh and blood, old gentleman. Don't lag aſtern, you dog (pulling me forward)." My grandfather (who was laid up with the gout) received this relation, after his long abſence, with that coldneſs of civility which was peculiar to him; told him he was glad to ſee him, and deſired him to ſit down. "Thank ye, thank ye, Sir, I had as lief ſtand (ſaid my uncle); for my own part, I deſire nothing of you; but if you have any conſcience at all, do ſomething for this poor boy, who has been uſed at a very unchriſtian rate. Unchriſtian do I call it?—I am ſure the Moors in Barbary have more humanity than to leave their little ones to want. I would fain know, why my ſiſter's ſon is more neglected than that there fair-weather Jack" (pointing to the young ſquire, who, with the reſt of my couſins, had followed us into the room). "Is not he as near a-kin to you as the other? Is not he much handſomer and better built than that great chucklehead?—Come, come, conſider, old gentleman, you are going in a ſhort time to give an account of your evil actions. Remember the wrongs you did his father; and make all the ſatisfaction in your power, before it be too late. The leaſt thing you can do is to ſettle his father's portion on him." The young ladies, who thought themſelves too much concerned to contain themſelves any longer, ſet up their throats altogether againſt my protector, "Scurvy companion,—ſaucy tarpaulin,—rude, impertinent fellow, did he think to preſcribe to grandpapa? His ſiſter's brat had been too well taken care of,—grandpapa was too juſt not to make a difference between an unnatural re-

bellious ſon, and his dutiful loving children, who took his advice in all things,"—and ſuch expreſſions, were vented againſt him with great violence; until the judge at length commanded ſilence. He calmly rebuked my uncle for his unmannerly behaviour, which he ſaid he would excuſe on account of his education: He told him he had been very kind to the boy, whom he had kept at ſchool ſeven or eight years, although he was informed he made no progreſs in his learning; but was addicted to all manner of vice, which he rather believed, becauſe he himſelf was witneſs to a barbarous piece of miſchief he had committed on the jaws of his chaplain. But, however, he would ſee what the lad was fit for, and bind him apprentice to ſome honeſt tradeſman or other, provided he would mend his manners, and behave for the future as became him. The honeſt tar (whoſe pride and indignation boiled within him) anſwered my grandfather, that it was true he had ſent him to ſchool, but it had coſt him nothing, for he had never been at one ſhilling expence, to furniſh him with food, raiment, books, or other neceſſaries; ſo that it was not to be much wondered at, if the boy made ſmall progreſs; and yet, whoever told him ſo, was a lying lubberly raſcal, and deſerved to be keel-hauled: For though he (the lieutenant) did not underſtand thoſe matters himſelf, he was well informed as how Rory was the beſt ſcholar of his age in all the country; the truth of which he would maintain, by laying a wager of his whole half year's pay on the boy's head; (with theſe words he pulled out his purſe, and challenged the company)—Neither is he predected to vice, as you affirm, but rather left like a wreck (d'ye ſee) at the mercy of the wind and weather, by your neglect, old gentleman. As for what happened to your chaplain, I am only ſorry that he did not knock out the ſcoundrel's brains, inſtead of his teeth. By the Lord, if ever I come up with him, he had better be in Greenland,—that's all. Thank you for your courteous offer, of binding the lad apprentice to a tradeſman. I ſuppoſe you would make a tailor of him,—would you? I had rather ſee him hang'd, d'ye ſee. Come along, Rory, I perceive how the land lies, my boy,—let's tack about,—i'faith,—while I have a ſhilling thou ſhan't

want a teſter. B'wye, old gentleman, you're bound for the other world, but I believe damnably ill provided for the voyage. Thus ended our viſit, and we returned to the village, my uncle muttering curſes all the way againſt the old ſhark and the young fry that ſurrounded him.

CHAPTER IV.

My grandfather makes his will—our ſecond viſit—he dies—his will is read in preſence of all his living deſcendents—the diſappointment of my female couſins—my uncle's behaviour.

A FEW weeks after our firſt viſit, we were informed that the old judge, at the end of a fit of thoughtfulneſs which laſted three days, had ſent for a notary, and made his will; that the diſtemper had mounted from his legs to his ſtomach, and, being conſcious of his approaching end, he had deſired to ſee all his deſcendents without exception. In obedience to this ſummons, my uncle ſet out with me a ſecond time, to receive the laſt benediction of my grandfather: often repeating by the road, "Ey, ey, we have brought up the old hulk at laſt. You ſhall ſee,—you ſhall ſee the effect of my admonition." When we entered his chamber, which was crowded with his relations, we advanced to the bed-ſide, where we found him in his laſt agonies, ſupported by two of his grand-daughters, who ſat one on each ſide of him, ſobbing moſt piteouſly, and wiping away the froth and ſlaver as it gathered on his lips, which they frequently kiſſed with a ſhow of great anguiſh and affection. My uncle approached him with theſe words: "What! he's not a-weigh. How fare ye,—old gentleman?—Lord have mercy upon your poor ſinful ſoul." Upon which the dying man turned his languid eyes towards us, and Mr. Bowling went on, "Here's poor Rory come to ſee you before you die, and receive your bleſſing. What, man! don't deſpair,—you have been a great ſinner, 'tis true, what then? There's a righteous judge above,—a'n't there?—He minds me no more than a porpuſs. Yes, yes, he's a going,—the land crabs will

have him, I ſee that,—his anchor's a-peak, i'faith." This homely conſolation ſcandalized the company ſo much, and eſpecially the parſon, who probably thought his province invaded, that we were obliged to retire into the other room, where, in a few minutes, we were convinced of my grandfather's deceaſe, by a diſmal yell uttered by the young ladies in his apartment; whither we immediately haſtened, and found his heir, who had retired a little before into a cloſet, under pretence of giving vent to his ſorrow, aſking, with a countenance beſlubbered with tears, if his grandpapa was certainly dead?—"Dead! (ſays my uncle, looking at the body) ay, ay, I'll warrant him as dead as a herring. Odd's fiſh! now my dream is out for all the world. I thought I ſtood upon the fore-caſtle, and ſaw a parcel of carrion crows foul of a dead ſhark that floated alongſide, and the devil perching on our ſprit-ſail yard, in the likeneſs of a blue bear,—who, d'ye ſee, jumped overboard upon the carcaſe, and carried it to the bottom in his claws." "Out upon thee, reprobate (cries the parſon), out upon thee, blaſphemous wretch!—Doſt thou think his Honour's ſoul is in the poſſeſſion of Satan?" The clamour immediately aroſe, and my poor uncle, being ſhouldered from one corner of the room to the other, was obliged to lug out in his own defence, and ſwear he would turn out for no man, till ſuch time as he knew who had a title to ſend him adrift. "None of your tricks upon travellers, ſaid he; mayhap old buff has left my kinſman here his heir:—If he has, it will be the better for his miſerable ſoul. Odd's bob! I'd deſire no better news. I'd ſoon make him a clear ſhip, I warrant you." To avoid any further diſturbance, one of my grandfather's executors, who was preſent, aſſured Mr. Bowling, that his nephew ſhould have all manner of juſtice; that a day ſhould be appointed, after the funeral, for examining the papers of the deceaſed, in preſence of all his relations; till which time every deſk and cabinet in the houſe ſhould remain cloſe ſealed; and that he was very welcome to be witneſs to this ceremony, which was immediately performed to his ſatisfaction. In the mean time, orders were given to provide mourning for all the

relations, in which number I was included: But my uncle would not ſuffer me to accept of it, until I ſhould be aſſured whether or not I had reaſon to honour his memory ſo far. During this interval, the conjectures of people, with regard to the old gentleman's will, were various. As it was well known he had, beſides his landed eſtate, which was worth 700 l. per annum, ſix or ſeven thouſand pounds at intereſt, ſome imagined, that the whole real eſtate (which he had greatly improved) would go to the young man whom he always entertained as his heir; and that the money would be equally divided between my female couſins (five in number) and me. Others were of opinion, that as the reſt of his children had been already provided for, he would only bequeath two or three hundred pounds to each of his grand-daughters, and leave the bulk of the ſum to me, to atone for his unnatural uſage of my father. At length the important hour arrived, and the will was produced in the midſt of the expectants, whoſe looks and geſtures formed a groupe that would have been very entertaining to an unconcerned ſpectator. But the reader can ſcarce conceive the aſtoniſhment and mortification that appeared, when the attorney pronounced aloud, the young ſquire ſole heir of all his grandfather's eſtate, perſonal and real. My uncle, who had liſtened with great attention, ſucking the head of his cudgel all the while, accompanied theſe words of the attorney with a ſtare, and *whew*, that alarmed the whole aſſembly. The eldeſt and perteſt of my female competitors, who had been always very officious about my grandfather's perſon, inquired with a faultering accent, and viſage as yellow as an orange, "if there were no legacies?" and was anſwered, "none at all." Upon which ſhe fainted away. The reſt, whoſe expectations (perhaps) were not ſo ſanguine, ſupported their diſappointment with more reſolution; though not without giving evident marks of indignation, and grief at leaſt as genuine as that which appeared in them at the old gentleman's death. My conductor, after having kicked with his heel for ſome time againſt the wainſcot, began: "So there's no legacy, friend, ha!—here's an old ſuccubus;—but ſomebody's

ſoul howls for it, d—n me!" The parſon of the pariſh, who was one of the executors, and had acted as ghoſtly director to the old man, no ſooner heard this exclamation than he cried out, "Avaunt, unchriſtian reviler! avaunt!—wilt thou not allow the ſoul of his Honour to reſt in peace?" But this zealous paſtor did not find himſelf ſo warmly ſeconded, as formerly, by the young ladies who now joined my uncle againſt him, and accuſed him of having acted the part of a buſy-body with their grandpapa, whoſe ears he had certainly abuſed by falſe ſtories to their prejudice, or elſe he would not have neglected them in ſuch an unnatural manner. The young ſquire was much diverted with this ſcene, and whiſpered to my uncle, that, if he had not murdered his dogs, he would have ſhown him glorious fun, by hunting a black badger (ſo he termed the clergyman). The ſurly lieutenant, who was not in an humour to reliſh this amuſement, replied, "You and your dogs may be d—d—I ſuppoſe you'll find them with your old dad, in the latitude of hell. Come, Rory—about ſhip, my lad,—we muſt ſteer another courſe, I think."—And away we went.

CHAPTER V.

The ſchoolmaſter uſes me barbarouſly—I form a project of revenge, in which I am aſſiſted by my uncle—I leave the village—am ſettled at an univerſity by his generoſity.

On our way back to the village, my uncle ſpoke not a word during the ſpace of a whole hour, but whiſtled, with great vehemence, the tune of, *Why ſhould we quarrel for riches, &c.* his viſage being contracted all the while into a moſt formidable frown. At length his pace increaſed to ſuch a degree, that I was left behind a conſiderable way. Then he waited for me; and, when I was almoſt up with him, called out in a ſurly tone, "Bear a hand damme! muſt I bring to every minute for you, you lazy dog?" Then laying hold of me by the arm, hauled me along, until his good nature (of which

he had a great ſhare) and reflection getting the better of his paſſion, he ſaid, "Come, my boy, don't be caſt down,—the old raſcal is in hell,—that's ſome ſatisfaction; you ſhall go to ſea with me, my lad.—*A light heart and a thin pair of breeches goes thorough the world, brave boys*, as the ſong goes,—eh!" though this propoſal did not at all ſuit my inclination, I was afraid of diſcovering my averſion to it, leſt I ſhould diſoblige the only friend I had in the world; and he was ſo much a ſeaman, that he never dreamt I could have any objection to his deſign, conſequently gave himſelf no trouble in conſulting my approbation. But this reſolution was ſoon dropt, by the advice of our uſher, who aſſured Mr. Bowling, it would be a thouſand pities to baulk my genius, which would certainly, one day, make my fortune on ſhore, provided it received due cultivation. Upon which this generous tar determined (though he could ill afford it) to give me univerſity education; and accordingly ſettled my board and other expences, at a town not many miles diſtant, famous for its colleges, whither we repaired in a ſhort time. But, before the day of our departure, the ſchoolmaſter, who no longer had the fear of my grandfather before his eyes, laid aſide all decency and reſtraint, and not only abuſed me in the groſſeſt language his rancour could ſuggeſt, as a wicked, profligate, dull, beggarly miſcreant, whom he had taught out of charity; but alſo inveighed in the moſt bitter manner againſt the memory of the judge (who, by the bye, had procured that ſettlement for him), hinting, in pretty plain terms, that the old gentleman's ſoul was damn'd to all eternity, for his injuſtice in neglecting to pay for my learning. This brutal behaviour, added to the ſufferings I had formerly undergone, made me think it high time to be revenged of this inſolent pedagogue. Having conſulted my adherents, I found them all ſtaunch in their promiſes to ſtand by me; and our ſcheme was this: In the afternoon preceding the day of my departure for the univerſity, I reſolved to take the advantage of the uſher's going out to make water (which he regularly did at four o'clock), and ſhut the great door, that he might not come to the aſſiſtance of his ſu-

perior. This being done, the aſſault was to be begun, by my advancing to my maſter, and ſpitting in his face. I was to be ſeconded by two of the ſtrongeſt boys in the ſchool, who were devoted to me; their buſineſs was to join me in dragging the tyrant to a bench, over which he was to be laid, and his bare poſteriors heartily flogged with his own birch, which we propoſed to wreſt from him in the ſtruggle; but if we ſhould find him too many for us all three, we were to demand the aſſiſtance of our competitors, who ſhould be ready to reinforce us, or oppoſe any thing that might be undertaken for the maſter's relief. One of my principal aſſiſtants was called Jeremy Gawky, ſon and heir of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood; and the name of the other Hugh Strap, the cadet of a family which had given ſhoemakers to the village time out of mind. I had once ſaved Gawky's life, by plunging into a river, and dragging him on ſhore, when he was on the point of being drowned. I had often reſcued him from the clutches of thoſe whom his inſufferable arrogance had provoked to a reſentment he was not able to ſuſtain; and many times ſaved his reputation and poſteriors by performing his exerciſes at ſchool: ſo that it is not to be wondered at if he had a particular regard for me and my intereſts. The attachment of Strap flowed from a voluntary diſintereſted inclination, which had manifeſted itſelf on many occaſions in my behalf, he having once rendered me the ſame ſervice that I had done Gawky, by ſaving my life at the riſk of his own; and often fathered offences that I had committed, for which he ſuffered ſeverely, rather than I ſhould feel the weight of the puniſhment I deſerved. Theſe two champions were the more willing to engage in this enterpriſe, becauſe they intended to leave the ſchool the next day as well as I, the firſt being ordered by his father to return into the country, and the other being bound apprentice to a barber, at a market town not far off.

In the mean time, my uncle being informed of my maſter's behaviour to me, was enraged at his inſolence, and vowed revenge ſo heartily, that I could not refrain from telling him the ſcheme I had concerted, which he

heard with great ſatisfaction, at every ſentence ſquirting out a mouthful of ſpittle, tinctured with tobacco, of which he conſtantly chewed a large quid. At laſt, pulling up his breeches, he cried, "No, no, Z——ds! that won't do neither,—howſomever, 'tis a bold undertaking, my lad—that I muſt ſay, i'faith!—but lookee, lookee, how doſt propoſe to get clear off?—won't the enemy give chaſe, my boy?—ay, ay, that he will, I warrant,—and alarm the whole coaſt. Ah! God help thee, more ſail than ballaſt, Rory. Let me alone for that,—leave the whole to me,—I'll ſhow him the fore-top-ſail, I will. If ſo be your ſhip-mates are jolly boys, and won't flinch, you ſhall ſee, you ſhall ſee; egad, I'll play him a ſalt-water trick—I'll bring him to the gang-way, and anoint him with a cat o'nine tails; he ſhall have a round dozen doubled, my lad, he ſhall,—and be left laſhed to his meditations."

We were very proud of our aſſociate, who immediately went to work, and prepared the inſtrument of his revenge with great ſkill and expedition; after which, he ordered our baggage to be packed up and ſent off a day before our attempt, and got horſes ready to be mounted, as ſoon as the affair ſhould be over. At length the hour arrived, when our auxiliary, ſeizing the opportunity of the uſher's abſence, bolted in, ſecured the door, and immediately laid hold of the pedant by his collar, who bauled out "Murder! thieves!" with the voice of a Stentor. Though I trembled all over like an aſpen-leaf, I knew there was no time to be loſt, and accordingly got up, and ſummoned our aſſociates to my aſſiſtance. Strap without any heſitation obeyed the ſignal, and ſeeing me leap upon the maſter's back, ran immediately to one of his legs, which pulling with all his force, his dreadful adverſary was humbled to the ground; upon which Gawky, who had hitherto remained in his place, under the influence of an univerſal trepidation, haſtened to the ſcene of action, and inſulted the fallen tyrant with a loud huzza, in which the whole ſchool joined. This noiſe alarmed the uſher, who finding himſelf ſhut out, endeavoured, partly by threats, and partly by entreaties, to procure admiſſion. My uncle bade him have a little

patience, and he would let him in preſently: But, if he pretended to move from that place, it ſhould fare worſe with the ſon of a b——h his ſuperior, on whom he intended only to beſtow a little wholeſome chaſtiſement, for his barbarous uſage of Rory, "to which (ſaid he) you are no ſtranger." By this time we had dragged the criminal to a poſt, to which Bowling tied him with a rope he had provided on purpoſe, after having ſecured his hands and ſtript his back. In this ludicrous poſture he ſtood (to the no ſmall entertainment of the boys, who crowded about him, and ſhouted with great exultation at the novelty of the fight), venting bitter imprecations againſt the lieutenant, and reproaching his ſcholars with treachery and rebellion; when the uſher was admitted, whom my uncle accoſted in this manner: "Harkee, Mr. Syntax, I believe you are an honeſt man, d'ye ſee—and I have a reſpect for you—but for all that, we muſt for our own ſecurity (d'ye ſee) belay you for a ſhort time." With theſe words, he pulled out ſome fathoms of cord, which the honeſt man no ſooner ſaw, than he proteſted with great earneſtneſs, he would allow no violence to be offered to him, at the ſame time accuſing me of perfidy and ingratitude. But Bowling repreſenting, that it was in vain to reſiſt, and that he did not mean to uſe him with violence and indecency, but only to hinder him from raiſing the hue and cry againſt us, before we ſhould be out of their power, he allowed himſelf to be bound to his own deſk, where he ſat a ſpectator of the puniſhment inflicted on his principal. My uncle having upbraided this arbitrary wretch with his inhumanity to me, told him, that he propoſed to give him a little diſcipline for the good of his ſoul, which he immediately put in practice, with great vigour and dexterity. This ſmart application to the pedant's withered poſteriors, gave him ſuch exquiſite pain, that he roared like a mad bull, danced, curſed, and blaſphemed, like a frantic bedlamite. When the lieutenant thought himſelf ſufficiently revenged, he took his leave of him in theſe words: "Now, friend, you'll remember me the longeſt day you have to live—I have given you a leſſon that will let you know what flogging is, and

teach you to have more ſympathy for the future—ſhout, boys, ſhout." This ceremony was no ſooner over, than my uncle propoſed they ſhould quit the ſchool, and convoy their old comrade Rory to a public-houſe, about a mile from the village, where he would treat them all. His offer being joyfully embraced, he addreſſed himſelf to Mr. Syntax, and begged him to accompany us; but this invitation he refuſed with great diſdain, telling my benefactor he was not the man he took him to be. "Well, well, old ſurly (replied my uncle, ſhaking his hand), thou art an honeſt fellow notwithſtanding; and if ever I have the command of a ſhip, thou ſhalt be our ſchoolmaſter, i'faith." So ſaying, he diſmiſſed the boys, and, locking the door, left the two preceptors to conſole one another; while we moved forwards on our journey, attended by a numerous retinue, whom he treated according to his promiſe. We parted with many tears, and lay that night at an inn on the road, about ten miles ſhort of the town where I was to remain, at which we arrived next day, and I found I had no cauſe to complain of the accommodations provided for me; in being boarded at the houſe of an apothecary, who had married a diſtant relation of my mother. In a few days after, my uncle ſet out for his ſhip, having ſettled the neceſſary funds for my maintenance and education.

CHAPTER VI.

I make great progreſs in my ſtudies—am careſſed by every body—my female couſins take notice of me—I reject their invitation—they are incenſed, and conſpire againſt me—I am left deſtitute by a misfortune that befals my uncle—Gawky's treachery—my revenge.

As I was now capable of reflection, I began to conſider my precarious ſituation; that I was utterly abandoned by thoſe whoſe duty it was to protect me; and that my ſole dependence was on the generoſity of one man, who was not only expoſed, by his profeſſion, to continual dangers, which might one day deprive me of him for ever; but alſo (no doubt) ſubject to thoſe viciſſitudes of

diſpoſition, which a change of fortune uſually creates; or, which a better acquaintance with the world might produce: For I always aſcribed his benevolence to the dictates of a heart as yet undebauched by a commerce with mankind. Alarmed at theſe conſiderations, I reſolved to apply myſelf with great care to my ſtudies, and enjoy the opportunity in my power: This I did with ſuch ſucceſs, that, in the ſpace of three years, I underſtood Greek very well, was pretty far advanced in the mathematics, and no ſtranger to moral and natural philoſophy; logic I made no account of; but, above all things, I valued myſelf on my taſte in the *Belles Lettres*, and a talent for poetry, which had already produced ſome pieces that met with a very favourable reception. Theſe qualifications, added to a good face and ſhape, acquired the eſteem and acquaintance of the moſt conſiderable people in town, and I had the ſatisfaction to find myſelf in ſome degree of favour with the ladies; an intoxicating piece of good fortune to one of my amorous complexion! which I obtained, or at leaſt preſerved, by gratifying their propenſity to ſcandal in lampooning their rivals. Two of my female couſins lived in this place with their mother, ſince the death of their father, who left his whole fortune equally divided between them; ſo that, if they were not the moſt beautiful, they were at leaſt the richeſt toaſts in town; and received daily the addreſſes of all the beaux and cavaliers of the country. Although I had hitherto been looked upon by them with the moſt ſupercilious contempt, my character now attracted their notice ſo much, that I was given to underſtand I might be honoured with their acquaintance, if I pleaſed. The reader will eaſily perceive, that this condeſcenſion either flowed from the hope of making my poetical capacity ſubſervient to their malice, or at leaſt of ſcreening themſelves from the laſh of my reſentment, which they had effectually provoked. I enjoyed this triumph with great ſatisfaction: and not only rejected their offer with diſdain, but in all my performances, whether ſatire or panegyric, induſtriouſly avoided mentioning their names, even while I celebrated thoſe of their intimates: This neglect mortified their

pride exceedingly, and incenſed them to ſuch a degree, that they were reſolved to make me repent of my indifference. The firſt ſtroke of their revenge conſiſted in their hiring a poor collegian to write verſes againſt me, the ſubject of which was my own poverty, and the cataſtrophe of my unhappy parents; but, beſides the badneſs of the compoſition (of which they themſelves were aſhamed), they did not find their account in endeavouring to reproach me with thoſe misfortunes which they and their relations had brought upon me, and which, conſequently, reflected much more diſhonour on themſelves than on me, who was the innocent victim of their barbarity and avarice. Finding this plan miſcarry, they found means to irritate a young gentleman againſt me, by telling him I had lampooned his miſtreſs; and ſo effectually ſucceeded in the quality of incendiaries, that this enraged lover determined to ſeize me next night, as I returned to my lodgings from a friend's houſe that I frequented: With this view, he waited in the ſtreet, attended by two of his companions, to whom he had imparted his deſign, of carrying me down to the river, in which he propoſed to have me heartily ducked, notwithſtanding the ſeverity of the weather, it being then about the middle of December. But this ſtratagem did not ſucceed; for, being appriſed of their ambuſh, I got home another way, and, by the help of my landlord's apprentice, diſcharged a volley from the garret window, which did great execution upon them; and next day occaſioned ſo much mirth at their expence, that they found themſelves under a neceſſity of leaving the town, until the adventure ſhould be entirely forgotten. My couſins (though twice baffled in their expectation), did not, however, deſiſt from perſecuting me, who had now enraged them beyond a poſſibility of forgiveneſs, by detecting their malice, and preventing its effects; neither ſhould I have found them more humane, had I patiently ſubmitted to their rancour, and bore without murmuring the rigour of their unreaſonable hate; for I have found by experience, that, though ſmall favours may be acknowledged, and ſlight injuries atoned, there is no wretch ſo ungrateful as he whom you have moſt generouſly

obliged; and no enemy ſo implacable as thoſe who have done you the greateſt wrong. Theſe good-natured creatures, therefore, had recourſe to a ſcheme which conſpired with a piece of bad news I ſoon after received, to give them all the ſatisfaction they deſired: This plan was to debauch the faith of my companion and confident, who betrayed the truſt I repoſed in him, by imparting to them the particulars of my ſmall amours, which they publiſhed with ſuch exaggerations, that I ſuffered very much in the opinion of every body, and was utterly diſcarded by the dear creatures whoſe names had been called in queſtion. While I was buſy in tracing out the author of this treachery, that I might not only be revenged on him, but alſo vindicate my character to my friends, I one day perceived the looks of my landlady much altered, when I went home to dinner, and inquiring into the cauſe, ſhe ſcrewed up her mouth, and fixing her eyes on the ground, told me her huſband had received a letter from Mr. Bowling, with one encloſed for me—ſhe was very ſorry for what had happened, both for my ſake and his own—people ſhould be more cautious of their conduct. She was always afraid his brutal behaviour would bring him into ſome misfortune or other. As for her part, ſhe ſhould be very ready to befriend me; but ſhe had a ſmall family of her own to maintain. The world would do nothing for her if ſhe ſhould come to want—charity begins at home: She wiſhed I had been bound to ſome ſubſtantial handicraft, ſuch as a weaver, or a ſhoemaker, rather than loiter away my time in learning fooliſh nonſenſe that would never bring me in a penny—but ſome folks are wiſe, and ſome are otherwiſe. I was liſtening to this myſterious diſcourſe with great amazement, when her huſband entered, and, without ſpeaking a ſyllable, put both the letters into my hand. I received them trembling, and read what follows:

To Mr. Roger Potion.

"Sir,

"This is to let you know that I have quitted the Thunder man of war, being obliged to ſheer off, for kil-

ling my captain, which I did fairly on the beach at Cape Tiberoon, in the iſland of Hiſpaniola; having received his fire, and returned it, which went through his body: And I would ſerve the beſt man ſo that ever ſtept between ſtem and ſtern, if ſo be that he ſtruck me, as Captain Oakum did. I am (thank God) ſafe among the French, who are very civil, thof I don't underſtand their lingo; and I hope to be reſtored in a little time, for all the great friends and parliamentary intereſt of the captain, for I have ſent over to my landlord in Deal an account of the whole affair, with our bearings and diſtances while we were engaged, whereby I have deſired him to lay it before his Majeſty, who (God bleſs him) will not ſuffer an honeſt tar to be wronged. My love to your ſpouſe, and am

Your loving friend,
and ſervant to command,
while
THOMAS BOWLING."

To RODERICK RANDOM.

" DEAR RORY,

" DONT be grieved at my misfortune—but mind your book, my lad. I have got no money to ſend you; but what of that?—Mr. Potion will take care of you, for the love he bears to me, and let you want for nothing, and it ſhall go hard but I will ſee him one day repaid. No more at preſent, but reſts

Your dutiful uncle
and ſervant till death,
THOMAS BOWLING."

THIS letter (which with the other was dated from Port Louis in Hiſpaniola) I had no ſooner read, than the apothecary, ſhaking his head, began: " I have a very great regard for Mr. Bowling, that's certain,—and could be well content—but times are very hard. There's no ſuch thing as money to be got—I believe 'tis all vaniſhed under-ground, for my part. Beſides, I have been out of pocket already, having entertained you ſince the beginning of this month without receiving a ſix-pence,—and

God knows if ever I ſhall;—for I believe it will go hard with your uncle. And more than that, I was thinking of giving you warning, for I want your apartment for a new 'prentice, whom I expect from the country every hour. So I deſire you will this week provide yourſelf with another lodging." The indignation which this harangue inſpired, gave me ſpirits to ſupport my reverſe of fortune, and to tell him, I deſpiſed his mean ſelfiſh diſpoſition ſo much, that I would ſtarve rather than be beholden to him for one ſingle meal. Upon which, out of my pocket-money, I paid him to the laſt farthing of what I owed, and aſſured him I would not ſleep another night under his roof. This ſaid, I ſallied out in a tranſport of rage and ſorrow, without knowing whither to fly for ſhelter, having not one friend in the world capable of relieving me, and only three ſhillings in my purſe. After giving way for a few minutes to the dictates of my rage, I went and hired a ſmall bedroom, at the rate of one ſhilling and ſix-pence per week, which I was obliged to pay per advance, before the landlord would receive me: Thither I removed my luggage; and next morning got up, with a view of craving the advice and aſſiſtance of a perſon who had on all occaſions loaded me with careſſes, and made frequent offers of friendſhip, while I was under no neceſſity of accepting them. He received me with his wonted affability, and inſiſted on my breakfaſting with him, a favour which I did not think fit to refuſe. But, when I communicated the occaſion of my viſit, he appeared ſo diſconcerted, that I concluded him wonderfully affected with the miſery of my condition, and looked upon him as a man of the moſt extenſive ſympathy and benevolence. He did not leave me long under this miſtake; for, recovering himſelf from his confuſion, he told me, he was grieved at my misfortune, and deſired to know what had paſſed between my landlord Mr. Potion and me. Whereupon I recounted the converſation; and when I repeated the anſwer I made to his ungenerous remonſtrance with regard to my leaving his houſe, this pretended friend affected a ſtare, and exclaimed, "Is it poſſible you could behave ſo ill to the man who had

treated you ſo kindly all along?" My ſurpriſe at hearing this was not at all affected, whatever his might be; and I gave him to underſtand, with ſome warmth, that I did not imagine he would ſo unreaſonably eſpouſe the cauſe of a ſcoundrel, who ought to be expelled from every ſocial community. This heat of mine gave him all the advantage he deſired over me, and our diſcourſe (after much altercation) concluded in his deſiring never to ſee me again in that place; to which deſire I yielded my conſent, aſſuring him, that had I been as well acquainted with his principles formerly as I was now, he never ſhould have had an opportunity of making that requeſt.—And thus we parted.

On my return, I met my comrade Squire Gawky, whom his father had ſent, ſome time ago, to town, for his improvement in writing, dancing, fencing, and other modiſh qualifications. As I had lived with him, ſince his arrival, on the footing of our old intimacy, I made no ſcruple of informing him of the lowneſs of my circumſtances, and aſking a ſmall ſupply of money, to anſwer my preſent expence; upon which he pulled out a handful of halfpence, with a ſhilling or two among them, and ſwore that was all he had to keep his pocket till next quarter-day, he having loſt the greateſt part of his allowance the night before at billiards. Though this aſſertion might very well be true, I was extremely mortified at his indifference; for he neither expreſſed any ſympathy for my miſhap, nor deſire of alleviating my diſtreſs; and accordingly I left him without uttering one word: But, when I afterwards underſtood that he was the perſon who had formerly betrayed me to the malice of my couſins, to whom likewiſe he had carried the tidings of my forlorn ſituation, which afforded them great matter of triumph and exultation, I determined with myſelf to call him to a ſevere account; for which purpoſe I borrowed a ſword, and wrote a challenge, deſiring him to meet me at a certain time and place, that I might have an opportunity of puniſhing his perfidy, at the expence of his blood. He accepted the invitation; and I betook myſelf to the field, though not without feeling conſiderable repugnance to the com-

bat, which frequently attacked me in cold ſweats by the way: But the deſire of revenge, the ſhame of retracting, and hope of conqueſt, conſpired to repel theſe unmanly ſymptoms of fear; and I appeared on the plain with a good grace: There I waited an hour beyond the time appointed, and was not ill pleaſed to find he had no mind to meet me; becauſe I ſhould have an opportunity of expoſing his cowardice, diſplaying my own courage, and of beating him ſoundly whereſoever I ſhould find him, without any dread of the conſequence. Elevated with theſe ſuggeſtions, which entirely baniſhed all thoughts of my deplorable condition, I went directly to Gawky's lodgings, where I was informed of his precipitate retreat, he having ſet out for the country in leſs than an hour after he had received my billet: And I was vain enough to have the whole ſtory inſerted in the news, although I was fain to ſell a gold-laced hat to my landlord for leſs than half price, to defray the expence, and contribute to my ſubſiſtence.

CHAPTER VII.

I am entertained by Mr. Crab—a deſcription of him—I acquire the art of ſurgery—conſult Crab's diſpoſition—become neceſſary to him—an accident happens—he adviſes me to launch out into the world—aſſiſts me with money—I ſet out for London.

THE fumes of my reſentment being diſſipated, as well as the vanity of my ſucceſs, I found myſelf deſerted to all the horrors of extreme want, and avoided by mankind as a creature of a different ſpecies, or rather as a ſolitary being, no ways comprehended within the ſcheme or protection of Providence. My deſpair had rendered me almoſt quite ſtupified, when I was one day told, that a gentleman deſired to ſee me at a certain public-houſe, whither immediately I repaired, and was introduced to one Mr. Launcelot Crab, a ſurgeon in town, who was engaged, with two more, in drinking a liquor called *pop-in*, compoſed by mixing a quartern of brandy with a quart of ſmall-beer. Before I relate the

occaſion of this meſſage, I believe it will not be diſagreeable to the reader, if I deſcribe the gentleman who ſent for me, and mention ſome circumſtances of his character and conduct, which may illuſtrate what follows, and account for his behaviour to me.

This member of the faculty was aged fifty, about five feet high, and ten round the belly; his face was capacious as a full moon, and much of the complexion of a mulberry; his noſe, reſembling a powder-horn, was ſwelled to an enormous ſize, and ſtudded all over with carbuncles; and his little gray eyes reflected the rays in ſuch an oblique manner, that, while he looked a perſon full in the face, one would have imagined he was admiring the buckle of his ſhoe. He had long entertained an implacable reſentment againſt Potion, who, though a young practitioner, was better employed than he, and once had the aſſurance to perform a cure, whereby he diſappointed and diſgraced the prognoſtic of the ſaid Crab. This quarrel, which was at one time upon the point of being made up by the interpoſition and mediation of friends, had been lately inflamed beyond a poſſibility of reconciliation, by the reſpective wives of the opponents, who, chancing to meet at a chriſtening, diſagreed about precedence, proceeded from invectives to blows, and were with great difficulty, by the goſſips, prevented from converting the occaſion of joy into a ſcene of lamentation.

The difference between theſe rivals was in the height of rancour, when I received the meſſage of Crab, who received me as civilly as I could have expected from one of his diſpoſition; and, after deſiring me to ſit, inquired into the particulars of my leaving the houſe of Potion; which when I had related, he ſaid, with a malicious grin, "There's a ſneaking dog!—I always thought him a fellow without a ſoul, d—n me!—a canting ſcoundrel, who has crept into buſineſs by his hypocriſy, and kiſſing the a—ſe of every body." "Ay, ay (ſays another), one might ſee with half an eye that the raſcal has no honeſty in him, by his going ſo regularly to church." This ſentence was confirmed by a third, who aſſured his companions, that Potion was ne-

ver known to be diſguiſed in liquor but once, at a meeting of the godly, where he had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by an *extempore* prayer an hour long. After this preamble, Crab addreſſed himſelf to me in theſe words: "Well, my lad, I have heard a good character of you, and I'll do for you. You may ſend your things to my houſe when you pleaſe. I have given orders for your reception. Z—ds! What does the booby ſtare at?—If you have no mind to embrace my courteous offer, you may let it alone, and be d—d." I anſwered, with a ſubmiſſive bow, that I was far from rejecting his friendly offer, which I would immediately accept, as ſoon as he ſhould inform me on what footing I was to be entertained. "What footing! d—n my blood (cried he), d'ye expect to have a footman and a couple of horſes kept for you?" No, Sir (I replied), my expectations are not quite ſo ſanguine. That I may be as little burdenſome as poſſible, I would willingly ſerve in your ſhop, by which means I may ſave you the expence of a journeyman, or porter at leaſt, for I underſtand a little pharmacy, having employed ſome of my leiſure hours in the practice of that art while I lived with Mr. Potion: Neither am I altogether ignorant of ſurgery, which I have ſtudied with great pleaſure and application. O ho! you did? (ſays Crab)—Gentlemen, here is a complete artiſt!—Studied ſurgery! what? in books, I ſuppoſe. I ſhall have you diſputing with me one of theſe days on points of my profeſſion. You can already account for muſcular motion (I warrant), and explain the myſtery of the brain and nerves—ha! You are too learned for me, d—n me. But let's hear no more of this ſtuff. Can you bleed and give a clyſter, ſpread a plaſter, and prepare a potion?" Upon my anſwering in the affirmative, he ſhook his head, telling me, he believed he ſhould have little good of me, for all my promiſes; but, however, he would take me in for the ſake of charity. I was accordingly that very night admitted to his houſe, and had an apartment aſſigned to me in the garret, which I was fain to put up with, notwithſtanding the mortification my pride ſuffered in this change of circumſtances. I was ſoon con-

vinced of the real motives which induced Crab to receive me in this manner: For, beſides the gratification of his revenge, by expoſing the ſelfiſhneſs of his antagoniſt, in oppoſition to his own generoſity, which was all affectation, he had occaſion for a young man, who underſtood ſomething of the profeſſion, to fill up the place of his eldeſt apprentice, lately dead, not without violent ſuſpicion of foul play from his maſter's brutality. The knowledge of this circumſtance, together with his daily behaviour to his wife and the young apprentice, did not at all contribute to my enjoying my new ſituation with eaſe: However, as I did not perceive how I could beſtow myſelf to better advantage, I reſolved to ſtudy Crab's temper with all the application, and manage it with all the addreſs, in my power. And it was not long before I found out a ſtrange peculiarity of humour, which governed his behaviour towards all his dependents. I obſerved, when he was pleaſed, he was ſuch a niggard of his ſatisfaction, that, if his wife or ſervants betrayed the leaſt ſymptom of participation, he was offended to an inſupportable degree of choler and fury, the effects of which they ſeldom failed to feel. And, when his indignation was rouſed, ſubmiſſion and ſoothing always exaſperated it beyond the bounds of reaſon and humanity. I therefore purſued a contrary plan; and one day when he honoured me with the names of ignorant whelp, and lazy ragamuffin, I boldly replied, I was neither ignorant nor lazy, ſince I both underſtood and performed my buſineſs as well as he could do for his ſoul; neither was it juſt to call me ragamuffin, for I had a whole coat on my back, and was deſcended from a better family than any he could boaſt an alliance with. He gave tokens of great amazement at this aſſurance of mine, and ſhook his cane over my head, regarding me all the time with a countenance truly diabolical. Although I was terribly ſtartled at his menacing looks and poſture, I yet had reflection enough left to convince me I had gone too far to retract, and that this was the critical minute which muſt decide my future lot in his ſervice; I therefore ſnatched up the peſtle of a mortar, and ſwore, if he offered to ſtrike me without a cauſe, I

ſhould ſee whether his ſkull or my weapon was hardeſt. He continued ſilent for ſome time, and at laſt broke forth into theſe ejaculations: "This is fine uſage from a ſervant to a maſter,—very fine!—damnation!—but no matter, you ſhall pay for this, you dog, you ſhall. I'll do your buſineſs—yes, yes, I'll teach you to lift your hand againſt me." So ſaying, he retired, and left me under dreadful apprehenſions, which vaniſhed entirely at our next meeting, when he behaved with unuſual complacency, and treated me with a glaſs of punch after dinner. By this conduct, I got the aſcendency over him in a ſhort time, and became ſo neceſſary to him, in managing his buſineſs while he was engaged at the bottle, that fortune began to wear a kinder aſpect; and I conſoled myſelf for the diſregard of my former acquaintance, with the knowledge I daily imbibed, by a cloſe application to the duties of my employment, in which I ſucceeded beyond my own expectation. I was on very good terms with my maſter's wife, whoſe eſteem I acquired and cultivated, by repreſenting Mrs. Potion in the moſt ridiculous lights my ſatirical talents could invent, as well as by rendering her ſome Chriſtian offices, when ſhe had been too familiar with the dram bottle, to which ſhe had oftentimes recourſe for conſolation, under the affliction ſhe ſuffered from a barbarous huſband. In this manner I lived, without hearing the leaſt tidings of my uncle, for the ſpace of two years, during which time I kept little or no company, being neither in a humour to reliſh, nor in a capacity to maintain much acquaintance: For the Nabal, my maſter, allowed me no wages; and the ſmall perquiſites of my ſtation ſcarce ſupplied me with the common neceſſaries of life. I was no longer a pert unthinking coxcomb, giddy with popular applauſe, and elevated with the extravagance of hope: My misfortunes had taught me how little the careſſes of the world, during a man's proſperity, are to be valued by him; and how ſeriouſly and expeditiouſly he ought to ſet about making himſelf independent of them. My preſent appearance, therefore, was the leaſt of my care, which was wholly engroſſed in laying up a ſtock of inſtruction that

might ſecure me againſt the caprice of fortune for the future. I became ſuch a ſloven, and contracted ſuch an air of auſterity, that every body pronounced me creſtfallen; and Gawky returned to town, without running any riſk from my reſentment, which was by this time pretty much cooled, and reſtrained by prudential reaſons ſo effectually, that I never ſo much as thought of obtaining ſatisfaction for the injuries he had done me. When I deemed myſelf ſufficiently maſter of my buſineſs, I began to caſt about for an opportunity of launching into the world, in hope of finding ſome proviſion that might make amends for the difficulties I had undergone: But, as this could not be effected without a ſmall ſum of money to equip me for the field, I was in the utmoſt perplexity how to raiſe it, well knowing, that Crab, for his own ſake, would never put me in a condition to leave him, when his intereſt was ſo much concerned in my ſtay. But a ſmall accident, which happened about this time, determined him in my favour. This was no other than the pregnancy of his maid-ſervant, who declared her ſituation to me, aſſuring me, at the ſame time, that I was the occaſion of it. Although I had no reaſon to queſtion the truth of this imputation, I was not ignorant of the familiarities which had paſſed between her maſter and her; taking the advantage of which, I repreſented to her the folly of laying the burden at my door, when ſhe might diſpoſe of it to much better purpoſe with Mr. Crab. She liſtened to my advice, and next day acquainted him with the pretended ſucceſs of their mutual endeavours. He was far from being overjoyed at this proof of his vigour, which he foreſaw might have very troubleſome conſequences; not that he dreaded any domeſtic grumblings and reproaches from his wife, whom he kept in perfect ſubjection; but becauſe he knew it would furniſh his rival Potion with a handle for inſulting and undermining his reputation; there being no ſcandal equal to that of uncleanneſs, in the opinion of thoſe who inhabit the part of the iſland where he lived. He therefore took a reſolution worthy of himſelf; which was, to perſuade the girl that ſhe was not with child, but only afflicted

with a diſorder incident to young women, which he could eaſily remove: With this view (as he pretended), he preſcribed for her ſuch medicines as he thought would infallibly procure abortion; but, in this ſcheme, he was diſappointed; for the maid, being advertiſed by me of his deſign, and at the ſame time well acquainted with her own condition, abſolutely refuſed to follow his directions; and threatened to publiſh her ſituation to the world, if he would not immediately take ſome method of providing for the important occaſion, which ſhe expected in a few months. It was not long before I gueſſed the reſult of his deliberation, by his addreſſing himſelf to me (one day) in this manner: "I am ſurpriſed that a young fellow like you diſcovers no inclination to puſh his fortune in the world. Before I was of your age, I was broiling on the coaſt of Guinea.—Dam-me! what's to hinder you from profiting by the war, which will certainly be declared in a ſhort time againſt Spain? You may eaſily get on board of a king's ſhip, in quality of a ſurgeon's mate; where you will certainly ſee a great deal of practice, and ſtand a good chance of getting prize-money." I laid hold of this declaration, which I had long wiſhed for, and aſſured him I would follow his advice with pleaſure, if it was in my power; but that it was impoſſible for me to embrace an opportunity of that kind, as I had no friend to advance a little money to ſupply me with what neceſſaries I ſhould want, and defray the expences of my journey to London. He told me, that few neceſſaries were required; and as for the expence of my journey, he would lend me money, ſufficient not only for that purpoſe, but alſo to maintain me comfortably in London, until I ſhould procure a warrant for my proviſion on board of ſome ſhip. I gave him a thouſand thanks for his obliging offer (although I was very well appriſed of his motive, which was no other than a deſign to lay the baſtard to my charge, after my departure), and accordingly ſet out in a few weeks for London, my whole fortune conſiſting of one ſuit of clothes, half a dozen of ruffled ſhirts, as many plain, two pair of worſted, and a like number of thread ſtockings, a caſe of pocket in-

ſtruments, a ſmall edition of Horace, Wiſeman's Surgery, and ten guineas in caſh, for which Crab took my bond, bearing five per cent. intereſt; at the ſame time gave me a letter to the member of parliament for our town, which, he ſaid, would do my buſineſs effectually.

CHAPTER VIII.

I arrive at Newcaſtle—meet with my old ſchool-fellow Strap—we determine to walk together to London—ſet out on our journey—put up at a ſolitary ale-houſe—are diſturbed by a ſtrange adventure in the night.

THERE is no ſuch convenience as a waggon in this country, and my finances were too weak to ſupport the expence of hiring a horſe; I determined therefore to ſet out with the carriers, who tranſport goods from one place to another on horſeback; and this ſcheme I accordingly put in execution on the firſt day of November 1739, ſitting upon a pack-ſaddle between two baſkets, one of which contained my goods in a knapſack. But, by the time we arrived at Newcaſtle upon Tyne, I was ſo fatigued with the tedioufneſs of the carriage, and benumbed with the coldneſs of the weather, that I reſolved to travel the reſt of my journey on foot, rather than proceed in ſuch a diſagreeable manner.

The hoſtler of the inn at which we put up, underſtanding I was bound for London, adviſed me to take my paſſage in a collier, which would be both cheap and expeditious, and withal much eaſier than to walk upwards of three hundred miles through deep roads in the winter time; a journey which, he believed, I had not ſtrength enough to perform. I was almoſt perſuaded to take his advice, when, one day, ſtepping into a barber's ſhop to be ſhaved, the young man, while he lathered my face, accoſted me thus: "Sir, I preſume you are a Scotchman." I anſwered in the affirmative. "Pray (continued he) from what part of Scotland?"—I no ſooner told him, than he diſcovered great emotion, and not confining his operation to my chin and upper lip,

eared my whole face with great agitation. I was so
ded at this profusion, that, starting up, I asked him
the d—l he meant by using me so? He begged
on, telling me his joy at meeting with a country-
had occasioned some confusion in him; and craved
ame. But when I declared my name was Random,
claimed in a rapture, "How! Rory Random?"
fame, I replied, looking at him, with astonishment.
hat, cried he, don't you know your old school-fel-
Hugh Strap?" At that instant, recollecting his
I flew into his arms, and, in the transport of my
gave him back one half of the suds he had so la-
y bestowed on my countenance; so that we made a
ludicrous appearance, and furnished a great deal of
h for his master and shop-mates, who were witnesses
his scene. When our mutual caresses were over, I
own again to be shaved; but the poor fellow's
s were so discomposed by this unexpected meeting,
his hand could scarcely hold the razor, with which
ertheless) he found means to cut me in three places,
many strokes. His master, perceiving his disor-
bade another supply his place, and, after the ope-
n was performed, gave Strap leave to pass the rest
e day with me. We retired immediately to my
ngs, where, calling for some beer, I desired to be
med of his adventures, which contained nothing
, than that his master dying before his time was
he had come to Newcastle about a year ago, in ex-
tion of journey-work, along with three young fel-
of his acquaintance who worked in the keels; that
d the good fortune of being employed by a very
master, with whom he intended to stay till the
g, at which time he proposed to go to London,
e he did not doubt of finding encouragement.
n I communicated to him my situation and design,
d not approve of my taking a passage by sea, by
n of the danger of a winter voyage, which is very
dous along that coast, as well as the precariousness
e wind, which might possibly detain me a great
, to the no small detriment of my fortune: Where-
I would venture by land, he would [illegible] me com-

pany, carry my baggage all the way, and, if we ſhould be fatigued before we could perform all the journey, it would be no hard matter for us to find on the road either returning horſes or waggons, of which we might take the advantage for a very trifling expence. I was ſo raviſhed at this propoſal, that I embraced him affectionately, and aſſured him he might command my purſe to the laſt farthing: But he gave me to underſtand, he had ſaved money ſufficient to anſwer his own occaſions; and that he had a friend in London, who would ſoon introduce him into buſineſs in that capital, and might poſſibly have it in his power to ſerve me alſo.

Having concerted the plan and ſettled our affairs that night, we departed next morning by day-break, armed with a good cudgel each (my companion being charged with the furniture of us both, crammed into one knapſack), and our money ſewed between the lining and waiſtband of our breeches, except ſome looſe ſilver for our immediate expence on the road. We travelled all day at a round pace, but, being ignorant of the proper ſtages, were benighted at a good diſtance from any inn, ſo that we were compelled to take up our lodging at a ſmall hedge ale-houſe, that ſtood on a by-road, about half a mile from the highway: There we found a pedlar of our own country, in whoſe company we regaled ourſelves with bacon and eggs, and a glaſs of good ale, before a comfortable fire, converſing all the while very ſociably with the landlord and his daughter, an hale buxom laſs, who entertained us with great good humour, and in whoſe affection I was vain enough to believe I had made ſome progreſs. About eight o'clock, we were all three, at our own deſire, ſhown into an apartment, furniſhed with two beds, in one of which Strap and I betook ourſelves to reſt, and the pedlar occupied the other, though not before he had prayed a conſiderable time *extempore*, ſearched into every corner of the room, and faſtened the door on the inſide with a ſtrong iron ſcrew, which he carried about with him for that uſe. I ſlept very ſound till midnight, when I was diſturbed by a violent motion of the bed, which ſhook under me with a continual tremor. Alarmed at this phe-

nomenon, I jogged my companion, whom, to my no ſmall amazement, I found drenched in ſweat, and quaking through every limb; he told me, with a low faultering voice, that we were undone; for there was a bloody highwayman loaded with piſtols in the next room; then bidding me make as little noiſe as poſſible, he directed me to a ſmall chink in the board partition, through which I could ſee a thick-ſet brawny fellow, with a fierce countenance, ſitting at a table with our young landlady, having a bottle of ale and a brace of piſtols before him. I liſtened with great attention, and heard him ſay in a terrible tone: "D—n that ſon of a bitch Smack the coachman!—he has ſerved me a fine trick, indeed!—but d——tion ſeize me, if I don't make him repent it! I'll teach the ſcoundrel to give intelligence to others, while he is under articles with me." Our landlady endeavoured to appeaſe this exaſperated robber, by ſaying he might be miſtaken in Smack, who perhaps kept no correſpondence with the other gentleman that robbed his coach; and that, if an accident had diſappointed him to-day, he might ſoon find opportunity enough to atone for his loſt trouble. "I'll tell thee what, my dear Bett (replied he), I never had, nor ever will, while my name is Rifle, have ſuch a glorious booty as I miſſed to-day.—Z—nds! there was four hundred pounds in caſh to recruit men for the king's ſervice, beſides the jewels, watches, ſwords, and money belonging to the paſſengers;—had it been my fortune to have got clear off with ſo much treaſure, I would have purchaſed a commiſſion in the army, and made you an officer's lady, you jade, I would." "Well, well (cries Betty), we muſt truſt to Providence for that;—but did you find nothing worth taking, which eſcaped the other gentleman of the road?" "Not much, faith (ſaid the lover), I gleaned a few things, ſuch as a pair of pops, ſilver mounted (here they are), I took them loaded from the captain who had the charge of the money, together with a gold watch, which he had concealed in his breeches. I likewiſe found ten Portugal pieces in the ſhoes of a quaker, whom the ſpirit moved to revile me with great bitterneſs and devotion: But what I value myſelf moſtly for, is this here

purchaſe, a gold ſnuff-box, my girl, with a picture on the inſide of the lid; which I untied out of the tail of a pretty lady's ſmock." Here, as the devil would have it, the pedlar ſnored ſo loud, that the highwayman ſnatching his piſtols, ſtarted up, crying: "Hell and d—n—n! I am betrayed; who's that in the next room?" Mrs. Betty told him, he need not be uneaſy; there were only three poor wearied travellers, who, miſſing the road, had taken up their lodging in the houſe, and were aſleep long ago. "Travellers! (ſays he), ſpies, you b—ch! but no matter—I'll ſend them all to hell in an inſtant." He accordingly ran towards our door; when his ſweetheart interpoſing, aſſured him, there was only a couple of poor young Scotchmen, who were too raw and ignorant to give him the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion; and the third was a preſbyterian pedlar of the ſame nation, who had often lodged in the houſe before. This declaration ſatisfied the thief, who ſwore he was glad there was a pedlar, for he wanted ſome linen. Then, in a jovial manner, he put about the glaſs, mingling his diſcourſe to Betty, with careſſes and familiarities that ſpoke him very happy in his amours. During that part of the converſation which regarded us, Strap had crept under the bed, where he lay in the agonies of fear; ſo that it was with great difficulty I perſuaded him our danger was over, and prevailed on him to wake the pedlar, and inform him of what he had ſeen and heard. This itinerant merchant no ſooner felt ſomebody ſhaking him by the ſhoulder, than he ſtarted up, calling as loud as he could, "Thieves, thieves! Lord have mercy on us!" And Rifle, alarmed at this exclamation, jumped up, cocked one of his piſtols, and turned towards the door, to kill the firſt man who ſhould enter; for he verily believed himſelf beſet; when his dulcinea, after an immoderate fit of laughter, perſuaded him, that the poor pedlar, dreaming of thieves, had only cried out in his ſleep. Meanwhile my comrade had undeceived our fellow lodger, and informed him of his reaſon for diſturbing him; upon which, getting up ſoftly, he peeped through the hole, and was ſo terrified with what he ſaw, that, falling down on his bare knees, he put up a long petition to Heaven, to deliver him from the hands of that ruffian,

romiſed never to defraud a cuſtomer for the future
e value of a pin's point, provided he might be reſ-
from the preſent danger. Whether or not his diſ-
ening his conſcience afforded him any eaſe, I know
but he ſlipped into bed again, and lay very quiet
the robber and his miſtreſs were aſleep, and ſnored
ncert; then, riſing ſoftly, he untied a rope that was
d his pack, which making faſt to one end of it, he
ed the window with as little noiſe as poſſible, and
red his goods into the yard with great dexterity;
he moved gently to our bed-ſide, and bade us fare-
telling us, that, as we ran no riſk, we might take
reſt with great confidence, and in the morning aſſure
andlord that we knew nothing of his eſcape; and,
, ſhaking us by the hands, and wiſhing us all man-
of ſucceſs, he let himſelf drop from the window
out any danger, for the ground was not above a
from his feet as he hung on the outſide. Although
not think proper to accompany him in his flight,
s not at all free from apprehenſion, when I reflected
hat might be the effect of the highwayman's diſap-
tment, as he certainly intended to make free with
edlar's ware. Neither was my companion at more
in his mind; but, on the contrary, ſo poſſeſſed with
lreadful idea of Riſle, that he ſolicited me ſtrongly
llow our countryman's example, and ſo elude the
reſentment of that terrible adventurer, who would
inly wreak his vengeance on us, as accomplices of
edlar's elopement. But I repreſented to him the
er of giving Riſle cauſe to think we knew his pro-
n, and ſuggeſted, that, if ever he ſhould meet us
a on the road, he would look upon us as dangerous
aintance, and find it his intereſt to put us out of the
. I told him withal my confidence in Betty's good
re, in which he acquieſced; and, during the remain-
art of the night, we concerted a proper method of
viour, to render us unſuſpected in the morning.

was no ſooner day, than Betty, entering our cham-
and perceiving our window open, cried out: "Ods
! ſure you Scotchmen muſt have hot conſtitutions
e all night with the window open, in ſuch cold wea-

ther." I feigned to ſtart out of ſleep, and, withdrawing the curtain, called, "What's the matter?" When ſhe ſhowed me, I affected ſurpriſe, and ſaid, "Bleſs me! the window was ſhut when we went to bed." "I'll be hanged (ſaid ſhe), if Sawny Waddle the pedlar has not got up in a dream and done it, for I heard him very obſtropulous in his ſleep.—Sure I put a chamber-pot under his bed." With theſe words ſhe advanced to the bed in which he lay, and finding the ſheets cold, exclaimed, "Good lack a daiſy! the rogue is fled!" "Fled! (cried I, with feigned amazement), God forbid!—Sure he has not robbed us." Then ſpringing up, I laid hold of my breeches, and emptied all my looſe money into my hand; which having reckoned, I ſaid, "Heaven be praiſed, our money is all ſafe:—Strap look to the knapſack." He did ſo, and found all was right. Upon which we aſked, with ſeeming concern, if he had ſtole nothing belonging to the houſe? "No, no (replied ſhe), he has ſtolen nothing but his reckoning;" which, it ſeems, this pious pedlar had forgot to diſcharge, in the midſt of his devotion. Betty, after a moment's pauſe, withdrew; and immediately we could hear her waken Rifle, who no ſooner heard of Waddle's flight, than he jumped out of bed, and dreſſed, venting a thouſand execrations, and vowing to murder the pedlar, if ever he ſhould ſet eyes on him again: "For (ſaid he) the ſcoundrel has by this time raiſed the hue and cry againſt me." Having dreſſed himſelf in a hurry, he mounted his horſe, and for that time rid us of his company, and a thouſand fears that were the conſequence of it. While we were at breakfaſt, Betty endeavoured, by all the cunning ſhe was miſtreſs of, to learn whether or no we ſuſpected our fellow-lodger, whom we ſaw take horſe; but as we were on our guard, we anſwered her ſly queſtions with a ſimplicity ſhe could not diſtruſt; when, all of a ſudden, we heard the trampling of a horſe's feet at the door. This noiſe alarmed Strap ſo much, whoſe imagination was wholly engroſſed by the image of Rifle, that, with a countenance as pale as milk, he cried, "O Lord! there's the highwayman returned!" Our landlady ſtaring at theſe words, ſaid, "What highwayman, young man?—

Do you think any highwaymen harbour here?" Though I was very much diſconcerted at this piece of indiſcretion in Strap, I had preſence of mind enough to tell her, we had met a horſeman the day before, whom Strap had fooliſhly ſuppoſed to be a highwayman, becauſe he rode with piſtols; and that he had been terrified at the ſound of a horſe's feet ever ſince. She forced a ſmile at the ignorance and timidity of my comrade; but I could perceive (not without great concern) that this account was not at all ſatisfactory to her.

CHAPTER IX.

We proceed on our journey—are overtaken by an highwayman, who fires at Strap.—is prevented from ſhooting me by a company of horſemen, who ride in purſuit of him.—Strap is put to bed at an inn.—Adventures at that inn.

AFTER having paid our ſcore, and taken leave of our hoſteſs, who embraced me tenderly at parting, we proceeded on our journey, bleſſing ourſelves that we had come off ſo well. We had not walked above five miles, when we obſerved a man on horſeback galloping after us, whom we in a ſhort time recognized to be no other than this formidable hero who had already given us ſo much vexation. He ſtopped hard by me, and aſked if I knew who he was? My aſtoniſhment had diſconcerted me ſo much, that I did not hear his queſtion, which he repeated with a volley of oaths and threats; but I remained as mute as before. Strap ſeeing my diſcompoſure, fell upon his knees in the mud, uttering with a lamentable voice, theſe words: "For Ch—ſt's ſake, have mercy upon us, Mr. Rifle,—we know you very well." "Oho! (cried the thief), you do!—but you never ſhall be evidence againſt me in this world, you dog!" So ſaying, he drew a piſtol, and fired it at the unfortunate ſhaver, who fell flat upon the ground, without ſpeaking one word. My comrade's fate, and my own ſituation, rivetted me to the place where I ſtood, deprived of all ſenſe and reflection; ſo that I did not make the

leaſt attempt either to run away, or deprecate the wrath of this barbarian, who ſnapped a ſecond piſtol at me; but before he had time to prime again, perceiving a company of horſemen coming up, he rode off, and left me ſtanding motionleſs as a ſtatue, in which poſture I was found by thoſe whoſe appearance had ſaved my life. This company conſiſted of three men in livery, well armed, with an officer, who (as I afterwards learned) was the perſon from whom Riſle had taken the pocket piſtols the day before; and who, making known his misfortune to a nobleman he met on the road, and aſſuring him his nonreſiſtance was altogether owing to his conſideration for the ladies in the coach, procured the aſſiſtance of his lordſhip's ſervants to go in queſt of the plunderer. This holiday captain ſcampered up to me with great addreſs, and aſked who fired the piſtol which he had heard. As I had not yet recovered my reaſon, he, before I could anſwer, obſerved a body lying on the ground: At which ſight his colour changed, and he pronounced with a faultering tongue, "Gentlemen, here's murder committed! Let us alight." "No, no, (ſaid one of his followers), let us rather purſue the murderer. Which way went he, young man?" By this time I had recollected myſelf ſo far as to tell them, that he could not be a quarter of a mile before; and to beg of one of them to aſſiſt me in conveying the corpſe of my friend to the next houſe, in order to its being interred. The captain, foreſeeing, that, in caſe he ſhould purſue, he muſt ſoon come to action, began to curb his horſe, and give him the ſpur at the ſame time, which treatment making the creature rear up and ſnort, he called out, his horſe was frightened, and would not proceed; at the ſame time wheeling him round and round, ſtroaking his neck, whiſtling and wheedling him with "Sirrah, Sirrah, gently, gently, &c."—"Z——ds! (cried one of the ſervants) ſure my Lord's Sorrel is not reſty!"—With theſe words, he beſtowed a laſh on his buttocks, and Sorrel diſdaining the rein, ſprung forward with the captain at a pace that would have ſoon brought him up with the robber, had not the girth (happily for him) given way, by which means he landed in the dirt; and two of his attendants

continued their purſuit, without minding his ſituation. Mean while, one of the three who remained at my deſire, turning the body of Strap, in order to ſee the wound which had killed him, found him ſtill warm, and breathing; upon which I immediately let him blood, and ſaw him, with inexpreſſible joy, recover; he having received no other wound than what his fear had inflicted. having raiſed him upon his legs, we walked together to an inn, about half a mile from the place, where Strap, who was not quite recovered, went to bed; and, in a little time, the third ſervant returned with the captain's horſe and furniture, leaving him to crawl after as well as he could. This gentleman of the ſword, upon his arrival, complained grievouſly of the bruiſe occaſioned by his fall; and, on the recommendation of the ſervant, who warranted my ability, I was employed to bleed him, for which ſervice he rewarded me with half a crown.

The time between this event and dinner, I paſſed in obſerving a game at cards between two farmers, an exciſeman, and a young fellow in a ruſty gown and caſſock, who, as I afterwards underſtood, was curate of a neighbouring pariſh. It was eaſy to perceive, that the match was not equal; and that the two farmers, who were partners, had to do with a couple of ſharpers, who ſtript them of all their caſh in a very ſhort time. But what ſurpriſed me very much, was to hear this clergyman reply to one of the countrymen who ſeemed to ſuſpect foul play, in theſe words: "D—n me, friend, d'ye queſtion my honour?"—I did not at all wonder to find a cheat in canonicals, this being a character frequent in my own country; but I was ſcandalized at the indecency of his behaviour, which appeared in the oaths he ſwore, and the baudy ſongs which he ſung. At laſt, to make amends, in ſome ſort, for the damage he had done to the unwary boors, he pulled out a fiddle from the lining of his gown, and, promiſing to treat them at dinner, began to play moſt melodiouſly, ſinging in concert all the while. This good humour of the parſon inſpired the company with ſo much glee, that the farmers ſoon forgot their loſſes, and all preſent went to dancing in the yard. While we were agreeably amuſed in this manner,

our muſician ſpying a horſeman riding towards the inn, ſtopt all of a ſudden, crying out, "Gad ſo! gentlemen, I beg your pardon; there's our dog of a doctor coming into the inn." He immediately concealed his inſtrument, and ran towards the gate, where he took hold of the vicar's bridle, and helped him off, inquiring very cordially into the ſtate of his health. This roſy ſon of the church (who might be about the age of fifty) having alighted, and entruſted the curate with his horſe, ſtalked with great ſolemnity into the kitchen, where, ſitting down by the fire, he called for a bottle of ale and a pipe; ſcarce deigning an anſwer to the ſubmiſſive queſtions of thoſe who inquired about the welfare of his family. While he indulged himſelf in this ſtate, amidſt a profound ſilence, the curate approaching him with great reverence, aſked if he would not be pleaſed to honour us with his company at dinner? To which interrogation he anſwered in the negative, ſaying, he had been to viſit Squire Bumpkin, who had drank himſelf into a high fever at the laſt aſſizes; and that he had, on leaving his own houſe, told Betty he ſhould dine at home. Accordingly, when he had made an end of his bottle and pipe, he roſe and moved, with prelatical dignity, to the door, where his journeyman ſtood ready with his nag. He had no ſooner mounted, than the facetious curate coming into the kitchen, held forth in this manner: "There the old raſcal goes, and the d—l go with him.—You ſee how the world wags, gentlemen.—By Gad, this rogue of a vicar does not deſerve to live; and yet he has two livings worth 400l. per annum, while poor I am fain to do all his drudgery, and ride twenty miles every Sunday to preach, for what? why, truly, for 20l. a-year. I ſcorn to boaſt of my own qualifications; but—compariſons are odious. I ſhould be glad to know how this ſwag-bellied doctor deſerves to be more at eaſe than me. He can loll in his elbow chair at home, indulge himſelf in the beſt of victuals and wine, and enjoy the converſation of Betty, his houſekeeper. You underſtand me, gentlemen. Betty is the doctor's poor kinſwoman, and a pretty girl ſhe is; but no matter for that:—ay, and a dutiful girl to her parents, whom ſhe viſits regularly

every year, though I muſt own, I could never learn in what county they live.——My ſervice t'ye, gentlemen."—By this time dinner being ready, I waked my companion, and we ate altogether with great cheerfulneſs. When our meal was ended, and every man's ſhare of the reckoning adjuſted, the curate went out on pretence of ſome neceſſary occaſion, and mounting his horſe, left the two farmers to ſatisfy the hoſt in the beſt manner they could. We were no ſooner informed of this piece of fineſſe, than the exciſeman, who had been ſilent hitherto, began to open with a malicious grin: "Ay, ay, this is an old trick of Shuffle: I could not help ſmiling when he talked of treating. You muſt know this is a very curious fellow. He picked up ſome ſcraps of learning while he ſerved young Lord Trifle at the univerſity. But what he moſt excels in is pimping. No man knows his talents better than I; for I was valet de chambre to Squire Tattle, an intimate companion of Shuffle's lord. He got himſelf into a ſcrape, by pawning ſome of his Lordſhip's clothes, on which account he was turned away; but, as he was acquainted with ſome particular circumſtances of my Lord's conduct, he did not care to exaſperate him too much, and ſo made intereſt for his receiving orders, and afterwards recommended him to the curacy which he now enjoys. However, the fellow cannot be too much admired for his dexterity in making a comfortable livelihood, in ſpite of ſuch a ſmall allowance. You hear he plays a good ſtick, and is really diverting company. Theſe qualifications make him agreeable wherever he goes; and, as for playing at cards, there is not a man within three counties a match for him: The truth is, he is a damnable cheat; and can ſhift a card with ſuch addreſs, that it is impoſſible to diſcover him." Here he was interrupted by one of the farmers, who aſked why he had not juſtice enough to acquaint them with theſe particulars before they engaged in play? The exciſeman replied, without any heſitation, that it was none of his buſineſs to intermeddle between man and man; beſides, he did not know they were ignorant of Shuffle's character, which was notorious to the whole country. This did not ſatisfy the other, who *tax-*

ed him with abetting and aſſiſting the curate's knavery, and inſiſted on having his ſhare of the winnings returned; this demand the exciſeman as poſitively refuſed, affirming, that whatſoever ſlights Shuffle might practiſe on other occaſions, he was very certain, that he had played on the ſquare with them, and would anſwer it before any bench in Chriſtendom; ſo ſaying, he got up, and, having paid his reckoning, ſneaked off. The landlord thruſting his neck into the paſſage, to ſee if he was gone, ſhook his head, ſaying, "Ah! Lord help us! if every ſinner was to have his deſerts.—Well, we victuallers muſt not diſoblige the exciſemen.—But I know what:—If parſon Shuffle and he were weighed together, a ſtraw thrown into either ſcale would make the balance kick the beam.—But, maſters, this is under the roſe," continued Boniface, with a whiſper.

CHAPTER X.

The highwayman is taken—we are detained as evidence againſt him—proceed to the next village—he eſcapes—we arrive at another inn, where we go to bed—in the night we are awaked by a dreadful adventure—next night we lodge at the houſe of a ſchoolmaſter—our treatment there.

STRAP and I were about to depart on our journey, when we perceived a crowd on the road coming towards us, ſhouting and hallooing all the way. As it approached, we could diſcern a man on horſeback in the middle, with his hands tied behind him, whom we ſoon knew to be Riſle. This highwayman not being ſo well mounted as the two ſervants who went in purſuit of him, was ſoon overtaken, and, after having diſcharged his piſtols, made priſoner without any further oppoſition. They were carrying him in triumph, amidſt the acclamations of the country people, to a juſtice of peace in a neighbouring village, but ſtopt at our inn to join their companion, and take refreſhment. When Riſle was diſmounted, and placed in the yard, within a circle of peaſants armed with pitchforks, I was amazed to ſee what

a pitiful dejected fellow he now appeared, who had but a few hours before filled me with ſuch terror and confuſion. My companion was ſo much encouraged by this alteration in his appearance, that, going up to the thief, he preſented his clenched fiſts to his noſe, and declared, he would either cudgel or box with the priſoner for a guinea, which he immediately produced, and began to ſtrip, but was diſſuaded from this adventure by me, who repreſented to him the folly of the undertaking, as Rifle was now in the hands of juſtice, which would, no doubt, give us all ſatisfaction enough. But what made me repent of our impertinent curioſity, was our being detained by the captors as evidence againſt him, when we were juſt going to ſet forward. However, there was no remedy; we were obliged to comply; and accordingly joined in the cavalcade, which luckily took the ſame road that we had propoſed to follow. About the twilight we arrived at the place of our deſtination; but, as the juſtice was gone to viſit a gentleman in the country, with whom (we underſtood) he would probably ſtay all night, the robber was confined in an empty garret three ſtories high, from which it ſeemed impoſſible for him to eſcape. This, nevertheleſs, was the caſe; for next morning, when they went up ſtairs to bring him before the juſtice, the bird was flown, having got out at the window upon the roof, from whence he continued his rout along the tops of the adjoining houſes, and entered another garret window, where he ſkulked until the family were aſleep, at which time he ventured down ſtairs, and let himſelf out by the ſtreet door, which was found open. This event was a great diſappointment to thoſe that apprehended him, who were fluſhed with hopes of the reward; but gave me great joy, as I was permitted now to continue my journey without any further moleſtation. Reſolving to make up for the ſmall progreſs we had hitherto made, we this day travelled with great vigour, and before night reached a market-town, twenty miles from the place from whence we ſet out in the morning, without meeting any adventure worth notice. Here having taken up our lodging at an inn, I found myſelf ſo fatigued, that I began to deſpair of performing

our journey on foot, and deſired Strap to inquire if there were any waggon, return-horſes, or other cheap carriage in this place, to depart for London next day. He was informed, that the waggon from Newcaſtle to London had halted here two nights ago; and that it would be an eaſy matter to overtake it, if not the next day, at fartheſt the day after the next. This piece of news gave us ſome ſatisfaction; and, after having made a hearty ſupper on haſhed mutton, we were ſhown to our room, which contained two beds, the one allotted for us, and the other for a very honeſt gentleman, who, we were told, was then drinking below. Though we could have very well diſpenſed with his company, we were glad to ſubmit to this diſpoſition, as there was not another bed empty in the houſe; and accordingly went to reſt, after having ſecured our baggage under the bolſter. About two or three o'clock in the morning, I was waked out of a very profound ſleep, by a dreadful noiſe in the chamber, which did not fail to throw me into an agony of conſternation, when I heard theſe words pronounced with a terrible voice: "Blood and wounds! run the halbert into the guts of him that's next you, and I'll blow the other's brains out preſently." This dreadful ſalutation had no ſooner reached the ears of Strap, than ſtarting out of bed, he ran againſt ſome body in the dark, and overturned him in an inſtant; at the ſame time bawling out, "Fire! murder! fire!" a cry which in a moment alarmed the whole houſe, and filled our chamber with a crowd of naked people. When lights were brought, the occaſion of all this diſturbance ſoon appeared; which was no other than our fellow lodger, whom we found lying on the floor ſcratching his head, with a look teſtifying the utmoſt aſtoniſhment at the concourſe of apparitions that ſurrounded him.—This honeſt gentleman was, it ſeems, a recruiting ſerjeant, who, having liſted two country fellows over night, dreamed they had mutinied, and threatened to murder him and the drummer who was along with him. This made ſuch an impreſſion on his imagination, that he got up in his ſleep, and expreſſed himſelf as above. When our apprehenſion of danger vaniſhed, the company beheld one another

with great ſurpriſe and mirth; but what attracted the notice of every one, was our landlady, with nothing on her but her ſhift, and a large pair of buckſkin breeches, with the backſide before, which ſhe had ſlipt on in the hurry, and her huſband, with her petticoat about his ſhoulders: One had wrapt himſelf in a blanket, another was covered with a ſheet, and the drummer, who had given his only ſhirt to be waſhed, appeared in cuerpo, with the bolſter rolled about his middle. When this affair was diſcuſſed, every body retired to his own apartment, the ſerjeant ſlipt into bed, and my companion and I ſlept without any further diſturbance till morning, when we got up, went to breakfaſt, paid our reckoning, and ſet forward, in expectation of overtaking the waggon; in which hope, however, we were diſappointed for that day. As we exerted ourſelves more than uſual, I found myſelf quite ſpent with fatigue, when we entered a ſmall village in the twilight. We inquired for a public houſe, and were directed to one of a very ſorry appearance. At our entrance, the landlord, who ſeemed to be a venerable old man, with long gray hair, roſe from a table placed by a large fire in a very neat paved kitchen, and, with a cheerful countenance, accoſted us in theſe words: "*Salvête, pueri, ingredimini.*" I was not a little pleaſed to hear our hoſt ſpeak Latin, becauſe I was in hope of recommending myſelf to him by my knowledge in that language; I therefore anſwered, without heſitation,—"*Diſſolve frigus, ligna ſuper foco—large reponens.*" I had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than the old gentleman running toward me, ſhook me by the hand, crying, "*Fili mi dilectiſſime! unde venis? a ſuperis, ni fallor!*" In ſhort, finding we were both read in the claſſics, he did not know how to teſtify his regard enough; but ordered his daughter, a jolly roſy cheeked damſel, who was his ſole domeſtic, to bring us a bottle of his *quadrimum*, repeating from Horace at the ſame time, "*Deprome quadrimum ſabina, O Thaliarche merum diota.*" This *quadrimum* was excellent ale of his own brewing, of which he told us he had always an *amphora* four years old for the uſe of himſelf and friends. In the courſe of our converſation, which was interlarded

with ſcraps of Latin, we underſtood that this facetious perſon was a ſchoolmaſter, whoſe income being ſmall, he was fain to keep a glaſs of good liquor for the entertainment of paſſengers, by which he made ſhift to make the two ends of the year meet. "I am this day, ſaid he, the happieſt old fellow in his Majeſty's dominions. My wife, reſt her ſoul, is in heaven. My daughter is to be married next week; but the two chief pleaſures of my life are theſe (pointing to the bottle, and a large edition of Horace that lay on the table). I am old, 'tis true,—what then? the more reaſon I ſhould enjoy the ſmall ſhare of life that remains, as my friend Flaccus adviſes: "*Tu ne quæſieris (ſcire nefas) quem mihi, quem tibi finem dii dederint. Carpe diem quam minimum credula poſtero.*" As he was very inquiſitive about our affairs, we made no ſcruple of acquainting him with our ſituation, which, when he had learned, he enriched us with advices how to behave in the world, telling us, that he was no ſtranger to the deceits of mankind. In the mean time, he ordered his daughter to lay a fowl to the fire for ſupper, for he was reſolved this night to regale his friends—*permittens divis cætera.* While our entertainment was preparing, our hoſt recounted the adventures of his own life, which, as they contain nothing remarkable, I forbear to rehearſe. When we had fared ſumptuouſly, and drank ſeveral bottles of his *quadrimum*, I expreſſed a deſire of going to reſt, which was with ſome difficulty complied with, after he had informed us, that we ſhould overtake the waggon by noon next day; and that there was room enough in it for half a dozen, for there were only four paſſengers as yet in that convenience. Before my comrade and I fell aſleep, we had ſome converſation about the good humour of our landlord, which gave Strap ſuch an idea of his benevolence, that he poſitively believed we ſhould pay nothing for our lodging and entertainment. "Don't you obſerve, ſaid he, that he has conceived a particular affection for us; nay, even treated us at ſupper with extraordinary fare, which, to be ſure, we ſhould not of ourſelves have called for?" I was partly of Strap's opinion; but the experience I had of the world made me

ſuſpend my belief till the morning, when, getting up betimes, we breakfaſted with our hoſt and his daughter on haſty-pudding and ale, and deſired to know what we had to pay. "Biddy will let you know, gentlemen, ſaid he, for I never mind theſe matters. Money matters are beneath the concern of one who lives upon the Horatian plan, *Creſcentem ſequitur cura pecuniam.*" Meanwhile, Biddy having conſulted a ſlate that hung in the corner, told us, our reckoning came to 8s. 7d. "Eight ſhillings and ſeven pence! cried Strap; 'tis impoſſible —you muſt be miſtaken, young woman." "Reckon again, child (ſays her father, very deliberately), perhaps you have miſcounted." "No, indeed, father (ſhe replied), I know my buſineſs better." I could contain my indignation no longer, but ſaid, it was an unconſcionable bill, and demanded to know the particulars; upon which the old man got up, muttering, "Ay, ay, let us ſee the particulars—that's but reaſonable." And, taking pen, ink, and paper, wrote the following items:

	s.	d.
To bread and beer	0	6
To a fowl and ſauſages	2	6
To four bottles *quadrim.*	2	0
To fire and tobacco	0	7
To lodging	2	0
To breakfaſt	1	0
	8	7

As he had not the appearance of a common publican, and had raiſed a ſort of veneration in me by his demeanor the preceding night, it was not in my power to upbraid him as he deſerved; therefore I contented myſelf with ſaying, I was ſure he did not learn to be an extortioner from Horace. He anſwered, "I was but a young man, and did not know the world, or I would not tax him with extortion, whoſe only aim was to live *contentus parvo*, and keep off *importuna pauperies.*" My fellow-traveller could not ſo eaſily put up with this impoſition; but ſwore he ſhould either take one-third of the money, or go without. While we were engaged in this diſpute, I perceived the daughter go out, and, conjecturing the

occaſion, immediately paid the exorbitant demand, which was no ſooner done, than Biddy returned with two ſtout fellows, who came in on pretence of taking their morning draught; but in reality to frighten us into compliance. Juſt as we departed, Strap, who was half diſtracted on account of this piece of expence, went up to the ſchoolmaſter, and, grinning in his face, pronounced with great emphaſis, "*Semper avarus eget.*" To which the pedant replied, with a malicious ſmile, "*Animum rege, qui, niſi paret, imperat.*"

CHAPTER XI.

We deſcry the waggon—get into it—arrive at an inn—our fellow-travellers deſcribed—a miſtake is committed by Strap, which produces ſtrange things.

We travelled half a mile without exchanging one word; my thoughts being engroſſed by the knavery of the world, to which I muſt be daily expoſed; and the contemplation of my finances, which began ſenſibly to diminiſh. At length Strap, who could hold no longer, addreſſed me thus: "Well, fools and their money are ſoon parted. If my advice had been taken, that old ſkinflint ſhould have been damn'd before he had got more than the third of his demand.—'Tis a ſure ſign you came eaſily by your money, when you ſquander it away in this manner. Ah, God help you, how many briſtly beards muſt I have mowed before I earned four ſhillings and three pence halfpenny, which is all thrown to the dogs? How many days have I ſat weaving hair, till my toes were numbed by the cold, my fingers cramp'd, and my noſe as blue as the ſign of the periwig that hung over the door? What the devil was you afraid of? I would have engagod to box with any one of thoſe fellows that came in, for a guinea. I'm ſure I have beat ſtouter men than either of them." And indeed my companion would have fought any body, when his life was in no danger; but he had a mortal averſion to fire arms, and all inſtruments of death. In order to appeaſe him, I

aſſured him, no part of this extraordinary expence ſhould fall upon his ſhoulders; at which declaration he was affronted, and told me, he would have me to know, that, although he was a poor barber's boy, he had a ſoul to ſpend his money with the beſt ſquire of the land. Having walked all day at a great pace, without halting for a refreſhment, we deſcried, towards the evening, to our inexpreſſible joy, the waggon about a quarter of a mile before us; and, by that time we reached it, were both of us ſo weary, that, I verily believe, it would have been impracticable for us to have walked one mile farther. We therefore bargained with the driver, whoſe name was Joey, to give us a caſt to the next ſtage for a ſhilling; at which place we ſhould meet the maſter of the waggon, with whom we might agree for the reſt of the journey.

Accordingly, the convenience ſtopt, and Joey having placed the ladder, Strap (being loaded with our baggage) mounted firſt; but, juſt as he was getting in, a tremendous voice aſſailed his ears in theſe words:—"God's fury! there ſhall no paſſengers come here." The poor ſhaver was ſo diſconcerted at this exclamation, which both he and I imagined proceeded from the mouth of a giant, that he deſcended with great velocity, and a countenance as white as paper. Joey perceiving our aſtoniſhment, called with an arch ſneer, "Waunds, Coptain, whay woan't you ſooffer the poor waggoneer to meake a penny? Coom, coom, young man, get oop, get oop, never moind the coptain—I'ſe not afear'd of the coptain." This was not encouragement ſufficient to Strap, who could not be prevailed upon to venture up again; upon which I attempted, though not without a quaking heart, when I heard the ſame voice muttering like diſtant thunder, "Hell and the devil confound me, if I don't make you ſmart for this!" However, I crept in, and, by accident, got an empty place in the ſtraw, which I immediately took poſſeſſion of, without being able to diſcern the faces of my fellow-travellers in the dark. Strap following with the knapſack on his back, chanced to take the other ſide, and, by a jolt of the carriage, pitched directly upon the ſtomach of the captain,

who bellowed out in a moſt dreadful manner, "Blood and thunder, where's my ſword?" At theſe words, my frighted comrade ſtarted up, and at one ſpring bounced againſt me with ſuch force, that I thought he was the ſuppoſed ſon of Anak, who intended to preſs me to death. In the mean time, a female voice cried, "Bleſs me! what is the matter, my dear?" "The matter," replied the captain, "damn my blood! my guts are ſqueezed into a pancake, by that Scotchman's hump." Strap trembling all the while at my back, aſked him pardon, and laid the blame of what had happened upon the jolting of the waggon; and the woman who ſpoke before, went on: "Ay, ay, my dear, it is our own fault; we may thank ourſelves for all the inconveniences we meet with. I thank God I never travelled ſo before. I'm ſure, if my Lady or Sir John was to know where we are, they would not ſleep this night for vexation. I wiſh to God we had writ for the chariot: I know we ſhall never be forgiven."—"Come, come, my dear (replied the captain), it don't ſignify fretting now—we ſhall laugh it over as a frolic—I hope you will not ſuffer in your health. I ſhall make my Lord very merry with our adventures in the diligence." This diſcourſe gave me ſuch a high notion of the captain and his lady, that I durſt not venture to join in the converſation. But immediately after, another female voice began: "Some people give themſelves a great many needleſs airs—better folks than any here have travelled in waggons before now. Some of us have rode in coaches and chariots, with three footmen behind them, without making ſo much fuſs about it. What then? we are now all upon a footing; therefore let's be ſociable and merry. What do you ſay, Iſaac? Is not this a good motion, you doating rogue? Speak, you old cent. per cent. fornicator. What deſperate debts are you thinking of? What mortgage are you planning? Well, Iſaac, poſitively you ſhall never gain my favour, till you turn over a new leaf, grow honeſt, and live like a gentleman. In the mean time, give me a kiſs, you old ſumbler." Theſe words, accompanied with a hearty ſmack, enlivened the perſon to whom they were addreſſed, to ſuch

a degree, that he cried in a tranſport, though with a faltering voice, "Ah! you wanton baggage—upon my credit, you are a waggiſh girl, he, he, he." This laugh introduced a fit of coughing, which almoſt ſuffocated the poor uſurer (ſuch, we afterwards found, was the profeſſion of this our fellow-traveller). About this time I fell aſleep, and enjoyed a comfortable nap, till ſuch time as we arrived at the inn where we put up. Here, having alighted from the waggon, I had an opportunity of viewing the paſſengers in order as they entered. The firſt who appeared was a briſk airy girl, about twenty years old, with a ſilver-laced hat on her head, inſtead of a cap, a blue ſtuff riding-ſuit trimmed with ſilver, very much tarniſhed, and a whip in her hand. After her came limping an old man, with a worſted night-cap, buttoned under his chin, and a broad-brimmed hat ſlouched over it, an old ruſty blue cloak tied about his neck, under which appeared a brown ſurtout, that covered a thread-bare coat and waiſtcoat, and, as we afterwards diſcerned, a dirty flannel jacket. His eyes were hollow, bleared, and gummy; his face was ſhrivelled into a thouſand wrinkles, his gums were deſtitute of teeth, his noſe ſharp and drooping, his chin peaked and prominent, ſo that, when he mumped or ſpoke, they approached one another like a pair of nut-crackers; he ſupported himſelf on an ivory-headed cane; and his whole figure was a juſt emblem of winter, famine, and avarice. But how was I ſurpriſed, when I beheld the formidable captain in the ſhape of a little thin creature, about the age of forty, with a long withered viſage, very much reſembling that of a baboon, through the upper part of which two little gray eyes peeped: He wore his own hair in a queue that reached to his rump, which immoderate length, I ſuppoſe, was the occaſion of a baldneſs that appeared on the crown of his head, when he deigned to take off his hat, which was very much of the ſize and cock of Piſtol's. Having laid aſide his great coat, I could not help admiring the extraordinary make of this man of war: He was about five feet and three inches high, ſixteen inches of which went to his face and long ſcraggy neck;

his thighs were about ſix inches in length, his legs reſembling ſpindles or drum-ſticks, two feet and an half, and his body, which put me in mind of extenſion without ſubſtance, engroſſed the remainder; ſo that, on the whole, he appeared like a ſpider or graſhopper erect, and was almoſt a *vox et præterea nihil.* His dreſs conſiſted of a frock of what is called bear-ſkin, the ſkirts of which were about half a foot long, an huſſar waiſtcoat, ſcarlet breeches, reaching half way down his thighs, worſted ſtockings, rolled up almoſt to his groin, and ſhoes with wooden heels at leaſt two inches high: He carried a ſword very near as long as himſelf in one hand, and with the other conducted his lady, who ſeemed to be a woman of his own age, and ſtill retained ſome remains of an agreeable perſon; but ſo ridiculouſly affected, that, had I not been a novice in the world, I might have eaſily perceived in her the deplorable vanity and ſecond-hand airs of a lady's woman. We were all aſſembled in the kitchen, when Captain Weazel (for that was his name) deſired a room with a fire for himſelf and ſpouſe, and told the landlord they would ſup by themſelves. The innkeeper replied, that he could not afford them a room by themſelves; and, as for ſupping, he had prepared victuals for the paſſengers in the waggon, without reſpect of perſons; but if he could prevail on the reſt to let him have his choice in a ſeparate manner, he ſhould be very well pleaſed. This was no ſooner ſaid, than all of us declared againſt the propoſal; and Miſs Jenny (our other female paſſenger) obſerved, that, if Captain Weazel and his Lady had a mind to ſup by themſelves, they might wait until we ſhould have done. At this hint, the captain put on a martial frown, and looked very big, without ſpeaking; while his yoke-fellow, with a diſdainful toſs of her noſe, muttered ſomething about "Creature!" which Miſs Jenny overhearing, ſtept up to her, ſaying, "None of your names, good Mrs. Abigail;—creature, quotha—I'll aſſure you. No ſuch creature as you, neither—no ten pound ſneaker—no quality coupler."—Here the captain interpoſed, with a "Damme, Madam, what do you mean by that?"—"Damn you, Sir, who are you?" (replied Miſs Jen-

ay) who made you a captain, you pitiful, trencher-ſcraping, pimping curler?—'Sdeath! the army is come to a fine paſs, when ſuch fellows as you get commiſſions—What, I ſuppoſe you think I don't know you?—Agad, you and your helpmate are well met—a caſt-off miſtreſs and a bald valet de chambre are well yoked together." "Blood and wounds! (cried Weazel) d'ye queſtion the honour of my wife, Madam!—Hell and damnation! No man in England durſt ſay ſo much. I would flea him—carbonado him! Fury and deſtruction! I would have his liver for my ſupper." So ſaying, he drew his ſword, and flouriſhed with it, to the great terror of Strap; while Miſs Jenny, ſnapping her fingers, told him, ſhe did not value his reſentment a louſe. In the midſt of this quarrel, the maſter of the waggon alighted, who underſtanding the cauſe of the diſturbance, and fearing the Captain and his Lady would take umbrage, and leave his carriage, was at great pains to have every thing made up, which he at laſt accompliſhed, and we ſat down to ſupper all together. At bed-time we were ſhown to our apartments: The old uſurer, Strap, and I, to one room; the captain, his wife, and Miſs Jenny, to another. About midnight, my companion's bowels being diſordered, he got up, in order to go backward; but, in his return, miſtaking one door for another, entered Weazel's chamber, and, without any heſitation, went to bed to his wife, who was faſt aſleep; the captain being at another end of the room, groping for ſome empty veſſel, in lieu of his own chamber-pot, which was leaky: As he did not perceive Strap coming in, he went towards his own bed, after having found a convenience; but no ſooner did he feel a rough head, covered with a cotton night-cap, than it came into his mind, that he had miſtaken Miſs Jenny's bed inſtead of his own, and that the head he felt was that of ſome gallant, with whom ſhe had made an aſſignation. Full of this conjecture, and ſcandalized at the proſtitution of his apartment, he ſnatched up the veſſel he had juſt before filled, and emptied it at once on the aſtoniſhed barber and his own wife, who, waking at that inſtant, broke forth into lamentable cries, which not only

alarmed the huſband beyond meaſure, but frightened poor Strap almoſt out of his ſenſes; for he verily believed himſelf bewitched; eſpecially when the incenſed captain ſeized him by the throat, with a volley of oaths, aſking him how he durſt have the preſumption to attempt the chaſtity of his wife. Poor Strap was ſo amazed and confounded, that he could ſay nothing, but, "I take God to witneſs, ſhe's a virgin for me." Mrs. Weazel, enraged to find herſelf in ſuch a pickle, through the precipitation of her huſband, aroſe in her ſhift, and, with the heel of her ſhoe, which ſhe found by the bedſide, belabouring the captain's bald pate, till he roared, "Murder." "I'll teach you to empty your ſtink-pots on me (cried ſhe), you pitiful hop'omy-thumb coxcomb. What! I warrant you're jealous, you man of lath. Was it for this I condeſcended to take you to my bed, you poor withered ſapleſs twig?" The noiſe occaſioned by this adventure had brought the maſter of the waggon and me to the door, where we overheard all that paſſed with great ſatisfaction. In the mean time, we were alarmed with the cry of "Rape! Murder! Rape!" which Miſs Jenny pronounced with great vociferation. —"O! you vile abominable old villain (ſaid ſhe), would you rob me of my virtue? But I'll be revenged of you, you old goat! I will.—Help! for Heaven's ſake! help!—I ſhall be raviſhed—ruined! help!" Some ſervants of the inn, hearing this cry, came running up ſtairs with lights, and ſuch weapons as chance afforded, when we beheld a very diverting ſcene. In one corner ſtood the poor captain, ſhivering in his ſhirt, which was all torn to rags, with a woeful viſage, ſcratched all over by his wife, who had by this time wrapped the counterpane about her, and ſat ſobbing on the ſide of her bed. In the other end lay the old uſurer, ſprawling on Miſs Jenny's bed, with his flannel jacket over his ſhirt, and his tawny meagre limbs expoſed to the air; while ſhe held him faſt by the two ears, and loaded him with execrations. When we aſked what was the matter, ſhe affected to weep; told us, ſhe was afraid that wicked rogue had ruined her in her ſleep; and bade us take notice of what we ſaw, for ſhe intended to make uſe of

our evidence againſt him. The poor wretch looked like one more dead than alive, and begged to be releaſed; a favour which he had no ſooner obtained, than he proteſted ſhe was no woman, but a devil incarnate; that ſhe had firſt ſeduced his fleſh to rebel, and then betrayed him. "Yes, cockatrice (continued he), you know you bid this ſnare for me, but you ſhan't ſucceed, for I will hang myſelf before you ſhall get a farthing of me." So ſaying, he crawled to his own bed, groaning all the way. We then advanced to the captain, who told us, "Gentlemen, here has been a damn'd miſtake; but I'll be reveng'd on him who was the occaſion of it. That Scotchman who carries the knapſack ſhall not breathe this vital air another day, if my name be Weazel. My dear, I aſk you ten thouſand pardons; you are ſenſible I could mean no harm to you."—"I know not what you meant (replied ſhe, ſighing), but I know I have got enough to ſend me to my grave." At length they were reconciled. The wife was complimented with a ſhare of Miſs Jenny's bed (her own being overflowed), and the maſter of the waggon invited Weazel to ſleep the remaining part of the night with him. I retired to mine, where I found Strap mortally afraid, he having ſtole away in the dark, while the captain and his lady were at loggerheads.

CHAPTER XII.

Captain Weazel challenges Strap, who declines the combat—an affair between the Captain and me—the uſurer is fain to give Miſs Jenny five guineas for a releaſe—we are in danger of loſing a meal—the behaviour of Weazle, Jenny, and Joey, on that occaſion—an account of Captain Weazel and his Lady—the Captain's courage tried—Iſaac's mirth at the Captain's expence.

NEXT morning I agreed to give the maſter of the waggon ten ſhillings for my paſſage to London, provided Strap ſhould be allowed to take my place when I ſhould be diſpoſed to walk—At the ſame time I deſired him to appeaſe the incenſed Captain, who had entered the kitchen with a drawn ſword in his hand, and threatened, with

many oaths, to ſacrifice the villain who attemped to violate his bed; but it was to no purpoſe for the maſter to explain the miſtake, and aſſure him of the poor lad's innocence, who ſtood trembling behind me all the while: The more ſubmiſſion that appeared in Strap, the more implacable ſeemed the reſentment of Weazel, who ſwore he muſt either fight him, or he would inſtantly put him to death. I was extremely provoked at this inſolence, and told him, it could not be ſuppoſed that a poor barber lad would engage a man of the ſword at his own weapon; but I was perſuaded he would wreſtle or box with him. To which propoſal Strap immediately gave aſſent, by ſaying, he would box with him for a guinea. Weazel replied, with a look of diſdain, that it was beneath any gentleman of his character to fight like a porter, or even to put himſelf on a footing, in any reſpect, with ſuch a fellow as Strap. "Odds bodikins! (cries Joey) ſure Coptain, yaw would not commit moorder! Here's a poor lad that is willing to make atoonement for his offence; and an that woan't ſatisfie yaw offers to fight yaw fairly. An' yaw woan't box, I dare ſay, he will coodgel with yaw. Woan't yaw, my lad?"—Strap after ſome heſitation, anſwered, "Yes, yes, I'll cudgel with him." But this expedient being alſo rejected by the Captain, I began to ſmell his character, and, tipping Strap the wink, told the company that I had always heard it ſaid, the perſon who receives a challenge ſhould have the choice of the weapons: this therefore being the rule in point of honour, I would venture to promiſe on the head of my companion, that he would even fight Captain Weazel at ſharps; but it ſhould be with ſuch ſharps as Strap was beſt acquainted with, namely razors. At my mentioning razors, I could perceive the Captain's colour change, while Strap, pulling me by the ſleeve, whiſpered, with great eagerneſs, "No, no, no; for the love of God, don't make any ſuch bargain" At length Weazel, recovering himſelf, turned towards me, and, with a ferocious countenance, aſked, "Who the devil are you? will you fight me?" With theſe words, putting himſelf in a poſture, I was grievouſly alarmed at ſeeing the point of a ſword within half a foot of my

breaſt; and, ſpringing to one ſide, ſnatched up a ſpit that ſtood in the chimney-corner, with which I kept my formidable adverſary at bay, who made a great many half-longes, ſkipping backward at every puſh, till at laſt I pinned him up in a corner, to the no ſmall diverſion of the company. While he was in this ſituation, his wife entered, and, ſeeing her huſband in theſe dangerous circumſtances, uttered a dreadful ſcream: In this emergency, Weazel demanded a ceſſation, which was immediately granted; and at laſt was contented with the ſubmiſſion of Strap, who, falling upon his knees before him, proteſted the innocence of his intention, and aſked pardon for the miſtake he had committed. This affair being ended without bloodſhed, we went to breakfaſt, but miſſed two of our company, namely, Miſs Jenny and the uſurer. As for the firſt, Mrs. Weazel informed us, that ſhe had kept her awake all night with her groans; and that, when ſhe roſe in the morning, Miſs Jenny was ſo much indiſpoſed, that ſhe could not proceed on her journey. At that inſtant, a meſſage came from her to the maſter of the waggon, who immediately went into her chamber, followed by us all. She told him in a lamentable tone, that ſhe was afraid of a miſcarriage, owing to the fright ſhe received laſt night from the brutality of Iſaac; and as the event was uncertain, deſired the uſurer might be detained to anſwer for the conſequence. Accordingly, this ancient Tarquin was found in the waggon, whither he had retired to avoid the ſhame of laſt night's diſgrace, and brought by force into her preſence. He no ſooner appeared, than ſhe began to weep and ſigh moſt piteouſly, and told us, if ſhe died, ſhe would leave her blood upon the head of that raviſher. Poor Iſaac turned up his eyes and hands to Heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from the machinations of that Jezebel; and aſſured us, with tears in his eyes, that his being found in bed with her was the reſult of her own invitation. The waggoner underſtanding the caſe, adviſed Iſaac to make it up, by giving her a ſum of money: To which advice he replied, with great vehemence, "A ſum of money!—a halter for the cockatrice!"—"Oh! 'tis very well (ſaid Miſs Jenny): I ſee it is in

vain to attempt that flinty heart of his, by fair means: Joey, be ſo good as to go to the juſtice, and tell him there is a ſick perſon here, who wants to ſee him on an affair of conſequence." At the name of juſtice, Iſaac trembled, and, bidding Joey ſtay, aſked, with a quavering voice, "what ſhe would have?" She told him, that, as he had not perpetrated his wicked purpoſe, ſhe would be ſatisfied with a ſmall matter. And though the damage ſhe might ſuſtain in her health might be irreparable, ſhe would give him a releaſe for an hundred guineas. "An hundred guineas! (cried he, in an extaſy), an hundred furies! Where ſhould a poor old wretch like me have an hundred guineas? If I had ſo much money, d'ye think I ſhould be found travelling in a waggon at this ſeaſon of the year?" "Come, come (replied Jenny), none of your miſerly artifice here. You think I don't know Iſaac Rapine, the money-broker in the Minories. Ah! you old rogue! many a pawn have you had of me and my acquaintance, which was never redeemed." Iſaac, finding it was in vain to diſguiſe himſelf, offered twenty ſhillings for a diſcharge, which ſhe abſolutely refuſed under fifty pounds: At laſt, however, ſhe was brought down to five, which he paid, with great reluctancy, rather than be proſecuted for a rape. After which accommodation the ſick perſon made ſhift to get into the waggon, and we ſet forwards in great tranquillity, Strap being accommodated with Joey's horſe, the driver himſelf chooſing to walk. This morning and forenoon we were entertained with an account of the valour of Captain Weazel, who told us he had once knocked down a ſoldier that made game of him; tweaked a drawer by the noſe, who found fault with his picking his teeth with a fork, at another time; and that he had moreover challenged a cheeſe-monger, who had the preſumption to be his rival:—for the truth of which exploits he appealed to his wife. She confirmed whatever he ſaid, and obſerved, "The laſt affair happened that very day on which I received a love-letter from Squire Gobble: and don't you remember, my dear, I was prodigiouſly ſick that very night with eating ortolans, when my Lord Diddle took notice of my complexion's being

altered, and my Lady was ſo alarmed that ſhe had well nigh fainted." "Yes, my dear (replied the Captain), you know, my Lord ſaid to me, with a ſneer, "Billy, Mrs. Weazel is certainly breeding." And I anſwered cavalierly, "My Lord, I wiſh I could return the compliment." Upon which the whole company broke out into an immoderate fit of laughter; and my Lord, who loves a repartee dearly, came round and buſſed me." We travelled in this manner five days, without interruption, or meeting any thing worth notice: Miſs Jenny (who ſoon recovered her ſpirits) entertaining us every day with diverting ſongs, of which ſhe could ſing a great number; and rallying her old gallant, who notwithſtanding would never be reconciled to her. On the ſixth day, while we were about to ſit down to dinner, the inn-keeper came and told us, that three gentlemen, juſt arrived, had ordered the victuals to be carried to their apartment, although he had informed them that they were beſpoke by the paſſengers in the waggon. To which information they had replied, "The paſſengers in the waggon might be damned,—their betters muſt be ſerved before them—they ſuppoſed it would be no hardſhip on ſuch travellers to dine upon bread and cheeſe for one day." This was a terrible diſappointment to us all; and we laid our heads together how to remedy it; when Miſs Jenny obſerved, that Captain Weazel, being by profeſſion a ſoldier, ought in this caſe to protect and prevent us from being inſulted. But the Captain excuſed himſelf, ſaying, he would not for all the world be known to have travelled in a waggon; ſwearing at the ſame time, that, could he appear with honour, they ſhould eat his ſword ſooner than his proviſion. Upon this declaration, Miſs Jenny, ſnatching his weapon, drew it, and ran immediately into the kitchen, where ſhe threatened to put the cook to death if he did not ſend the victuals into our chamber immediately. The noiſe ſhe made brought the three ſtrangers down, one of whom no ſooner perceived her, than he cried, "Ha! Jenny Ramper! what the devil brought thee hither?" "My dear Jack Rattle! (replied ſhe, running into his arms), is it you? Then Weazel may go to hell for a dinner—I ſhall

dine with you." They conſented to this propoſal wi a great deal of joy; and we were on the point of bei reduced to a very uncomfortable meal, when Joey, u derſtanding the whole affair, entered the kitchen with pitchfork in his hand, and ſwore he would be the dea of any man who ſhould pretend to ſeize the victuals pr pared for the waggon. This menace had like to ha produced fatal conſequences; the three ſtrangers dra ing their ſwords, and being joined by their ſervants, a we ranging ourſelves on the ſide of Joey; when the lan lord interpoſing offered to part with his own dinner keep the peace, which was accepted by the ſtranger and we ſat down at table without any further moleſt tion. In the afternoon, I choſe to walk along with Joe and Strap took my place. Having entered into a co verſation with this driver, I ſoon found him to be merry, facetious, good-natured fellow, and withal ve arch: He informed me, that Miſs Jenny was a comm girl upon the town; who falling into company with a r cruiting officer, he carried her down in the ſtage-coach fro London to Newcaſtle, where he had been arreſted f debt, and was now in priſon: upon which ſhe was fa to return to her former way of life, by this conveyanc He told me likewiſe, that one of the gentleman's ſe vants whom we left at the inn, having accidentally ſe Weazel, immediately knew him, and acquainted Jo with ſome particulars of his character. That he h ſerved my Lord Frizzle in quality of valet de chamb many years, while he lived ſeparate from his Lady: Bu upon their reconciliation, ſhe expreſsly inſiſted up Weazel's being turned off, as well as the woman l kept; when his Lordſhip, to get rid of them both wi a good grace, propoſed that he ſhould marry his miſtre and he would procure a commiſſion for him in the army This expedient was agreed to; and Weazel is now, b his Lordſhip's intereſt, enſign in ——'s regiment. found he and I had the ſame ſentiments with regard t Weazel's courage, which we reſolved to put to the tria by alarming the paſſengers with the cry of "an high wayman!" as ſoon as an horſeman ſhould appear. Thi ſcheme we put in practice towards the duſk, when w

deſcried a man on horſeback approaching us. Joey had no ſooner intimated to the people in the waggon, that he was afraid we ſhould be all robbed, than a general conſternation aroſe: Strap jumped out of the waggon, and hid himſelf behind a hedge. The uſurer put forth ejaculations, and made a ruſtling among the ſtraw, which made us conjecture he had hid ſomething under it. Mrs. Weazel, wringing her hands, uttered lamentable cries: and the Captain, to our great amazement, began to ſnore; but this artifice did not ſucceed; for Miſs Jenny, ſhaking him by the ſhoulder, bawled out, "'Sdeath! Captain, is this time to ſnore, when we are going to be robbed? Get up, for ſhame, and behave like a ſoldier and a man of honour." Weazel pretended to be in a great paſſion for being diſturbed, and ſwore he would have his nap out if all the highwaymen in England ſurrounded him. "D—n my blood! what are you afraid of?" (continued he), at the ſame time trembling with ſuch agitation, that the whole carriage ſhook. This ſingular piece of behaviour incenſed Miſs Ramper ſo much, that ſhe cried, "D—n your pitiful ſoul, you are as arrant a poltroon as ever was drummed out of a regiment.—Stop the waggon, Joey—let me get out, and by G—d, if I have rhetoric enough, the thief ſhall not only take your purſe, but your ſkin alſo." So ſaying, ſhe leapt out with great agility. By this time the horſeman came up with us, and happened to be a gentleman's ſervant well known to Joey, who communicated the ſcheme, and deſired him to carry it on a little further, by going up to the waggon, and queſtioning thoſe within. The ſtranger conſenting for the ſake of diverſion, approached it, and, in a terrible tone, demanded, "Who have we got here?" Iſaac replied, with a lamentable voice, "Here's a poor miſerable ſinner, who has got a ſmall family to maintain, and nothing in the world wherewithal, but theſe fifteen ſhillings, which if you rob me of, we muſt all ſtarve together." "Who's that ſobbing in the other corner?" (ſaid the ſuppoſed highwayman). "A poor unfortunate woman (anſwered Mrs. Weazel), upon whom I beg you for Chriſt's ſake to have compaſſion." "Are you maid or wife?" ſaid he. "Wife to my ſorrow," cried ſhe.

"Who or where is your huſband?" continued he. "My huſband (replied Mrs. Weazel) is an officer in the army, and was left ſick at the laſt inn where we dined." You muſt be miſtaken, Madam (ſaid he), for I myſelf ſaw him get into the waggon this afternoon. —But pray what ſmell is that? Sure your lap-dog has befouled himſelf;—let me catch hold of the naſty cur, I'll teach him better manners." Here he laid hold of one of Weazel's legs, and pulled him out from under his wife's petticoats, where he had concealed himſelf. The poor trembling Captain, being detected in this inglorious ſituation, rubbed his eyes, and affecting to wake out of ſleep, cried, "What's the matter?—what's the matter?" "The matter is not much (anſwered the horſeman), I only called in to inquire after your health, and ſo adieu, moſt noble Captain." So ſaying, he clapped ſpurs to his horſe, and was out of ſight in a moment. It was ſome time before Weazel could recollect himſelf, but at length re-aſſuming the big look, he ſaid, "Damn the fellow! why did he ride away, before I had time to aſk him how his lord and lady do?—Don't you remember Tom, my dear?" addreſſing himſelf to his wife. "Yes (replied ſhe), I think I do remember ſomething of the fellow—but you know I ſeldom converſe with people of his ſtation." "Hey-day! (cried Joey), do yaw knaw the young mon, Coptain?" "Know him (ſaid Weazel), many a time has he filled a glaſs of Burgundy for me at my Lord Trippet's table." "And what may his neame be, Coptain?" ſaid Joey. "His name!—his name (replied Weazel) is Tom Rinſer." "Waunds! (cried Joey), a has changed his own neame then! for I'ſe lay a wager he was chriſtened John Trotter." This obſervation raiſed a laugh againſt the Captain, who ſeemed very much diſconcerted; when Iſaac broke ſilence, and ſaid, "It was no matter who or what he was, ſince he has not proved the robber we ſuſpected. And we ought to bleſs God for our narrow eſcape." Bleſs God (ſaid Weazel), bleſs the devil! for what? had he been a highwayman, I ſhould have eat his blood, body, and guts, before he had robbed me, or any one in this *Diligence*." "Ha, ha, ha! (cried Miſs Jenny), I believe you will

eat all you kill indeed, Captain." The uſurer was ſo well pleaſed at the event of this adventure, that he could not refrain from being ſevere, and took notice, that Captain Weazel ſeemed to be a good Chriſtian, for he had armed himſelf with patience and reſignation, inſtead of carnal weapons, and worked out his ſalvation with fear and trembling. This piece of ſatire occaſioned a great deal of mirth at Weazel's expence, who muttered a great many oaths, and threatened to cut Iſaac's throat. The uſurer taking hold of this menace, ſaid, "Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to witneſs, that my life is in danger from this bloody-minded officer. I'll have him bound over to the peace." This ſecond ſneer procured another laugh againſt him, and he remained creſt-fallen during the remaining part of our journey.

CHAPTER XIII.

Strap and I are terrified by an apparition—Strap's conjecture—the myſtery explained by Joey—we arrive at London—our dreſs and appearance deſcribed—we are inſulted in the ſtreet—an adventure in an alehouſe—we are impoſed upon by a waggiſh footman—ſet to rights by a tobacconiſt—take lodgings—dive for a dinner—an accident at our ordinary.

We arrived at our inn, ſupped, and went to bed; but Strap's diſtemper continuing, he was obliged to riſe in the middle of the night, and taking the candle in his hand, which he had left burning for the purpoſe, he went down to the houſe of office, whence in a ſhort time he returned in a great hurry, with his hair ſtanding on end, and a look betokening horror and aſtoniſhment. Without ſpeaking a word, he ſet down the light, and jumped into bed behind me, where he lay and trembled with great violence. When I aſked him what was the matter? he replied, with a broken accent, "God have mercy on us! I have ſeen the devil." Though my prejudice was not quite ſo ſtrong as his, I was not a little alarmed at this exclamation, and much more ſo, when I heard the ſound of bells approaching our chamber, and felt my bedfellow cling cloſe to me, uttering theſe words,

"Chriſt have mercy upon us! there he comes." At that inſtant, a monſtrous over-grown raven entered our chamber, with bells at his feet, and made directly towards our bed. As this creature is reckoned in our country a common vehicle for the devil and witches to play their pranks in, I verily believed we were haunted, and in a violent fright ſhrunk under the bed-clothes. This terrible apparition leapt upon the bed, and, after giving us ſeveral ſevere dabs with its beak through the blankets, hopped away and vaniſhed. Strap and I recommended ourſelves to the protection of heaven with great devotion, and, when we no longer heard the noiſe, ventured to peep up and take breath. But we had not been long freed from this phantom, when another appeared that had well nigh deprived us both of our ſenſes. We perceived an old man enter the room, with a long white beard that reached to his middle; there was a certain wild peculiarity in his eyes and countenance, that did not ſavour of this world; and his dreſs conſiſted of a brown ſtuff coat buttoned behind and at the wriſts, with an odd faſhioned cap of the ſame ſtuff upon his head. I was ſo amazed, that I had not power to move my eyes from ſuch a ghaſtly object, but lay motionleſs, and ſaw him come ſtraight up to me: When he reached the bed, he wrung his hands, and cried, with a voice that did not ſeem to belong to a human creature, "Where is Ralph?" I made no reply; upon which he repeated, in an accent ſtill more preternatural, "Where is Ralpho?" He had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than I heard the ſound of the bells at a diſtance; which the apparition having liſtened to, tripped away, and left me almoſt petrified with fear. It was a good while before I could recover myſelf ſo far as to ſpeak; and when at length I turned to Strap, I found him in a fit, which, however, did not laſt long. When he came to himſelf, I aſked his opinion of what had happened; and he aſſured me, that the firſt muſt certainly be the ſoul of ſome perſon damned, which appeared by the chains about his legs (for his fears had magnified the creature to the bigneſs of a horſe, and the ſound of ſmall morrice-bells to the clanking of maſſy chains). As for the old man, he

took it to be the ſpirit of ſomebody murdered long ago in this place, which had power granted to it to torment the aſſaſſin in the ſhape of a raven, and that Ralpho was the name of the ſaid murderer. Although I had not much faith in this interpretation, I was too much troubled to enjoy any ſleep; and in all my future adventures never paſſed a night ſo ill. In the morning, Strap imparted the whole affair to Joey, who, after an immoderate fit of laughter, explained the matter, by telling him the old man was the landlord's father, who had been an idiot ſome years, and diverted himſelf with a tame raven, which, it ſeems, had hopped away from his apartment in the night, and induced him to follow it to our chamber, where he had inquired after it, under the name of Ralpho.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which continued ſix or ſeven days longer: At length we entered the great city, and lodged all night at the inn where the waggon put up.—Next morning, all the paſſengers parted different ways; while my companion and I ſallied out to inquire for the member of parliament, to whom I had a letter of recommendation from Mr. Crab. As we had diſcharged our lodging at the inn, Strap took up our baggage and marched behind me in the ſtreet with the knapſack on his back, as uſual, ſo that we made a very whimſical appearance. I had dreſſed myſelf to the greateſt advantage; that is, put on a clean ruffled ſhirt, and my beſt thread ſtockings: my hair (which was of the deepeſt red), hung down upon my ſhoulders, as lank and ſtraight as a pound of candles; and the ſkirts of my coat reached to the middle of my leg; my waiſtcoat and breeches were of the ſame piece, and cut in the ſame taſte; and my hat very much reſembled a barber's baſon in the ſhallowneſs of the crown, and narrowneſs of the brims. Strap was habited in a much leſs awkward manner; but a ſhort crop-eared wig that very much reſembled Scrub's in the play, and the knapſack on his back, added to what is called a queer phiz, occaſioned by a long chin, hook noſe, and high cheek bones, rendered him on the whole a very fit ſubject of mirth and pleaſantry. As

we walked along, Strap, at my deſire, inquired of a carman whom we met, whereabouts Mr. Cringer lived;—and was anſwered by a ſtare accompanied with the word "Anan!" Upon which I came up, in order to explain the queſtion, but had the misfortune to be unintelligible likewiſe, the carman damning us for a louſy Scotch guard, and whipping his horſes with a "Gee ho!" which nettled me to the quick, and rouſed the indignation of Strap ſo far, that, after the fellow was gone a good way, he told me he would fight him for a farthing. While we were deliberating upon what was to be done, an hackney coachman driving ſoftly along, and perceiving us ſtanding by the kennel, came up cloſe to us, and calling, "A coach, maſter!" by a dexterous management of the reins, made his horſes ſtumble in the wet, and bedaub us all over with mud. After which exploit, he drove on, applauding himſelf with a hearty laugh, in which ſeveral people joined, to my great mortification; but one more compaſſionate than the reſt, ſeeing us ſtrangers, adviſed me to go into on ale houſe, and dry myſelf. I thanked him for his advice, which I immediately complied with; and going into the houſe he pointed out, called for a pot of beer, and ſat down by a fire in the public room, where we cleaned ourſelves as well as we could. In the mean time, a wag, who ſat in a box ſmoking his pipe, underſtanding by our dialect that we were from Scotland, came up to me, and, with a grave countenance, aſked how long I had been caught? As I did not know the meaning of this queſtion, I made no anſwer; and he went on, ſaying, it could not be a great while, for my tail was not yet cut; at the ſame time, taking hold of my hair and tipping the wink to the reſt of the company, who ſeemed highly entertained with his wit. I was incenſed at this uſage, but afraid of reſenting it, becauſe I happened to be in a ſtrange place, and perceived the perſon who ſpoke to me was a brawny fellow, for whom I thought myſelf by no means a match. However, Strap having either more courage or leſs caution, could not put up with the inſults that I ſuffered; but told him in a peremptory tone, "He was an uncivil fellow for making ſo free with his betters."

the wit going towards him, aſked, What he had his knapſack? "Is it oatmeal or brimſtone, Saw- (ſaid he) ſeizing him by the chin, which he to the inexpreſſible diverſion of all preſent. My nion feeling himſelf aſſaulted in ſuch an oppro- manner, diſengaged himſelf in a trice, and lent tagoniſt ſuch a box on the ear, as made him ſtag- the other ſide of the room; and, in a moment, a as formed for the combatants. Seeing Strap be- g to ſtrip, and my blood being heated with indig- , which baniſhed all other thoughts, I undreſſed to the ſkin in an inſtant, and declared, that as ront that occaſioned the quarrel was offered to me, ld fight it out myſelf; upon which one or two out, "That's a brave Scotch boy; you ſhall have lay, by G—d." This aſſurance gave me freſh ſpi- nd going up to my adverſary, who, by his pale nance, did not ſeem much inclined to the battle, ck him ſo hard on the ſtomach, that he reeled over h, and fell to the ground. Then I attempted to im down, in order to improve my ſucceſs, accord- the manner of my own country; but was re- d by the ſpectators, one of whom endeavoured to up my opponent, but in vain; for he proteſted he not fight, for he was not quite recovered of a late . I was very well pleaſed with this excuſe, and diately dreſſed myſelf, having acquired the good n of the company for my bravery, as well as of mrade Strap, who ſhook me by the hand, and me joy of the victory. After having drank our nd dried our clothes, we inquired of the landlord knew Mr. Cringer the member of parliament, and amazed at his replying in the negative; for we ned, he muſt be altogether as conſpicuous here, as borough he repreſented; but he told us we might ly hear of him as we paſſed along. We betook ves therefore to the ſtreet, where, ſeeing a foot- ſtanding at a door, we made up to him, and aſked knew where our patron lived? This member of irty-coloured fraternity, ſurveying us both very ely, ſaid he knew Mr. Cringer very well, and bade

poultice was ſcarce laid on, when the drummer, who had begun to abate of his exclamation, broke forth into ſuch a hideous yell, as made the whole company tremble; then ſeizing a pewter pint-pot that ſtood by him, ſqueezed the ſides of it together, as if it had been made of pliant leather, grinding his teeth at the ſame time with a moſt horrible grin. Gueſſing the cauſe of this violent tranſport, I bade the woman waſh off the ſalt, and bathe the part with oil, which ſhe did, and procured him immediate eaſe. But here another difficulty occurred, which was no other than the landlady's inſiſting on his paying for the pot he had rendered uſeleſs. He ſwore he would pay for nothing but what he had eaten, and bade her be thankful for his moderation, or elſe he would proſecute her for damages. Strap foreſeeing the whole affair would lie at his door, promiſed to ſatisfy the cook, and called for a dram of gin to treat the drummer, which entirely appeaſed him, and compoſed all animoſities. After this accommodation, our landlord and we ſat down at a board, and dined upon ſhin of beef moſt deliciouſly; our reckoning amounting to two-pence halfpenny each, bread and ſmall bear included.

CHAPTER XIV.

We viſit Strap's friend—a deſcription of him—his advice—we go to Mr. Cringer's houſe—are denied admittance—an accident befals Strap—his behaviour thereupon—an extraordinary adventure occurs, in the courſe of which I loſe all my money.

In the afternoon, my companion propoſed to call at his friend's houſe, which, we were informed, was in the neighbourhood, whither we accordingly went, and were ſo lucky as to find him at home. This gentleman, who had come from Scotland three or four years before, kept a ſchool in town, where he taught the Latin, French, and Italian languages; but what he chiefly profeſſed was the pronunciation of the Engliſh tongue, after a method more ſpeedy and uncommon than any practiſed heretofore; and, indeed, if his ſcholars ſpoke like their

maſter, the latter part of his undertaking was certainly performed to a tittle; for, although I could eaſily underſtand every word of what I had heard hitherto ſince I entered England, three parts in four of his dialect were as unintelligible to me, as if he had ſpoke in Arabic or Iriſh. He was a middle-ſized man, and ſtooped very much, though not above the age of forty; his face was frightfully pitted with the ſmall-pox, and his mouth extended from ear to ear. He was dreſſed in a night-gown of plaid, faſtened about his middle with a ſerjeant's old ſaſh, and a tie periwig, with a fore-top three inches high, in the faſhion of King Charles the Second's reign. After he had received Strap (who was related to him) very courteouſly, he inquired of him who I was, and, being informed, took me by the hand, telling me he was at ſchool with my father. When he underſtood my ſituation, he aſſured me that he would do me all the ſervice in his power, both by his advice and otherwiſe; and, while he ſpoke theſe words, eyed me with great attention, walking round me ſeveral times, and muttering, "O Ch—ſt! O Ch—ſt! fat a ſaight is here?" I ſoon gueſſed the reaſon of his ejaculation, and ſaid, "I ſuppoſe, Sir, you are not pleaſed with my dreſs."—"Dreſs (anſwered he), you may caal it fat you pleaſe in your country, but I vaw to Gad, 'tis a maſquerade here. No Chriſtian will admit ſuch a figure into his hawſe. Upon my conſcience! I wonder the dogs did not hunt you. Did you paſs through St. James's market? God bleſs my eye-ſaight! you look like a couſin-german of Ouran Outang."—I began to be a little ſerious at this diſcourſe, and aſked him, if he thought I ſhould obtain entrance to-morrow at the houſe of Mr. Cringer, on whom I chiefly depended for an introduction into buſineſs. "Mr. Cringer, Mr. Cringer (replied he, ſcratching his cheek) may be a very honeſt gentleman—I know nothing to the contrary; but is your ſole dependence upon him? Who recommended you to him?" I pulled out Mr. Crab's letter, and told him the foundation of my hopes; at which he ſtared at me, and repeated, "Ch—ſt!" I began to conceive bad omens from this behaviour of his, and begged he would

aſſiſt me with his advice, which he promiſed to give me frankly; and, as a ſpecimen, directed us to a periwig warehouſe in the neighbourhood, in order to be accommodated; laying ſtrong injunctions on me, not to appear before Mr. Cringer, till I had parted with theſe carroty locks, which (he ſaid) were ſufficient to beget an antipathy againſt me in all mankind. And, as we were going to purſue this advice, he called me back, and bade me be ſure to deliver my letter into Mr. Cringer's own hand. As we walked along, Strap triumphed greatly in our reception with his friend, who, it ſeems, had aſſured him, he would, in a day or two, provide for him with ſome good maſter; and "now (ſays he) you ſhall ſee how I will fit you with a wig. There's ne'er a barber in London (and that's a bold word) can palm a rotten caul, or a pennyweight of dead hair, upon me." And, indeed, this zealous adherent did wrangle ſo long with the merchant, that he was deſired twenty times to leave the ſhop, and ſee if he could get one cheaper elſewhere. At length I made choice of a good handſome bob, for which I paid ten ſhillings, and returned to our lodging, where Strap in a moment rid me of that hair which had given the ſchoolmaſter ſo much offence.

We got up next day betimes, having been informed that Mr. Cringer gave audience by candle-light to all his dependents, he himſelf being obliged to attend the levee of my Lord Terrier at break of day; becauſe his lordſhip made one at the miniſter's between eight and nine o'clock. When we came to Mr. Cringer's door, Strap, to give me an inſtance of his politeneſs, ran to the knocker, which he employed ſo loud and ſo long, that he alarmed the whole ſtreet; and a window opening in the ſecond ſtory of the next houſe, a chamber-pot was diſcharged upon him ſo ſucceſsfully, that the poor barber was wet to the ſkin, while I, being luckily at ſome diſtance, eſcaped the unſavoury deluge. In the mean time, a footman opening the door, and ſeeing nobody in the ſtreet but us, aſked, with a ſtern countenance, if it was I who made ſuch a damned noiſe, and what I wanted. I told him I had buſineſs with his maſ-

ter, whom I deſired to ſee. Upon which he clapped the door in my face, telling me, I muſt learn better manners before I could have acceſs to his maſter. Vexed at this diſappointment, I turned my reſentment againſt Strap, whom I ſharply reprimanded for his preſumption; but he, not in the leaſt regarding what I ſaid, wrung the urine out of his periwig, and, lifting up a large ſtone, flung it with ſuch force againſt the ſtreet door of that houſe from whence he had been bedewed, that the lock giving way, it flew wide open, and he took to his heels, leaving me to follow him as I could. Indeed there was no time for deliberation; I therefore purſued him with all the ſpeed I could exert, until we found ourſelves, about the dawn, in a ſtreet we did not know. Here, as we wandered along, gaping about, a very decent ſort of a man paſſing by me, ſtopped of a ſudden, and took up ſomething, which having examined, he turned, and preſented it to me, with theſe words: "Sir, you have dropt half-a-crown." I was not a little ſurpriſed at this inſtance of honeſty, and told him it did not belong to me; but he bade me recollect, and ſee if all my money was ſafe: Upon which I pulled out my purſe (for I had bought one ſince I came to town), and reckoning my money in my hand, which was now reduced to five guineas ſeven ſhillings and two-pence, aſſured him I had loſt nothing. "Well then (ſays he) ſo much the better—this is God-ſend; and, as you two were preſent when I picked it up, you are entitled to equal ſhares with me." I was aſtoniſhed at theſe words, and looked upon this perſon to be a prodigy of integrity, but abſolutely refuſed to take any part of the ſum. "Come, gentlemen (ſaid he), you are too modeſt—I ſee you are ſtrangers; but you ſhall give me leave to treat you with a whet this cold raw morning." I would have declined this invitation, but Strap whiſpered to me, that the gentleman would be affronted, and I complied. "Where ſhall we go? (ſaid the ſtranger) I am quite ignorant of this part of the town." I informed him, that we were in the ſame ſituation: Upon which he propoſed to go into the firſt public-houſe we ſhould find open; and, as we walked together, he began in

this manner: "I find by your tongues you are from Scotland, gentlemen. My grandmother by the father's ſide was of your country; and I am ſo prepoſſeſſed in its favour, that I never meet a Scotchman, but my heart warms. The Scots are a very brave people. There is ſcarce a great family in the kingdom that cannot boaſt of ſome exploits performed by its anceſtors many hundred years ago. There's your Douglaſſes, Gordons, Campbells, Hamiltons. We have no ſuch ancient families here in England. Then you are all very well educated. I have known a pedlar talk in Greek and Hebrew, as well as if they had been his mother tongue. And, for honeſty, I once had a ſervant, his name was Gregory Macgregor, I would have truſted him with untold gold."—This eulogium on my native country, gained my affection ſo ſtrongly, that I believe I could have gone to death to ſerve the author; and Strap's eyes ſwam in tears. At length, as we paſſed through a dark narrow lane, we perceived a public-houſe, which we entered, and found a man ſitting by the fire, ſmoking a pipe, with a pint of purl before him. Our new acquaintance aſked us, if ever we had drank egg-flip? To which queſtion we anſwering in the negative, he aſſured us of a regale, and ordered a quart to be prepared, calling for pipes and tobacco at the ſame time. We found this compoſition very palatable, and drank heartily; the converſation (which was introduced by the gentleman) turning upon the ſnares that young unexperienced people are expoſed to in this metropolis. He deſcribed a thouſand cheats that are daily practiſed upon the ignorant and unwary; and warned us of them with ſo much good nature and concern, that we bleſſed the opportunity which threw us in his way. After we had put the cann about for ſome time, our new friend began to yawn, telling us he had been up all night with a ſick perſon; and propoſed we ſhould have recourſe to ſome diverſion to keep him awake. "Suppoſe (ſaid he) we ſhould take a hand at whiſt for paſtime. But let me ſee, that won't do, there's only three of us; and I cannot play at any other game. The truth is, I ſeldom or never play, but out of complaiſance, or at ſuch a time

as this, when I am in danger of falling aſleep." Although I was not much inclined to gaming, I felt no averſion to paſs an hour or two at cards with a friend; and knowing that Strap underſtood as much of the matter as I, made no ſcruple of ſaying, "I wiſh we could find a fourth hand." While we were in this perplexity, the perſon whom we found in the houſe at our entrance, overhearing our diſcourſe, took the pipe from his mouth very gravely, and accoſted us thus: "Gentlemen, my pipe is out, you ſee (ſhaking the aſhes into the fire), and rather than you ſhould be baulked, I don't care if I take a hand with you for a trifle; but remember I won't play for any thing of conſequence." We accepted his proffer with pleaſure. Having cut for partners, it fell to my lot to play with him againſt our friend and Strap, for three-pence a game. We were ſo ſucceſsful, that, in a ſhort time, I was half-a-crown gainer; when the gentleman whom we had met in the ſtreet obſerving he had no luck to-day, propoſed to leave off, or change partners. By this time I was inflamed with my good fortune and the expectation of improving it, as I perceived the two ſtrangers played but indifferently: Therefore I voted for giving him his revenge; and, cutting again, Strap and I (to our mutual ſatisfaction) happened to be partners. My good fortune attended me ſtill; and in leſs than an hour, we had got thirty ſhillings of their money; for, as they loſt, they grew the keener, and doubled ſtakes every time. At laſt the inconſtant goddeſs began to veer about; and we were very ſoon ſtripped of all our gains, and about forty ſhillings of our own money. This loſs mortified me extremely, and had a viſible effect on the muſcles of Strap's face, which lengthened apace; but our antagoniſts perceiving our condition, kindly permitted us to retrieve our loſs, and conſole ourſelves with a new acquiſition. Then my companion wiſely ſuggeſted it was time to be gone; upon which the perſon who had joined us in the houſe began to curſe the cards, and muttered that we were indebted to fortune only for what we had got, no part of our ſucceſs being owing to our good play. This inſinuation nettled me ſo much, that I challenged him

to a game of piquet for a crown; and he was with difficulty perſuaded to accept the invitation. This conteſt ended in leſs than an hour, to my inexpreſſible affliction, who loſt every ſhilling of my own money, Strap abſolutely refuſing to ſupply me with a ſixpence. The gentleman, at whoſe requeſt we had come in, perceiving, by my diſconſolate looks, the ſituation of my heart, which well nigh burſted with grief and reſentment, when the other ſtranger got up, and went away with my money, began in this manner: "I am truly afflicted at your bad luck, and would willingly repair it, was it in my power. But what in the name of goodneſs could provoke you to tempt your fate ſo long? It is always a maxim with gameſters, to purſue ſucceſs as far as it will go, and to ſtop whenever fortune ſhifts about. You are a young man, and your paſſions too impetuous; you muſt learn to govern them better: However, there is no experience like that which is bought; you will be the better for this the longeſt day you have to live. As for the fellow who has got your money, I don't half like him. Did not you obſerve me tip you the wink to leave off in time?"—I anſwered, No. "No (continued he), you was too eager to mind any thing but the game. But, harkee, (ſaid he, in a whiſper), are you ſatisfied of that young man's honeſty? his looks are a little ſuſpicious; but I may be miſtaken; he made a great many grimaces while he ſtood behind you; this is a very wicked town." I told him I was very well convinced of my comrade's integrity, and that the grimaces he mentioned were doubtleſs owing to his anxiety at my loſs. "O ho! if that be the caſe, I aſk his pardon.—Landlord, ſee what's to pay."—The reckoning amounted to eighteen-pence, which having diſcharged, the gentleman ſhook us both by the hand, and, ſaying he ſhould be very glad to ſee us again, departed.

CHAPTER XV.

Strap moralizes—preſents his purſe to me—we inform our landlord of my misfortune—he unravels the myſtery—I preſent myſelf to Cringer—he recommends and turns me over to Mr. Staytape—I become acquainted with a fellow dependent, who explains the characters of Cringer and Staytape—and informs me of the method to be purſued at the Navy-office and Surgeons-hall—Strap is employed.

In our way to our lodging, after a profound ſilence on both ſides, Strap, with a hideous groan, obſerved, that we had brought our pigs to a fine market. To this obſervation I made no reply; and he went on: "God ſend us well out of this place; we have not been in London eight and forty hours, and I believe we have met with eight and forty thouſand misfortunes—We have been jeered, reproached, buffeted, piſſed upon, and at laſt ſtripped of our money; and I ſuppoſe by and by we ſhall be ſtripped of our ſkins.—Indeed, as to the money part of it, that was owing to our own folly; Solomon ſays, *Bray a fool in a mortar, and he will never be wiſe.* Ah! God help us, an ounce of prudence is worth a pound of gold." This was no time for him to tamper with my diſpoſition, already mad with my loſs, and inflamed with reſentment againſt him for having refuſed me a little money to attempt to retrieve it. I therefore turned towards him with a ſtern countenance, and aſked, "Who he called fool?" Being altogether unaccuſtomed to ſuch looks from me, he ſtood ſtill, and ſtared in my face for ſome time; then, with ſome confuſion, uttered, "Fool! I called no body fool but myſelf; I am ſure I am the greateſt fool of the two, for being ſo much concerned at other people's misfortunes: But *nemo omnibus horis ſapit*—that's all—that's all." Upon which a ſilence enſued, that brought us to our lodging, where I threw myſelf upon the bed in an agony of deſpair, reſolved to periſh rather than apply to my companion, or any other body, for relief; but Strap, who knew my temper, and whoſe heart bled within him at my diſtreſs, after ſome pauſe came to the bed-ſide, and, putting a leathern purſe into my hand, burſt into tears,

crying, "I know what you think; but I ſcorn your thoughts. There's all I have in the world; take it, and I'll perhaps get more for you before that be done. If not, I'll beg for you, ſteal for you, go through the wide world with you, and ſtarve with you; for though I be a poor cobler's ſon, I am no ſcout." I was ſo touched with the generous paſſion of this poor creature, that I could not refrain from weeping alſo; and we mingled our tears together for ſome time. Upon examining the purſe, I found in it two half guineas and half-a-crown, which I would have returned to him, ſaying, he knew better than I how to manage it; but he abſolutely refuſed my propoſal, and told me, it was more reaſonable and decent that he ſhould depend upon me who was a gentleman, than that I ſhould be controuled by him.

After this friendly conteſt was over, and our minds more at eaſe, we informed our landlord of what had happened to us, taking care to conceal the extremity to which we were reduced. He no ſooner heard the ſtory, than he aſſured us we had been grievouſly impoſed upon by a couple of ſharpers, who were aſſociates; and that this polite, honeſt, friendly, humane perſon, who had treated us ſo civilly, was no other than a raſcally money-dropper, who made it his buſineſs to decoy ſtrangers in that manner to one of his own haunts, where an accomplice or two were always waiting to aſſiſt in pillaging the prey he had run down. Here the good man recounted a great many ſtories of people who had been ſeduced, cheated, pilfered, beat, nay even murdered, by ſuch villains. I was confounded at the artifice and wickedneſs of mankind; and Strap, lifting up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from ſuch ſcenes of iniquity; for ſurely the devil had ſet up his throne in London. Our landlord being curious to know what reception we had met with at Mr. Cringer's, we acquainted him with the particulars; at which he ſhook his head, and told us, we had not gone the right way to work; that there was nothing to be done with a m—b—r of p—n—t without a bribe; that the ſervant was commonly inſtructed with

the maſter's diſeaſe, and expected to be paid for his work, as well as his betters. He therefore adviſed me to give the footman a ſhilling the next time I ſhould deſire admittance to my patron, or elſe I ſhould ſcarce find an opportunity to deliver my letter. Accordingly, next morning, when the door was opened, I ſlipt a ſhilling into his hand, and told him I had a letter for his maſter. I found the good effects of my liberality; for the fellow let me in immediately, and taking the letter out of my hand, deſired me to wait in a kind of paſſage for an anſwer. In this place I continued ſtanding for three quarters of an hour, during which time I ſaw a great many young fellows, whom I formerly knew in Scotland, paſs and repaſs, with an air of familiarity, in their way to and from the audience-chamber; while I was fain to ſtand ſhivering in the cold, and turn my back to them, that they might not perceive the lowneſs of my condition. At length Mr. Cringer came out to ſee a young gentleman to the door, who was no other than Squire Gawky, dreſſed in a very gay ſuit of clothes: At parting, Mr. Cringer ſhook him by the hand, and told him he hoped to have the pleaſure of his company at dinner. Then turning about towards me, aſked what were my commands? When he underſtood I was the perſon who had brought the letter from Mr. Crab, he affected to recollect my name, which, however, he pretended he could not do, till he had conſulted the letter again; to ſave him that trouble, I told him my name was Random. Upon which he went on, "Ay, ay, Random, Random, Random—I think I remember the name;" and very well he might, for this very individual Mr. Cringer had many a time rode before my grandfather's cloak-bag, in quality of a footman. "Well (ſays he), you propoſe to go on board a man of war, as ſurgeon's mate." I replied by a low bow. "I believe it will be a difficult matter (continued he) to procure a warrant, there being already ſuch a ſwarm of Scotch ſurgeons at the Navy-office, in expectation of the next vacancy, that the commiſſioners are afraid of being torn to pieces, and have actually applied for a guard to protect them. However, ſome [illegible] will ſoon be put in

commiſſion, and then we ſhall ſee what's to be done." So ſaying, he left me exceedingly mortified at the different reception Mr. Gawky and I had met with from this upſtart, proud, mean member, who, I imagined, would have been glad of an opportunity to be grateful for the obligations he owed to my family.

At my return, I was ſurpriſed with the agreeable news of Strap's being employed, on the recommendation of his friend the ſchoolmaſter, by a periwig-maker in the neighbourhood, who allowed him five ſhillings per week, beſides bed and board. I continued to dance attendance every other morning at the levee of Mr. Cringer, during a fortnight, in which time I became acquainted with a young fellow of my own country and profeſſion, who alſo depended on the member's intereſt; but was treated with much more reſpect than I, both by the ſervants and maſter, and often admitted into a parlour, where there was a fire, for the convenience of the better ſort of thoſe who waited for him. Thither I was never permitted to penetrate, on account of my appearance, which was not at all faſhionable; but was obliged to ſtand blowing my fingers in a cold lobby, and take the firſt opportunity of Mr. Cringer's going to the door to ſpeak with him. One day, while I enjoyed this occaſion, a perſon was introduced, whom Mr. Cringer no ſooner ſaw, than, running towards him, he ſaluted him with a bow to the very ground, and afterwards ſhaking him by the hand with great heartineſs and familiarity, called him his good friend, and aſked very kindly after Mrs. Staytape, and the young ladies; then, after a whiſper which continued ſome minutes, wherein I overheard the word *honour* repeated ſeveral times with great emphaſis, Mr. Cringer introduced me to this gentleman, as to a perſon whoſe advice and aſſiſtance I might depend upon, and having given me his direction, followed me to the door, where he told me, I need not give myſelf the trouble to call at his houſe any more, for Mr. Staytape would do my buſineſs. At that inſtant my fellow dependent coming out after me, overheard the diſcourſe of Mr. Cringer, and making up to me in the ſtreet, accoſted me very civilly. This addreſs I looked upon as no ſmall honour,

conſidering the figure he made; for he was dreſſed in a blue frock with a gold button, a green ſilk waiſtcoat trimmed with gold, black velvet breeches, white ſilk ſtockings, ſilver buckles, a gold-laced hat, a Spencer wig, and a ſilver-hilted hanger, with a fine clouded cane in his hand. "I perceive (ſays he) you are but lately come from Scotland; pray what may your buſineſs with Mr. Cringer be? I ſuppoſe it is no ſecret—and I may poſſibly give you ſome advice that may be ſerviceable; for I have been ſurgeon's ſecond mate on board of a ſeventy-gun ſhip, and conſequently know a good deal of the world." I made no ſcruple to diſcloſe my ſituation, which when he had learned, he ſhook his head, and told me he had been pretty much in the ſame circumſtances about a year ago; that he had relied on Cringer's promiſes, until his money (which was conſiderable), as well as his credit, was quite exhauſted; and when he wrote to his relations for a freſh ſupply, inſtead of money, he received nothing but reproaches, and the epithets of idle debauched fellow: That, after he had waited at the Navy-office many months for a warrant, to no purpoſe, he was fain to pawn ſome of his clothes, which raiſed a ſmall ſum, wherewith he bribed the ſecretary, who ſoon procured a warrant for him, notwithſtanding he had affirmed the ſame day, that there was not one vacancy: That he had gone on board, where he remained nine months; at the end of which the ſhip was put out of commiſſion; and he ſaid the company were to be paid off in Broad-ſtreet the very next day: That his relations being reconciled to him, had charged him to pay his devoirs regularly to Mr. Cringer, who had informed them by letter, that his intereſt alone had procured the warrant; in obedience to which command, he came to his levee every morning as I ſaw, though he looked upon him to be a very pitiful ſcoundrel. In concluſion, he aſked me if I had yet paſſed at Surgeons Hall? To which queſtion I anſwered, I did not ſo much as know it was neceſſary. "Neceſſary! (cried he) O Lord, O Lord! I find I muſt inſtruct you—come along with me, and I'll give you ſome information about that matter." So ſaying, he carried me into an ale-houſe, where he

called for ſome beer and bread and cheeſe, on which we breakfaſted. While we ſat in this place, he told me I muſt firſt go to the Navy-office, and write to the board, deſiring them to order a letter for me to the Surgeons Hall, that I may be examined touching my ſkill in ſurgery: That the ſurgeons, after having examined me, would give me my qualification ſealed up in form of a letter directed to the commiſſioners, which qualification I muſt deliver to the ſecretary of the board, who would open it in my preſence, and read the contents. After which I muſt employ my intereſt to be provided for as ſoon as poſſible. That the expence of this qualification, for ſecond mate of a third rate, amounted to thirteen ſhillings, excluſive of the warrant, which coſt him half a guinea and half a crown, beſides the preſent to the ſecretary, which conſiſted of a three-pound-twelve piece. This calculation was like a thunderbolt to me, whoſe whole fortune did not amount to twelve ſhillings. I accordingly made him acquainted with this part of my diſtreſs, after having thanked him for his information and advice. He condoled me on this occaſion; but bade me be of good cheer, for he had conceived a friendſhip for me, and would make all things eaſy. He was run out at preſent, but to-morrow or next day he was certain of receiving a conſiderable ſum, of which he would lend me what would be ſufficient to anſwer my exigencies. This frank declaration pleaſed me ſo much, that I pulled out my purſe, and emptied it before him, begging him to take what he pleaſed for pocket expence, until he ſhould receive his own money. With a good deal of preſſing he was prevailed upon to take five ſhillings, telling me that he might have what money he wanted at any time for the trouble of going into the city; but as he had met with me, he would defer his going thither till to-morrow, when I ſhould go along with him, and he would put me in a way of acting for myſelf, without any ſervile dependence on that raſcal Cringer, much leſs on the louſy taylor to whom I heard him turn you over. "How (cried I), is Mr. Staytape a taylor?" "No leſs, I'll aſſure you (anſwered he), and, I confeſs, more likely to ſerve you than the member; for, provided you

can entertain him with politics and conundrums, you may have credit with him for as many and as rich clothes as you pleaſe." I told him, I was utterly ignorant of both, and ſo incenſed at Cringer's uſage, that I would never ſet foot within his door again. After a good deal more converſation, my new acquaintance and I parted, having made an appointment to meet the next day at the ſame place, in order to ſet out for the city. I went immediately to Strap, and related every thing which had happened; but he did not at all approve of my being ſo forward to lend money to a ſtranger, eſpecially as we had already been ſo much impoſed upon by appearances. "However (ſaid he), if you are ſure he is a Scotchman, I believe you are ſafe."

CHAPTER XVI.

My new acquaintance breaks an appointment—I proceed by myſelf to the Navy-office—addreſs myſelf to a perſon there, who aſſiſts me with his advice—write to the board—they grant me a letter to the Surgeons at the Hall—am informed of the beau's name and character—find him—he makes me his confident in an amour—deſires me to pawn my linen, for his occaſions—I recover what I lent him—ſome curious obſervations of Strap on that occaſion—his vanity.

In the morning I roſe and went to the place of rendezvous, where I waited two hours in vain; and was ſo exaſperated againſt him for breaking his appointment, that I ſet out for the city by myſelf, in hopes of finding the villain, and being revenged on him for his breach of promiſe. At length I found myſelf at the Navy-office, which I entered, and ſaw crouds of young fellows walking below, many of whom made no better appearance than myſelf. I conſulted the phyſiognomy of each, and at laſt made up to one whoſe countenance I liked; and aſked if he could inſtruct me in the form of the letter which was to be ſent to the board, to obtain an order for examination: He anſwered me in broad Scotch, that he would ſhow me the copy of what he had writ for himſelf, by the direction of another who knew the form; and accordingly pulled it out of his pocket for my peru-

ſal; and told me, that, if I was expeditious, I might ſend it in to the board before dinner, for they did no buſineſs in the afternoon. He then went with me to a coffee houſe hard by, where I wrote the letter, which was immediately delivered to the meſſenger; who told me I might expect an order to-morrow about the ſame time. Having tranſacted this piece of buſineſs, my mind was a good deal compoſed; and as I met with ſo much civility from this ſtranger, I deſired further acquaintance with him, fully reſolved, however, not to be deceived by him ſo much to my prejudice as I had been by the beau. He agreed to dine with me at the cook's ſhop which I frequented; and on our way thither, carried me to 'Change, where I was in ſome hopes of finding Mr. Jackſon (for that was the name of the perſon who had broke his appointment). I ſought him there to no purpoſe, and on our way towards the other end of the town, imparted to my companion his behaviour towards me: Upon which, he gave me to underſtand, that he was no ſtranger to the name of Beau Jackſon (ſo he was called at the Navy-office), although he did not know him perſonally; that he had the character of a good-natured careleſs fellow, who made no ſcruple of borrowing from any body that would lend; that moſt people who knew him believed he had a good principle at bottom; but his extravagance was ſuch, he would probably never have it in his power to manifeſt the honeſty of his intention. This account made me ſweat for my five ſhillings, which I nevertheleſs did not altogether deſpair of recovering, provided I could find out the debtor. This young man likewiſe added another circumſtance of Squire Jackſon's hiſtory, which was, that being deſtitute of all means to equip himſelf for ſea, when he received his laſt warrant, he had been recommended to a perſon who lent him a little money, after he had ſigned a will and power, entitling that perſon to lift his wages when they ſhould become due, as alſo to inherit his effects in caſe of his death. That he was ſtill under the tutorage and direction of that gentleman, who advanced him ſmall ſums from time to time upon his ſecurity, at the rate of 50 per cent. But at preſent his credit was very low, becauſe his funds

would do little more than pay what he had already received, this moderate intereſt included. After the ſtranger (whoſe name was Thomſon) had entertained me with this account of Jackſon, he informed me that he himſelf had paſſed for third mate of a third-rate, about four months ago; ſince which time, he had conſtantly attended at the Navy-office in hope of a warrant, having been aſſured from the beginning, both by a Scotch member and one of the commiſſioners to whom the member recommended him, that he ſhould be put into the firſt vacancy; notwithſtanding which promiſe, he had the mortification to ſee ſix or ſeven appointed to the ſame ſtation almoſt every week: that now being utterly impoveriſhed, his ſole hope conſiſted in the promiſe of a friend lately come to town, to lend him a ſmall matter, for a preſent to the ſecretary, without which he was perſuaded he might wait a thouſand years to no purpoſe. I conceived a mighty liking for this young fellow, which (I believe) proceeded from the ſimilitude of our fortunes: We ſpent the whole day together; and, as he lived at Wapping, I deſired him to take a ſhare of my bed. Next day we returned to the Navy-office, where, after being called before the board, and queſtioned about the place of my nativity and education, they ordered a letter to be made out for me, which, upon paying half a crown to the clerk, I received, and delivered into the hands of the clerk at Surgeons Hall, together with a ſhilling for his trouble in regiſtering my name. By this time my whole ſtock was diminiſhed to two ſhillings, and I ſaw not the leaſt proſpect of relief, even for preſent ſubſiſtence, much leſs to enable me to pay the fees at Surgeons Hall for my examination, which would come on in a fortnight. In this ſtate of perplexity, I conſulted Strap, who aſſured me, he would pawn every thing he had in the world, even to his razors, before I ſhould want: But this expedient I abſolutely rejected, telling him, I would a thouſand times rather liſt for a ſoldier, of which I had ſome thoughts, than be any longer a burden to him. At the word ſoldier, he grew pale as death, and begged, on his knees, I would think no more of that ſcheme. "God preſerve us all in our right wits! (cried he)

would you turn ſoldier, and perhaps be ſent abroad againſt the Spaniards, where you muſt ſtand and be ſhot at like a woodcock?—Heaven keep cold lead out of my carcaſe! and let me die in a bed like a Chriſtian, as all my forefathers have done. What ſignifies all the riches and honours of this life, if one enjoys not content? And, in the next, there is no reſpect of perſons. Better be a poor honeſt barber with a good conſcience, and time to repent of my ſins upon my death-bed, than be cut off (God bleſs us) by a muſket ſhot, as it were in the very flower of one's age, in the purſuit of riches, and fame. What ſignify riches? (my dear friend!) do not they make unto themſelves wings? as the wiſe man ſaith; and does not Horace obſerve, *Non domus aut fundus, non æris acervus aut auri ægroto domino deduxit corpore febrem non animo curas.* I could moreover mention many other ſayings in contempt of riches, both from the Bible and other good books; but, as I know you are not very fond of thoſe things, I ſhall only aſſure you, that, if you take on to be a ſoldier, I will do the ſame; and, then if we ſhould both be ſlain, you will not only have your own blood to anſwer for, but mine alſo; and peradventure the lives of all thoſe whom we ſhall kill in battle. Therefore, I pray you, conſider whether you will ſit down contented with ſmall things, and ſhare the fruits of my induſtry in peace, till Providence ſhall ſend better tidings; or, by your deſpair, plunge both our ſouls and bodies into everlaſting perdition, which God of his infinite mercy forbid." I could not help ſmiling at this harangue, which was delivered with great earneſtneſs, the tears ſtanding in his eyes all the time; and promiſed to do nothing of that ſort without his conſent and concurrence. He was much comforted with this declaration; and told me in a few days he ſhould receive a week's wages, which ſhould be at my ſervice; but adviſed me, in the mean time, to go in queſt of Jackſon, and recover, if poſſible, what he had borrowed of me. I accordingly trudged about from one end of the town to the other for ſeveral days, without being able to learn any thing certain concerning him: And, one day, being extremely hungry, and allured by the ſteams that regaled my noſtrils

a boiling cellar, I went down with an intention to
y my appetite with two penny worth of beef;
to my no ſmall ſurpriſe, I found Mr. Jackſon ſit-
t dinner with a footman. He no ſooner perceived
an he got up, and ſhook me by the hand, ſaying,
was glad to ſee me, for he intended to have called
lodgings in the afternoon." I was ſo well pleaſed
this rencounter, and the apologies he made for not
ig his appointment, that I forgot my reſentment,
t down to dinner, with the happy expectation of
ily recovering my own money before we ſhould
out alſo of reaping the benefit of his promiſe to lend
herewithal to paſs examination; and this hope my
ine complexion ſuggeſted, though the account
ſon gave me of him ought to have moderated my
tation. When we had feaſted ſumptuouſly, he took
ave of the footman, and adjourned with me to an
ſe hard by, where, after ſhaking me by the hand
, he began thus: "I ſuppoſe you think me a ſad
Mr. Random, and I do confeſs that appearances are
t me. But I dare ſay you will forgive me, when
you, my not coming at the time appointed was
; to a peremptory meſſage I received from a certain
whom, hark'ee (but this is a great ſecret), I am
rry very ſoon. You think this ſtrange, perhaps,
is not leſs true for all that—a five thouſand poun-
'll aſſure you, beſides expectations. For my own
devil take me if I know what any woman can
gaging about me—but a whim you know; and
me would not baulk one's good fortune. You ſaw
footman who dined with us—he's one of the ho-
t fellows that ever wore a livery. You muſt
, it was by his means I was introduced to her, for
de me firſt acquainted with her woman, who is his
eſs; ay, many a crown has he and his ſweetheart
f my money; but what of that? things are now
ght to a bearing. I have—(come a little this way)
e propoſed marriage, and the day is fixed; ſhe's a
ning creature! writes like an angel. O Lord! ſhe
repeat all the Engliſh tragedies as well as e'er a
r in Drury Lane! and indeed is ſo fond of plays,

that, to be near the ſtage, ſhe has taken lodgings in a court hard by the theatre. But you ſhall ſee—you ſhall ſee—here's the laſt letter ſhe ſent me."—With theſe words, he put it into my hand, and I read (to the beſt of my remembrance) as follows:

" Deer Kreeter,

" As you are the animable hopjack of my contemplayſhins, your aydear is infernally ſkimming before my keymerycal fanſee, when Murfy ſends his puppies to the heys of ſlipping mortals; and when Febus ſhines from his merrydying throne: Whereupon, I ſhall canſeeif old whorie time has loſt his pinners, as alſo Cupid his harrows, until thou enjoy ſweet propoſe in the loafſeek harms of thy faithfool to commend,

" CLAYRENDER."

" Wingar-yeard, Droory-Lane,
" January 12th."

While I was reading, he ſeemed to be in an ecſtacy, rubbing his hands, and burſting out into fits of laughter; at laſt he caught hold of my hand, and, ſqueezing it, cried, " There is ſtyle for you! what do you think of this billet-doux?" I anſwered, " It might be ſublime for aught I knew, for it was altogether above my comprehenſion."—" O ho! (ſaid he) I believe it is—both tender and ſublime—ſhe's a divine creature!—and ſo doats upon me! Let me ſee, what ſhall I do with this money, when I have once got it into my hands? In the firſt place, I ſhall do for you—I'm a man of few words; but, ſay no more, that's determined—Whether would you adviſe me to purchaſe ſome poſt, by which I may riſe in the ſtate; or lay out my wife's fortune in land, and retire to the country at once?"—I gave my opinion, without heſitation, that he could not do better than buy an eſtate and improve; eſpecially ſince he had already ſeen ſo much of the world. Then I launched out into the praiſes of a country life, as deſcribed by the poets whoſe works I had read. He ſeemed to reliſh my advice, but withal told me, that, although he had ſeen a great deal of the world both by land and ſea, having cruiſed three whole months in the Channel, yet he ſhould

not be ſatisfied until he had viſited France, which he propoſed to do before he ſhould ſettle; and to carry his wife along with him. I had nothing to object to his propoſal; and aſked how ſoon he hoped to be happy? "As to that (he replied) nothing obſtructs my happineſs, but the want of a little ready caſh; for you muſt know, my friend in the city has gone out of town for a week or two; and I unfortunately miſſed my pay at Broad-ſtreet, by being detained too long by the dear charmer; but there will be a recal at Chatham next week, whither the ſhip's books are ſent, and I have commiſſioned a friend in that place to receive the money." If that be all (ſaid I), there's no great harm in deferring your marriage a few days.—"Yes, faith! but there is (ſaid he), you don't know how many rivals I have, who would take all advantages againſt me. I would not baulk the impatience of her paſſion for the world; the leaſt appearance of coldneſs and indifference would ruin all: and ſuch offers don't occur every day." I acquieſced in this obſervation, and inquired how he intended to proceed: At this queſtion, he rubbed his chin, and ſaid, "Why, truly, I muſt be obliged to ſome friend or other—do you know nobody that would lend me a ſmall ſum for a day or two?"—I aſſured him, I was ſuch an utter ſtranger in London, that I did not believe I could borrow a guinea if my life depended upon it. "No! (ſaid he) that's hard—that's hard. I wiſh I had any thing to pawn; upon my ſoul you have got excellent linen (feeling the ſleeve of my ſhirt); how many ſhirts of that kind have you got?"—I anſwered, "Six ruffled and ſix plain."—At which he teſtified great ſurpriſe, and ſwore that no gentleman ought to have more than four. "How many d'ye think I have got (continued he)? But this and another, as I hope to be ſaved! I dare ſay we ſhall be able to raiſe a good ſum out of your ſuperfluity—let me ſee—let me ſee—each of theſe ſhirts are worth ſixteen ſhillings at a moderate computation; now, ſuppoſe we pawn them for half price, eight times eight is ſixty-four, that's three pounds four; z—ds! that will do; give me your hand."—"Softly, ſoftly, Mr. Jackſon (ſaid I), don't diſpoſe of my linen without my conſent;

firſt pay me the crown you owe me, and then we ſhall talk of other matters." He proteſted he had not above one ſhilling in his pocket, but that he would pay me out of the firſt of the money raiſed from the ſhirts.—This piece of aſſurance incenſed me ſo much, that I ſwore I would not part with him until I had received ſatisfaction for what I had lent him; and, as for the ſhirts, I would not pawn one of them to ſave him from the gallows. At this expreſſion, he laughed aloud, and then complained it was damn'd hard, that I ſhould refuſe him a trifle that would infallibly enable him not only to make his own fortune, but mine alſo. "You talk of pawning my ſhirts (ſaid I), ſuppoſe you ſhould ſell this hanger, Mr. Jackſon? I believe it would fetch a good round ſum?"—"No, hang it (ſaid he), I can't appear decently without my hanger, or egad it ſhould go."—However, ſeeing me inflexible with regard to my linen, he at length unbuckled his hanger, and, ſhowing me the ſign of the three blue balls, deſired me to carry it thither and pawn it for two guineas. This office I would by no means have performed, had I ſeen any likelihood of having my money otherwiſe; but not willing, out of a piece of falſe delicacy, to neglect the only opportunity I ſhould perhaps ever have, I ventured into a pawnbroker's ſhop, where I demanded two guineas on the pledge, in the name of Thomas Williams: "Two guineas! (ſaid the pawnbroker, looking at the hanger), this piece of goods has been here ſeveral times before for thirty ſhillings; however, ſince I believe the gentleman to whom it belongs will redeem it, he ſhall have what he wants;" and accordingly, he paid me the money, which I carried to the houſe where I had left Jackſon, and, calling for change, counted out to him ſeven and thirty ſhillings, reſerving the other five for myſelf. After looking at the money ſome time, he ſaid, "D—n it! it don't ſignify—this won't do my buſineſs; ſo you may as well take half a guinea, or a whole one, as the five ſhillings you have kept." I thanked him kindly; but I refuſed to accept of any more than was my due, becauſe I had no proſpect of repaying it. Upon which declaration, he ſtared in my face, and told me, I was

exceſſively raw, or I would not talk in that manner. "Blood (cried he), I have a very bad opinion of a young fellow who won't borrow of his friend when he is in want; 'tis the ſign of a ſneaking ſpirit. Come, come, Random, give me back the five ſhillings, and take this half guinea, and if ever you are able to pay me, I believe you will; if not, d—n me if ever I aſk it." When I reflected on my preſent neceſſity, I ſuffered myſelf to be perſuaded; and, after making my acknowledgments to Mr. Jackſon, who offered to treat me with a play, I returned to my lodgings with a much better opinion of this gentleman than I had in the morning; and at night imparted my day's adventures to Strap, who rejoiced at my good luck, ſaying, "I told you, if he was a Scotchman, you was ſafe enough; and who knows but this marriage may make us all? You have heard, I ſuppoſe, as how a countryman of ours, a journeyman baker, ran away with a great lady of this town, and now keeps his coach. Ecod! I ſay nothing; but yeſterday morning, as I was a ſhaving a gentleman at his own houſe, there was a young lady in the room—a fine buxom wench, i'faith! and ſhe threw ſo many ſheep's eyes at a certain perſon, whom I ſhall not name, that my heart went knock, knock, knock, like a fulling-mill, and my hand ſh—ſh—ſhook ſo much that I ſliced a piece of ſkin off the gentleman's noſe: Whereby he ſwore a deadly oath, and was going to horſewhip me, when ſhe prevented him, and made my peace. *Omen haud malum!* Is not a journeyman barber as good as a journeyman baker? The only difference is, the baker uſes flour for the belly, and the barber uſes it for the head: And, as the head is a more noble member than the belly, ſo is a barber more noble than a baker; for what's the belly without the head? Beſides, I am told he could neither read nor write; now you know I can do both, and, moreover, ſpeak Latin: But I will ſay no more, for I deſpiſe vanity; nothing is more vain than vanity."—With theſe words he pulled out of his pocket a wax candle's end, which he applied to his forehead; and, upon examination, I found he had combed his own hair over the toupee of his wig, and was indeed in his whole dreſs be-

come a very ſmart ſhaver. I congratulated him on his proſpect with a ſatirical ſmile, which he underſtood very well; and, ſhaking his head, obſerved I had very little faith, but the truth would come to light in ſpite of my incredulity.

CHAPTER XVII.

I go to Surgeons Hall, where I meet with Mr. Jackſon—am examined—a fierce diſpute ariſes between two of the examiners—Jackſon diſguiſes himſelf to attract reſpect—is detected—in hazard of being ſent to Bridewell—he treats us at a tavern—carries us to a night houſe—a troubleſome adventure there—we are committed to the Round-houſe—carried before a juſtice—his behaviour.

WITH the aſſiſtance of this faithful adherent, who gave me almoſt all the money he earned, I preſerved my half guinea entire till the day of examination, when I went with a quaking heart to Surgeons Hall, in order to undergo that ceremony. Among a crowd of young fellows who walked in the outward hall, I perceived Mr. Jackſon, to whom I immediately went up, and inquiring into the ſtate of his amour, underſtood it was ſtill undetermined by reaſon of his friend's abſence, and the delay of the recal at Chatham, which put it out of his power to bring it to a concluſion. I then aſked what his buſineſs was in this place; he replied, he was reſolved to have two ſtrings to his bow, that in caſe the one failed he might uſe the other; and, with this view, he was to paſs that night for a higher qualification. At that inſtant a young fellow came out from the place of examination, with a pale countenance, his lip quivering, and his looks as wild as if he had ſeen a ghoſt. He no ſooner appeared, than we all flocked about him with the utmoſt eagerneſs to know what reception he had met with; which (after ſome pauſe) he deſcribed, recounting all the queſtions they had aſked, with the anſwers he made. In this manner we obliged no leſs than twelve to recapitulate, which, now the danger was paſt, they did with pleaſure, before it fell to my lot: At length the beadle called my name, with a voice that made me

nble as much as if it had been the ſound of the laſt
npet: However, there was no remedy: I was con-
ted into a large hall, where I ſaw about a dozen of
n faces ſitting at a long table; one of whom bade me
e forward, in ſuch an imperious tone that I was ac-
ly for a minute or two bereft of my ſenſes. The
queſtion he put to me was, "Where was you born?"
which I anſwered, "In Scotland."—"In Scotland
d he), I know that very well; we have ſcarce any
r countrymen to examine here; you Scotchmen
overſpread us of late as the locuſts did Egypt: I
you in what part of Scotland was you born?"—I
ed the place of my nativity, which he had never be-
heard of: He then proceeded to interrogate me
ut my age, the town where I ſerved my time, with
term of my apprenticeſhip; and when I informed
that I ſerved three years only, he fell into a violent
ion; ſwore it was a ſhame and a ſcandal to ſend ſuch
boys into the world as ſurgeons; that it was a great
ſumption in me, and an affront upon the Engliſh, to
tend to ſufficient ſkill in my buſineſs, having ſerved
hort a time, when every apprentice in England was
d ſeven years at leaſt; that my friends would have
better if they had made me a weaver or ſhoemaker,
their pride would have me a gentleman (he ſup-
d) at any rate, and their poverty could not afford
neceſſary education. This exordium did not at all
tribute to the recovery of my ſpirits, but, on the
rary, reduced me to ſuch a ſituation that I was ſcarce
to ſtand; which being perceived by a plump gentle-
who ſat oppoſite to me, with a ſkull before him,
ſaid, Mr. Snarler was too ſevere upon the young
; and, turning towards me, told me, I need not to
afraid, for nobody would do me any harm; then bid-
me take time to recollect myſelf, he examined me
hing the operation of the trepan, and was very well
ſied with my anſwers. The next perſon who queſ-
ed me was a wag, who began by aſking if I had ever
amputation performed; and I replying in the affir-
ive, he ſhook his head, and ſaid, "What! upon a
ſubject, I ſuppoſe? If (continued he), during an

engagement at ſea, a man ſhould be brought to you with his head ſhot off, how would you behave?" After ſome heſitation, I owned ſuch a caſe had never come under my obſervation, neither did I remember to have ſeen any method of cure propoſed for ſuch an accident, in any of the ſyſtems of ſurgery I had peruſed. Whether it was owing to the ſimplicity of my anſwer, or the archneſs of the queſtion, I know not, but every member at the board deigned to ſmile, except Mr. Snarler, who ſeemed to have very little of the *animal riſibile* in his conſtitution. The facetious member, encouraged by the ſucceſs of his laſt joke, went on thus: "Suppoſe you was called to a patient of a plethoric habit, who had been bruiſed by a fall, what would you do?" I anſwered, I would bleed him immediately. "What (ſaid he), before you had tied up his arm?" But this ſtroke of wit not anſwering his expectation, he deſired me to advance to the gentleman who ſat next him; and who, with a pert air, aſked what method of cure I would follow in wounds of the inteſtines. I repeated the method of cure as it is preſcribed by the beſt chirurgical writers; which he heard to an end, and then ſaid, with a ſupercilious ſmile, "So you think by ſuch treatment the patient might recover?"—I told him I ſaw nothing to make me think otherwiſe. "That may be (reſumed he), I won't anſwer for your foreſight; but did you ever know a caſe of this kind ſucceed?" I acknowledged I did not; and was about to tell him I had never ſeen a wounded inteſtine; but he ſtopped me, by ſaying, with ſome precipitation, "Nor never will. I affirm, that all wounds of the inteſtines, whether great or ſmall, are mortal."—"Pardon me, brother (ſays the fat gentleman), there is very good authority"—Here he was interrupted by the other, with "Sir, excuſe me, I deſpiſe all authority. *Nullius in verba.* I ſtand upon my own bottom."—"But, Sir, Sir, (replied his antagoniſt), the reaſon of the thing ſhows"—"A fig for reaſon (cried this ſufficient member), I laugh at reaſon, give me ocular demonſtration." The corpulent gentleman began to wax warm, and obſerved, that no man acquainted with the anatomy of the parts would advance ſuch an extravagant aſſertion.

This innuendo enraged the other ſo much, that he ſtarted up, and, in a furious tone, exclaimed, "What, Sir! do you queſtion my knowledge in anatomy?" By this time, all the examiners had eſpouſed the opinion of one or other of the diſputants, and raiſed their voices all together, when the chairman commanded ſilence, and ordered me to withdraw. In leſs than a quarter of an hour I was called in again, received my qualifications ſealed up, and was ordered to pay five ſhillings. I laid down my half-guinea upon the table, and ſtood ſome time, until one of them bade me begone; to this, I replied, I will, when I have got my change; upon which another threw me five ſhillings and ſixpence, ſaying, I ſhould not be a true Scotchman if I went away without my change. I was afterwards obliged to give three ſhillings and ſixpence to the beadles, and a ſhilling to an old woman who ſwept the hall. This diſburſement ſunk my finances to thirteen pence halfpenny, with which I was ſneaking off, when Jackſon perceiving it, came up to me, and begged I would tarry for him, and he would accompany me to the other end of the town, as ſoon as his examination ſhould be over. I could not refuſe this to a perſon that was ſo much my friend; but I was aſtoniſhed at the change of his dreſs, which was varied in half an hour from what I have already deſcribed, to a very groteſque faſhion. His head was covered with an old ſmoked tie-wig that did not boaſt one crooked hair, and a ſlouched hat over it, which would have very well become a chimney-ſweeper or a duſt-man; his neck was adorned with a black crape, the ends of which he had twiſted, and fixed in the button-hole of a ſhabby great coat that wrapped up his whole body; his white ſilk ſtockings were converted into black worſted hoſe; and his countenance was rendered venerable by wrinkles, and a beard of his own painting. When I expreſſed my ſurpriſe at this metamorphoſis, he laughed, and told me, it was done by the advice and aſſiſtance of a friend who lived over the way, and would certainly produce ſomething very much to his advantage; for it gave him the appearance of age, which never fails of attracting reſpect. I applauded his ſagacity, and waited with im-

patience for the effects of it. At length he was called in, but whether the oddneſs of his appearance excited a curioſity more than uſual in the board, or his behaviour was not ſuitable to his figure, I know not, he was diſcovered to be an impoſtor, and put into the hands of the beadle, in order to be ſent to Bridewell. So that inſtead of ſeeing him come out with a cheerful countenance, and a ſurgeon's qualification in his hand, I perceived him led through the outward hall as a priſoner, and was very much alarmed and anxious to know the occaſion; when he called with a lamentable voice and piteous aſpect to me, and ſome others who knew him, "For God's ſake, gentlemen, bear witneſs that I am the ſame individual John Jackſon, who ſerved as ſurgeon's ſecond mate on board the Elizabeth, or elſe I ſhall go to Bridewell." It would have been impoſſible for the moſt auſtere hermit that ever lived to have refrained from laughing at his appearance and addreſs; we therefore indulged ourſelves a good while at his expence, and afterwards pleaded his cauſe ſo effectually with the beadle, who was gratified with half a crown, that the priſoner was diſmiſſed, and, in a few moments, reſumed his former gaiety; ſwearing, ſince the board had refuſed his money, he would ſpend it every ſhilling before he went to bed in treating his friends; at the ſame time inviting us all to favour him with our company. It was now ten o'clock at night, and, as I had a great way to walk through ſtreets that were utterly unknown to me, I was prevailed upon to be of their party, in hopes he would afterwards accompany me to my lodgings, according to his promiſe. He conducted us to his friend's houſe, who kept a tavern over the way, where we continued drinking punch, until the liquor mounted up to our heads, and made us all extremely frolicſome: I in particular was ſo much elevated, that nothing would ſerve me but a wench, at which demand Jackſon expreſſed much joy, and aſſured me I ſhould have my deſire before we parted. Accordingly, when he had paid the reckoning, we ſallied out, roaring and ſinging; and were conducted by our leader to a place of nocturnal entertainment, where I immediately attached myſelf to a

fair one, with whom I propoſed to ſpend the remaining part of the night; but ſhe not reliſhing my appearance, refuſed to grant my requeſt before I ſhould have made her an acknowledgment; which not ſuiting with my circumſtances, we broke off our correſpondence, to my no ſmall mortification and reſentment, becauſe I thought the mercenary creature had not done juſtice to my merit. In the mean time, Mr. Jackſon's dreſs had attracted the inclinations and aſſiduities of two or three nymphs, who loaded him with careſſes, in return for the arrack punch with which he treated them; till at length, notwithſtanding the ſprightly ſallies of thoſe charmers, ſleep began to exert his power over us all; and our conductor called, "To pay." When the bill was brought, which amounted to twelve ſhillings, he put his hand in his pocket, but might have ſaved himſelf the trouble, for his purſe was gone. This accident diſconcerted him a good deal at firſt; but, after ſome recollection, he ſeized the two Dulcineas who ſat by him, one in each hand, and ſwore, if they did not immediately reſtore his money, he would charge a conſtable with them. The good lady at the bar, ſeeing what paſſed, whiſpered ſomething to the drawer, who went out; and then, with great compoſure, aſked what was the matter? Jackſon told her he was robbed, and ſwore, if ſhe refuſed him ſatisfaction, he would have her and her whores committed to Bridewell. "Robbed (cried ſhe), robbed in my houſe! Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to witneſs, this perſon has ſcandalized my reputation." At that inſtant ſeeing the conſtable and watch enter, ſhe proceeded, "What! you muſt not only endeavour by your falſe aſperſions to ruin my character, but even commit an aſſault upon my family! Mr. Conſtable, I charge you with this uncivil perſon, who has been guilty of a riot here; I ſhall take care and bring an action againſt him for defamation." While I was reflecting on this melancholy event, which had made me quite ſober, the lady whoſe favours I had ſolicited, being piqued at ſome repartee that paſſed between us, cried, "They are all concerned; and deſired the conſtable to take us all into cuſtody; an arreſt which was performed

inſtantly, to the utter aſtoniſhment and deſpair of us all, except Jackſon, who, having been often in ſuch ſcrapes, was very little concerned, and charged the conſtable in his turn with the landlady and her whole bevy: Upon which we were carried all together priſoners to the Roundhouſe; where Jackſon (after a word of comfort to us) informed the conſtable of his being robbed, to which he ſaid he would ſwear next morning before the juſtice. "Ay, ay (ſays the bawd), we ſhall ſee whoſe oath will moſt ſignify." In a little time, the conſtable calling Jackſon into another room, ſpoke to him thus: "I perceive that you and your company are ſtrangers, and am very ſorry for your being involved in ſuch an ugly buſineſs. I have known this woman a great while; ſhe has kept a notorious houſe in the neighbourhood this many years, and, although often complained of as a nuiſance, ſtill eſcapes, through her intereſt with the juſtices, to whom ſhe, and all of her employment, pay contribution quarterly for protection. As ſhe charged me with you firſt, her complaint will have the preference; and ſhe can procure evidence to ſwear whatever ſhe ſhall pleaſe to deſire of them. So that, unleſs you can make it up before morning, you and your companions may think yourſelves happily quit for a month's hard labour in Bridewell. Nay, if ſhe ſhould ſwear a robbery or aſſault againſt you, you will be committed to Newgate, and tried next ſeſſions at the Old Bailey for your life." This laſt piece of information had ſuch an effect upon Jackſon, that he agreed to make it up, provided his money might be reſtored. The conſtable told him, that, inſtead of retrieving what he had loſt, he was pretty certain it would coſt him ſome more before they would come to any compoſition. But, however, he had compaſſion on him, and would, if he pleaſed, ſound them about a mutual releaſe. The unfortunate beau thanked him for his friendſhip, and returning to us, acquainted us with the ſubſtance of this dialogue; while the conſtable, deſiring to ſpeak in private with our adverſary, carried her into the next room, and pleaded our cauſe ſo effectually, that ſhe condeſcended to make him umpire: He accordingly propoſed an arbitration,

[illegible] we gave our affidavit, and he fined each party one shilling, to be laid out in a bowl of punch, that we might all shake hands together, to the inexpressible joy of our acquaintances and me, who had been [illegible] the damned ever since Jackson mentioned Newgate. By this time we had finished [illegible] which, by the bye, I had contributed my [illegible] in the morning, and I proposed to move [illegible], when the constable gave me to understand, that discharge no prisoners, but by order of the [illegible] before whom we must appear. This [illegible] my [illegible] I exerted the hour in which I had yielded [illegible] institution. About nine o'clock we were [illegible] to the house of a certain justice, not many miles [illegible] Covent Garden; who no sooner saw the [illegible] with a train of prisoners at his heels, [illegible] him as follows: "So, Mr. Constable, [illegible] a diligent man—What den of rogues have you [illegible]?" Then looking at us, who appeared [illegible] dejected, he continued: "Ay, ay, thieves, to [illegible] offenders.—O your humble servant, Mrs. Harpy! I suppose these fellows have been [illegible] [illegible]—yes, yes, here's an old acquaintance of [illegible] have used expedition would be to me in re[illegible] from transportation; but we shall save you the [illegible] the future—the surgeons will fetch you [illegible] home transportation at their expence." The [illegible] worship he was mistaken in me, for he had [illegible] me in his life before. To this declaration [illegible] him, "How, you impudent rascal, dare you lay [illegible] face? Do you think I am to be imposed upon [illegible] northern accent which you have assumed? But [illegible] avail you, you shall find me too far north for [illegible]. Here, clerk, write this fellow's *mittimus*." His [illegible] Patrick Gahagan." Here Mr. Jackson inter[illegible] told him I was a Scotchman lately come to [illegible] of a good family, and that my name [illegible]. The justice looked upon this assertion as [illegible] upon his memory, on which he valued him[illegible], and strutting up to Jackson, with a fierce [illegible], put his hands in his sides, and said, "Who

are you, Sir? Do you give me the lie? Take notice, gentlemen, here's a fellow who affronts me upon the bench; but I'll lay you faſt, ſirrah, I will; for, notwithſtanding your laced jacket, I believe you are a notorious felon." My friend was ſo much abaſhed at this menace, which was thundered out with great vociferation, that he changed colour, and remained ſpeechleſs. This confuſion his worſhip took for a ſymptom of guilt, and, to complete his diſcovery, continued his threats—"Now, I am convinced you are a thief—your face diſcovers it—you tremble all over—your conſcience won't lie ſtill—you'll be hanged, ſirrah (raiſing his voice), you'll be hanged; and happy had it been for the world, as well as your own miſerable ſoul, if you had been detected and cut off in the beginning of your career. Come hither, clerk, and take this man's confeſſion." I was in an agony of conſternation, when the conſtable, going into another room with his worſhip, acquainted him with the truth of the ſtory; which having learned, he returned with a ſmiling countenance, and addreſſing himſelf to us all, ſaid it was always his way to terrify young people, when they came before him, that his threats might make a ſtrong impreſſion on their minds, and deter them from engaging in ſcenes of riot and debauchery, which commonly ended before the judge. Thus having cloaked his own want of diſcernment under the diſguiſe of paternal care, we were diſmiſſed, and I found myſelf as much lightened as if a mountain had been lifted off my breaſt.

CHAPTER XVIII.

I carry my qualification to the Navy-office—the nature of it—the behaviour of the ſecretary—Strap's concern for my abſence—a battle between him and a blackſmith—the troubleſome conſequence of it—his harangue to me—his friend the ſchoolmaſter recommends me to a French apothecary, who entertains me as a journeyman.

I WOULD willingly have gone home to ſleep, but was told by my companions, that we muſt deliver our letters

of qualification at the Navy-office before one o'clock; accordingly we went thither, and gave them to the ſecretary, who opened and read them; and I was mightily pleaſed to find myſelf qualified for ſecond mate of a third rate. When he had ſtuck them all together on a file, one of our company aſked if there were any vacancies? to which interrogation he anſwered, No. Then I ventured to inquire if any ſhips were to be put in commiſſion ſoon? At which queſtion he ſurveyed me with a look of ineffable contempt, and, puſhing us out of his office, locked the door, without deigning us another word.—We went down ſtairs, and conferred together on our expectations, when I underſtood that each of them had been recommended to one or other of the commiſſioners, and each of them promiſed the firſt vacancy that ſhould fall; but that none of them relied ſolely upon that intereſt, without a preſent to the ſecretary, with whom ſome of the commiſſioners went ſnacks. For which reaſon each of them had provided a ſmall purſe; and I was aſked what I propoſed to give? This was a vexatious queſtion to me, who, far from being in a capacity to gratify a ravenous ſecretary, had not wherewithal to purchaſe a dinner. I therefore anſwered, I had not yet determined what to give; and ſneaked off towards my own lodgings, curſing my fate all the way, and inveighing with much bitterneſs againſt the barbarity of my grandfather, and the ſordid avarice of my relations, who left me a prey to contempt and indigence. Full of theſe diſagreeable reflections, I arrived at the houſe where I lodged, and relieved my landlord from great anxiety on my account; for this honeſt man believed I had met with ſome diſmal accident, and that he ſhould never ſee me again. Strap, who had come to viſit me in the morning, underſtanding I had been abroad all night, was almoſt diſtracted, and, after having obtained leave of his maſter, had gone in queſt of me, though he was even more ignorant of the town than I. Not being willing to inform my landlord of my adventure, I told him I had met an acquaintance at Surgeons Hall, with whom I ſpent the evening and night, but being very much infeſted by bugs, I had not

ſlept much, and therefore intended to take a little repoſe: ſo ſaying, I went to bed, and deſired to be awakened, if Strap ſhould happen to come while I ſhould be aſleep. I was accordingly rouſed by my friend himſelf, who entered my chamber about three o'clock in the afternoon; and preſented a figure to my eyes, that I could ſcarce believe real. In ſhort, this affectionate ſhaver, ſetting out towards Surgeons Hall, had inquired for me there to no purpoſe; from thence he found his way to the Navy-office, where he could hear no tidings of me, becauſe I was unknown to every body then preſent; he afterwards went upon 'Change, in hopes of ſeeing me upon the Scotch walk, but without ſucceſs: At laſt, being almoſt in deſpair of finding me, he reſolved to aſk every body he met in the ſtreet, if perchance any one could give him information about me; and actually put his reſolution in practice, in ſpite of the ſcoffs, curſes, and reproaches, with which he was anſwered; until a blackſmith's 'prentice, ſeeing him ſtop a porter with a burden on his back, and hearing his queſtion, for which he received a hearty curſe, called to him, and aſked if the perſon he inquired after was not a Scotchman? Strap replied with great eagerneſs, "Yes, and had on a brown coat with long ſkirts." "The ſame (ſaid the blackſmith), I ſaw him paſs by an hour ago." "Did you ſo? (cried Strap, rubbing his hands) Odd! I am very glad of that—which way went he?" "Towards Tyburn in a cart (ſaid he); if you make good ſpeed, you may get thither time enough to ſee him hanged." This piece of wit incenſed my friend to ſuch a degree, that he called the blackſmith ſcoundrel, and proteſted he would fight him for half a farthing. "No, no (ſaid the other, ſtripping), I'll have none of your money—you Scotchmen ſeldom carry any about you—but I'll fight you for love." There was a ring immediately formed by the mob; and Strap finding he could not get off honourably without fighting, at the ſame time burning with reſentment againſt his adverſary, quitted his clothes to the care of the multitude, and the battle began with great violence on the ſide of Strap, who in a few minutes exhauſted his breath and ſpirits on his pe-

tient antagoniſt, who ſuſtained the aſſault with great coolneſs, till, finding the barber quite ſpent, he returned the blows he had lent him with ſuch intereſt, that Strap, after having received three falls on the hard ſtones, gave out, and allowed the blackſmith to be the better man. The victory being thus decided, it was propoſed to adjourn to a cellar hard by, and drink friends. But when my friend began to gather up his clothes, he perceived that ſome honeſt perſon or other had made free with his ſhirt, neckcloth, hat, and wig, which were carried off; and probably his coat and waiſtcoat would have met with the ſame fate, had they been worth ſtealing. It was in vain for him to make a noiſe, which only yielded mirth to the ſpectators; he was fain to get off in this manner, which he accompliſhed with much difficulty, and appeared before me all beſmeared with blood and dirt. Notwithſtanding this misfortune, ſuch was his tranſport at finding me ſafe and ſound, that he had almoſt ſtifled and ſtunk me to death with his embraces. After he had cleaned himſelf, and put on one of my ſhirts, and a woollen nightcap, I recounted to him the particulars of my night's campaign, which filled him with admiration, and made him repeat with great energy an obſervation which was often in his mouth, namely, "that ſurely London is the devil's drawing-room." As neither of us had dined, he deſired me to get up; and the milk-woman coming round at that inſtant, he went down ſtairs, and brought up a quart, with a penny brick, on which we made a comfortable meal. He then ſhared his money with me, which amounted to eighteen-pence, and left me, with an intention to borrow an old wig and hat of his friend the ſchoolmaſter.

He was no ſooner gone, than I began to conſider my ſituation with great uneaſineſs, and revolved all the ſchemes my imagination could ſuggeſt, in order to chooſe and purſue ſome one that might procure me bread; for it is impoſſible to expreſs the pangs I felt, when I reflected on the miſerable dependence in which I lived at the expence of a poor barber's boy. My pride took the alarm, and having no hopes of ſucceeding at the Navy-office, I came to a reſolution of enliſting in the foot-

guards next day, be the event what it would. This extravagant deſign, by flattering my diſpoſition, gave great ſatisfaction, and I was charging the enemy at the head of my own regiment, when Strap's return interrupted my reverie. The ſchoolmaſter had made him a preſent of the tye-wig which he wore when I was introduced to him, together with an old hat, whoſe brims would have overſhadowed a Coloſſus. Though Strap had ventured to wear them in the duſk, he did not chooſe to entertain the mob by day; therefore went to work immediately, and reduced them both to a moderate ſize. While he was employed in this office, he addreſſed me thus: "To be ſure, Mr. Random, you are born a gentleman, and have a great deal of learning—and indeed look like a gentleman; for, as to perſon, you may hold up your head with the beſt of them. On the other hand, I am a poor but honeſt cobler's ſon—my mother was as induſtrious a woman as ever broke bread, till ſuch time as ſhe took to drinking, which you very well know—but every body has failings—*humanum eſt errare*—Now for myſelf, I am a poor journeyman barber, tolerably well made, and underſtand ſome Latin, and have a ſmattering of Greek—but what of that? perhaps I might alſo ſay that I know a little of the world—but that is to no purpoſe—though you be gentle and I ſimple, it does not follow but that I who am ſimple may do a good office to you who are gentle. Now this is the caſe—my kinſman the ſchoolmaſter—perhaps you did not know how nearly he is related to me—I'll ſatisfy you in that preſently—his mother and my grandmother's ſiſter's nephew—no, that's not it—my grandfather's brother's daughter—rabbit it! I have forgot the degree, but this I know, he and I are couſins ſeven times removed." My impatience to know the good office he had done me got the better of my temper, and interrupted him at this place, with, "D—n your relation and pedigree! if the ſchoolmaſter or you can be of any advantage to me, why don't you tell me without all this preamble?" When I pronounced theſe words with ſome vehemence, Strap looked at me for ſome time with a grave countenance, and then went on: "Surely our pedigree is not to be d—n'd, becauſe

it is not ſo noble as yours. I am very ſorry to ſee ſuch an alteration in your temper of late—you was alwiſe fiery, but now you are grown as crabbed as old Perriwinkle the drunken tinker, on whom you and I (God forgive us) played ſo many unlucky tricks, while we were at ſchool. But I will no longer detain you in ſuſpence, becauſe (doubtleſs) nothing is more uneaſy than doubt —*dubio, procul dubio, nil dubius.* My friend, or relation, or which you will, or both, the ſchoolmaſter, being informed of the regard I have for you—for, you may be ſure, I did not fail to let him know your good qualities—by the bye, he has undertaken to teach you the pronunciation of the Engliſh tongue, without which (he ſays) you will be unfit for buſineſs in this country. I ſay my relation has ſpoke in your behalf to a French apothecary who wants a journeyman; and, on his recommendation, you may have fifteen pounds per year, bed and board, whenever you pleaſe." I was too much intereſted in this piece of news to entertain it with indifference; but, jumping up, inſiſted on Strap's immediately accompanying me to the houſe of his friend, that I might not loſe this opportunity through the leaſt delay or neglect on my part. We were informed that the ſchoolmaſter was in company at a public-houſe in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired, and found him drinking with the very individual apothecary in queſtion. When he was called to the door at our deſire, and obſerved my impatience, he broke out into his uſual term of admiration: "O Ch—ſt! I ſuppoſe, when you heard of this offer, you did not take leiſure enough to come down ſtairs, but leapt out of the window; did you overturn no porter nor oyſter-woman in your way! It is a mercy of God you did not knock your brains out againſt ſome poſt in your career. O my conſcience! I believe, had I been in the inmoſt receſſes of my habitation,—the very *penetralia*, —even in bed with my wife; your eagerneſs would have ſurmounted bolts, bars, decency, and every thing. The den of Cacus or *Sanctum Sanctorum* could not have hid me from you. But come along, the gentleman of whom I ſpoke is in the houſe, I will preſent you to him forthwith." When I entered the room, I perceived four or

five people ſmoking, one of whom the ſchoolmaſter accoſted thus: "Mr. Lavement, here's the young man of whom I ſpoke to you." The apothecary, who was a little old withered man, with a forehead about an inch high, a noſe turned up at the end, large cheek-bones that helped to form a pit for his little gray eyes, a great bag of looſe ſkin hanging down on each ſide in wrinkles like the alforjas of a baboon; and a mouth ſo accuſtomed to that contraction which produces grinning, that he could not pronounce a ſyllable without diſcovering the remains of his teeth, which conſiſted of four yellow fangs, not improperly, by anatomiſts, called *canine*. This perſon (I ſay) after having eyed me ſome time, ſaid, "Oho, 'tis very well, Monſ. Concordance;—young man, you are ver welcome, take one coup of bierre—and come to mine houſe to marrow morning; Monſ. Concordance vil ſhew you de way." Upon this I made my bow, and as I went out of the room, could hear him ſay, *Ma foy! ce'ſt un beau garçon, c'eſt un galliard.* As I had, by my own application, while I ſerved Crab, acquired the French tongue well enough to read authors written in that language, and underſtand any thing that occurred in converſation, I determined to pretend ignorance to my new maſter, that he and his family, whom I ſuppoſed to be of the ſame country, not being on the reſerve before me, might poſſibly diſcover ſomething in diſcourſe, which would either yield me amuſement or advantage. Next morning Mr. Concordance carried me to the apothecary's houſe, where the bargain was made, and orders given to provide an apartment for me immediately. But, before I entered upon buſineſs, the ſchoolmaſter recommended me to his tailor, who gave me credit for a ſuit of clothes to be paid out of the firſt moiety of my wages, and they were begun upon that very day; he afterwards accommodated me with a new hat, on the ſame terms; ſo that, in a few days, I hoped to make a very faſhionable appearance. In the mean time, Strap conveyed my baggage to the place allotted for me, which was a back room up two pair of ſtairs, furniſhed with a pallat for me to lie upon, a chair without a back, an earthen chamber-pot without a handle, a bottle by way of candleſtick, and

a triangular piece of glaſs inſtead of a mirror, the reſt of its ornaments having been lately removed to one of the garrets, for the convenience of the ſervant of an Iriſh Captain, who lodged in the firſt floor.

CHAPTER XIX.

The characters of Mr. Lavement, his wife, and daughter—ſome anecdotes of the family—the mother and daughter rivals—I am guilty of a miſtake that gives me preſent ſatisfaction, but is attended with troubleſome conſequences.

NEXT day, while I was at work in the ſhop, a bouncing damſel, well dreſſed, came in, on pretence of finding a vial for ſome uſe or other; and taking an opportunity, when ſhe thought I did not mind her, of obſerving me narrowly, went away with a ſilent look of diſdain. I eaſily gueſſed her ſentiments, and my pride took the reſolution of entertaining the ſame indifference and neglect towards her. At dinner, the maids, with whom I dined in the kitchen, gave me to underſtand that this was my maſter's only daughter, who would have a very handſome fortune, on account of which, and her beauty, a great many young gentlemen made their addreſſes to her; that ſhe had been twice on the brink of marriage, but diſappointed by the ſtingineſs of her father, who refuſed to part with a ſhilling to promote the match; for which reaſon the young lady did not behave to her father with all the filial veneration that might be expected; in particular, ſhe harboured the moſt perfect hatred for his countrymen, in which diſpoſition ſhe reſembled her mother, who was an Engliſh woman: And, by the hints they dropped, I learned the gray mare was the better horſe; that ſhe was a matron of a high ſpirit, which was often manifeſted at the expence of her dependents; that ſhe loved diverſions, and looked upon Miſs as her rival in all parties; which indeed was the true cauſe of her diſappointments, for, had the mother been hearty in her intereſt, the father would not have ventured to refuſe her demands. Over and above this in-

trums which he poſſeſſed, there was one for the venereal diſeaſe, that brought him a good deal of money; and this he concealed ſo artfully from me, that I could never learn its compoſition: But during the eight months I ſtaid in his ſervice, he was ſo unfortunate in the uſe of it, that three parts in four of thoſe who took it were fain to confirm the cure by a ſalivation under the direction of another doctor. This bad ſucceſs, in all appearance, attached him the more to his ſpecific; and before I left him, I may venture to ſay, he would have ſooner renounced the Trinity (notwithſtanding his being a good Huguenot) than his confidence in the never-failing power of this remedy.—Mr. Lavement had attempted more than once to introduce a vegetable diet into his family, by launching out into the praiſe of roots and greens, and decrying the uſe of fleſh, both as a phyſician and philoſopher; but all his rhetoric could not make one proſelyte to his opinion; and even the wife of his boſom declared againſt the propoſal. Whether it was owing to the little regard ſhe paid to her huſband's admonition in this particular, or to the natural warmth of her conſtitution, I know not; but this lady's paſſions became every day more and more violent, till at laſt ſhe looked upon decency as an unneceſſary reſtraint; and one afternoon, when her huſband was abroad, and her daughter gone to viſit, ordered me to call a hackney coach, in which ſhe and the Captain drove towards Covent Garden. Miſs came home in the evening, and, ſupping at her uſual hour, went to bed. About eleven o'clock my maſter entered, and aſked if his wife was gone to ſleep: Upon which I told him, my miſtreſs went out in the afternoon, and was not yet returned. This was like a clap of thunder to the poor apothecary, who, ſtarting back, cried, "*Mort de ma vie!* vat you tell a me? My wife not at home!" At that inſtant a patient's ſervant arrived with a preſcription for a draught, which my maſter taking, went into the ſhop to make it up with his own hand. While he rubbed the ingredients in a glaſs mortar, he inquired of me, whether or not his wife went out alone; and no ſooner heard that ſhe was in company with the Captain, than, with one blow, he ſplit

the mortar into a thouſand pieces, and, grinning like the head of a baſs viol, exclaimed, "Ah traitreſſe!" It would have been impoſſible for me to have preſerved my gravity a minute longer, when I was happily relieved by a rap at the door, which I opened, and perceived my miſtreſs coming out of the coach; ſhe flounced immediately into the ſhop, and addreſſed her huſband thus: "I ſuppoſe you thought I was loſt, my dear—Captain O'Donnell has been ſo good as to treat me with a play." "Play—play (replied he), Oho! yes, by gar, I believe ver prettie play." "Bleſs me! (ſaid ſhe) what's the matter?" "Vat de matter? (cried he, forgetting all his former complaiſance) by gar, you be one damn dog's wife—ventre bleu! me vill ſhow you vat it is to put one horn upon mine head. Pardieu! le Capitaine O'Donnell be one"——Here the Captain, who had been all the while at the door diſcharging the coach, entered, and ſaid with a terrible voice, "D—mme! what am I?" Mr. Lavement, changing his tone, immediately ſaluted him with, "*Ob ſerviteur, Monſieur le Capitaine, vous etes un gallant homme—ma femme eſt fort obligée.*" Then turning about towards me, pronounced with a low voice, "*Et diablement obligeante, ſans doute.*" "Hark'e, Mr. Lavement (ſaid the Captain), I am a man of honour, and I believe you are too much of a gentleman to be offended at the civility I ſhow your wife." This declaration had ſuch an effect on the apothecary, that he reſumed all the politeſſe of a Frenchman; and with the utmoſt proſtration of compliment, aſſured the Captain that he was perfectly well ſatisfied with the honour he had done his wife.—Matters being thus compoſed, every body went to reſt. Next day I perceived, through a glaſs door that opened from the ſhop into the parlour, the Captain talking earneſtly to Miſs, who heard him with a look that expreſſed anger mingled with ſcorn; which, however, he at laſt found means to mollify, and ſealed his reconciliation with a kiſs. This circumſtance ſoon convinced me of the occaſion of the quarrel; but, notwithſtanding all my vigilance, I could never diſcover any other commerce between them. In the mean while, I had reaſon to believe I had inſpired one of the maids

with tender ſentiments for me; and one night, when I thought every other perſon in the houſe aſleep, I took the opportunity of going to reap the fruits of my conqueſt, her bedfellow having the day before gone to Richmond to viſit her parents. Accordingly, I got up, and (naked as I was) explored my way in the dark to the garret where ſhe lay. I was raviſhed to find the door open, and moved ſoftly to her bed-ſide, tranſported with the hope of completing my wiſhes. But what horrors of jealouſy and diſappointment did I feel, when I found her aſleep, faſt locked in the arms of a man, whom I eaſily gueſſed to be no other than the Captain's ſervant! I was upon the point of doing ſome raſh thing, when the noiſe of a rat ſcratching behind the wainſcot put me to flight, and I was fain to get back to my own bed in ſafety. Whether this alarm had diſordered my mind, or that I was led aſtray by the power of deſtiny, I know not; but, inſtead of turning to the left hand when I deſcended to the ſecond ſtory, I purſued the contrary courſe, and miſtook the young lady's bedchamber for my own. I did not perceive my miſtake before I had run againſt the bed-poſts, and then it was not in my power to retreat undiſcovered; for the nymph being awake, felt my approach, and, with a ſoft voice, bade me make leſs noiſe, leſt the Scotch booby in the next room ſhould overhear us. This hint was ſufficient to inform me of the nature of the aſſignation; and as my paſſions, at any time high, were then in a ſtate of exaltation, I reſolved to profit by my good fortune.—Without any more ceremony, therefore, I made bold to ſlip into bed to this charmer, who gave me as favourable a reception as I could deſire. Our converſation was very ſparing on my part; but ſhe upbraided the perſon whom I repreſented with his jealouſy of me, whom ſhe handled ſo roughly, that my reſentment had well nigh occaſioned a diſcovery more than once; but I was conſoled for her hatred of me by the revenge I enjoyed in underſtanding from her own mouth, that it was now high time to ſalve her reputation by matrimony: For ſhe had reaſon to fear ſhe could not much longer conceal the effects of their mutual intercourſe. While I was meditating an anſwer to

this propoſal, I heard a noiſe in my room, like ſomething heavy falling down upon the floor: Upon which I ſtarted up, and, creeping to the door of my chamber, obſerved by moon-light, the ſhadow of a man groping his way out; ſo I retired to one ſide to let him paſs, and ſaw him go down ſtairs as expeditiouſly as he could. It was an eaſy matter to divine that this was the Captain, who, having overſlept himſelf, had got up at laſt to keep his aſſignation; and finding my door open, had entered my apartment inſtead of that of his miſtreſs, where I ſupplied his place. But finding his miſtake, by falling over my chair, he was afraid the noiſe might alarm the family, and, for that reaſon, made off, delaying the gratification of his deſires till another opportunity. By this time I was ſatisfied; and, inſtead of returning to the place from whence I came, retreated to my own caſtle, which I fortified by bolting the door, and, in the congratulation of my own happineſs, fell aſleep. But the truth of this adventure could not be long concealed from my young miſtreſs, who next day came to an explanation with the Captain, upon his lamenting his laſt night's diſappointment, and begging pardon for the noiſe he had made. Their mutual chagrin, when they came to the knowledge of what had happened, may be eaſily conjectured, though each had a peculiar grief unfelt by the other; for ſhe was conſcious of not only having betrayed to me the ſecrets of her commerce with him, but alſo of having incenſed me by the freedoms ſhe had taken with my name, beyond a hope of reconciliation. On the other hand, his jealouſy ſuggeſted that her ſorrow was all artifice; and that I had ſupplied his place with her own privity and conſent. That ſuch was the ſituation of their thoughts will appear in the ſequel; for that very day ſhe came into the ſhop where I was alone, and fixing her eyes, ſwimming in tears, upon me, ſighed moſt piteouſly: But I was proof againſt her diſtreſs, by recollecting the epithets with which ſhe had honoured me the night before; and believing that the good reception I enjoyed was deſtined for another, therefore I took no notice of her affliction; and ſhe had the mortification to find her diſdain return-

ed four-fold. However, from thence forward ſhe thought proper to uſe me with more complaiſance than uſual, knowing that it was in my power at any time to publiſh her ſhame. By theſe means my life became much more agreeable (though I never could prevail upon myſelf to repeat my nocturnal viſit), and, as I every day improved in my knowledge of the town, I ſhook off my awkward air by degrees, and acquired the character of a polite journeyman apothecary.

CHAPTER XX.

I am aſſaulted and dangerouſly wounded—ſuſpect O'Donnell, and am confirmed in my opinion—concert a ſcheme of revenge, and put it in execution—O'Donnell robs his own ſervant, and diſappears—I make my addreſſes to a lady, and am miraculouſly delivered from her ſnare.

ONE night about twelve o'clock, as I returned from viſiting a patient at Chelſea, I received a blow on my head from an unſeen hand, that ſtretched me ſenſeleſs on the ground; and was left for dead, with three ſtabs of a ſword in my body. The groans I uttered, when I recovered the uſe of my reaſon, alarmed the people of a ſolitary alehouſe that ſtood near the ſpot where I lay, and they were humane enough to take me in, and ſend for a ſurgeon, who dreſſed my wounds, and aſſured me they were not mortal. One of them penetrated through the ſkin and muſcles of one ſide of my belly in ſuch a manner, that, doubtleſs the aſſaſſin imagined he had run me through the entrails. The ſecond ſlanted along one of my ribs; and the laſt, which was intended for the finiſhing ſtroke, having been directed to my heart, the ſword ſnapped upon my breaſt-bone, and the point remained ſticking in the ſkin. When I reflected upon this event, I could not perſuade myſelf that I had been aſſaulted by a common footpad; becauſe it is not uſual for ſuch people to murder thoſe they rob, eſpecially when they meet with no reſiſtance; and I found my money and every thing elſe about me (but my carcaſe) ſafe. I concluded, therefore, that I muſt either have been miſtaken for ano-

ther, or obliged to the private reſentment of ſome ſecret enemy for what had happened; and as I could remember nobody who had the leaſt cauſe of complaint againſt me, except Captain O'Donnell and my maſter's daughter, my ſuſpicion ſettled upon them, though I took care to conceal it, that I might the ſooner arrive at confirmation. With this view, I went home in a chair about ten o'clock in the morning; and as the chairman ſupported me into the houſe, met the Captain in the paſſage, who no ſooner ſaw me, than he ſtarted back, and gave evident ſigns of guilty confuſion, which he would have accounted for from the ſurpriſe occaſioned by ſeeing me in ſuch a condition. My maſter having heard my ſtory, condoled me with a good deal of ſympathy, and when he underſtood my wounds were not dangerous, ordered me to be carried up ſtairs to bed; though not without ſome oppoſition from his wife, who was of opinion, it would be better for me to go to an hoſpital, where I ſhould be more carefully attended. My meditation was employed in concerting with myſelf ſome method of revenge againſt Squire O'Donnell and his inamorata, whom I looked upas the authors of my misfortune; when Miſs (who was not at home at my arrival) entered my chamber, and, ſaying ſhe was ſorry for the accident that had befallen me, aſked if I ſuſpected any body to be the aſſaſſin: Upon which I fixed my eyes ſtedfaſtly upon her, and anſwered, "Yes." She diſcovered no ſymptom of confuſion; but replied haſtily, "If that be the caſe, why don't you take out a warrant to have him apprehended? It will coſt but a trifle; if you have no money, I'll lend you." This frankneſs not only cured me of my ſuſpicion with reſpect to her; but even ſtaggered my belief with regard to the Captain, of whoſe guilt I reſolved to have further proof, before I ſhould enterpriſe any thing in the way of revenge. I thanked her kindly for her generous offer; which, however, I had no occaſion to accept, being determined to do nothing raſhly: For though I could plainly perceive the perſon who attacked me to be a ſoldier, whoſe face I thought was familiar to me, I could not ſwear with a ſafe conſcience to any particular man; and, granting I could, my proſecution of him

would not much avail. This uncertainty I pretended, leſt the Captain, hearing from her that I knew the perſon who wounded me, might think proper to withdraw before I could be in a condition to requite him. In two days I was up, and able to do a little buſineſs, ſo that Mr. Lavement made ſhift to carry on his practice, without hiring another journeyman in my room. The firſt thing I attempted towards a certain diſcovery of my ſecret enemy, was to get into O'Donnell's apartment while he was abroad in an undreſs, and examine his ſword, the point of which being broke off, I applied the fragment that was found ſticking in my body, and found it anſwered the fractured part exactly. There was no room left for doubt; and all that remained was to fix upon a ſcheme of revenge, which almoſt ſolely engroſſed my thoughts during the ſpace of eight nights and days. Sometimes I was tempted to fall upon him in the ſame manner as he had practiſed upon me, and kill him outright. But this aſſault my honour oppoſed as a piece of barbarous cowardice, in which he was not to be imitated. At other times I entertained thoughts of demanding ſatisfaction in an honourable way; but was diverted from this undertaking by conſidering the uncertainty of the event, and the nature of the injury he had done me, which did not entitle him to ſuch eaſy terms. At laſt, I determined to purſue a middle courſe; and actually put my deſign in execution after this manner. Having ſecured the aſſiſtance of Strap and two of his acquaintance whom he could depend upon, we provided ourſelves with diſguiſes, and I cauſed the following letter to be delivered to him by one of our aſſociates in livery one Sunday evening.

"SIR,

"IF I may be allowed to judge from appearance, it will not be diſagreeable to you to hear that my huſband is gone to Bagſhot to viſit a patient, and will not return till to-morrow night; ſo that if you have any thing to propoſe to me (as your behaviour on many occaſions has ſeemed to inſinuate), you will do well to embrace the preſent opportunity of ſeeing "Yours, &c."

This letter was ſigned with the name of an apothecary's wife who lived in Chelſea, of whom I had heard O'Donnell was an admirer. Every thing ſucceeded to our wiſh. The amorous hero haſtened towards the place of aſſignation; and was encountered by us in the very place where he had aſſaulted me. We ruſhed upon him all at once, ſecured his ſword, ſtripped off his clothes even to the ſkin, which we ſcourged with nettles till he was bliſtered from head to foot, notwithſtanding all the eloquence of his tears and ſupplications. When I was ſatisfied with the ſtripes I had beſtowed, we carried off his clothes, which we hid in a hedge near the place, and left him ſtark naked to find his way home in the beſt manner he could, while I took care to be there before him. I afterwards underſtood, that, in his way to the lodgings of a friend who lived in the ſkirts of the town, he was picked up by the watch, who carried him to the Round-houſe, from whence he ſent for clothes to his lodgings; and next morning arrived at the door in a chair, wrapped up in a blanket he had borrowed; for his body was ſo ſore and ſwelled, that he could not bear to be confined in his wearing apparel. He was treated with the utmoſt tenderneſs by my miſtreſs and her daughter, who vied with each other in their care and attendance of him; but Lavement himſelf could not forbear expreſſing his joy, by ſeveral malicious grins, while he ordered me to prepare an unguent for his ſores. As to myſelf, nobody can doubt my gratification when I had every day an opportunity of ſeeing of my revenge protracted on the body of my adverſary, by the ulcers of which I had been the cauſe; and indeed I not only enjoyed the ſatisfaction of having flayed him alive, but another alſo which I had not foreſeen. The ſtory of his being attacked and ſtripped in ſuch a place having been inſerted in the news, gave information to thoſe who found his clothes next day whither to bring them; and accordingly he retrieved every thing he had loſt, except a few letters, among which was that which I had writ to him in the name of the apothecary's wife. This and the others, which, it ſeems, were all on the ſubject of love (for this Hibernian hero was one of thoſe people

who are called fortune-hunters), fell into the hands of a certain female author, famous for the ſcandal ſhe has publiſhed, who, after having embelliſhed them with ſome ornaments of her own invention, gave them to the town in print. I was very much ſhocked on reflecting, that I might poſſibly be the occaſion of a whole family's unhappineſs, on account of the letter I had written; but was eaſed of that apprehenſion, when I underſtood that the Chelſea apothecary had commenced a law-ſuit againſt the printer for defamation; and looked upon the whole as a piece of forgery committed by the author, who had diſappeared. But whatever might be his opinion of the matter, our two ladies ſeemed to entertain a different idea of it: For, as ſoon as the pamphlet appeared, I could perceive their care of their patient conſiderably diminiſh, until at laſt it ended in total neglect. It was impoſſible for him to be ignorant of this change, any more than of the occaſion of it; but as he was conſcious to himſelf of having deſerved worſe than contempt at their hands, he was glad to come off ſo cheaply, and contented himſelf with muttering curſes and threats againſt the apothecary, who, as he imagined, having got an inkling of the appointment with his wife, had taken revenge of him in the manner deſcribed. By the time he had got a new ſcarf ſkin, his character was become ſo notorious, that he thought it high time for him to decamp; and his retreat he performed in one night without beat of drum, after having robbed his own ſervant of every thing that belonged to him, except the clothes he had on his back. A few days after he diſappeared, Mr. Lavement, for his own ſecurity, took into cuſtody a large old trunk which he had left; and, as it was very heavy, made no queſtion that the contents were ſufficient to indemnify him for what O'Donnell owed in lodging. But a month being elapſed without hearing any tidings of this adventurer, and my maſter being impatient to know what the trunk contained, he ordered me to break it open in his preſence, which taſk I performed with the peſtle of our great mortar, and diſcovered, to his inexpreſſible aſtoniſhment and mortification, a heap of ſtones.

About this time, my friend Strap informed me of an

offer he had to go abroad with a gentleman, in quality of valet de chambre, and, at the ſame time aſſured me, that whatever advantage he might propoſe to himſelf from this proſpect, he could not bear the thoughts of parting from me; ſo much was he attached to my fortune. In ſpite of all the obligations I owed to this poor honeſt fellow, ingratitude is ſo natural to the heart of man, that I began to be tired of his acquaintance; and now that I had contracted other friendſhips which appeared more creditable, was even aſhamed to ſee a journeyman barber inquiring after me with the familiarity of a companion. I therefore, on pretence of conſulting his welfare, inſiſted upon his accepting the propoſal, which he at laſt determined to embrace with great reluctance; and, in a few days, took his leave of me, ſhedding a flood of tears, which I could not behold without emotion. I now began to look upon myſelf as a gentleman in reality—learned to dance of a Frenchman whom I had cured of a fiſhionable diſtemper—frequented plays during the holidays—became the oracle of an alehouſe, where every diſpute was referred to my deciſion—and at length contracted an acquaintance with a young lady, who found means to make a conqueſt of my heart, and upon whom I prevailed, after much attendance and ſolicitation, to give me a promiſe of marriage. As this beautiful creature paſſed for a rich heireſs, I bleſſed my good fortune, and was actually on the point of crowning all my wiſhes by matrimony; when one morning I went to her lodgings, and, her maid being abroad, took the privilege of a bridegroom to enter her chamber, where, to my utter confuſion, I found her in bed with a man. Heaven gave me patience and preſence of mind enough to withdraw immediately; and I thanked my ſtars a thouſand times for the happy diſcovery, by which I reſolved to profit ſo much as to abandon all thoughts of marriage for the future.

CHAPTER XXI.

Squire Gawky comes to lodge with my maſter—is involved in a troubleſome affair, out of which he is extricated by me—he marries my maſter's daughter—they conſpire againſt me—I am found guilty of theft—diſcharged—deſerted by my friends—I hire a room in St. Giles's—where, by accident, I find the lady to whom I made my addreſſes in a miſerable condition—I relieve her.

WHILE I enjoyed myſelf at large in this temper of mind, Mr. Lavement let his firſt floor to my countryman and acquaintance, Squire Gawky, who, by this time, had got a lieutenancy in the army, and ſuch a martial ferocity in his appearance, that I was afraid he would remember what had happened between us in Scotland, and atone for his breach of appointment then by his punctuality now; but, whether he had actually forgot me, or was willing to make me believe ſo, he betrayed not the leaſt ſymptom of recognition at ſight of me, and I remained quite cured of my apprehenſions, though I had occaſion, not long after, to be convinced, that howſoever his externals might be altered, he was at bottom the ſame individual Gawky whom I have already deſcribed: For, coming home late one night from the houſe of a patient, I heard a noiſe in the ſtreet, and as I approached, perceived two gentlemen in cuſtody of three watchmen. The priſoners, who were miſerably diſfigured with dirt, complained bitterly of the loſs of their hats and wigs; and one of them, whom, by his tongue, I knew to be a Scotchman, lamented moſt piteouſly, offering a guinea for his liberty, which the watchman refuſed, alleging that one of his companions was wounded grievouſly, and that he muſt ſtand to the conſequence. My prejudice in favour of my native country was ſo ſtrong, that I could not bear to ſee anybody belonging to it in diſtreſs, and therefore, with one blow of my faithful cudgel, knocked down the watchman who had hold of the perſon for whom I was chiefly concerned. He was no ſooner diſengaged, than he betook himſelf to his heels, and left me to maintain the diſpute as I ſhould think proper; and, indeed, I came

ff but ſcurvily; for, before I could avail myſelf of my peed, I received a blow on the eye from one of the ther two, that had well nigh deprived me of the uſe of hat organ: However, I made ſhift to get home, where was informed of Captain Gawky's being robbed and buſed by a company of footpads, and was ordered by ny maſter to prepare an emollient glyſter and paregoic draught, in order to allay and compoſe the ferment f his ſpirits, occaſioned by the barbarous treatment he ad undergone, while he took twelve ounces of blood rom him immediately. When I inquired into the particulars of this adventure, and underſtood, by the ſervant, that he came in juſt before me, without hat and vig, I made no ſcruple of believing him to be the perſon I had releaſed, and was confirmed in my belief upon hearing his voice, to which, before that event, I had been ſo long a ſtranger. My eye being conſiderably welled and inflamed, I could not reflect upon my enterprife without curſing my own folly, and even reſolving o declare the truth of the whole ſtory, in order to be evenged on the cowardly wretch, for whom I had ſuffered: Accordingly, next day, after he had told, in preſence of my maſter, his wife, and daughter, who came o viſit him, a thouſand lies concerning the proweſs he had ſhown in making his eſcape, I ventured to explain the myſtery, and, calling in the evidence of my contuſed eye, upbraided him with cowardice and ingratitude. Gawky was ſo aſtoniſhed at this diſcourſe, that he could not anſwer one word; and the reſt of the company ſtared at one another; till at length my miſtreſs reprimanded me for my inſolent behaviour, and threatened to turn me away for my preſumption. Upon which, Gawky (having recollected himſelf) obſerved, as the young man might have miſtaken another perſon for him, he could forgive his inſinuations, more eſpecially as he ſeemed to have ſuffered for his civility; but adviſed me to be more certain in my conjectures for the future, before I ventured to publiſh them to the prejudice of any man. Miſs applauded the captain's generoſity in pardoning one who had ſo villanouſly aſperſed him, and I began to imagine her praiſe was not at all diſintereſted.

But the apothecary, who, perhaps, had more penetration, or leſs partiality, than his wife and daughter, differed from them in his ſentiments of the matter, and expreſſed himſelf to me in the ſhop in this manner: "Ah mon pauvre Roderique! you ave more of de veracité dan of de prudence—bot mine vife and dater be diablement ſage, and Monſ. le Capitaine un fanfaron, pardieu!". This eulogium on his wife and daughter, though ſpoken ironically by him, was, nevertheleſs, literally juſt; by eſpouſing the cauſe of Gawky, the one obliged a valuable lodger, and the other acquired a huſband at a juncture when one was abſolutely neceſſary; for the young lady, finding the effects of her correſpondence with O'Donnell becoming plainer and plainer every day, inſinuated herſelf ſo artfully into the affection of this new lodger, that in leſs than a fortnight, on pretence of going to a play, they drove away together to the Fleet, where they were coupled; from thence removed to a bagnio, where the marriage was conſummated; and in the morning came home, where they aſked her father's and mother's bleſſing. The prudent parents, notwithſtanding the precipitation with which the match was carried on, did not think fit to refuſe their approbation: for the apothecary was not ill pleaſed to find his daughter married to a young man of a good proſpect, who had not mentioned to him one ſyllable on the article of her dowry; and his wife was rejoiced at being rid of a rival in her gallants, and a ſpy upon her pleaſures. Nor was I without ſelf-enjoyment at this event, when I reflected upon the revenge I had unwittingly taken upon my enemy, in making him a cuckold by anticipation. But I little dreamed what a ſtorm of miſchief was brewing againſt me, whilſt I thus indulged myſelf. Whatever face Gawky put on the matter, my diſcovery of the adventure before related, and the reproaches I vented againſt him, had ſtung him to the ſoul, and cheriſhed the ſeeds of enmity ſo ſtrongly in his breaſt, that he (it ſeems) imparted his indignation to his wife, who being as deſirous as himſelf to compaſs the ruin of one that not only ſlighted her careſſes, but was able on any occaſion to diſcover partiality

lars not at all advantageous to her character, readily joined in a conſpiracy againſt me, which (had it taken effect as they expected) would infallibly have brought me to an ignominious death.

My maſter having ſeveral times miſſed large quantities of medicines, of which I could give no account, at laſt loſt all patience, and in plain terms taxed me with having embezzled them for my own uſe. As I could only oppoſe my ſingle aſſeveration to his ſuſpicion, he told me one day, "By gar, your vord not be give me de ſatisfaction—me find neceſſaire to chercher for my medicine, pardonnez moi—il faut chercher—me demand le clef of your coffre a cette heure." Then raiſing his voice to conceal the fright he was in, leſt I ſhould make any oppoſition, he went on, "Oui, foutre, I charge you rendez le clef of your coffre—moi—ſi, moi qui vous parle." I was fired with ſo much reſentment and diſdain at this accuſation, that I burſt into tears, which he took for a ſign of guilt; and pulling out my key, told him he might ſatisfy himſelf immediately, though he would not find it ſo eaſy to ſatisfy me for the injury my reputation had ſuffered from his unjuſt ſuſpicion. He took the key, and mounted up to my chamber, attended by the whole family; ſaying, "He bien, nous verrons—nous verrons." But what was my horror and amazement, when, opening my cheſt, he pulled out an handful of the very things that were miſſing, and pronounced, "Ah ha! vous etes bien venus—mardie, Monſ. Roderique, you be fort innocent." I had not power to utter one word in my own vindication, but ſtood motionleſs and ſilent, while every body preſent made their reſpective remarks on what appeared againſt me. The ſervants ſaid they were ſorry for my misfortune, and went away repeating, "Who would have thought it?" My miſtreſs took occaſion from this detection to rail againſt the practice of employing ſtrangers in general; and Mrs. Gawky, after having obſerved that ſhe never had a good opinion of my fidelity, propoſed to have me carried before the juſtice, and committed to Newgate immediately. Her huſband was actually upon the ſtairs in his way for a conſtable, when Mr.

Lavement, knowing the coſt and trouble of a proſecution to which he muſt bind himſelf, and at the ſame time dreading leſt ſome particulars of my confeſſion might affect his practice, called out, "Reſtez, mon fils! reſtez, it be veritablement one grand crime which dis pauvre diable have committed—bot peutetre dé good God give him de penitence, and me vill not have upon mine head de blood of one ſinner." The captain and his lady uſed all the Chriſtian arguments their zeal could ſuggeſt, to prevail on the apothecary to purſue me to deſtruction, and repreſented the injuſtice he did to the community of which he was a member, in letting a villain eſcape, who would not fail of doing more miſchief in the world, when he ſhould reflect on his coming off ſo eaſily now. But their eloquence made no impreſſion on my maſter, who, turning to me, ſaid, "Go, miſerable, go from mine houſe, quick, quick—and make reparation for your mauvaiſe actions." By this time my indignation had rouſed me from the ſtupefaction in which I had hitherto remained, and I began in this manner: "Sir, appearances, I own, condemn me; but you are impoſed upon as much as I am abuſed—I have fallen a ſacrifice to the rancour of that ſcoundrel, (pointing to Gawky), who has found means to convey your goods hither, that the detection of them might blaſt my reputation, and accompliſh my deſtruction. His hatred of me is owing to a conſciouſneſs of his having wronged me in my own country; for which injury, he, in a cowardly manner, refuſed me the ſatisfaction of a gentleman: He knows, moreover, that I am no ſtranger to his daſtardly behaviour in this town, which I have recounted before; and he is unwilling that ſuch a teſtimony of his ingratitude and puſillanimity ſhould live upon the earth: For this reaſon he is guilty of the moſt infernal malice to bring about my ruin.—And I am afraid, Madam (turning to Mrs. Gawky), you have too eaſily entered into the ſentiments of your huſband. I have often found you my enemy, and am well acquainted with the occaſion of your being ſo, which I don't at preſent think proper to declare; but I would not adviſe you, for your own ſake, to drive me to ex-

tremity." This addreſs enraged her ſo much, that, with a face as red as ſcarlet, and the eyes of a fury, ſhe ſtrutted up to me, and putting her hands on her ſides, ſpit in my face, ſaying, I was a ſcandalous villain, but ſhe defied my malice; and that, unleſs her papa would proſecute me like a thief as I was, ſhe would not ſtay another night under his roof. At the ſame time, Gawky, aſſuming a big look, told me, he ſcorned what lies I could invent againſt him; but that, if I pretended to aſperſe his wife, he would put me to death, by G—d. To this threat I anſwered, "I wiſh to God I could meet with thee in a deſert, that I might have an opportunity of puniſhing thee for thy perfidy towards me, and rid the world of ſuch a raſcal—What hinders me this moment (ſaid I, ſeizing an old bottle that ſtood by) from doing myſelf that juſtice?" I had no ſooner armed myſelf in this manner, than Gawky and his father-in-law retired in ſuch a hurry, that the one overturned the other, and they rolled together down ſtairs; while my miſtreſs ſwooned away with fear; and her daughter aſked if I intended to murder her? I gave her to underſtand, that nothing was farther from my intention; that I would leave her to the ſtings of her own conſcience, but was firmly reſolved to ſlit her huſband's noſe, whenever fortune ſhould offer a convenient opportunity. Then going down ſtairs, I met Lavement coming up trembling with the peſtle in his hand, and Gawky behind, armed with his ſword, puſhing him forward. I demanded a parley, and having aſſured them of my pacific diſpoſition, Gawky exclaimed, "Ah! villain! you have killed my dear wife." And the apothecary cried, "Ah coquin! vere is my ſhild?" "The lady (ſaid I) is above ſtairs, unhurt by me, and will a few months hence (I believe) reward your concern." Here ſhe called to them, and deſired they would let the wretch go, and trouble themſelves no further about him. To which requeſt her father conſented, obſerving, nevertheleſs, that my converſation was fort myſterieuſe. Finding it impoſſible to vindicate my innocence, I left the houſe immediately, and went to the ſchoolmaſter, with an intention of clearing myſelf to him, and aſking

his advice with regard to my future conduct; but, to my inexpreſſible vexation, was told he was gone to the country, where he would ſtay two or three days. I returned with a deſign of conſulting ſome acquaintances I had acquired in my maſter's neighbourhood; but my ſtory had taken air, through the officiouſneſs of the ſervants, and not one of my friends would vouchſafe me a hearing. Thus I found myſelf, by the iniquity of mankind, in a much more deplorable condition than ever: For though I had been formerly as poor, my reputation was without blemiſh, and my health unimpaired till now;—but at preſent my good name was loſt, my money gone, my friends were alienated, my body was infected by a diſtemper contracted in the courſe of an amour, and my faithful Strap, who alone could yield me pity and aſſiſtance, abſent I knew not where.

The firſt reſolution I could take in this melancholy conjuncture, was to remove my clothes to the houſe of the perſon with whom I had formerly lodged, where I remained two days, in hopes of getting another place, by the intereſt of Mr. Concordance, to whom I made no doubt of being able to vindicate my character; but in this ſuppoſition I reckoned without my hoſt, for Lavement took care to be before-hand with me, and when I attempted to explain the whole affair to the ſchoolmaſter, I found him ſo prepoſſeſſed againſt me, that he would ſcarce hear me to an end; but when I had finiſhed my juſtification, ſhook his head, and beginning with his uſual exclamation, "O C—ſt!" ſaid, "That won't go down with me. I am very ſorry I ſhould have the misfortune of being concerned in the affair, but, however, ſhall be more cautious for the future. I will truſt no man from henceforward—no, not my father who begat me—nor the brother who lay with me in my mother's womb. Should Daniel riſe from the dead, I would think him an impoſtor, and were the genius of truth to appear, would queſtion its veracity." I told him, that one day it was poſſible he might be convinced of the injury I had ſuffered, and repent of his premature determination. To which remark he anſwered, the proof of my innocence would

make his bowels vibrate with joy; "but till that ſhall happen (continued he), I muſt beg to have no manner of connection with you—my reputation is at ſtake—O my good God! I ſhall be looked upon as your accomplice and abettor—people will ſay Jonathan Wild was but a type of me—boys will hoot at me as I paſs along, and the cinder-wenches belch forth reproaches wafted in a gale impregnated with gin—I ſhall be notorious—the very butt of ſlander, and cloak of infamy." I was not in an humour to reliſh the climax of expreſſions upon which this gentleman valued himſelf in all his diſcourſes; but, without any ceremony, took my leave, curſed with every ſentiment of horror which my ſituation could ſuggeſt. I conſidered, however, in the intervals of my deſpondence, that I muſt in ſome ſhape ſuit my expence to my calamitous circumſtances; and with that view hired an apartment in a garret near St. Giles's, at the rate of nine-pence per week. In this place I reſolved to perform my own cure, having firſt pawned three ſhirts to purchaſe medicines and ſupport for the occaſion.

One day when I ſat in this ſolitary retreat, muſing upon the unhappineſs of my fate, I was alarmed by a groan that iſſued from a chamber contiguous to mine, into which I immediately ran, and found a woman ſtretched on a miſerable truckle-bed, without any viſible ſigns of life. Having applied a ſmelling-bottle to her noſe, the blood began to reviſit her cheeks, and ſhe opened her eyes; but, good heavens! what were the emotions of my ſoul, when I diſcovered her to be the ſame individual lady who had triumphed over my heart, and to whoſe fate I had almoſt been inſeparably joined! Her deplorable ſituation filled my breaſt with compaſſion, and every tender idea reviving in my imagination, I flew into her embrace. She knew me immediately; and, ſtraining me gently in her arms, ſhed a torrent of tears, which I could not help increaſing. At length, caſting a languiſhing look at me, ſhe pronounced, with a feeble voice, "Dear Mr. Random, I do not deſerve this concern at your hands. I am a vile creature, who had a baſe deſign upon your perſon; ſuffer

me to expiate that and all my other crimes by a miſerable death, which will not fail to overtake me in a few hours." I encouraged her as much as I could; told her I forgave all her intentions with regard to me; and that, although my circumſtances were extremely low, I would ſhare my laſt farthing with her. In the mean time, begged to know the immediate cauſe of that fit from which ſhe had juſt recovered, and ſaid I would endeavour by my ſkill to prevent any more ſuch attacks. She ſeemed very much affected with this expreſſion, took my hand, and preſſed it to her lips, ſaying, "You are too generous!—I wiſh I could live to expreſs my gratitude; but alas! I periſh for want." Then, ſhutting her eyes, ſhe relapſed into another ſwoon. Such extremity of diſtreſs muſt have awaked the moſt obdurate heart to ſympathy and compaſſion. What effect, then, muſt it have had on mine, that was naturally prone to every tender paſſion? I ran down ſtairs, and ſent my landlady to a chemiſt's ſhop for ſome cinnamon water; while I, returning to this unfortunate creature's chamber, uſed all the means in my power to bring her to herſelf. This aim, with much difficulty, I accompliſhed, and made her drink a glaſs of the cordial to recruit her ſpirits; then I prepared a little mulled red wine and a toaſt, which having taken, ſhe found herſelf thoroughly revived, and informed me, that ſhe had not taſted food for eight and forty hours before. As I was impatient to know the occaſion and nature of her calamity, ſhe gave me to underſtand, that ſhe was a woman of the town by profeſſion: That, in the courſe of her adventures, ſhe found herſelf dangerouſly infected with a diſtemper to which all of her claſs are particularly ſubject: That her malady gaining ground every day, ſhe became loathſome to herſelf, and offenſive to others; when ſhe reſolved to retire to ſome obſcure corner, where ſhe might be cured with as little noiſe and expence as poſſible: That ſhe had accordingly choſen this place of retreat, and put herſelf into the hands of an advertiſing doctor, who, having fleeced her of all the money ſhe had, or could procure, left her three days ago in a worſe condition than that in which he found her:

, except the clothes on her back, ſhe had pawned
ld every thing that belonged to her, to ſatisfy that
ious quack, and quiet the clamour of her landlady,
till perſiſted in her threats to turn her out into the
. After having moralized upon theſe particulars,
poſed that ſhe ſhould lodge in the ſame room with
n expedient that would ſave ſome money; and af-
her I would undertake her cure as well as my
during which ſhe ſhould partake of all the conve-
es that I could afford to myſelf. She embraced
ffer with unfeigned acknowledgment; and I began
t it in practice immediately. I found in her not
n agreeable companion, whoſe converſation great-
eviated my chagrin, but alſo a careful nurſe, who
l me with the utmoſt fidelity and affection. One
while I teſtified my ſurpriſe that a woman of her
y, good ſenſe, and education (for ſhe had a large
n of each), could be reduced to ſuch an infamous
niſerable way of life as that of a proſtitute,—ſhe
red, with a ſigh, "Theſe very advantages were
uſe of my undoing." This remarkable reply in-
l my curioſity to ſuch a degree, that I begged ſhe
l favour me with the particulars of her ſtory, and
mplied in theſe words:—

CHAPTER XXII.

The Hiſtory of Miss Williams.

father was an eminent merchant in the city, who
g, in the courſe of trade, ſuffered very conſiderable
, retired in his old age, with his wife, to a ſmall
in the country, which he had purchaſed with the
ns of his fortune. At that time I, being but eight
of age, was left in town for the convenience of
tion, boarded with an aunt, who was a rigid Preſ-
ian, and who confined me ſo cloſely to what ſhe
the duties of religion, that, in time, I grew weary
r doctrines, and by degrees conceived an averſion

for the good books ſhe daily recommended to my peruſal. As I increaſed in age, and appeared with a perſon not diſagreeable, I contracted a good deal of acquaintance among my own ſex, one of whom, after having lamented the reſtraint I was under from the narrowneſs of my aunt's ſentiments, told me, I muſt now throw off the prejudices of opinion imbibed under her influence and example, and learn to think for myſelf; for which purpoſe ſhe adviſed me to read Shafteſbury, Tindal, Hobbes, and all the books that are remarkable for their deviation from the old way of thinking, and, by comparing one with another, I ſhould ſoon be able to form a ſyſtem of my own. I followed her advice; and, whether it was owing to my prepoſſeſſion againſt what I had formerly read, or the clearneſs of argument in theſe my new inſtructors, I know not, but I ſtudied them with pleaſure, and in a ſhort time became a profeſſed Freethinker. Proud of my new improvement, I argued in all companies, and that with ſuch ſucceſs, that I ſoon acquired the reputation of a philoſopher, and few people durſt undertake me in a diſpute. I grew vain upon my good fortune, and at length pretended to make my aunt a proſelyte to my opinion; but ſhe no ſooner perceived my drift, than, taking the alarm, ſhe wrote to my father an account of my hereſy, and conjured him, as he tendered the good of my ſoul, to remove me immediately from the dangerous place where I had contracted ſuch ſinful principles: Accordingly, my father ordered me into the country, where I arrived in the fifteenth year of my age; and, by his command, gave him a detail of all the articles of my faith, which he did not find ſo unreaſonable as they had been repreſented. Finding myſelf ſuddenly deprived of the company and pleaſures of the town, I grew melancholy, and it was ſome time before I could reliſh my ſituation. But ſolitude became every day more and more familiar to me; and I conſoled myſelf in my retreat with the enjoyment of a good library, at ſuch times as I was not employed in the management of the family (for my mother had been dead three years), in viſiting, or ſome other party of rural diverſion. Having more imagination than judgment, I addicted myſelf too

much to poetry and romance; and, in ſhort, was looked upon as a very extraordinary perſon by every body in the country where I reſided. I had one evening ſtrayed, with a book in my hand, into a wood that bordered on the high road, at a little diſtance from my father's houſe, when a certain drunken ſquire riding by perceived me, and crying, "Z——ds! there's a charming creature!" alighted in a moment, caught me in his arms, and treated me ſo rudely, that I ſhrieked as loud as I could; and, in the mean time, oppoſed his violence with all the ſtrength that rage and reſentment could inſpire. During this ſtruggle, another horſeman came up, who, ſeeing a lady ſo unworthily uſed, diſmounted, and flew to my aſſiſtance. My raviſher, mad with diſappointment, or provoked with the reproaches of the other gentleman, quitted me, and, running to his horſe, drew a piſtol from the ſaddle, and fired at my protector, who happily receiving no damage, went up, and, with the butt end of his whip, laid him proſtrate on the ground, before he could uſe the other, which his antagoniſt immediately ſeized, and clapping to the ſquire's breaſt, threatened to put him to death for his cowardice and treachery. In this dilemma I interpoſed, and begged his life, which was granted to my requeſt, after he had aſked pardon, and ſwore his intention was only to obtain a kiſs. However, my defender thought proper to unload the other piſtol, and throw away the flints, before he gave him his liberty. This courteous ſtranger conducted me home, where my father having learned the ſignal ſervice he had done me, loaded him with careſſes, and inſiſted on his lodging that night at our houſe. If the obligation he had conferred upon me juſtly inſpired me with ſentiments of gratitude, his appearance and converſation ſeemed to entitle him to ſomewhat more. He was about the age of two and twenty, among the talleſt of the middle ſize; had cheſnut coloured hair, which he wore tied up in a ribbon; a high poliſhed forehead, a noſe inclining to the aquiline, lively blue eyes, red pouting lips, teeth as white as ſnow, and a certain openneſs of countenance—but what need I deſcribe any more particulars of his perſon? I hope you will do me the juſtice to be-

lieve I do not flatter, when I ſay he was the exact reſemblance of you; and, if I had not been well acquainted with his family and pedigree, I ſhould have made no ſcruple of concluding that you was his brother. He ſpoke little, and ſeemed to have no reſerve; for what he ſaid was ingenuous, ſenſible, and uncommon. In ſhort, ſaid ſhe, burſting into tears, he was formed for the ruin of our ſex. His behaviour was modeſt and reſpectful; but his looks were ſo ſignificant, that I could eaſily obſerve he ſecretly bleſſed the occaſion that introduced him to my acquaintance. We learned from his diſcourſe that he was the eldeſt ſon of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood, to whoſe name we were no ſtrangers; that he had been to viſit an acquaintance in the country, from whoſe houſe he was returning home when my ſhrieks brought him to my reſcue. All night long my imagination formed a thouſand ridiculous expectations. There was ſo much of knight-errantry in this gentleman's coming to the relief of a damſel in diſtreſs, with whom he immediately became enamoured, that all I had read of love and chivalry recurred to my fancy, and I looked upon myſelf as a princeſs in ſome region of romance, who, being delivered from the power of a brutal giant or ſatyr by a generous Oroondates, was bound in gratitude, as well as led by inclination, to yield my affections to him without reſerve. In vain did I endeavour to chaſtiſe theſe fooliſh conceits, by reflections more reaſonable and ſevere. The amuſing images took full poſſeſſion of my mind, and my dreams repreſented my hero ſighing at my feet in the language of a deſpairing lover. Next morning after breakfaſt he took his leave, when my father begged the favour of further acquaintance with him; to which requeſt he replied by a compliment to him, and a look to me ſo full of eloquence and tenderneſs, that my whole ſoul received the ſoft impreſſion. In a ſhort time he repeated his viſit; and, as a recital of the particular ſteps he purſued to ruin me would be too tedious and impertinent, let it ſuffice to ſay, he made it his buſineſs to inſinuate himſelf into my eſteem, by convincing me of his own good ſenſe, and at the ſame time flattering my underſtanding. This talk

he performed in the moſt artful manner, by ſeeming to contradict me often through miſapprehenſion, that I might have an opportunity of clearing myſelf the more to my own honour. Having thus ſecured my good opinion, he began to give me ſome tokens of a particular paſſion, founded on a veneration for the qualities of my mind, and, as an accidental ornament, admired the beauties of my perſon; till at length, being fully perſuaded of his conqueſt, he choſe a proper ſeaſon for the theme, and diſcloſed his love in terms ſo ardent and ſincere, that it was impoſſible for me to diſguiſe the ſentiments of my heart, and he received my approbation with the moſt lively tranſport. After this mutual declaration, we contrived to meet more frequently, in private interviews, where we enjoyed the converſation of one another, in all the elevation of fancy and impatience of hope, that reciprocal adoration can inſpire. He profeſſed his honourable intentions, of which I made no queſtion, lamented the avaricious diſpoſition of his father, who had deſtined him for the arms of another, and vowed eternal fidelity with ſuch an appearance of candour and devotion, that I became a dupe to his deceit, and, in an evil hour, crowned his eager deſire with full poſſeſſion.—Curſed be the day on which I gave away my innocence and peace for a momentary gratification, which has entailed upon me ſuch miſery and horror! curſed be my beauty, that firſt attracted the attention of the ſeducer! curſed be my education, that, by refining my ſentiments, made my heart the more ſuſceptible! curſed be my good ſenſe, that fixed me to one object, and taught me the preference I enjoyed was but my due! Had I been ugly, nobody would have tempted me; had I been ignorant, the charms of my perſon would not have atoned for the coarſeneſs of my converſation; had I been giddy, my vanity would have divided my inclinations, and my ideas would have been ſo diffuſed, that I ſhould never have liſtened to the enchantments of one alone.

But, to return to my unfortunate ſtory; we gave a looſe to guilty pleaſure, which, for ſome months, baniſhed every other concern. At laſt, by degrees, his viſits became leſs frequent, and his behaviour leſs warm: I

perceived his coldneſs—my heart took the alarm—my tears reproached him—and I inſiſted upon the performance of his promiſe to eſpouſe me, that, whatever ſhould happen, my reputation might be ſafe. He ſeemed to acquieſce in my propoſal, and left me on pretence of finding a proper clergyman to unite us in the bands of wedlock. But, alas! the inconſtant had no intention to return. I waited a whole week with the utmoſt impatience; ſometimes doubting his honour, at other times inventing excuſes for him, and condemning myſelf for harbouring the leaſt ſuſpicion of his faith. At length, I underſtood from a gentleman who dined at our houſe, that this perfidious wretch was on the point of ſetting out for London with his bride, to buy clothes for their approaching nuptials. This information diſtracted me! the more ſo, as I found myſelf ſome months gone with child, and reflected, that it would be impoſſible to conceal my diſgrace, which would not only ruin the character I had acquired in the country, but alſo bring the gray hairs of an indulgent parent with ſorrow to the grave. Rage took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; I denounced a thouſand imprecations, and formed as many ſchemes of revenge againſt the traitor who had undone me! Then my reſentment would ſubſide to ſilent ſorrow. I recalled the tranquillity I had loſt, I wept over my infatuation, and ſometimes a ray of hope would intervene, and for a moment cheer my drooping heart; I would revolve all the favourable circumſtances of his character, repeat the vows he made, aſcribe his abſence to the vigilance of a ſuſpicious father, who compelled him to a match his ſoul abhorred, and comfort myſelf with the expectation of ſeeing him before the thing ſhould be brought to any terms of agreement. But how vain was my imagination! The villain left me without remorſe; and in a few days the news of his marriage was ſpread all over the country. My horror was then inconceivable! and had not the deſire of revenge diverted the reſolution, I ſhould infallibly have put an end to my miſerable life. My father obſerved the ſymptoms of my deſpair; and, though I have good reaſon to believe he gueſſed the cauſe, was at a great deal of pains to ſeem ignorant of

lection, while he endeavoured with paternal fond- alleviate my diſtreſs. I ſaw his concern, which ed my anguiſh, and raiſed my fury againſt the au- f my calamity to an implacable degree. Having ed myſelf with a little money, I made an elope- from this unhappy parent in the night-time, and break of day, arrived at a ſmall town, from whence coach ſet out for London, in which I embarked, xt day alighted in town; the ſpirit of revenge ſupported me all the way againſt every other re- n. My firſt care was to hire a lodging, in which t myſelf very retired, having aſſumed a feigned that my character and ſituation might be the bet- ncealed. It was not long before I found out the of my raviſher, whither I immediately repaired ranſport of rage, determined to act ſome deſperate or the ſatisfaction of my deſpair, though the hur- my ſpirits would not permit me to concert or re- upon a particular plan. When I demanded admiſ- Lothario (ſo let me call him), I was deſired to p my name and buſineſs; but this I refuſed, tel- he porter I had buſineſs for his maſter's private ear. which I was conducted into a parlour until he be informed of my requeſt. There I remained a quarter of an hour, when a ſervant entered, and me his maſter was engaged with company, and beg- be excuſed at that time. My temper could hold longer: I pulled a poignard from my boſom where concealed it, and, ruſhing out, flew up ſtairs like y, exclaiming, "Where is this perfidious villain! I once plunge this dagger into his falſe heart, I d then die ſatisfied." The noiſe I made alarmed nly the ſervants, but the company alſo, who, hear- ny threats, came forwards to the ſtaircaſe to ſee was the matter. I was ſeized, diſarmed, and with- by two footmen; and, in this ſituation, felt the exquiſite torture in beholding my undoer approach his young wife. I could not endure the ſight, was ived of my ſenſes, and fell into a ſevere fit, during h I know not how I was treated; but when I re- red the uſe of reflection, found myſelf on a bed in

a paltry apartment; where I was attended by an old woman, who aſked a thouſand impertinent queſtions relating to my condition; and informed me that my behaviour had thrown the whole family into confuſion; that Lothario affirmed I was mad, and propoſed to have me ſent to Bedlam; but my lady perſuaded herſelf there was more in my conduct than he cared ſhould be known; and had taken to her bed on bare ſuſpicion, having firſt ordered that I ſhould be narrowly looked to. I heard all ſhe ſaid without making any other reply, than deſiring ſhe would do me the favour to call a chair; but this, ſhe told me, could not be done without her maſter's conſent, which, however, was eaſily procured, and I was conveyed to my own lodgings in a ſtate of mind that baffles all deſcription. The agitation of my thoughts produced a fever, which brought on a miſcarriage; and I believe it is well for my conſcience that Heaven thus diſpoſed of my burden; for, let me own to you with penitence and horror, if I had brought a living child into the world, my frenzy would have prompted me to ſacrifice the little innocent to my reſentment of the father's infidelity.

After this event, my rage abated, and my hate became more deliberate and calm: when, one day, my landlady informed me, that there was a gentleman below who deſired to ſee me, he having ſomething of conſequence to impart, which he was ſure would contribute to my peace of mind. I was exceedingly alarmed at this declaration, which I attempted to interpret a thouſand ways; and before I came to any determination he entered my room, with an apology for intruding upon me againſt my knowledge or conſent. I ſurveyed him ſome time, and not being able to recollect his face, demanded, with a faltering accent, what his buſineſs was with me? Upon which he deſired I would give him a particular audience, and he did not doubt of communicating ſomething that would conduce to my ſatisfaction and repoſe. As I thought myſelf ſufficiently guarded againſt any violence, I granted his requeſt, and bid the woman withdraw. The ſtranger then advancing, gave me to underſtand, that he was well acquainted with the particulars

ſtory, having been informed of them from Lotha-
wn mouth; that, from the time he knew my miſ-
es, he had entertained a deteſtation for the author
n; which had of late been increaſed and inflamed
efire of revenge, by a piece of diſhonourable con-
owards him; that, hearing of my melancholy
on, he had come with an intention of offering his
ce and comfort, and was ready to eſpouſe my
l, and forthwith take vengeance on my ſeducer,
ed I would grant him one conſideration, which, he
, I ſhould ſee no reaſon to refuſe. Had all the ar-
f hell been employed in compoſing a perſuaſive, it
not have had a more inſtantaneous or favourable
than this diſcourſe had upon me. I was tranſport-
th a delirium of gloomy joy; I hugged my com-
in my arms, and vowed, that if he would make
is promiſe, my ſoul and body ſhould be at his diſ-

The contract was made; he devoted himſelf to
venge, undertook to murder Lothario that very
and to bring me an account of his death before
ng. Accordingly, about two of the clock, he was
uced to my chamber, and aſſured me, my perfi-
lover was no more; that although he was not en-
to ſuch an honourable proceeding, he had fairly
aged him to the field, where he upbraided him with
achery towards me, for whom (he told me) his
was drawn, and after a few paſſes left him wel-
in his blood. I was ſo ſavaged by my wrongs,
delighted in the recital of this adventure, made
epeat the particulars, feaſted my eyes with the
that remained on his clothes and ſword, and yield-
my body as a recompence for the ſervice he had
ne. My imagination was ſo engroſſed with theſe
that in my ſleep I dreamed Lothario appeared be-
e, pale, mangled, and bloody, blamed my raſhneſs,
ted his innocence, and pleaded his own cauſe ſo pa-
illy, that I was convinced of his fidelity, and wak-
a fit of horror and remorſe. My bed-fellow endea-
d to ſoothe, conſole, and perſuade me that I had
rely done juſtice to myſelf. I dropt aſleep again,
e ſame apparition rurned to my fancy. In ſhort,

I paſſed the night in great miſery, and looked upon my avenger with ſuch abhorrence, that, in the morning, perceiving my averſion, he inſinuated there was ſtill a poſſibility of Lothario's recovery; it was true, he left him wounded on the ground, but not quite dead; and perhaps his hurts might not be mortal. At theſe words, I ſtarted up, bade him fly for intelligence, and, if he could not bring me tidings of Lothario's ſafety, at leaſt conſult his own, and never return, for I was reſolved to ſurrender myſelf to juſtice, and declare all that I knew of the affair, that, if poſſible, I might expiate my own guilt, by incurring the rigours of a ſincere repentance and ignominous death. He very coolly repreſented the unreaſonableneſs of my prejudice againſt him, who had done nothing but what his love of me inſpired, and honour juſtified: That now he had, at the riſk of his life, been ſubſervient to my revenge, I was about to diſcard him as an infamous agent occaſionally neceſſary; and that, even if he ſhould be ſo lucky as to bring news of Lothario's ſafety, it was probable my former reſentment might revive, and I would upbraid him with having failed in his undertaking. I aſſured him, that, on the contrary, he ſhould be dearer to me than ever, as I then ſhould be convinced he acted more on the principles of a man of honour, than on thoſe of a mercenary aſſaſſin, and ſcorned to take away the life of an adverſary (how inveterate ſoever) which fortune had put in his power. "Well then, Madam (ſaid he), whatever may have happened, I ſhall find it no difficult matter to acquit myſelf in point of honour." And took his leave, in order to inquire into the conſequences of his duel. I was now more ſenſible than ever of the degrees of guilt and miſery; all the affliction I had ſuffered hitherto was owing to my own credulity and weakneſs, and my conſcience could not accuſe me of venial crimes; but now that I looked upon myſelf as a murderer, it is impoſſible to expreſs the terrors of my imagination, which was inceſſantly haunted by the image of the deceaſed, and my boſom ſtung with the moſt exquiſite agonies, of which I ſaw no end. At length Horatio (for ſo I ſhall call my keeper) returned, and, telling me I had nothing to

fear, delivered into my hands a billet, containing theſe words:

"MADAM,

"As I underſtand it is of conſequence to your peace, I take this liberty to inform you, that the wounds received from Horatio are not mortal. This ſatisfaction my humanity could not deny, even to a perſon who has endeavoured to diſturb the repoſe, as well as deſtroy the life of LOTHARIO."

Being well acquainted with this hand, I had no reaſon to ſuſpect an impoſition in this letter, which I read over and over with a tranſport of joy, and careſſed Horatio ſo much, that he appeared the happieſt man alive. Thus was I won from deſpair by the menaces of a greater misfortune than that which depreſſed me. Griefs are like uſurpers, the moſt powerful depoſes all the reſt. But my raptures were not laſting; that very letter which in a manner re-eſtabliſhed my tranquillity, in a little time baniſhed my peace. His unjuſt reproaches, while they waked my reſentment, recalled my former happineſs, and filled my ſoul with rage and ſorrow. Horatio, perceiving the ſituation of my mind, endeavoured to divert my chagrin, by treating me with all the amuſements and entertainments of the town. I was gratified with every indulgence I could deſire, introduced into the company of other kept miſtreſſes, by whom an uncommon deference was paid to me; and I began to loſe all remembrance of my former condition, when an accident brought it back to my view, with all its intereſting circumſtances. Diverting myſelf one day with ſome newſpapers, which I had not before peruſed, the following advertiſement attracted my attention:

"Whereas a young gentlewoman diſappeared from her father's houſe in the county of ———, about the end of September, on account, as is ſuppoſed, of ſome uneaſineſs of mind, and has not been as yet heard of: Whoever will give any information about her to Mr. ———of Gray's Inn, ſhall be handſomely rewarded; or if ſhe will return to the arms of her diſconſolate parent,

ſhe will be received with the utmoſt tenderneſs, what-ever reaſon ſhe may have to think otherwiſe, and may be the means of prolonging the life of a father, already weighed down almoſt to the grave with age and ſorrow."

This pathetic remonſtrance had ſuch an effect on me, that I was fully reſolved to return, like the prodigal ſon, and implore the forgiveneſs of him who gave me life; but alas! upon inquiry, I found he had paid his debt to nature a month before, lamenting my abſence to his laſt hour, having left his fortune to a ſtranger, as a mark of his reſentment of my unkind and undutiful behaviour. Penetrated with remorſe on this occaſion, I ſunk into the moſt profound melancholy, and conſidered myſelf as the immediate cauſe of his death. I loſt all reliſh for company, and indeed moſt of my acquaintance no ſooner perceived my change of temper, than they abandoned me. Horatio, diſguſted at my inſenſibility, or, which is more probable, cloyed with poſſeſſion, became colder and colder every day, till at laſt he left me altogether, without making any apology for his conduct, or ſecuring me againſt the miſeries of want, as a man of honour ought to have done, conſidering the ſhare he had in my ruin; for I afterwards learned that the quarrel between Lothario and him was a ſtory trumped up to rid the one of my importunities, and give the other the enjoyment of my perſon, which, it ſeems, he luſted after, upon ſeeing me at the houſe of my ſeducer. Reduced to this extremity, I curſed my own ſimplicity, uttered horrid imprecations againſt the treachery of Horatio; and, as I became every day more and more familiarized to the loſs of innocence, reſolved to be revenged on the ſex in general, by practiſing their own arts upon themſelves. Nor was an opportunity long wanting; an old gentlewoman, under pretence of ſympathizing, viſited me, and, after having condoled me on my misfortunes, and profeſſed a diſintereſted friendſhip, began to diſplay the art of her occupation in encomiums on my beauty, and invectives againſt the wretch who had forſaken me; inſinuating withal, that it would be my own fault if I did not ſtill make my fortune by the extraordinary qualifications with which nature had endowed me. I ſoon underſtood

her drift, and gave her ſuch encouragement to explain herſelf, that we came to an agreement immediately to divide the profits of my proſtitution accruing from ſuch gallants as ſhe ſhould introduce to my acquaintance. The firſt ſtroke of my diſſimulation was practiſed upon a certain judge, to whom I was recommended by this matron as an innocent creature juſt arrived from the country. He was ſo tranſported with my appearance and feigned ſimplicity, that he paid a hundred guineas for the poſſeſſion of me for one night only, during which I behaved in ſuch a manner as to make him perfectly well-pleaſed with his purchaſe.

CHAPTER XXIII.

She is interrupted by a bailiff, who arreſts and carries her to the Marſhalſea—I accompany her—bring witneſſes to prove ſhe is not the perſon named in the writ—the bailiff is fain to give her a preſent, and diſcharge her—we ſhift our lodging—ſhe reſumes her ſtory, and ends it—my reflections thereupon—ſhe makes me acquainted with the progreſs of a common woman of the town—reſolves to quit that way of life.

HER ſtory was here interrupted by a rap at the door, which I no ſooner opened, than three or four terrible fellows ruſhed in, one of whom accoſted my fellow-lodger thus: "Madam, your ſervant, you muſt do me the favour to come along with me—I have got a writ againſt you." While the bailiff (for ſo he was) ſpoke thus, his followers ſurrounded the priſoner, and began to handle her very roughly. This treatment incenſed me ſo much, that I ſnatched up the poker, and would certainly have uſed it in defence of the lady, without any regard to the ſtrength and number of her adverſaries, had ſhe not begged me, with a compoſure of countenance for which I could not account, to uſe no violence in her behalf, which could be of no ſervice to her, but might be very detrimental to myſelf. Then turning to the leader of this formidable troop, ſhe deſired to ſee the writ, and having peruſed it, ſaid, with a faultering voice, "I am not the perſon whoſe name is here mentioned;

arreſt me at your peril." "Ay, ay, Madam (replied the catchpole), we ſhall prove your identity. In the mean time whether will you be pleaſed to be carried to my houſe, or to jail?" If I muſt be confined (ſaid ſhe), I would rather be in your houſe than in a common jail." "Well, well (anſwered he), if you have money enough in your pocket, you ſhall be entertained like a princeſs." But when ſhe acquainted him with her poverty, he ſwore he never gave credit, and ordered one of his myrmidons to call a coach, to carry her to the Marſhalſea at once. While they waited for the convenience, ſhe took me aſide, and bade me be under no concern on her account, for ſhe knew how to extricate herſelf from this difficulty very ſoon, and perhaps gain ſomething by the occaſion. Although her diſcourſe was a myſtery to me, I was very well pleaſed with her aſſurance, and, when the coach came to the door, offered to accompany her to priſon; to which propoſal, after much entreaty, ſhe conſented. When we arrived at the gate of the Marſhalſea, our conductor alighted, and having demanded entrance, preſented the writ to the turnkey, who no ſooner perceived the name of Elizabeth Cary, than he cried, "Ah hah! my old acquaintance Bett! I'm glad to ſee thee with all my heart." So ſaying, he opened the coach door, and helped her to diſmount; but when he obſerved her face, he ſtarted back, ſaying, "Z—ds! who have we got here!" The bailiff, alarmed at this interrogation, cried, with ſome emotion, "Who the devil ſhould it be, but the priſoner Elizabeth Cary?" The turnkey replied, "That Elizabeth Cary! I'll be d——d if that's Elizabeth Cary, more than my grandmother. D—n my blood, I know Bett Cary as well as if I had made her." Here the lady thought fit to interpoſe, and tell the catchpole, if he had taken her word for it at firſt, he might have ſaved himſelf and her a great deal of trouble. "It may be ſo (anſwered he), but by G—d, I'll have further evidence that you are not the perſon before you and I part." "Yes, yes (ſaid ſhe), you ſhall have further evidence to your coſt." Then we adjourned into the lodge, and called for a bottle of wine, where my companion wrote

a direction to two of her acquaintance, and begged the favour of me to go to their lodgings, and requeſt them to come to her immediately. I found them together at a houſe in Bridges-ſtreet, Drury-lane; and as they were luckily unengaged, they ſet out with me in a hackney-coach, without heſitation, after I had related the circumſtances of the affair, which flattered them with hopes of ſeeing a baliff trounced; for there is an antipathy as natural between the whores and bailiffs, as that ſubſiſting between mice and cats. Accordingly, when they entered the lodge, they embraced the priſoner very affectionately by the name of Nancy Williams, and aſked how long ſhe had been nabbed, and for what? On hearing the particulars of her adventure repeated, they offered to ſwear before a juſtice of peace, that ſhe was not the perſon mentioned in the writ, whom, it ſeems, they all knew; but the bailiff, who was by this time convinced of his miſtake, told them he would not put them to that trouble. "Ladies (ſaid he), there's no harm done—you ſhall give me leave to treat you with another bottle, and then we'll part friends." This propoſal was not at all reliſhed by the ſiſterhood; and Miſs Williams told him, ſure he did not imagine her ſuch a fool, as to be ſatisfied with a paltry glaſs of four wine. Here the turnkey interrupted her, by affirming with an oath, that the wine was as good as ever was tipped over tongue. "Well (continued ſhe), that may be—but was it the beſt of champaigne, it is no recompence for the damage I have ſuffered both in character and health, by being wrongfully dragged to jail. At this rate no innocent perſon is ſafe, ſince an officer of juſtice, out of malice, private pique, or miſtake, may injure and oppreſs the ſubject with impunity: But, thank heaven, I live under the protection of laws that will not ſuffer ſuch inſults to paſs unpuniſhed, and I know very well how to procure redreſs." Mr. Vulture (for that was the bailiff's name), finding he had to deal with one who would not be impoſed upon, began to look very ſullen and perplexed, and leaning his forehead on his hand, entered into a deliberation with himſelf, which laſted a few minutes, and then broke out in a volley of dreadful curſes againſt the

old b—ch our landlady (as he called her), for having miſinformed him. After much wrangling and ſwearing, the matter was referred to the deciſion of the turnkey, who, calling for the other bottle, mulcted the bailiff in all the liquor that had been drank, coach-hire, and a couple of guineas for the uſe of the plaintiff. The money was immediately depoſited; Miſs Williams gratified the two evidences with one half, and, putting the other in her pocket, drove home with me, leaving the catchpole grumbling over his loſs, yet pleaſed in the main, for having ſo cheaply got clear of a buſineſs that might have coſt him ten times the ſum, and his place to boot. This guinea was a very ſeaſonable relief to us, who were reduced to great neceſſity, ſix of my ſhirts, and almoſt all my clothes, except thoſe on my back, having been either pawned or ſold for our maintenance before this happened. As we reſented the behaviour of our landlady, our firſt care was to provide ourſelves with another lodging, whither we removed next day, with an intention to keep ourſelves as retired as poſſible, until our cure ſhould be completed. When we were fixed in our new habitation, I entreated her to finiſh the ſtory of her life, which ſhe purſued in this manner:

THE ſucceſs of our experiment on the judge, encouraged us to practiſe the ſame deceit on others, and my virginity was five times ſold to good purpoſe: But this harveſt laſted not long, my character taking air, and my directreſs deſerting me for ſome new game. Then I took lodgings near Charing-croſs, at two guineas per week, and began to entertain company in a public manner: But my income being too ſmall to defray my expence, I was obliged to retrench, and enter into articles with the porters of certain taverns, who undertook to find employment enough for me, provided I would ſhare my profits with them. Accordingly, I was almoſt every night engaged with company, among whom I was expoſed to every mortification, danger, and abuſe, that flow from drunkenneſs, brutality, and diſeaſe. How miſerable is the condition of a courtezan, whoſe buſineſs it is to ſoothe, ſuffer, and obey the dictates of rage,

inſolence, and luſt! As my ſpirit was not ſufficiently humbled to the will, nor my temper calculated for the converſation of my gallants, it was impoſſible for me to overcome an averſion I felt for my profeſſion, which manifeſted itſelf in a ſettled gloom on my countenance, and diſguſted thoſe ſons of mirth and riot ſo much, that I was frequently uſed in a ſhocking manner, and kicked down ſtairs with diſgrace. The meſſengers ſeeing me diſagreeable to their benefactors and employers, ſeldom troubled me with a call, and I began to find myſelf almoſt totally neglected. To contribute towards my ſupport, I was fain to ſell my watch, rings, trinkets, with the beſt part of my clothes; and I was one evening muſing by myſelf on the miſery before me, when I received a meſſage from a bagnio, whither I repaired in a chair, and was introduced to a gentleman dreſſed like an officer, with whom I ſupped in a ſumptuous manner, and, after drinking a hearty glaſs of champaign, went to bed. In the morning, when I awoke, I found my gallant had got up, and, drawing aſide the curtain, could not perceive him in the room. This circumſtance gave me ſome uneaſineſs; but as he might have retired on ſome neceſſary occaſion, I waited a full hour for his return, and then in the greateſt perplexity roſe up, and rung the bell. When the waiter came to the door, he found it locked, and deſired admittance, which I granted, after obſerving, with great ſurpriſe, that the key remained on the inſide, as when we went to bed. I no ſooner inquired for the captain, than the fellow, ſtaring with a diſtracted look, cried, "How, madam! is he not a-bed?" And when he was ſatisfied as to that particular, ran into a cloſet adjoining to the chamber, the window of which he found open. Through this the adventurer had got upon a wall, from whence he dropped down into a court, and eſcaped, leaving me to be anſwerable, not only for the reckoning, but alſo for a large ſilver tankard and poſſet bowl, which he had carried off with him. It is impoſſible to deſcribe the conſternation I was under, when I ſaw myſelf detained as a thief's accomplice; for I was looked upon in that light, and carried before a juſtice, who, miſtaking my

confuſion for a ſign of guilt, committed me, after a ſhort examination, to Bridewell, having adviſed me, as the only means to ſave my life, to turn evidence, and impeach my confederate. I now concluded the vengeance of heaven had overtaken me, and that I muſt ſoon finiſh my career by an ignominious death. This reflection ſunk ſo deep into my ſoul, that I was for ſome days deprived of my reaſon, and actually believed myſelf in hell, tormented by fiends: Indeed there needs not a very extravagant imagination to form that idea; for, of all the ſcenes on earth, that of Bridewell approaches neareſt the notion I had always entertained of the infernal regions. Here I ſaw nothing but rage, anguiſh, and impiety; and heard nothing but groans, curſes, and blaſphemy. In the midſt of this helliſh crew, I was ſubjected to the tyranny of a barbarian, who impoſed upon me taſks that I could not poſſibly perform, and then puniſhed my incapacity with the utmoſt rigour and inhumanity. I was often whipped into a ſwoon, and laſhed out of it, during which miſerable intervals I was robbed by my fellow-priſoners of every thing about me, even to my cap, ſhoes, and ſtockings: I was not only deſtitute of neceſſaries, but even of food; ſo that my wretchedneſs was extreme. Not one of my acquaintance, to whom I imparted my ſituation, would grant me the leaſt ſuccour or regard, on pretence of my being committed for theft; and my landlord refuſed to part with ſome of my own clothes, which I ſent for, becauſe I was indebted to him for a week's lodging. Overwhelmed with calamity, I grew deſperate, and reſolved to put an end to my grievances and life together: For this purpoſe I got up in the middle of the night, when I thought every body round me aſleep; and fixing one end of my handkerchief to a large hook in the cieling, that ſupported the ſcales on which the hemp is weighed, I ſtood upon a chair, and making a nooſe on the other end, put my neck into it, with an intention to hang myſelf; but before I could adjuſt the knot, I was ſurpriſed and prevented by two women who had been awake all the while, and ſuſpected my deſign. In the morning my attempt was publiſhed among the priſon-

ers, and puniſhed with thirty ſtripes; the pain of which co-operating with my diſappointment and diſgrace, bereft me of my ſenſes, and threw me into an ecſtaſy of madneſs, during which I tore the fleſh from my bones with my teeth, and daſhed my head againſt the pavement: So that they were obliged to ſet a watch over me, to reſtrain me from doing further miſchief to myſelf and others. This fit of phrenzy continued three days, at the end of which I grew calm and ſullen; but, as the deſire of making away with myſelf ſtill remained, I came to a determination of ſtarving myſelf to death, and with that view refuſed all ſuſtenance. Whether it was owing to the want of oppoſition, or to the weakneſs of nature, I know not, but on the ſecond day of my faſt, I found my reſolution conſiderably impaired, and the calls of hunger almoſt inſupportable. At this critical conjuncture, a lady was brought into the priſon, with whom I had contracted an acquaintance while I lived with Horatio: She was then on the ſame footing as I was, but afterwards quarrelling with her gallant, and not finding another to her mind, altered her ſcheme of life, and ſet up a coffee-houſe among the hundreds of Drury, where ſhe entertained gentlemen with claret, arrack, and the choice of half a dozen of damſels, who lived in her houſe. This ſerviceable matron having neglected to gratify a certain juſtice for the connivance ſhe enjoyed, was indicted at the quarter ſeſſions, in conſequence of which her bevy was diſperſed, and herſelf committed to Bridewell. She had not been long there, before ſhe learned my diſaſter, and coming up to me, after a compliment of condolence, inquired into the particulars of my fate. While we were engaged in diſcourſe together, the maſter came and told me, that the fellow on whoſe account I had ſuffered, was taken; that he had confeſſed the theft, and cleared me of any concern in the affair; for which reaſon, he, the maſter, had orders to diſcharge me; and that I was from that moment free. This piece of news ſoon baniſhed all thoughts of death, and had ſuch an inſtantaneous effect on my countenance, that Mrs. Coupler (the lady then preſent), hoping to find her account in me, very gene-

rouſly offered to furniſh me with what neceſſaries I wanted, and take me into her own houſe, as ſoon as ſhe ſhould compromiſe matters with the juſtices. The conditions of her offer were, that I ſhould pay three guineas weekly for my board, and a reaſonable conſideration beſides for the uſe of ſuch clothes and ornaments as ſhe ſhould ſupply me with, to be deducted from the firſt profits of my embraces. Theſe were hard terms; but not to be rejected by one who was turned out helpleſs and naked into the wide world, without a friend to pity or aſſiſt her. I therefore embraced her propoſal; and ſhe being bailed in a few hours, took me home with her in a coach. As I was by this time conſcious of having formerly diſguſted my admirers by my reſerved and haughty behaviour, I now endeavoured to conquer that diſpoſition; and the ſudden change of my fortune giving me a flow of ſpirits, I appeared in the moſt winning and gay manner I could aſſume. Having the advantage of a good voice and education, I exerted my talents to the uttermoſt, and ſoon became the favourite with all company. This ſucceſs alarmed the pride and jealouſy of Mrs. Coupler, who could not bear the thoughts of being eclipſed: She therefore made a merit of her envy, and whiſpered among the cuſtomers that I was unſound. There needed no more to ruin my reputation, and blaſt my proſperity; every body ſhunned me with marks of averſion and diſdain; and, in a very ſhort time, I was as ſolitary as ever. Want of gallants was attended with want of money to ſatisfy my malicious landlady, who, having purpoſely given me credit to the amount of eleven pounds, took out a writ againſt me, and I was arreſted in her own houſe. Though the room was crowded with people, when the bailiff entered, not one of them had compaſſion enough to mollify my proſecutrix, far leſs to pay the debt: They even laughed at my tears; and one of them bade me be of good cheer, for I ſhould not want admirers in Newgate. At that inſtant, a ſea lieutenant came in, and ſeeing my plight, began to inquire into the circumſtances of my misfortune; when this wit adviſed him to keep clear of me, for I was a fire-ſhip. "A fire-ſhip! (replied the ſailor), more like

a poor galley in diſtreſs, that has been boarded by ſuch a fire-ſhip as you; if ſo be as that is the caſe, ſhe ſtands in more need of aſſiſtance. Hark'ee, my girl, how far have you over-run the conſtable?" I told him, that the debt amounted to eleven pounds, beſides the expence of the writ—"An' that be all (ſaid he), you ſhan't go to the bilboes this bout." And taking out his purſe, paid the money, diſcharged the bailiff, and telling me I had got into the wrong port, adviſed me to ſeek out a more convenient harbour, where I could be ſafely hove down, for which purpoſe he made me a preſent of five guineas more. I was ſo touched with this ſingular piece of generoſity, that, for ſome time, I had not power to thank him. However, as ſoon as I had recollected myſelf, I begged the favour of him to go with me to the next tavern, where I explained the nature of my diſaſter, and convinced him of the falſehood of what was reported to my prejudice ſo effectually, that he from that moment attached himſelf to me; and we lived in great harmony together, until he was obliged to go to ſea, where he periſhed in a ſtorm.

Having loſt my benefactor, and almoſt conſumed the remains of his bounty, I ſaw myſelf in danger of relapſing into my former neceſſity, and began to be very uneaſy at the proſpect of bailiffs and jails; when one of the fiſterhood, a little ſtale, adviſed me to take lodgings in a part of the town where I was unknown, and paſs for an heireſs, by which artifice I might entrap ſomebody to be my huſband, who would poſſibly be able to allow me an handſome maintenance, or at worſt ſcreen me from the dread and danger of a priſon, by becoming liable for whatever debts I ſhould contract. I approved of this ſcheme, towards the execution of which my companion clubbed her wardrobe, and undertook to live with me in quality of my maid; with the proviſo, that ſhe ſhould be reimburſed, and handſomely conſidered out of the profits of my ſucceſs. She was immediately detached to look out for a convenient place, and that very day hired a genteel apartment in Park-ſtreet, whither I moved in a coach loaded with her baggage and my own. I made my firſt appearance in a blue riding-

habit trimmed with ſilver; and my maid acted her part ſo artfully, that, in a day or two, my fame was ſpread all over the neighbourhood, and I was ſaid to be a rich heireſs juſt arrived from the country. This report brought a ſwarm of gay young fellows about me; but I ſoon found them out to be all indigent adventurers like myſelf, who crowded to me like crows to a carrion, with a view of preying upon my fortune. I maintained, however, the appearance of wealth as long as poſſible, in hopes of gaining ſome admirer more for my purpoſe; and at length attracted the regard of one who would have ſatisfied my wiſhes; and managed matters ſo well, that a day was actually fixed for our nuptials: In the interim, he begged leave to introduce an intimate friend to me; which requeſt as I could not refuſe, I had the extreme mortification and ſurpriſe to ſee next night, in that friend, my old keeper, Horatio; who no ſooner beheld me, than he changed colour; but had preſence of mind to advance, and ſalute me, bidding me (with a low voice) be under no apprehenſion, for he would not expoſe me. In ſpite of this aſſurance, I could not recover myſelf ſo far as to entertain them, but withdrew to my chamber, on pretence of a ſevere head-ach, to the no ſmall concern of my adorer, who took his leave in the tendereſt manner, and went off with his friend.

Having imparted my ſituation to my companion, ſhe found it high time for us to decamp, and that without any noiſe, becauſe we were not only indebted to our landlady, but alſo to ſeveral tradeſmen in the nighbourhood. Our retreat (therefore) was concerted and executed in this manner: Having packed up all our clothes and moveables in ſmall parcels, ſhe (on pretence of fetching cordials for me) carried them, at ſeveral times, to the houſe of an acquaintance, where ſhe likewiſe procured a lodging, to which we retired in the middle of the night, when every other body in the houſe was aſleep. I was now obliged to aim at lower game, and accordingly ſpread my nets among trades-people; but found them all too phlegmatic or cautious for my art and attractions; till at laſt I became acquainted with you, on whom I

practiſed all my dexterity; not that I believed you had any fortune, or expectation of one, but that I might transfer the burden of ſuch debts as I had incurred, or ſhould contract, from myſelf to another; and at the ſame time avenge myſelf of your ſex, by rendering miſerable one who bore ſuch reſemblance to the wretch who ruined me; but Heaven preſerved you from my ſnares, by the diſcovery you made, which was owing to the negligence of my maid in leaving the chamber door unlocked, when ſhe went to buy ſugar for breakfaſt. The perſon in bed with me was a gentleman, whom I had allured the night before, as he walked homeward, pretty much elevated with liquor; for by this time my condition was ſo low, that I was forced to turn out in the twilight to the ſtreets, in hopes of prey. When I found myſelf detected and forſaken by you, I was fain to move my lodging, and dwell two pair of ſtairs higher than before. My companion, being diſappointed in her expectations, left me, to trade upon her own bottom, and I had no other reſource than to venture forth like the owls in the dark, to pick up a precarious and uncomfortable ſubſiſtence. I have often ſauntered between Ludgate-hill and Charing-croſs a whole winter night, expoſed not only to the inclemency of the weather, but likewiſe to the rage of hunger and thirſt, without being ſo happy as to meet with one cully; then creep up to my garret in a deplorable draggled condition, ſneak to bed, and try to bury my appetite and ſorrows in ſleep. When I lighted on ſome rake or tradeſman reeling home drunk, I frequently ſuffered the moſt brutal treatment, in ſpite of which I was obliged to affect gaiety and good humour, though my ſoul was ſtung with reſentment and diſdain, and my heart loaded with grief and affliction. In the courſe of theſe nocturnal adventures, I was infected with the diſeaſe, that, in a ſhort time, rendered me the object of my own abhorrence, and drove me to the retreat, where your benevolence reſcued me from the jaws of death.

So much candour and good ſenſe appeared in this lady's narration, that I made no ſcruple of believing every ſyllable of what ſhe ſaid; and expreſſed my aſtoniſhment

at the variety of miſeries ſhe had undergone in ſo little time; for all her misfortunes had happened within the compaſs of two years. I compared her ſituation with my own, and found it a thouſand times more wretched. I had endured hardſhips, 'tis true; my whole life had been a ſeries of ſuch; and when I looked forward, the proſpect was not much bettered; but then they were become habitual to me, and conſequently I could bear them with leſs difficulty. If one ſcheme of life ſhould not ſucceed, I could have recourſe to another, and ſo to a third, veering about to a thouſand different ſhifts, according to the emergencies of my fate, without forfeiting the dignity of my character beyond a power of retrieving it, or ſubjecting myſelf wholly to the caprice and barbarity of the world. On the other hand, ſhe had known and reliſhed the ſweets of proſperity; ſhe had been brought up under the wings of an indulgent parent, in all the delicacies to which her ſex and rank entitled her; and, without any extravagance of hope, entertained herſelf with the view of uninterrupted happineſs through the whole ſcene of life. How fatal then, how tormenting, how intolerable muſt her reverſe of fortune be! a reverſe that not only robs her of theſe external comforts, and plunges her into all the miſeries of want, but alſo murders her peace of mind, and entails upon her the curſe of eternal infamy! Of all profeſſions, I pronounce that of a courtezan the moſt deplorable, and her of all courtezans the moſt unhappy. She allowed my obſervation to be juſt in the main, but at the ſame time affirmed, that, notwithſtanding the diſgraces which had fallen to her ſhare, ſhe had not been ſo unlucky in the condition of a proſtitute, as many others of the ſame community. "I have often ſeen (ſaid ſhe), while I ſtrolled about the ſtreets at midnight, a number of naked wretches reduced to rags and filth, huddled together like ſwine, in the corner of a dark alley; ſome of whom, but eighteen months before, I had known the favourites of the town, rolling in affluence, and glittering in all the pomp of equipage and dreſs. And indeed the gradation is eaſily conceived: The moſt faſhionable woman of the town is as liable to a contagion as one in a much hum-

bler ſphere; ſhe infects her admirers, her ſituation is public; ſhe is avoided, neglected, unable to ſupport her uſual appearance, which however ſhe ſtrives to maintain as long as poſſible; her credit fails; ſhe is obliged to retrench, and become a night-walker; her malady gains ground; ſhe tampers with her conſtitution, and ruins it; her complexion fades; ſhe grows nauſeous to every body; finds herſelf reduced to a ſtarving condition; is tempted to pick pockets; is detected; committed to Newgate, where ſhe remains in a miſerable condition till ſhe is diſcharged, becauſe the plaintiff will not appear to proſecute her. Nobody will afford her lodging; the ſymptoms of her diſtemper are grown outrageous; ſhe ſues to be admitted into an hoſpital, where ſhe is cured at the expence of her noſe; ſhe is turned out naked into the ſtreets, depends upon the addreſſes of the loweſt claſs, is fain to allay the rage of hunger and cold with gin; degenerates into a brutal inſenſibility, rots and dies upon a dunghill. Miſerable wretch that I am! perhaps the ſame horrors are decreed for me! No (cried ſhe, after ſome pauſe), I ſhall never live to ſuch extremity of diſtreſs! my own hand ſhall open a way for my deliverance, before I arrive at that forlorn period!" Her condition filled me with ſympathy and compaſſion; I revered her qualifications, looked upon her as unfortunate, not criminal, and attended her with ſuch care and ſucceſs, that, in leſs than two months, her health, as well as my own, was perfectly re-eſtabliſhed. As we often conferred upon our mutual affairs, and interchanged advice, a thouſand different projects were formed, which, upon further canvaſſing, appeared impracticable. We would have gladly gone to ſervice; but who would take us in without recommendation? At length an expedient occurred to her, of which ſhe intended to lay hold; and this was, to procure, with the firſt money ſhe ſhould earn, the homely garb of a country wench, go to ſome village at a good diſtance from town, and come up in a waggon, as a freſh girl for ſervice; by which means ſhe might be provided for in a manner much more ſuitable to her inclination than her preſent way of life.

CHAPTER XXIV.

I am reduced to great miſery—aſſaulted on Towerhill by a preſs-gang, who put me on board a tender—my uſage there—my arrival on board of the Thunder man of war, where I am put in irons, and afterwards releaſed by the good offices of Mr. Thomſon, who recommends me as aſſiſtant to the ſurgeon—he relates his own ſtory, and makes me acquainted with the characters of the captain, ſurgeon, and firſt mate.

I APPLAUDED the reſolution of Miſs Williams, who, a few days after, was hired in quality of barkeeper, by one of the ladies who had witneſſed in her behalf at the Marſhalſea, and who ſince that time had got credit with a wine merchant, whoſe favourite ſhe was, to ſet up a convenient houſe of her own. Thither my fellow-lodger repaired, after having taken leave of me with a torrent of tears, and a thouſand proteſtations of eternal gratitude; aſſuring me, ſhe would remain in this ſituation no longer than ſhe ſhould pick up money ſufficient to put her other deſign in execution.

As for my own part, I ſaw no reſource but the army or navy, between which I heſitated ſo long, that I found myſelf reduced to a ſtarving condition. My ſpirit began to accommodate itſelf to my beggarly fate, and I became ſo mean as to go down towards Wapping, with an intention to inquire for an old ſchoolfellow, who, I underſtood, had got the command of a ſmall coaſting veſſel, then in the river, and implore his aſſiſtance. But my deſtiny prevented this abject piece of behaviour; for, as I croſſed Tower-wharf, a ſquat tawny fellow, with a hanger by his ſide, and a cudgel in his hand, came up to me, calling, "Yo, ho! Brother, you muſt come along with me." As I did not like his appearance, inſtead of anſwering his ſalutation, I quickened my pace, in hope of ridding myſelf of his company; upon which he whiſtled aloud, and immediately another ſailor appeared before me, who laid hold of me by the collar, and began to drag me along. Not being of a humour to reliſh ſuch treatment, I diſengaged myſelf of the aſſailant, and, with one blow of my cudgel, laid him motionleſs on the ground; and perceiving myſelf ſurrounded in a trice,

by ten or a dozen more, exerted myſelf with ſuch dexterity and ſucceſs, that ſome of my opponents were fain to attack me with drawn cutlaſſes; and, after an obſtinate engagement, in which I received a large wound on my head, and another on my left cheek, I was diſarmed, taken priſoner, and carried on board a preſſing tender, where, after being pinioned like a malefactor, I was thruſt down into the hold among a parcel of miſerable wretches, the ſight of whom well nigh diſtracted me. As the commanding officer had not humanity enough to order my wounds to be dreſſed, and I could not uſe my own hands, I deſired one of my fellow-captives, who was unfettered, to take a handkerchief out of my pocket, and tie it round my head to ſtop the bleeding. He pulled out my handkerchief, 'tis true; but, inſtead of applying it to the uſe for which I deſigned it, went to the grating of the hatchway, and, with aſtoniſhing compoſure, ſold it before my face to a bum-boat woman * then on board, for a quart of gin, with which he treated my companions, regardleſs of my circumſtances and entreaties.

I complained bitterly of this robbery to the midſhipman on deck, telling him at the ſame time, that, unleſs my hurts were dreſſed, I ſhould bleed to death. But compaſſion was a weakneſs of which no man could juſtly accuſe this perſon, who, ſquirting a mouthful of diſſolved tobacco upon me through the gratings, told me, "I was a mutinous dog, and that I might die and be damned." Finding there was no other remedy, I appealed to patience, and laid up this uſage in my memory, to be recalled at a fitter ſeaſon. In the mean time, loſs of blood, vexation, and want of food, contributed, with the noiſome ſtench of the place, to throw me into a ſwoon; out of which I was recovered by a tweak of the noſe, adminiſtered by the tar who ſtood centinel over us, who at the ſame time regaled me with a draught of flip, and comforted me with the hopes of being put on board the Thunder next day, where I ſhould be freed of my hand-

* A bum-boat woman is one who ſells bread, cheeſe, greens, liquor, and freſh proviſions to the ſailors, in a ſmall boat that lies along-ſide the ſhip.

cuffs, and cured of my wounds by the doctor. I no ſooner heard him name the Thunder, than I aſked if he had belonged to that ſhip long? and he giving me to underſtand, he had belonged to her five years, I inquired if he knew Lieutenant Bowling? "Know Lieutenant Bowling (ſaid he),—odds my life! and that I do; and a good ſeaman he is, as ever ſtepp'd upon forecaſtle,—and a brave fellow as ever crack'd biſket;—none of your Guinea pigs,—nor your freſh-water, wiſhy-waſhy, fair-weather fowls. Many a taught gale of wind has honeſt Tom Bowling and I weathered together. Here's his health with all my heart, wherever he is, a-loft or a-low—in heaven or in hell—all's one for that—he needs not be aſhamed to ſhow himſelf." I was ſo much affected with this eulogium, that I could not refrain from telling him that I was Lieutenant Bowling's kinſman; in conſequence of which connection he expreſſed an inclination to ſerve me, and, when he was relieved, brought ſome cold boiled beef in a platter, and biſcuit, on which we ſupped plentifully, and afterwards drank another cann of ſlip together. While we were thus engaged, he recounted a great many exploits of my uncle, who, I found, was very much beloved by the ſhip's company, and pitied for the misfortune that happened to him in Hiſpaniola, which I was very glad to be informed was not ſo great as I imagined; for Captain Oakum had recovered of his wounds, and actually at that time commanded the ſhip. Having, by accident, in my pocket, my uncle's letter, written from Port Louis, I gave it to my benefactor (whoſe name was Jack Rattlin) for his peruſal; but honeſt Jack told me frankly, he could not read, and deſired to know the contents; which I immediately communicated. When he heard that part of it in which he ſays he had writ to his landlord in Deal, he cried, "Body o' me! that was old Ben. Block,—he was dead before the letter came to hand. Ey, ey, had Ben. been alive, Lieutenant Bowling would have had no occaſion to ſculk ſo long. Honeſt Ben. was the firſt man that taught him to hand, reef, and ſteer.—Well, well, we muſt all die, that's certain,—we muſt all come to port ſooner or later—at ſea, or on ſhore;—we muſt be faſt

moored one day;—death's like the beſt bower anchor, as the ſaying is, it will bring us all up." I could not but ſignify my approbation of the juſtneſs of Jack's reflections; and inquired into the occaſion of the quarrel between Captain Oakum and my uncle; which he explained in this manner: "Captain Oakum, to be ſure, is a good man enough,—beſides, he's my commander; —but what's that to me?—I do my duty, and value no man's anger of a rope's end.—Now the report goes, as how he's a lord, or baron knight's brother, whereby (d'ye ſee me) he carries a ſtrait arm, and keeps aloof from his officers, thof, may hap, they may be as good men in the main as he. Now we lying at anchor in Tuberoon bay, Lieutenant Bowling had the middle watch, and as he always kept a good look out, he made (d'ye ſee) three lights in the offing, whereby he ran down to the great cabin for orders, and found the captain aſleep; whereupon he waked him, which put him in a main high paſſion, and he ſwore woundily at the Lieutenant, and called him louſy Scotch ſon of a whore (for I being then centinel in the ſteerage, heard all), and ſwab, and lubber, whereby the Lieutenant returned the ſalute, and they jawed together, fore and aft, a good ſpell, till at laſt the Captain turned out, and, laying hold of a rattan, came athwart Mr. Bowling's quarter; whereby he told the Captain, that, if he was not his commander, he would heave him overboard, and demanded ſatisfaction aſhore; whereby, in the morning watch, the Captain went aſhore in the pinnace, and afterwards the Lieutenant carried the cutter aſhore; and ſo they, leaving the boats crews on their oars, went away together; and ſo (d'ye ſee) in leſs than a quarter of an hour we heard firing, whereby we made for the place, and found the Captain lying wounded on the beach, and ſo brought him on board to the doctor, who cured him in leſs than ſix weeks. But the Lieutenant clapp'd on all the ſail he could bear, and had got far enough a-head before we knew any thing of the matter; ſo that we could never after get ſight of him, for which we were not ſorry, becauſe the Captain was mainly wroth, and would certainly have done him a miſchief;—for he afterwards cauſed him to be run on

the ſhip's books, whereby he loſt all his pay, and if he ſhould be taken, would be tried as a deſerter."

This account of the Captain's behaviour gave me no advantageous idea of his character; and I could not help lamenting my own fate, that had ſubjected me to ſuch a commander. However, making a virtue of neceſſity, I put a good face on the matter, and next day was with the other preſſed men put on board of the Thunder lying at the Nore. When we came along ſide, the mate who guarded us thither, ordered my handcuffs to be taken off, that I might get on board the eaſier. This circumſtance being perceived by ſome of the company who ſtood upon the gang-boards to ſee us enter, one of them called to Jack Rattlin, who was buſied in doing this friendly office for me, "Hey, Jack, what Newgate galley have you boarded in the river as you came along? Have we not thieves enow among us already?" Another obſerving my wounds, which remained expoſed to the air, told me, my ſeams were uncaulked, and that I muſt be new payed. A third, ſeeing my hair clotted together with blood, as it were, into diſtinct cords, took notice, that my bows were manned with the red ropes, inſtead of my ſide. A fourth aſked me, if I could not keep my yards ſquare without iron braces? And, in ſhort, a thouſand wittiſiſms of the ſame nature were paſſed upon me before I could get up the ſhip's ſide. After we had been all entered upon the ſhip's books, I inquired of one of my ſhipmates where the ſurgeon was, that I might have my wounds dreſſed, and had actually got as far as the middle deck (for our ſhip carried eighty guns) in my way to the cock-pit, when I was met by the ſame midſhipman who had uſed me ſo barbarouſly in the tender: He, ſeeing me free from my chains, aſked, with an inſolent air, who had releaſed me? To this queſtion I fooliſhly anſwered with a countenance that too plainly declared the ſtate of my thoughts, "Whoever did it, I am perſuaded, did not conſult you in the affair." I had no ſooner uttered theſe words, than he cried, "Damn you, you ſaucy ſon of a bitch, I'll teach you to talk ſo to your officer." So ſaying, he beſtowed on me ſeveral ſevere ſtripes with a ſupple jack he had in his hand; and, go-

ing to the commanding officer, made ſuch a report of me, that I was immediately put in irons by the maſter at arms, and a centinel placed over me. Honeſt Rattlin, as ſoon as he heard of my condition, came to me, and adminiſtered all the conſolation he could, and then went to the ſurgeon in my behalf, who ſent one of his mates to dreſs my wounds. This mate was no other than my old friend Thomſon, with whom I became acquainted at the Navy-office, as before mentioned. If I knew him at firſt ſight, it was not eaſy for him to recognize me, diſfigured with blood and dirt, and altered by the miſery I had undergone. Unknown as I was to him, he ſurveyed me with looks of compaſſion, and handled my ſores with great tenderneſs. When he had applied what he thought proper, and was about to leave me, I aſked him, If my misfortunes had diſguiſed me ſo much that he could not recollect my face? Upon this addreſs, he obſerved me with great earneſtneſs for ſome time, and at length proteſted he could not recollect one feature of my countenance. To keep him no longer in ſuſpence, I told him my name; which when he heard, he embraced me with affection, and profeſſed his ſorrow in ſeeing me in ſuch a diſagreeable ſituation. I made him acquainted with my ſtory; and when he heard how inhumanly I had been uſed in the tender, he left me abruptly, aſſuring me I ſhould ſee him again ſoon. I had ſcarce time to wonder at his ſudden departure, when the maſter at arms came to the place of my confinement, and bade me follow him to the quarter-deck, where I was examined by the firſt lieutenant, who commanded the ſhip in the abſence of the Captain, touching the treatment I had received in the tender from my friend the midſhipman, who was preſent to confront me. I recounted the particulars of his behaviour to me, not only in the tender, but ſince my being on board the ſhip, part of which being proved by the evidence of Jack Rattlin and others, who had no great devotion for my oppreſſor, I was diſcharged from confinement, to make way for him, who was delivered to the maſter at arms to take his turn in the bilboes. And this was not the only ſatisfaction I enjoyed; for I was, at the requeſt of the ſurgeon, exempted from all other duty

than that of aſſiſting his mates in making and adminiſtering medicines to the ſick. This good office I owed to the friendſhip of Mr. Thomſon, who had repreſented me in ſuch a favourable light to the ſurgeon, that he demanded me of the lieutenant to ſupply the place of his third mate, who was lately dead. When I had obtained this favour, my friend Thomſon carried me down to the cockpit, which is the place allotted for the habitation of the ſurgeon's mates: And when he had ſhown me their birth (as he called it), I was filled with aſtoniſhment and horror. We deſcended by divers ladders to a ſpace as dark as a dungeon, which I underſtood was immerſed ſeveral feet under water, being immediately above the hold. I had no ſooner approached this diſmal gulf, than my noſe was ſaluted with an intolerable ſtench of putrified cheeſe and rancid butter, that iſſued from an apartment at the foot of the ladder, reſembling a chandler's ſhop, where, by the faint glimmering of a candle, I could perceive a man with a pale meagre countenance, ſitting behind a kind of deſk, having ſpectacles on his noſe, and a pen in his hand. This (I learned of Mr. Thomſon) was the ſhip's ſteward, who ſat there to diſtribute proviſion to the ſeveral meſſes, and to mark what each received. He therefore preſented my name to him, and deſired I might be entered in his meſs; then, taking a light in his hand, conducted me to the place of his reſidence, which was a ſquare of about ſix feet, ſurrounded with the medicine cheſt, that of the firſt mate, his own, and a board by way of table faſtened to the after powder-room; it was alſo encloſed with canvas nailed round to the beams of the ſhip, to ſcreen us from the cold, as well as from the view of the midſhipmen and quarter-maſters, who lodged within the cable tiers on each ſide of us. In this gloomy manſion, he entertained me with ſome cold ſalt pork, which he brought from a ſort of locker, fixed above the table; and, calling for the boy of the meſs, ſent for a cann of beer, of which he made excellent flip to crown the banquet. By this time I began to recover my ſpirits, which had been exceedingly depreſſed by the appearance of every thing about me, and could no longer refrain from aſking the particulars of Mr. Thomſon's

fortune, ſince I had ſeen him in London. He told me, that, being diſappointed in his expectations of borrowing money to gratify the rapacious ſecretary at the Navy-office, he found himſelf utterly unable to ſubſiſt any longer in town, and had actually offered his ſervice in quality of mate to the ſurgeon of a merchant's ſhip bound to Guinea on the ſlaving trade; when one morning, a young fellow of whom he had ſome acquaintance, came to his lodgings, and informed him, that he had ſeen a warrant made out in his name at the Navy-office, for ſurgeon's ſecond mate of a third rate. This unexpected piece of good news he could ſcarcely believe to be true, more eſpecially as he had been found qualified at Surgeons Hall for third mate only; but, that he might not be wanting to himſelf, he went thither to be aſſured, and actually found it ſo: Whereupon, demanding his warrant, it was delivered to him, and the oaths adminiſtered immediately. That very afternoon, he went to Graveſend in the tilt-boat, from whence he took a place in the tide-coach for Rocheſter; next morning got on board the Thunder, for which he was appointed, then lying in the harbour at Chatham; and the ſame day was muſtered by the clerk of the cheque. And well it was for him, that ſuch expedition was uſed; for, in leſs than twelve hours after his arrival, another William Thomſon came on board, affirming that he was the perſon for whom the warrant was expedited, and that the other was an impoſtor. My friend was grievouſly alarmed at this accident, the more ſo as his nameſake had very much the advantage over him both in aſſurance and dreſs. However, to acquit himſelf of the ſuſpicion of impoſture, he produced ſeveral letters written from Scotland to him in that name, and recollecting that his indentures were in a box on board, he brought them up, and convinced all preſent that he had not aſſumed a name which did not belong to him. His competitor, enraged that they ſhould heſitate in doing him juſtice (for, to be ſure, the warrant had been deſigned for him), behaved with ſo much indecent heat, that the commanding officer (who was the ſame gentleman I had ſeen), and the ſurgeon, were offended at his preſumption, and, making a point of it

with their friends in town, in leſs than a week got the firſt confirmed in his ſtation. "I have been on board (ſaid he) ever ſince, and, as this way of life is become familiar to me, have no cauſe to complain of my ſituation: The ſurgeon is a good-natured indolent man; the firſt mate (who is now on ſhore on duty) is indeed a little proud and choleric, as all Welchmen are, but in the main a friendly honeſt fellow: The lieutenants I have no concern with; and as for the captain, he is too much of a gentleman to know a ſurgeon's mate even by ſight."

CHAPTER XXV.

The behaviour of Mr. Morgan—his pride, diſpleaſure, and generoſity—the economy of our meſs deſcribed—Thomſon's further friendſhip—the nature of my duty explained—the ſituation of the ſick.

WHILE he was thus diſcourſing to me, we heard a voice on the cock-pit ladder, pronounce with great vehemence, in a ſtrange dialect, "The devil and his dam blow me from the top of Mounchdenny, if I go to him before there is ſomething in my pelly; let his noſe be as yellow as ſaffron, or as plue as a pell (look you), or green as a leek, 'tis all one." To this declaration ſomebody anſwered, "So it ſeems my poor meſs-mate muſt part his cable for want of a little aſſiſtance. His foretop-ſail is looſe already; and beſides the Doctor ordered you to overhaul him; but I ſee you don't mind what your maſter ſays." Here he was interrupted with, "Splunter and oons! you louſy tog, who do you call my maſter? get you gone to the Doctor, and tell him my birth, and education, and my abilities, and moreover my behaviour is as good as his, or any ſhentleman's (no diſparagement to him) in the whole world. Got pleſs my ſoul! does he think, or conceive, or imagine, that I am a horſe, or an aſs, or a goat, to trudge backwards and forwards, and upwards, and downwards, and by ſea and by land, at his will and pleaſures? Go your ways, you rapſcallion, and tell Dr. Atkins, that I deſire and requeſt, that he will give a look upon the tying man, and order

ſomething for him if he be dead or alive, and I will ſee him take it by and by, when my craving ſtomach is ſatisfied, look you." At this the other went away, ſaying, that if they would ſerve him ſo when he was dying, by God, he would be foul of them in the other world. Here Mr. Thomſon let me know that the perſon we heard, was Mr. Morgan, the firſt mate, who was juſt come on board from the hoſpital, whither he had attended ſome of the ſick in the morning. At the ſame time I ſaw him come into the birth. He was a ſhort thick man, with a face garniſhed with pimples, a ſnub noſe turned up at the end, an exceſſive wide mouth, and little fiery eyes, ſurrounded with ſkin puckered up in innumerable wrinkles. My friend immediately made him acquainted with my caſe; when he regarded me with a very lofty look, but without ſpeaking, ſet down a bundle he had in his hand, and approached the cupboard, which when he had opened, he exclaimed in a great paſſion, "Cot is my life! all the pork is gone, as I am a Chriſtian!" Thomſon then gave him to underſtand, that as I had been brought on board half famiſhed, he could do no leſs than entertain me with what was in the locker; and the rather as he had bid the ſteward enter me in the meſs. Whether this diſappointment made Mr. Morgan more peeviſh than uſual, or he rather thought himſelf too little regarded by his fellow-mate, I know not, but, after ſome pauſe, he went on in this manner. "Mr. Thomſon, perhaps you do not uſe me with all the good manners, and complaiſance, and reſpect (look you), that becomes you, becauſe you have not vouchſafed to adviſe with me in this affair. I have, in my time (look you), been a man of ſome weight and ſubſtance, and conſideration, and have kept houſe and home, and paid ſcot and lot, and the King's taxes; ay, and maintained a family to boot. And moreover, alſo, I am your ſenior, and your elder, and your petter, Mr. Thomſon." "My elder I'll allow you to be, but not my better (cried Thomſon with ſome heat)." "Cot is my Saviour, and witneſs too (ſaid Morgan, with great vehemence), that I am more elder, and therefore more petter by many years than you." Fearing this diſpute might be attended with ſome bad

conſequence, I interpoſed, and told Mr. Morgan, I was very ſorry for having been the occaſion of any difference between him and the ſecond mate; and that rather than cauſe the leaſt breach in their good underſtanding, I would eat my allowance by myſelf, or ſeek admiſſion into ſome other company. But Thomſon, with more ſpirit than diſcretion (as I thought), inſiſted upon my remaining where he had appointed me; and obſerved, that no man poſſeſſed of generoſity and compaſſion would have any objection to it, conſidering my birth and talents, and the misfortunes I had of late ſo unjuſtly undergone. This was touching Mr. Morgan on the right key, who proteſted with great earneſtneſs, that he had no objection to my being received in the meſs; but only complained, that the ceremony of aſking his conſent was not obſerved. "As for a ſhentleman in diſtreſs (ſaid he, ſhaking me by the hand), I lofe him as I lofe my own powels: For, Got help me! I have had vexations enough upon my own pack." And as I afterwards learned, in ſo ſaying, he ſpoke no more than what was true; for he had been once ſettled in a very good ſituation in Glamorganſhire, and was ruined by being ſecurity for an acquaintance. All differences being compoſed, he untied his bundle, which conſiſted of three bunches of onions, and a great lump of Cheſhire-cheeſe wrapt up in a handkerchief; and, taking ſome biſcuit from the cupboard, fell to with a keen appetite, inviting us to a ſhare of the repaſt. When he had fed heartily on his homely fare, he filled a large cup, made of a cocoa-nut ſhell, with brandy, and drinking it off, told us, "Prandy was the peſt menſtruum for onion and ſheeſe." His hunger being appeaſed, he began to be in better humour; and being inquiſitive about my birth, no ſooner underſtood that I was deſcended of a good family, than he diſcovered a particular good will to me on that account, deducing his own pedigree in a direct line from the famous Caractacus King of the Britons, who was firſt the priſoner, and afterwards the friend of Claudius Cæſar. Perceiving how much I was reduced in point of linen, he made me a preſent of two good ruffled ſhirts, which, with two more of check which I received from Mr. Thomſon, ena-

bled me to appear with decency. Meanwhile the ſailor, whom Mr. Morgan had ſent to the Doctor, brought a preſcription for his meſs-mate, which when the Welchman had read, he got up to prepare it, and aſked if the man was "Tead or alive." Dead! (replied Jack) if h was dead, he would have no occaſion for Doctor's ſtuff. No, thank God, death ha'n't as yet boarded him, but they have been yard arm and yard arm theſe three glaſſes." "Are his eyes open?" (continued the mate) "His ſtarboard eye (ſaid the ſailor) is open, but faſt jammed in his head; and the haulyards of his under-jaw have given way." "Paſſion of my heart! (cried Morgan) the man is as pad as one would deſire to be! Did you feel his pulſes?" To this the other replied with, "Anan?" Upon which this Cambro Briton, with great earneſtneſs and humanity, ordered the tar to run to his meſs-mate, and keep him alive till he ſhould come with the medicine, "and then (ſaid he) you ſhall peradventure behold what you ſhall ſee." The poor fellow with great ſimplicity ran to the place where the ſick man lay, but, in leſs than a minute, returned with a woful countenance, and told us his comrade had ſtruck. Morgan hearing this, exclaimed, "Mercy upon my ſalvation! why did you not ſtop him till I came?" "Stop him (ſaid the other), I hailed him ſeveral times, but he was too far on his way, and the enemy had got poſſeſſion of his cloſe quarters; ſo that he did not mind me." "Well, well (ſaid he), we all owe Heaven a teath. Go your ways, you raggamuffin, and take an example, and a warning, look you, and repent of your miſteets." So ſaying, he puſhed the ſeaman out of the birth.

While he entertained us with reflections ſuitable to this event, we heard the boatſwain pipe to dinner; and immediately the boy belonging to our meſs ran to the locker, from whence he carried off a large wooden platter, and in a few minutes returned with it full of boiled peaſe, crying, "Scaldings," all the way as he came. The cloth, conſiſting of a piece of an old ſail, was inſtantly laid, covered with three plates, which by the colour I could with difficulty diſcern to be metal, and

as many ſpoons of the ſame compoſition, two of which were curtailed in the handles, and the other abridged in the lip. Mr. Morgan himſelf enriched this meſs with a lump of ſalt butter, ſcooped from an old gallipot, and a handful of onions ſhorn, with ſome pounded pepper. I was not very much tempted with the appearance of this diſh, of which, nevertheleſs, my meſs-mates eat heartily, adviſing me to follow their example, as it was banyan-day, and we could have no meat till next noon. But I had already laid in ſufficient for the occaſion; and therefore deſired to be excuſed, expreſſing a curioſity to know the meaning of banyan-day. They told me, that on Mondays, Wedneſdays, and Fridays, the ſhip's company had no allowance of meat, and that theſe meagre days were called banyan-days, the reaſon of which they did not know; but I have ſince learned they take their denomination from a ſect of devotees in ſome parts of the Eaſt-Indies, who never taſte fleſh.

After dinner, Thomſon led me round the ſhip, ſhowed me the different parts, deſcribed their uſes, and, as far as he could, made me acquainted with the particulars of the diſcipline and economy practiſed on board. He then demanded of the boatſwain an hammock for me, which was ſlung in a very neat manner by my friend Jack Rattlin; and as I had no bed-clothes, procured credit for me with the purſer, for a matreſs and two blankets. At ſeven o'clock in the evening, Morgan viſited the ſick, and having ordered what was proper for each, I aſſiſted Thomſon in making up his preſcriptions: But when I followed him with the medicines into the ſick birth or hoſpital, and obſerved the ſituations of the patients, I was much leſs ſurpriſed that people ſhould die on board, than that any ſick perſon ſhould recover. Here I ſaw about fifty miſerable diſtempered wretches, ſuſpended in rows, ſo huddled one upon another, that not more than fourteen inches ſpace was allotted for each with his bed and bedding; and deprived of the light of the day, as well as of freſh air; breathing nothing but a noiſome atmoſphere of the morbid ſteams exhaling from their own excrements and diſ-

caſed bodies, devoured with vermin hatched in the filth that ſurrounded them, and deſtitute of every convenience neceſſary for people in that helpleſs condition.

CHAPTER XXVI.

A diſagreeable accident happens to me in the diſcharge of my office—Morgan's noſe is offended—a dialogue between him and the ſhip's ſteward—upon examination, I find more cauſes of complaint than one—my hair is cut off—Morgan's cookery—the manner of ſleeping on board—I am waked in the night by a dreadful noiſe.

I COULD not comprehend how it was poſſible for the attendants to come near thoſe who hung on the inſide towards the ſides of the ſhip, in order to aſſiſt them, as they ſeemed barricadoed by thoſe who lay on the outſide, and entirely out of the reach of all viſitation. Much leſs could I conceive how my friend Thomſon would be able to adminiſter clyſters, that were ordered for ſome in that ſituation; when I ſaw him thruſt his wig in his pocket, and ſtrip himſelf to his waiſtcoat in a moment, then creep on all four under the hammocks of the ſick, and, forcing up his bare pate between two, keep them aſunder with one ſhoulder, until he had done his duty. Eager to learn the ſervice, I deſired he would give me leave to perform the next operation of that kind; and he conſenting, I undreſſed myſelf after his example, and crawling along, the ſhip happened to roll; this motion alarming me, I laid hold of the firſt thing that came within my graſp, with ſuch violence, that I overturned it, and ſoon found by the ſmell that iſſued upon me, I had not unlocked a box of the moſt delicious perfume: it was well for me that my noſe was none of the moſt delicate, elſe I know not how I might have been affected by this vapour, which diffuſed itſelf all over the ſhip, to the utter diſcompoſure of every body who tarried on the ſame deck: Neither was the conſequence of this diſgrace confined to my ſenſe of ſmelling only; for I felt my misfortunes more ways than one. That I might not, however, appear altogether diſcon-

certed in this my firſt eſſay, I got up, and puſhing my head with great force between two hammocks, towards the middle, where the greateſt reſiſtance was, I made an opening indeed, but, not underſtanding the knack of dexterouſly turning my ſhoulder to maintain my advantage, had the mortification to find myſelf ſtuck up as it were in a pillory, and the weight of three or four people bearing on each ſide of my neck, ſo that I was in danger of ſtrangulation. While I remained in this defenceleſs poſture, one of the ſick men, rendered peeviſh by his diſtemper, was ſo enraged at the ſmell I had occaſioned, and the rude ſhock he had received from me in my elevation, that, with many bitter reproaches, he ſeized me by the noſe, which he tweaked ſo unmercifully, that I roared with anguiſh. Thomſon, perceiving my condition, ordered one of the waiters to my aſſiſtance, who with much difficulty diſengaged me from this ſituation, and hindered me from taking vengeance of the ſick man, whoſe indiſpoſition would not have ſcreened him from the effects of my indignation.

After having made an end of our miniſtry for that time, we deſcended to the cockpit, my friend comforting me for what had happened with a homely proverb, which I do not chooſe to repeat. When we had deſcended half way down the ladder, Mr. Morgan, before he ſaw us, having intelligence by his noſe of the approach of ſomething extraordinary, cried, "Cot have mercy upon my ſenſes! I believe the enemy has poarded us in a ſtink-pot!" Then directing his diſcourſe to the ſteward, from whom he imagined the odour proceeded, he reprimanded him ſeverely for the freedoms he took among gentlemen of birth, and threatened to ſmoke him like a padger with ſulphur, if he ever ſhould preſume to offend his neighbours with ſuch ſmells for the future. The ſteward, conſcious of his own innocence, replied, with ſome warmth, "I know of no ſmells; but thoſe of your own making." This repartee introduced a ſmart dialogue, in which the Welchman undertook to prove, that though the ſtench he complained of did not flow from the ſteward's own body, he was, nevertheleſs, the author of it, by ſerving out damaged

proviſions to the ſhip's company; and in particular, putrified cheeſe, from the uſe of which only, he affirmed, ſuch unſavory ſteams could ariſe. Then he launched out into the praiſe of good cheeſe, of which he gave the analyſis: he explained the different kinds of that commodity, with the methods practiſed to make and preſerve it; and concluded with obſerving, that, in yielding good cheeſe, the county of Glamorgan might vie with Cheſhire itſelf, and was much ſuperior to it in the produce of goats and putter. I gathered from this converſation, that, if I entered in my preſent pickle, I ſhould be no welcome gueſt; and therefore deſired Mr. Thomſon to go before, and repreſent my calamity; at which the firſt mate expreſſing ſome concern, went upon deck immediately, taking his way through the cable tire, and by the main hatchway, to avoid encountering me, deſiring me to clean myſelf as ſoon as poſſible, for he intended to regale himſelf with a diſh of ſalmagundy and a pipe. Accordingly I ſet about this diſagreeable buſineſs, and ſoon found I had more cauſes of complaint than I at firſt imagined; for I perceived ſome gueſts had honoured me with their company, whoſe viſit I did not at all think ſeaſonable; neither did they ſeem inclined to leave me in a hurry, for they were in poſſeſſion of my chief quarters, where they fed without reſerve at the expence of my blood.—But conſidering it would be much eaſier to extirpate this ferocious colony in the infancy of their ſettlement, than after they ſhould be multiplied and naturalized to the ſoil, I took the advice of my friend, who, to prevent ſuch misfortunes, went always cloſe ſhaved, and made the boy of our meſs cut off my hair, which had been growing ſince I left the ſervice of Lavement; and the ſecond mate lent me an old bob wig, to ſupply the loſs of that covering. This affair being ended, and every thing adjuſted in the beſt manner my circumſtances would permit, the deſcendent of Caractacus returned, and ordering the boy to bring a piece of ſalt beef from the brine, cut off a ſlice, and mixed it with an equal quantity of onions, which ſeaſoning with a moderate proportion of pepper and ſalt, he brought it into a conſiſtence with oil and vinegar.

Then taſting the diſh, aſſured us, it was the beſt ſalmagundy that ever he made, and recommended it to our palate with ſuch heartineſs, that I could not help doing honour to his preparation. But I had no ſooner ſwallowed a mouthful, than I thought my entrails were ſcorched, and endeavoured, with a deluge of ſmall beer, to allay the heat it occaſioned. Supper being over, Mr. Morgan having ſmoked a couple of pipes, and ſupplied the moiſture he had expended with as many canns of flip, of which we all partook, a certain yawning began to admoniſh me, that it was high time to repair by ſleep the injury I had ſuffered from want of reſt the preceding night; which being perceived by my companions, whoſe time of repoſe was now arrived, they propoſed we ſhould turn in, or, in other words, go to bed. Our hammocks, which hung parallel to one another, on the outſide of the birth, were immediately unlaſhed, and I beheld my meſs-mates ſpring with great agility into their reſpective neſts, where they ſeemed to lie concealed, very much at their eaſe. But it was ſome time before I could prevail upon myſelf to truſt my carcaſe at ſuch a diſtance from the ground, in a narrow bag, out of which I imagined I ſhould be apt, on the leaſt motion in my ſleep, to tumble down at the hazard of breaking my bones. I ſuffered myſelf, however, to be perſuaded, and, taking a leap to get in, threw myſelf quite over, with ſuch violence, that, had I not luckily got hold of Thomſon's hammock, I ſhould have pitched upon my head on the other ſide, and in all likelihood fractured my ſkull. After ſome fruitleſs efforts, I ſucceeded at laſt; but the apprehenſion of the jeopardy in which I believed myſelf withſtood all the attacks of ſleep, till towards the morning watch, when, in ſpite of my fears, I was overpowered with ſlumber, though I did not long enjoy this comfortable ſituation; being arouſed with a noiſe ſo loud and ſhrill, that I thought the drums of my ears were burſt by it; this was followed by a dreadful ſummons pronounced by a hoarſe voice, which I could not underſtand. While I was debating with myſelf whether or not I ſhould wake my companion, and inquire into the occaſion of this diſturbance, I was informed by one of

the quarter-maſters, who paſſed by me with a lanthorn in his hand, that the noiſe which alarmed me was occaſioned by the boatſwain's mates, who called up the larboard watch, and that I muſt lay my account with ſuch interruption every morning at the ſame hour. Being now more aſſured of my ſafety, I addreſſed myſelf again to reſt, and ſlept till eight o'clock, when riſing, and breakfaſting with my comrades on biſcuit and brandy, the ſick were viſited and aſſiſted as before; after which viſitation my good friend Thomſon explained and performed another piece of duty, to which I was a ſtranger. At a certain hour in the morning, the boy of the meſs went round all the decks, ringing a ſmall hand-bell, and, in rhymes compoſed for the occaſion, invited all thoſe who had ſores to repair before the maſt, where one of the doctor's mates attended, with applications to dreſs them.

CHAPTER XXVII.

I acquire the friendſhip of the ſurgeon, who procures a warrant for me, and makes me a preſent of clothes—a battle between a midſhipman and me—the ſurgeon leaves the ſhip—the captain comes on board with another ſurgeon—a dialogue between the captain and Morgan—the ſick are ordered to be brought upon the quarter-deck and examined—the conſequences of that order—a madman accuſes Morgan, and is ſet at liberty by command of the Captain, whom he inſtantly attacks and pummels without mercy.

WHILE I was buſied with my friend in this practice, the doctor chanced to paſs by the place where we were, and, ſtopping to obſerve me, appeared very well ſatisfied with my method of application; and afterwards ſent for me to his cabin, where, having examined me touching my ſkill in ſurgery, and the particulars of my fortune, he intereſted himſelf ſo far in my behalf, as to promiſe his aſſiſtance in procuring a warrant for me, ſeeing I had been already found qualified at Surgeons Hall for the ſtation I filled on board; and in this good office he the more cordially engaged, when he underſtood I was nephew to Lieutenant Bowling, for whom he expreſſed

a particular regard. In the mean time, I could learn from his diſcourſe, that he did not intend to go to ſea again with Captain Oakum, having, as he thought, been indifferently uſed by him during the laſt voyage.

While I lived tolerably eaſy, in expectation of preferment, I was not altogether without mortifications, which I not only ſuffered from the rude inſults of the ſailors and petty officers, among whom I was known by the name of *Loblolly Boy*, but alſo from the diſpoſition of Morgan, who, though friendly in the main, was often very troubleſome with his pride, which expected a good deal of ſubmiſſion from me, and delighted in recapitulating the favours I had received at his hands.

About ſix weeks after my arrival on board, the ſurgeon, bidding me follow him into his cabin, preſented a warrant to me, by which I was appointed ſurgeon's third mate on board the Thunder. This he had procured by his intereſt at the Navy-office; as alſo another for himſelf, by virtue of which he was removed into a ſecond rate. I acknowledged his kindneſs in the ſtrongeſt terms my gratitude could ſuggeſt, and profeſſed my ſorrow at the proſpect of loſing ſo valuable a friend, to whom I hoped to have recommended myſelf ſtill further by my reſpectful and diligent behaviour. But his generoſity reſted not here; for, before he left the ſhip, he made me a preſent of a cheſt and ſome clothes, that enabled me to ſupport the rank to which he had raiſed me. I found my ſpirit revive with my good fortune; and, now I was an officer, reſolved to maintain the dignity of my ſtation, againſt all oppoſition or affronts. Nor was it long before I had occaſion to exert my reſolution: My old enemy the midſhipman (whoſe name was Crampley), entertaining an implacable animoſity againſt me for the diſgrace he had ſuffered on my account, had ſince that time taken all opportunities of reviling and ridiculing me, when I was not entitled to retort this bad uſage. And even after I had been rated on the books, and muſtered as ſurgeon's mate, did not think fit to reſtrain his inſolence. In particular, being one day preſent while I dreſſed a wound in a ſailor's leg, he began to ſing a ſong, which I thought highly injurious to the honour of my

country, and therefore ſignified my reſentment, by obſerving, that the Scots always laid their account with finding enemies among the ignorant, inſignificant, and malicious. This unexpected piece of aſſurance enraged him to ſuch a degree, that he lent me a blow on the face, which I verily thought had demoliſhed my cheek-bone; I was not ſlow in returning the obligation, and the affair began to be very ſerious, when by accident Mr. Morgan, and one of the maſter's mates, coming that way, interpoſed, and inquiring into the cauſe, endeavoured to promote a reconciliation; but finding us both exaſperated to the uttermoſt, and bent againſt accommodation, they adviſed us either to leave our difference undecided till we ſhould have an opportunity of terminating it on ſhore, like gentlemen, or elſe chooſe a proper place on board, and bring it to an iſſue by boxing. This laſt expedient was greedily embraced by us both; and being forthwith conducted to the ground propoſed, we ſtripped in a moment, and began a very furious conteſt, in which I ſoon found myſelf inferior to my antagoniſt, not ſo much in ſtrength and agility, as in ſkill, which he had acquired in the ſchool of Hockley in the Hole and Tottenham Court. Many croſs-buttocks did I ſuſtain, and pegs on the ſtomach without number, till at laſt my breath being quite gone, as well as my vigour waſted, I grew deſperate, and collecting all my ſtrength in one effort, threw in at once, head, hands, and feet, with ſuch violence, that I drove my antagoniſt three paces backward into the main hatchway, down which he fell, and, pitching upon his head and right ſhoulder, remained without ſenſe and motion. Morgan looking down, and ſeeing him lie in that condition, cried, "Upon my conſcience, as I am a Chriſtian ſinner (look you), I believe his pattles are all ofer; but I take you all to witneſs that there was no treachery in the caſe, and that he has ſuffered by the chance of war." So ſaying, he deſcended to the deck below, to examine into the ſituation of my adverſary; and left me very little pleaſed with my victory, as I found myſelf not only terribly bruiſed, but likewiſe in danger of being called to account for the death of Crampley. But this fear vaniſhed when

my fellow mate, having, by bleeding him in the jugular, brought him to himſelf, and inquired into the ſtate of his body, called up to me to be under no concern, for the midſhipman had received no other damage than as pretty a luxation of the *os humeri* as one would deſire to ſee on a ſummer's day. Upon this information, I crawled down to the cockpit, and acquainted Thomſon with the affair, who, providing himſelf with bandages, &c. neceſſary for the occaſion, went up to aſſiſt Mr. Morgan in the reduction of the diſlocation. When this was ſucceſsfully performed, they wiſhed me joy of the event of the combat; and the Welchman, after obſerving, that, in all likelihood, the ancient Scots and Britons were the ſame people, bade me "praiſe Got for putting mettle in my pelly, and ſtrength in my limbs to ſupport it." I acquired ſuch reputation by this rencounter (which laſted twenty minutes), that every body became more cautious in behaviour towards me; though Crampley, with his arm in a ſling, talked very high, and threatened to ſeize the firſt opportunity of retrieving, on ſhore, the honour he had loſt by an accident, from which I could juſtly claim no merit.

About this time, Captain Oakum, having received ſailing orders, came on board, and brought along with him a ſurgeon of his own country, who ſoon made us ſenſible of the loſs we ſuffered in the departure of Doctor Atkins; for he was groſsly ignorant, and intolerably aſſuming, falſe, vindictive, and unforgiving; a mercileſs tyrant to his inferiors, an abject ſycophant to thoſe above him. In the morning after the captain came on board, our firſt mate, according to cuſtom, went to wait on him with a ſick liſt, which when this grim commander had peruſed, he cried with a ſtern countenance, "Blood and oons! ſixty-one ſick people on board of my ſhip! Harkee, you Sir, I'll have no ſick in my ſhip, by G—d." The Welchman replied, he ſhould be very glad to find no ſick people on board; but while it was otherwiſe, he did no more than his duty in preſenting him with a liſt. "You and your liſt may be d—n'd (ſaid the captain, throwing it at him), I ſay, there ſhall be no ſick in this ſhip while I have the command of her." Mr. Morgan being

nettled at this treatment, told him, his indignation ought to be directed to Got Almighty, who viſited his people with diſtempers, and not to him, who contributed all in his power towards their cure. The baſhaw not being uſed to ſuch behaviour in any of his officers, was enraged to fury at this ſatirical inſinuation, and ſtamping with his foot, called him inſolent ſcoundrel, threatening to have him pinioned to the deck, if he ſhould preſume to utter another ſyllable. But the blood of Caractacus being thoroughly heated, diſdained to be reſtricted by ſuch a command, and began to manifeſt itſelf in, "Captain Oagum, I am a ſhentleman of birth and parentage (look you), and peradventure I am moreover"—Here his harangue was broke off by the captain's ſteward, who, being Morgan's countryman, hurried him out of the cabin before he had time to exaſperate his maſter to a greater degree: and this would certainly have been the caſe; for the indignant Welchman could hardly be hindered, by his friend's arguments and entreaties, from re-entering the preſence-chamber, and defying Captain Oakum to his teeth. He was, however, appeaſed at length, and came down to the birth, where finding Thomſon and me at work preparing medicines, he bade us leave off our labour and go to play, for the captain, by his ſole word and power, and command, had driven ſickneſs a pegging to the tevil, and there was no more malady on board. So ſaying, he drank off a gill of brandy, ſighed grievouſly three times, poured forth an ejaculation of "Got pleſs my heart, liver, and lungs!" and then began to ſing a Welch ſong with great earneſtneſs of viſage, voice, and geſture. I could not conceive the meaning of this ſingular phenomenon, and ſaw by the looks of Thomſon, who at the ſame time ſhook his head, that he ſuſpected poor Cadwallader's brains were unſettled. He perceiving our amazement, told us he would explain the myſtery; but, at the ſame time bade us take notice, that he had lived poy, patchelor, married man, and widower, almoſt forty years, and, in all that time, there was no man nor mother's ſon in the whole world who durſt uſe him ſo ill as Captain Oagum had done. Then he acquainted us with the dialogue that paſſed between them,

as I have already related it; and had no ſooner finiſhed this narration, than he received a meſſage from the ſurgeon, to bring the ſick liſt to the quarter-deck, for the captain had ordered all the patients thither to be reviewed. This inhuman order ſhocked us extremely, as we knew it would be impoſſible to carry ſome of them on the deck, without imminent danger of their lives; but as we likewiſe knew it would be to no purpoſe for us to remonſtrate againſt it, we repaired to the quarter-deck in a body, to ſee this extraordinary muſter; Morgan obſerving by the way, that the captain was going to ſend to the other world a great many evidences to teſtify againſt himſelf. When we appeared upon deck, the captain bade the doctor, who ſtood bowing at his right hand, look at theſe lazy lubberly ſons of bitches, who were good for nothing on board but to eat the King's proviſion, and encourage idleneſs in the ſkulkers. The ſurgeon grinned approbation, and taking the liſt, began to examine the complaints of each, as they could crawl to the place appointed. The firſt who came under his cognizance was a poor fellow juſt freed of a fever, which had weakened him ſo much, that he could hardly ſtand. Mr. Mackſhane (for that was the doctor's name) having felt his pulſe, proteſted he was as well as any man in the world; and the captain delivered him over to the boatſwain's mate, with orders that he ſhould receive a round dozen at the gang-way immediately, for counterfeiting himſelf ſick: but before the diſcipline could be executed, the man dropt down on the deck, and had well nigh periſhed under the hands of the executioner. The next patient to be conſidered laboured under a quartan ague, and being then in his interval of health, diſcovered no other ſymptoms of diſtemper than a pale meagre countenance, and emaciated body; upon which, he was declared fit for duty, and turned over to the boatſwain: But, being reſolved to diſgrace the doctor, died upon the forecaſtle next day, during his cold fit. The third complained of a pleuritic ſtitch, and ſpitting of blood; for which Doctor Mackſhane preſcribed exerciſe at the pump, to promote expectoration: But, whether this was improper for one in his ſituation, or that it was uſed to

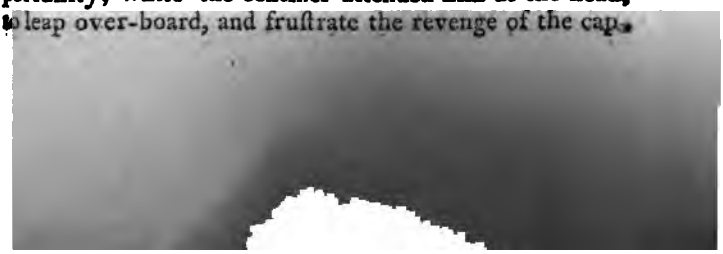
exceſs, I know not; for in leſs than half an hour he was ſuffocated with a deluge of blood that iſſued from his lungs. A fourth, with much difficulty, climbed to the quarter-deck, being loaded with a monſtrous aſcites or dropſy, that invaded his cheſt ſo much, he could ſcarce fetch his breath; but his diſeaſe being interpreted into fat, occaſioned by idleneſs and exceſs of eating, he was ordered, with a view to promote perſpiration, and enlarge his cheſt, to go aloft immediately: It was in vain for this unwieldy wretch to allege his utter incapacity, the boatſwain's driver was commanded to whip him up with the cat o'nine tails: The ſmart of this application made him exert himſelf ſo much, that he actually arrived at the puttoc ſhrouds; but when the enormous weight of his body had nothing elſe to ſupport it than his weakened arms, either out of ſpite or neceſſity, he quitted his hold, and plumped into the ſea, where he muſt have been drowned, had not a ſailor, who was in a boat alongſide, ſaved his life, by keeping him afloat till he was hoiſted on board by a tackle. It would be tedious and diſagreeable to deſcribe the fate of every miſerable object that ſuffered by the inhumanity and ignorance of the captain and ſurgeon, who ſo wantonly ſacrificed the lives of their fellow creatures. Many were brought up in the height of fevers, and rendered delirious by the injuries they received in the way. Some gave up the ghoſt in the preſence of their inſpectors; and others, who were ordered to their duty, languiſhed a few days at work among their fellows, and then departed without any ceremony. On the whole, the number of the ſick was reduced to leſs than a dozen; and the authors of this reduction were applauding themſelves for the ſervices they had done to their King and country, when the boatſwain's mate informed his honour, that there was a man below laſhed to his hammock by the direction of the doctor's mate, and that he begged hard to be releaſed; affirming, he had been ſo maltreated only for a grudge Mr. Morgan bore him, and that he was as much in his ſenſes as any man aboard. The captain hearing this, darted a ſevere look at the Welchman, and ordered the man to be brought up immediately; Upon which,

Morgan proteſted with great fervency, that the perſon in queſtion was as mad as a March-hare; and begged, for the love of Got, they would at leaſt keep his arms pinioned during his examination, to prevent him from doing miſchief. This requeſt the commander granted for his own ſake, and the patient was produced, who inſiſted upon his being in his right wits with ſuch calmneſs and ſtrength of argument, that every body preſent was inclined to believe him, except Morgan, who affirmed there was no truſting to appearances; for he himſelf had been ſo much impoſed upon by his behaviour two days before, that he had actually unbound him with his own hands, and had well nigh been murdered for his pains: This was confirmed by the evidence of one of the waiters, who declared, he had pulled this patient from the doctor's mate, whom he had gotten down and almoſt ſtrangled. To this the man anſwered, that the witneſs was a creature of Morgan's, and was ſuborned to give his teſtimony againſt him by the malice of the mate, whom the defendant had affronted, by diſcovering to the people on board that Mr. Morgan's wife kept a gin ſhop in Rag-Fair. This anecdote produced a laugh at the expence of the Welchman, who ſhaking his head with ſome emotion, ſaid, "Ay, ay, 'tis no matter. Got knows, it is an arrant falſehood." Captain Oakum, without any further heſitation, ordered the fellow to be unfettered; at the ſame time, threatening to make Morgan exchange ſituations with him for his ſpite. But the Briton no ſooner heard the deciſion in favour of the madman, than he got up the mizen ſhrouds, crying to Thomſon and me to get out of his reach, for we ſhould ſee him play the devil with a vengeance. We did not think fit to diſregard his caution, and accordingly got up on the poop, whence we beheld the maniac (as ſoon as he was releaſed) fly at the captain like a fury, crying, "I'll let you know, you ſcoundrel, that I am commander of this veſſel," and pummel him without mercy. The ſurgeon, who went to the aſſiſtance of his patron, ſhared the ſame fate; and it was with the utmoſt difficulty that he was maſtered at laſt, after having done great execution among thoſe who oppoſed him.

CHAPTER XXVII.

The captain enraged, threatens to put the madman to death with his own hand—is diverted from that reſolution by the arguments and perſuaſions of the firſt lieutenant and ſurgeon—we ſet ſail for St Helen's, join the fleet under the command of Sir C——n——r O——le, and proceed for the Weſt-Indies—are overtaken by a terrible tempeſt—my friend Jack Rattlin has his leg broke by a fall from the main-yard— the behaviour of Doctor Mackſhane—Jack oppoſes the amputation of his limb, in which he is ſeconded by Morgan and me, who undertake the cure, and perform it ſucceſsfully.

THE captain was carried into his cabin, ſo enraged with the treatment he had received, that he ordered the fellow to be brought before him, that he might have the pleaſure of piſtoling him with his own hand; and would certainly have ſatisfied his revenge in this manner, had not the firſt lieutenant remonſtrated againſt it, by obſerving, that, in all appearance, the fellow was not mad but deſperate; that he had been hired by ſome enemy of the captain to aſſaſſinate him, and therefore ought to be kept in irons till he could be brought to a court-martial, which, no doubt, would ſift the affair to the bottom (by which means important diſcoveries might be made), and then ſentence the criminal to a death adequate to his demerits. This ſuggeſtion, improbable as it was, had the deſired effect upon the captain, being exactly calculated for the meridian of his intellects; more eſpecially, as Doctor Mackſhane eſpouſed this opinion, in conſequence of his previous declaration that the man was not mad. Morgan finding there was no more damage done, could not help diſcovering, by his countenance, the pleaſure he enjoyed on this occaſion; and while he bathed the doctor's face with an embrocation, ventured to aſk him, whether he thought there were more fools or madmen on board? But he would have been wiſer in containing this ſally, which his patient carefully laid up in his memory, to be taken notice of at a more fit ſeaſon. Meanwhile, we weighed anchor, and on our way to the Downs, the madman, who was treated as priſoner, took an opportunity, while the centinel attended him at the head, to leap over-board, and fruſtrate the revenge of the cap-



tain. We ſtaid not long at the Downs, but took the benefit of the firſt eaſterly wind to go round to Spithead; where having received on board proviſions for ſix months, we ſailed from St Helen's in the grand fleet bound for the Weſt-Indies, on the ever-memorable expedition of Carthagena.

It was not without great mortification I ſaw myſelf on the point of being tranſported to ſuch a diſtant and unhealthy climate, deſtitute of every convenience that could render ſuch a voyage ſupportable; and under the dominion of an arbitrary tyrant, whoſe command was almoſt intolerable: However, as theſe complaints were common to a great many on board, I reſolved to ſubmit patiently to my fate, and contrive to make myſelf as eaſy as the nature of the caſe would allow. We got out of the Channel with a proſperous breeze, which died away, leaving us becalmed about fifty leagues to the weſtward of the Lizard: But this ſtate of inaction did not laſt long; for next night our main-top ſail was ſplit by the wind, which in the morning increaſed to a hurricane. I was wakened by a moſt horrible din, occaſioned by the play of the gun carriages upon the deck above, the cracking of cabins, the howling of the wind through the ſhrouds, the confuſed noiſe of the ſhip's crew, the pipes of the boatſwain and his mates, the trumpets of the lieutenants, and the clanking of the chain pumps. Morgan, who had never been at ſea before, turned out in a great hurry, crying, "Got have mercy and compaſſion upon us! I believe we have got upon the confines of Lucifer and the d—ned!" while poor Thomſon lay quaking in his hammock, putting up petitions to Heaven for our ſafety." I roſe and joined the Welchman, with whom (after having fortified ourſelves with brandy) I went above; but, if my ſenſe of hearing was ſtartled before, how muſt my ſight have been appalled in beholding the effects of the ſtorm! The ſea was ſwelled into billows mountain-high, on the top of which, our ſhip ſometimes hung as if it was about to be precipitated to the abyſs below! Sometimes we ſunk between two waves that roſe on each ſide higher than our topmaſt-head, and threatened, by daſhing together, to overwhelm us in a

noment! Of all our fleet, conſiſting of a hundred and ifty ſail, ſcarce twelve appeared, and theſe driving unler their bare poles, at the mercy of the tempeſt. At length the maſt of one of them gave way, and tumbled over-board with a hideous craſh! Nor was the proſpect in our own ſhip much more agreeable; a number of officers and ſailors ran backward and forward with diſtraction in their looks, hollowing to one another, and undetermined what they ſhould attend to firſt. Some clung to the yards, endeavouring to unbend the ſails that were ſplit into a thouſand pieces flapping in the wind; others tried to furl thoſe which were yet whole, while the maſts, at every pitch, bent and quivered like twigs, as if they would have ſhivered into innumerable ſplinters! While I conſidered this ſcene with equal terror and aſtoniſhment, one of the main braces broke, by the ſhock whereof two ſailors were flung from the yard's arm into the ſea, where they periſhed, and poor Jack Rattlin was thrown down upon the deck, at the expence of a broken leg. Morgan and I ran immediately to his aſſiſtance, and found a ſplinter of the ſhin-bone thruſt by the violence of the fall through the ſkin: As this was a caſe of too great conſequence to be treated without the authority of the doctor, I went down to his cabin to inform him of the accident, as well as to bring up dreſſings, which we always kept ready prepared. I entered his apartment without any ceremony, and by the glimmering of a lamp, perceived him on his knees, before ſomething that very much reſembled a crucifix; but this I will not inſiſt upon, that I may not ſeem too much a ſlave to common report, which indeed aſſiſted my conjecture on this occaſion, by repreſenting Dr. Mackſhane as a member of the church of Rome. Be this as it will, he got up in a ſort of confuſion, occaſioned (I ſuppoſe) by his being diſturbed in his devotion, and, in a trice, ſnatched the ſubject of my ſuſpicion from my ſight. After making an apology for my intruſion, I acquainted him with the ſituation of Rattlin, but could by no means prevail upon him to viſit him on deck, where he lay; he bade me deſire the boatſwain to order ſome of the men to carry him down to the cockpit, and in the mean time

(ſaid he) I will direct Thomſon to get ready the dreſſings. When I ſignified to the boatſwain the doctor's deſire, he ſwore a terrible oath, that he could not ſpare one man from the deck, becauſe he expected the maſt would go by the board every minute. This piece of information did not at all contribute to my peace of mind; however, as my friend Rattlin complained very much, with the aſſiſtance of Morgan, I ſupported him to the lower deck, whither Mr. Mackſhane, after much entreaty, ventured to come, attended by Thomſon with a box full of dreſſings, and his own ſervant, who carried a whole ſet of capital inſtruments. He examined the fracture and the wound, and concluding, from a livid colour extending itſelf upon the limb, that a mortification would enſue, reſolved to amputate the leg immediately. This was a dreadful ſentence to the patient, who recruiting himſelf with a quid of tobacco, pronounced with a woful countenance, "What! is there no remedy, Doctor? muſt I be dock'd? can't you ſplice it?" "Aſſuredly, Doctor Mackſhane (ſaid the firſt mate), with ſubmiſſion, and deference, and veneration, to your ſuperior abilities, and opportunities, and ſtations (look you), I do apprehend, and conjecture, and aver, that there is no occaſion nor neceſſity to ſmite off this poor man's leg." "God Almighty bleſs you, dear Welchman! (cried Rattlin) may you have fair wind and weather wherefoever you're bound, and come to an anchor in the road of Heaven at laſt." Mackſhane, very much incenſed at his mate's differing in opinion from him ſo openly, anſwered, that he was not bound to give an account of his practice to him; and, in a peremptory tone, ordered him to apply the tourniquet. At the ſight of which, Jack ſtarting up, cried, "Avaſt, avaſt! d—n my heart, if you clap your nippers on me, till I know wherefore! Mr. Random, won't you lend a hand towards ſaving my precious limb? Odds heart, if Lieutenant Bowling was here, he would not ſuffer Jack Rattlin's leg to be chopped off like a piece of old junk." This pathetic addreſs to me, joined to my inclination to ſerve my honeſt friend, and the reaſons I had to believe there was no danger in delaying the amputation, induced me to declare myſelf of the firſt

nate's opinion, and affirm, that the preternatural colour of the ſkin was owing to an inflammation occaſioned by contuſion, and common in all ſuch caſes, without any indication of an approaching gangrene. Morgan, who had a great opinion of my ſkill, manifeſtly exulted in my fellowſhip, and aſked Thomſon's ſentiments of the matter, in hopes of ſtrengthening our aſſociation with him too; but he, being of a meek diſpoſition, and either dreading the enmity of the ſurgeon, or ſpeaking the dictates of his own judgment, in a modeſt manner, eſpouſed the opinion of Mackſhane, who, by this time, having conſulted with himſelf, determined to act in ſuch a manner, as to ſcreen himſelf from cenſure, and at the ſame time revenge himſelf on us, for our arrogance in contradicting him. With this view, he aſked, if we would undertake to cure the leg at our peril; that is, be anſwerable for the conſequence. To this queſtion Morgan replied, that the lives of his creatures are in the hands of God alone; and it would be great preſumption in him to undertake for an event that was in the power of his Maker, no more than the doctor could promiſe to cure all the ſick to whom he adminiſtered his aſſiſtance; but if the patient would put himſelf under our direction, we would do our endeavour to bring his diſtemper to a favourable iſſue, to which, at preſent, we ſaw no obſtruction. I ſignified my concurrence; and Rattlin was ſo overjoyed, that ſhaking us both by the hands, he ſwore nobody elſe ſhould touch him, and if he died, his blood ſhould be upon his own head. Mr. Mackſhane, flattering himſelf with the proſpect of our miſcarriage, went away, and left us to manage it as we ſhould think proper; accordingly, having ſawed off part of the ſplinter that ſtuck through the ſkin, we reduced the fracture, dreſſed the wound, applied the eighteen tailed bandage, and put the leg in a box, *ſecundum artem*. Every thing ſucceeded according to our wiſh, and we had the ſatisfaction of not only preſerving the poor fellow's leg, but likewiſe of rendering the doctor contemptible among the ſhip's company, who had all their eyes on us during the courſe of this cure, which was completed in ſix weeks.

While I and my fellow-priſoner comforted each other in our tribulation, the admiral diſcovered four ſail to leeward, and made ſignal for our ſhip and four more to chaſe: Hereupon every thing was cleared for an engagement; and Mackſhane foreſeeing he ſhould have occaſion for more aſſiſtants than one, obtained Morgan's liberty; while I was left in this deplorable poſture to the chance of battle. It was almoſt dark when we came up with the ſternmoſt chaſe, which we hailed, and inquired who they were: They gave us to underſtand they were French men of war; upon which Captain Oakum commanded them to ſend their boat on board of him; but they refuſed, telling him, if he had any buſineſs with them, to come on board of their ſhip: He then threatened to pour in a broadſide upon them, which they promiſed to return. Both ſides were as good as their word; and the engagement began with great fury. The reader may gueſs how I paſſed my time, lying in this helpleſs ſituation, amidſt the terrors of a ſea-fight; expecting every moment to be cut aſunder, or daſhed in pieces by the enemy's ſhot! I endeavoured to compoſe myſelf as much as poſſible, by reflecting that I was not a whit more expoſed than thoſe who were ſtationed about me; but when I beheld them employed without intermiſſion in annoying the foe, and encouraged by the ſociety and behaviour of one another, I could eaſily perceive a wide difference between their condition and mine: However, I concealed my agitation as well as I could, till the head of the officer of marines, who ſtood near me, being ſhot off, bounced from the deck athwart my face, leaving me well nigh blinded with brains. I could contain myſelf no longer, but began to bellow with all the ſtrength of my lungs: When a drummer coming towards me, aſked if I was wounded? and before I could anſwer, received a great ſhot in his belly, which tore out his entrails, and he fell flat on my breaſt. This accident entirely bereft me of all diſcretion: I redoubled my cries, which were drowned in the noiſe of the battle; and finding myſelf diſregarded, loſt all patience, and became frantic: I vented my rage in oaths and execrations, till my ſpirits being quite exhauſted, I

remained quiet and inſenſible of the load that oppreſſed me. The engagement laſted till broad day, when Captain Oakum, finding he was like to gain neither honour nor advantage by the affair, pretended to be undeceived by ſeeing their colours; and hailing the ſhip with whom he had fought all night, proteſted he believed them Spaniards, and the guns being ſilenced on each ſide, ordered the barge to be hoiſted out, and went on board of the French commodore. Our loſs amounted to ten killed, and eighteen wounded, moſt part of whom afterwards died. My fellow-mates had no ſooner diſpatched their buſineſs in the cockpit, than, full of friendly concern, they came to viſit me. Morgan aſcending firſt, and ſeeing my face almoſt covered with brains and blood, concluded I was no longer a man for this world; and calling to Thomſon with great emotion, bade him come up, and take his laſt farewel of his comrade and countryman, who was poſting to a better place, where there were no Mackſhanes nor Oakums to aſperſe and torment him. "No (ſaid he, taking me by the hand), you are going to a country where there is more reſpect ſhown to unfortunate ſhentlemen, and where you will have the ſatisfaction of peholding your adverſaries toſſing upon pillows of purning primſtone." Thomſon, alarmed at this apoſtrophe, made haſte to the place where I lay, and ſitting down by me, with tears in his eyes, inquired into the nature of my calamity. By this time I had recollected myſelf ſo far, as to be able to converſe rationally with my friends, whom, to their great ſatisfaction, I immediately undeceived with regard to their apprehenſion of my being mortally wounded. After I had got myſelf diſengaged from the carnage in which I wallowed, and partaken of a refreſhment which my friends brought along with them, we entered into diſcourſe upon the hardſhips we ſuſtained, and ſpoke very freely of the authors of our miſery: But our diſcourſe being overheard by the centinel who guarded me, he was no ſooner relieved, than he reported to the captain every ſyllable of our converſation, according to the orders he had received: The effect of this information ſoon appeared in the arrival of the maſter at arms, who

replaced Morgan in his former ſtation; and gave the ſecond mate a caution to keep a ſtrict guard over his tongue, if he did not chooſe to accompany us in our confinement. Thomſon foreſeeing that the whole ſlavery of attending the ſick and wounded, as well as the cruelty of Mackſhane, muſt now fall upon his ſhoulders, grew deſperate at the proſpect, and though I never heard him ſwear before, imprecated dreadful curſes on the heads of his oppreſſors, declaring that he would rather quit life altogether, than be much longer under the power of ſuch barbarians. I was not a little ſtartled at his vivacity, and endeavoured to alleviate his complaints, by repreſenting the ſubject of my own, with as much aggravation as it would bear, by which compariſon he might ſee the balance of misfortune lay on my ſide, and take an example from me of fortitude and ſubmiſſion, till ſuch time as we could procure redreſs, which (I hoped) was not far off, conſidering, that we ſhould probably be in a harbour in leſs than three days, where we ſhould have an opportunity of preferring our complaints to the admiral. The Welchman joined in my remonſtrance, and was at great pains to demonſtrate, that it was every man's duty, as well as intereſt, to reſign himſelf to the divine will, and look upon himſelf as a centinel upon duty, who is by no means at liberty to leave his poſt before he is relieved. Thomſon liſtened attentively to what we ſaid, and at laſt, ſhedding a flood of tears, ſhook his head, and left us, without making any reply. About eleven at night, he came to ſee us again, with a ſettled gloom on his countenance, and gave us to underſtand, that he had undergone exceſſive toil ſince he ſaw us, and in recompence had been groſsly abuſed by the doctor, who taxed him with being confederate with us, in a deſign of taking away his life, and that of the captain. After ſome time ſpent in mutual exhortation, he got up, and ſqueezing me by the hand with an uncommon fervour, cried "God bleſs you both;" and left us to wonder at his ſingular manner of parting with us, which did not fail to make a deep impreſſion on us.

Next morning, when the hour of viſitation came

round, this unhappy young man was miſſing, and, after ſtrict ſearch, ſuppoſed to have gone over-board in the night; and this was certainly the caſe.

CHAPTER XXX.

We lament the fate of our companion—the captain offers Morgan his liberty, which he refuſes to accept—We are brought before him, and examined—Morgan is ſent back into cuſtody, whither alſo I am remanded, after a curious trial.

THE news of this event affected my fellow-priſoner and me extremely, as our unfortunate companion had juſtly acquired, by his amiable diſpoſition, the love and eſteem of us both; and the more we regretted his untimely fate, the greater horror we conceived for the villain who was undoubtedly the occaſion of it. This abandoned miſcreant did not diſcover the leaſt ſymptom of concern for Thomſon's death, although he muſt have been conſcious to himſelf of having driven him by ill uſage to that fatal reſolution; but deſired the captain to ſet Morgan at liberty again, to look after the patients. Accordingly, one of the corporals was ſent up to unfetter him; but he proteſted he would not be releaſed until he ſhould know for what he was confined; nor would he be a tennis-ball, nor a ſhuttle-cock, nor a trudge, nor a ſcullion, to any captain under the ſun. Oakum finding him obſtinate, and fearing it would not be in his power to exerciſe his tyranny much longer with impunity, was willing to ſhow ſome appearance of juſtice, and therefore ordered us both to be brought before him on the quarter-deck, where he ſat in ſtate, with his clerk on one ſide, and his counſellor Mackſhane on the other. When we approached, he honoured us with this ſalutation: "So, gentlemen, damn my blood! many a captain in the navy would have ordered you both to be tuck'd up to the yard's arm, without either judge or jury, for the crimes you have been guilty of; but, damn my blood, I have too much good-nature, in allowing ſuch dogs as you to make your defence." "Captain N

Oakum (ſaid my fellow-ſufferer), certainly it is in your power (Got help the while) to tuck us all up at your will, and deſire, and pleaſures. And perhaps it would be petter for ſome of us to be tucked up, than undergo the miſeries to which we have been expoſed. So may the farmer hang his kids for his diverſion, and amuſement, and mirth; but there is ſuch a thing as juſtice, if not upon earth, ſurely in Heaven, that will puniſh with fire and primſtone all thoſe who take away the lives of innocent people out of wantonneſs and parparity (look you)—In the mean time, I ſhall be glad to know the crimes laid to my charge, and ſee the perſon who accuſes me." "That you ſhall (ſaid the captain)—here, doctor, what have you to ſay?" Mackſhane ſtepping forward, hemmed a good while, in order to clear his throat, and, before he began, Morgan accoſted him thus: "Doctor Mackſhane, look in my face—look in the face of an honeſt man, who abhors a falſe witneſs as he abhors the tevil, and Got be judge between you and me." The doctor, not minding this conjuration, made the following ſpeech, as near as I can remember: "I'll tell you what, Mr. Morgan, to be ſure, what you ſay is juſt, in regard to an honeſt man, and if ſo be it appears as how you are an honeſt man, then it is my opinion, that you deſerve to be acquitted, in relation to that there affair; for I tell you what, Captain Oakum is reſolved for to do every body juſtice. As for my own part, all that I have to allege is, that I have been informed you have ſpoken diſreſpectful words againſt your captain, who, to be ſure, is the moſt honourable and generous commander in the king's ſervice, without aſparagement or acception of man, woman, or child." Having uttered this elegant harangue, on which he ſeemed to plume himſelf, Morgan replied, "I do partly gueſs, and conceive, and underſtand your meaning, which I wiſh could be more explicit: But, however, I do ſuppoſe I am not to be condemned upon bare hearſay; or if I am convicted of ſpeaking diſreſpectfully of Captain Oakum, I hope there is no treaſon in my words." "But there's mutiny, by God, and that's death by the articles of war (cried Oakum)—In the

mean time, let the witneſſes be called." Hereupon Mackſhane's ſervant appeared, and the boy of our meſs, whom they had ſeduced and tutored for the purpoſe. The firſt declared, that Morgan, as he deſcended the cockpit ladder one day, curſed the captain, and called him a ſavage beaſt, ſaying, he ought to be hunted down as an enemy to mankind. "This (ſaid the clerk) is a ſtrong preſumption of a deſign formed againſt the captain's life. For why? It preſuppoſes malice aforethought, and a criminal intention *a priori*." "Right (ſaid the captain to this miſerable grub, who had been an attorney's boy), you ſhall have law enough; here's Cook and Littlejohn for it." This evidence was confirmed by the boy, who affirmed, he heard the firſt mate ſay, that the captain had no more bowels than a bear, and the ſurgeon had no more brains than an aſs. Then the centinel who heard our diſcourſe on the poop was examined, and informed the court that the Welchman aſſured me, Captain Oakum and Doctor Mackſhane would toſs upon billows of burning brimſtone in hell for their barbarity. The clerk obſerved, that there was an evident prejudication, which confirmed the former ſuſpicion of a conſpiracy againſt the life of Captain Oakum; for, becauſe, how could Morgan ſo poſitively pronounce that the captain and ſurgeon would be damned, unleſs he had intention to make away with them before they could have time to repent? This ſage explanation had great weight with our noble commander, who exclaimed, "What have you to ſay to this, Taffy? you ſeem to be taken all a-back, brother, ha!" Morgan was too much of a gentleman to diſown the text, although he abſolutely denied the truth of the comment: Upon which the captain, ſtrutting up to him, with a ferocious countenance, ſaid, "So, Mr. ſon of a bitch, you confeſs you honoured me with the names of bear and beaſt, and pronounced my damnation? Damn my heart! I have a good mind to have you brought to a court-martial, and hanged, you dog." Here Mackſhane, having occaſion for an aſſiſtant, interpoſed, and begged the captain to pardon Mr. Morgan, with his wonted goodneſs, upon condition that he, the

delinquent, ſhould make ſuch ſubmiſſion as the nature of his miſdemeanor demanded. Upon which the Cambro-Briton, who on this occaſion would have made no ſubmiſſion to the Great Mogul, ſurrounded with his guards, thanked the doctor for his mediation, and acknowledged himſelf in the wrong for calling the image of God a peaſt; "but (ſaid he) I ſpoke by metaphor, and parable, and compariſon, and types; as we ſignify meekneſs by a lamb, lechery by a goat, and craftineſs by a fox; ſo we liken ignorance to an aſs, and brutality to a bear, and fury to a tyger; therefore I made uſe of theſe ſimiles to expreſs my ſentiments (look you), and what I ſaid before Got, I will not unſay before man or peaſt neither." Oakum was ſo provoked at this inſolence (as he termed it), that he ordered him forthwith to be carried to the place of his confinement, and his clerk to proceed on the examination of me. The firſt queſtion put to me, was touching the place of my nativity, which I declared to be the north of Scotland. "The north of Ireland more like (cried the captain), but we ſhall bring you up preſently." He then aſked what religion I profeſſed; and when I anſwered, "The Proteſtant," ſwore I was as arrant a Roman as ever went to maſs. "Come, come, clerk (continued he), catechiſe him a little on this ſubject." But before I relate the particulars of the clerk's inquiries, it will not be amiſs to inform the reader, that our commander himſelf was an Hibernian, and, if not ſhrewdly belied, a Roman Catholic to boot. "You ſay you are a Proteſtant (ſaid the clerk); make the ſign of the croſs with your fingers, ſo, and ſwear upon it to that affirmation." When I was about to perform this ceremony, the captain cried with ſome emotion, "No, no, damme! I'll have no profanation neither. But go on with your interrogations." "Well then (proceeded my examiner), how many ſacraments are there?" To which I replied, "Two." "What are they?" (ſaid he). I anſwered, "Baptiſm and the Lord's Supper." "And ſo you would explode confirmation and marriage altogether! (ſaid Oakum) I thought this fellow was a rank Roman." The clerk, though he was bred under an attor-

ney, could not refrain from bluſhing at this blunder, which he endeavoured to conceal, by obſerving, that theſe decoys would not do with me, who ſeemed to be an old offender. He went on with aſking, if I believed in tranſubſtantiation; but I treated the notion of a real preſence with ſuch diſreſpect, that his patron was ſcandalized at my impiety, and commanded him to proceed to the plot. Whereupon this miſerable pettifogger told me, there was great reaſon to ſuſpect me of being a ſpy on board; and that I had entered into a conſpiracy with Thomſon, and others not yet detected, againſt the life of Captain Oakum: Which accuſation they pretended to ſupport by the evidence of our boy, who declared, he had often heard the deceaſed Thomſon and me whiſpering together, and could diſtinguiſh the words "Oakum, raſcal, poiſon, piſtol." By which expreſſions it appeared, we did intend to uſe ſiniſter means to accompliſh his deſtruction. That the death of Thomſon ſeemed to confirm this conjecture; who, either feeling the ſtings of remorſe, for being engaged in ſuch a horrid confederacy, or fearing a diſcovery, by which he muſt have infallibly ſuffered an ignominious death, had put a fatal period to his own exiſtence. But what eſtabliſhed the truth of the whole, was a book in cyphers, found among my papers, which exactly tallied with one found in his cheſt, after his diſappearance: This, he obſerved, was a preſumption very near proof poſitive, and would determine any jury in Chriſtendom to find me guilty. In my own defence, I alleged that I had been dragged on board at firſt very much againſt my inclination, as I could prove by the evidence of ſome people now in the ſhip, conſequently could have no deſign of becoming ſpy at that time; and ever ſince had been entirely out of the reach of any correſpondence that could juſtly entail that ſuſpicion upon me. As for conſpiring againſt my captain's life, it could not be ſuppoſed that any man in his right wits would harbour the leaſt thought of ſuch an undertaking, which he could not poſſibly perform without certain infamy and ruin to himſelf, even if he had all the inclination in the world. That, allowing the boy's evidence to be true (which I affirmed was falſe

and malicious), nothing concluſive could be gathered from a few incoherent words: Neither was the fate of Mr. Thomſon a circumſtance more favourable for the charge; for I had in my pocket a letter which too well explained that myſtery, in a very different manner from that which was ſuppoſed. With theſe words, I produced the following letter, which Jack Rattlin brought to me the very day after Thomſon diſappeared; and told me it was committed to his care by the deceaſed, who made him promiſe not to deliver it ſooner. The clerk taking it out of my hand, read aloud the contents, which were theſe:

"DEAR FRIEND,

"I AM ſo much oppreſſed with the fatigue I daily and nightly undergo, and the barbarous uſage of Doctor Mackſhane, who is bent on your deſtruction, as well as mine, that I am reſolved to free myſelf from this miſerable life, and, before you receive this, ſhall be no more. I could have wiſhed to die in your good opinion, which I am afraid I ſhall forfeit by the laſt act of my life; but if you cannot acquit me, I know you will at leaſt preſerve ſome regard for the memory of an unfortunate young man who loved you. I recommend it to you to beware of Mackſhane, whoſe revenge is implacable. I wiſh all proſperity to you and Mr. Morgan, to whom pray offer my laſt reſpects, and beg to be remembered as your unhappy friend and countryman,

WILLIAM THOMSON."

This letter was no ſooner read, than Mackſhane, in a tranſport of rage, ſnatched it out of the clerk's hands, and tore it into a thouſand pieces, ſaying, it was a villanous forgery, contrived and executed by myſelf. The captain and clerk declared themſelves of the ſame opinion, although I inſiſted on having the remains of it compared with other writings of Thomſon, which they had in their poſſeſſion; and I was ordered to anſwer the laſt article of my accuſation, namely, the book of cyphers found among my papers. "That is eaſily done (ſaid I). What you are pleaſed to call cyphers, are no other than

he Greek characters, in which, for my amuſement, I kept a diary of every thing remarkable that has occurred to my obſervation, ſince the beginning of the voyage till the day on which I was put in irons; and the ſame method was practiſed by Mr. Thomſon, who copied mine." "A very likely ſtory! (cried Mackſhane) what occaſion was there for uſing Greek characters, if you were not afraid of diſcovering what you had wrote? But what d'ye talk of Greek characters? D'ye think I am ſo ignorant of the Greek language, as not to diſtinguiſh its letters from theſe, which are no more Greek than Chineſe? No, no, I will not give up my knowledge of the Greek for you, nor none that ever came from your country." So ſaying, with an unparalleled effrontery, he repeated ſome gibberiſh, which by the ſound ſeemed to be Iriſh, and made it paſs for Greek with the captain, who, looking at me with a contemptuous ſneer, exclaimed, "Ah! ah! have you caught a tartar?" I could not help ſmiling at the conſummate aſſurance of this Hibernian, and offered to refer the diſpute to any body on board who underſtood the Greek alphabet: Upon which Morgan was brought back, and being made acquainted with the affair, took the book and read a whole page in Engliſh without heſitation, deciding the controverſy in my favour. The doctor was ſo far from being out of countenance at this detection, that he affirmed Morgan was in the ſecret, and repeated from his own invention. Oakum ſaid, "Ay, ay, I ſee they are both in a ſtory;" and diſmiſſed my fellow-mate to his cock-loft, although I propoſed that he and I ſhould read and tranſlate ſeparately, any chapter or verſe in the Greek Teſtament in his poſſeſſion, by which it would appear whether we or the ſurgeon ſpoke truth. Not being endued with eloquence enough to convince the captain that there could be no juggle nor confederacy in this expedient, I begged to be examined by ſome unconcerned perſon on board, who underſtood Greek: Accordingly the whole ſhip's company, officers and all, were called upon deck, among whom it was proclaimed, that if any of them could ſpeak Greek, he or they ſo qualified ſhould aſcend the quarter deck immediately.

After ſome pauſe, two fore-maſt men came up, and profeſſed their ſkill in that language, which (they ſaid) they acquired during ſeveral voyages to the Levant, among the Greeks of the Morea. The captain exulted much in this declaration, and put my journal-book into the hands of one of them, who candidly owned he could neither read nor write: the other acknowledged the ſame degree of ignorance, but pretended to ſpeak the Greek lingo with any man on board; and addreſſing himſelf to me, pronounced ſome ſentences of a barbarous corrupted language, which I did not underſtand. I aſſerted, that the modern Greek was as different from that ſpoke and written by the ancients, as the Engliſh uſed now from the old Saxon ſpoke in the time of Hengiſt; and as I had only learned the true original tongue, in which Homer, Pindar, the Evangeliſts, and other great men of antiquity wrote, it could not be ſuppoſed that I ſhould know any thing of an imperfect Gothic dialect that roſe on the ruins of the former, and ſcarce retained any traces of the old expreſſion. But if Doctor Mackſhane, who pretended to be maſter of the Greek language, could maintain a converſation with theſe ſeamen, I would retract what I had ſaid, and be content to ſuffer any puniſhment he ſhould think proper to inflict. I had no ſooner uttered theſe words, than the ſurgeon, knowing one of theſe fellows to be his countryman, accoſted him in Iriſh, and was anſwered in the ſame brogue; then a dialogue enſued between them, which they affirmed to be in Greek, after having ſecured the ſecrecy of the other tar, who had his cue in the language of the Morea from his companion, before they would venture to aſſert ſuch an intrepid falſehood. "I thought (ſaid Oakam) we ſhould diſcover the impoſture at laſt. Let the raſcal be carried back to his confinement. I find he muſt dangle." Having nothing further to urge in my own behalf, before a court ſo prejudiced with ſpite, and fortified with ignorance againſt truth, I ſuffered myſelf to be reconducted peaceably to my fellow-priſoner, who hearing the particulars of my trial, lifted up his hands and eyes to heaven, and uttered a dreadful groan; and not daring to diſburden his thoughts to me by ſpeech, leſt he might

be overheard by the centinel, burſt forth into a Welch ſong, which he accompanied with a thouſand contortions of face, and violent geſtures of body.

CHAPTER XXXI.

I diſcover a ſubordination againſt me, by means of a quarrel between two of the evidences; in conſequence of which I am ſet at liberty, and prevail upon Morgan to accept of his freedom on the ſame terms—Mackſhane's malice—we arrive at Jamaica, from whence, in a ſhort time, we beat up to Hiſpaniola, in conjunction with the Weſt India ſquadron—we take in water, ſail again, and arrive at Carthagena—reflections on our conduct there.

MEANWHILE, a quarrel happened between the two modern Greeks, the one, to be revenged of the other, came and diſcovered to us the myſtery of Mackſhane's dialogue, as I have explained it above. This detection coming to the ears of the doctor, who was ſenſible, that (now we were in ſight of Jamaica) we ſhould have an opportunity of clearing ourſelves before a court-martial, and, at the ſame time, of making his malice and ignorance conſpicuous, he interceded for us with the captain ſo effectually, that, in a few hours, we were ſet at liberty, and ordered to return to our duty. This was a happy event for me, my whole body being bliſtered by the ſun, and my limbs benumbed by want of motion: But I could ſcarce perſuade the Welchman to accept of this indulgence, he perſiſting in his obſtinacy to remain in irons until he ſhould be diſcharged by a court-martial, which he believed would alſo do him juſtice on his enemies; at length I repreſented to him the precarious iſſue of a trial, the power and intereſt of his adverſaries, and flattered his revenge with the hope of wreaking his reſentment with his own hands upon Mackſhane after our return to England. This laſt argument had more weight with him than all the reſt, and prevailed upon him to repair with me to the cockpit, which I no ſooner entered than the idea of my departed friend preſented itſelf to my remembrance, and filled my eyes with tears. We diſcharged from our meſs the boy who had ſo

perfidiouſly, notwithſtanding his tears, entreaties, and profeſſions of penitence for what he had done; but not before he had confeſſed that the ſurgeon had bribed him to give evidence againſt us, with a pair of ſtockings, and a couple of old check ſhirts, of which his ſervant had ſince plundered him.

The keys of our cheſts and lockers being ſent to us by the doctor, we detained the meſſenger until we had examined the contents; and my fellow-mate finding all his Cheſhire cheeſe conſumed to a cruſt, his brandy exhauſted and his onions gone, was ſeized with a fit of choler, which he diſcharged on Mackſhane's man in oaths and execrations, threatening to proſecute him as a thief. The fellow ſwore in his turn, that he never had the keys in his poſſeſſion till that time, when he received them from his maſter, with orders to deliver them to us. "As Got is my judge (cried Morgan), and my ſalfation, and my witneſs, whoſoever has pilfered my proviſions is a louſy, peggarly, raſcally knave! and by the ſoul of my grandfire! I will impeach, and accuſe, and indict him of a roppery, if I did but know who he is."—Had this misfortune happened at ſea, where we could not repair the loſs, in all probability this deſcendent of Caractacus would have loſt his wits entirely; but, when I obſerved how eaſy it would be to remedy this paltry miſchance, he became more calm, and reconciled himſelf to the occaſion. A little while after this tranſport, the ſurgeon came into the birth, under pretence of taking ſomething out of the medicine cheſt, and, with a ſmiling aſpect, wiſhed us joy of our deliverance, which, he ſaid, he had been at great pains to obtain of the captain, who was very juſtly incenſed at our behaviour; but he (the doctor) had paſſed his word for our future conduct, and he hoped we ſhould give him no cauſe to repent of his kindneſs. He expected, no doubt, an acknowledgment from us for this pretended piece of ſervice, as well as a general amneſty of what was paſt; but he had to do with people who were not quite ſo apt to forgive injuries as he imagined, or to forget, that, if our deliverance was owing to his mediation, our calamity was occaſioned by his malice: I therefore ſat ſilent,

while my companion anſwered, "Ay, ay, 'tis no matter. Got knows the heart—there is a time for all things, as the wiſe man ſaith, there is a time for throwing away ſtones, and a time to gather them up again." He ſeemed to be diſconcerted at this reply, and went away in a pet, muttering ſomething about "Ingratitude" and "Fellows," of which we did not think fit to take any notice.

Our fleet having joined another that waited for us, lay at anchor about a month in the harbour at Port Royal in Jamaica, during which time ſomething of conſequence was certainly tranſacted; notwithſtanding the inſinuations of ſome who affirmed we had no buſineſs at all in that place; that, in order to take the advantage of the ſeaſon proper for our enterpriſe, the Weſt India ſquadron, which had previous notice of our coming, ought to have joined us at the weſt end of Hiſpaniola, with neceſſary ſtores and refreſhments, from whence we could have ſailed directly for Carthagena, before the enemy could put themſelves in a good poſture of defence, or, indeed, having an inkling of our deſign. Be this as it will, we ſailed from Jamaica, and, in ten days or a fortnight, beat up againſt the wind as far as the Iſle of Vache, with an intention, as was ſaid, to attack the French fleet, then ſuppoſed to be lying near that place; but, before we arrived, they had ſailed for Europe, having firſt diſpatched an advice-boat to Carthagena, with an account of our being in thoſe ſeas, as alſo of our ſtrength and deſtination. We loitered here ſome days longer, taking in wood, and brackiſh water, in the uſe whereof, however, our admiral ſeemed to conſult the health of the men, by reſtricting each to a quart a-day. At length we ſet ſail, and arrived in a bay to the windward of Carthagena, where we came to an anchor, and lay at our eaſe ten days longer. Here again certain malicious people took occaſion to blame the conduct of their ſuperiors, by ſaying, that in ſo doing, they not only unprofitably waſted time, which was very precious, conſidering the approach of the rainy ſeaſon, but alſo allowed the Spaniards to recollect themſelves from the terror occaſioned by the approach of an Engliſh fleet, at leaſt three times as nu-

merous as ever appeared in that part of the world before. But, if I might be allowed to give my opinion of the matter, I would aſcribe this delay to the generoſity of our chiefs, who ſcorned to take any advantage that fortune might give them, even over an enemy. At laſt, however, we weighed, and anchored again ſomewhat nearer the harbour's mouth, where we made ſhift to land our marines, who encamped on the beach in deſpite of the enemy's ſhot, which knocked a good many of them on the head. This piece of conduct, in chooſing a camp under the walls of an enemy's fortification, which, I believe, never happened before, was practiſed, I preſume, with a view of accuſtoming the ſoldiers to ſtand fire, who were not as yet much uſed to diſcipline, moſt of them having been taken from the plough-tail a few months before. This expedient again has furniſhed matters for cenſure againſt the miniſtry, for ſending a few raw recruits on ſuch an important enterpriſe, while ſo many veteran regiments lay inactive at home: But ſurely our governors had their reaſons for ſo doing, which poſſibly may be diſcloſed with other ſecrets of the deep. Perhaps they were loth to riſk their beſt troops on ſuch deſperate ſervice; or the colonels and field officers of the old corps, who, generally ſpeaking, enjoyed their commiſſions as ſinecures or penſions, for ſome domeſtic ſervices tendered to the court, refuſed to embark in ſuch a dangerous and precarious undertaking; for which refuſal, no doubt, they are much to be commended.

CHAPTER XXXII.

Our land forces being diſembarked, erect a faſcine battery—our ſhip is ordered, with four more, to batter the fort of Boca Chica—Mackſhane's cowardice—the chaplain's phrenzy—honeſt Rattlin loſes one hand—his heroiſm, and reflections on the battle—Crampley's behaviour to me during the heat of the fight.

OUR forces being landed and ſtationed as I have already mentioned, ſet about erecting a faſcine battery to cannonade the principal fort of the enemy, and in ſomething more than three weeks, it was ready to open. That we

might do the Spaniards as much honour as poſſible, it was determined, in a council of war, that five of our largeſt ſhips ſhould attack the fort on one ſide, while the battery ſtrengthened by two mortars and twenty-four cohorns, ſhould ply it on the other.

Accordingly the ſignal for our ſhip to engage, among others, was hoiſted, we being advertiſed the night before to make every thing clear for that purpoſe; and in ſo doing a difference happened between Captain Oakum and his well-beloved couſin and counſellor Mackſhane, which had well nigh terminated in an open rupture. The doctor, who had imagined there was no more danger of being hurt by the enemy's ſhot in the cockpit than in the centre of the earth, was lately informed that a ſurgeon's mate had been kiled in that part of the ſhip, by a cannon-ball from two ſmall redoubts that were deſtroyed before the diſembarkation of our ſoldiers; and therefore inſiſted upon having a platform raiſed for the covenience of the ſick and wounded in the after-hold, were he deemed himſelf more ſecure than on the deck above. The captain, offended at this extraordinary propoſal, accuſed him of puſillanimity, and told him there was no room in the hold for ſuch an occaſion; or, if there was, he could not expect to be indulged more than the reſt of the ſurgeons of the navy, who uſed the cockpit for that purpoſe. Fear rendering Mackſhane obſtinate, he perſiſted in his demand, and ſhowed his inſtructions, by which it was authoriſed: The captain ſwore theſe inſtructions were dictated by a parcel of lazy poltroons who were never at ſea; nevertheleſs, he was obliged to comply, and ſent for the carpenter to give him orders about it: But, before any ſuch meaſure could be taken, our ſignal was thrown out, and the doctor compelled to truſt his carcaſe in the cockpit, where Morgan and I were buſy in putting our inſtruments and dreſſings in order.

Our ſhip, with others deſtined for this ſervice, immediately weighed, and, in leſs than half an hour, came to an anchor before the caſtle of Boca Chica, with a ſpring upon our cable; and the cannonading (which, indeed, was terrible!) began. The ſurgeon, after having croſſed himſelf, fell flat on the deck; and the chap-

lain and purſer, who were ſtationed with us in quality of aſſiſtants, followed his example, while the Welchman and I ſat upon a cheſt looking at one another with great diſcompoſure, ſcarce able to refrain from the like proſtration. And, that the reader may know it was not a common occaſion that alarmed us thus, I muſt inform him of the particulars of this dreadful din that aſtoniſhed us. The fire of the Spaniards proceeded from eighty-four great guns, beſide a mortar and ſmall arms, in Boca Chica, thirty-ſix in Fort St. Joſeph, twenty in two faſcine batteries, and four men of war, mounting ſixty-four guns each. This was anſwered by our land battery, mounted with twenty-one cannon, two mortars, and twenty-four cohorns, and five great ſhips of eighty or ſeventy guns, that fired without intermiſſion. We had not been many minutes engaged, when one of the ſailors brought another on his back to the cockpit, where he toſſed him down like a bag of oats, and pulling out his pouch, put a large chew of tobacco in his mouth, without ſpeaking a word: Morgan immediately examined the condition of the wounded man, and cried out, "As I ſhall anſwer now, the man is as tead as my great grandfather."—"Dead (ſaid his comrade), he may be dead now, for aught I know, but I'll be damn'd if he was not alive when I took him up."—So ſaying, he was about to return to his quarters, when I bade him carry the body along with him, and throw it overboard.—"D—n the body! (ſaid he) I think 'tis fair enough if I take care of my own." My fellow-mate ſnatching up the amputation knife, purſued him halfway up the cockpit ladder, crying, "You louſy raſcal, is this the church-yard, or the charnel-houſe, or the ſepulchre, or the Golgotha of the ſhip?" but was ſtopped in his career by one calling, "Yo ho, avaſt there—ſcaldings." "Scaldings! (anſwered Morgan) Got knows, 'tis hot enough indeed: who are you?" "Here's one," replied the voice. And I immediately knew it to be that of my honeſt friend Jack Rattlin, who, coming towards me, told me, with great deliberation, he was come to be docked at laſt, and diſcovered the remains of one hand which had been ſhattered to pieces with a grape ſhot. I lamented with

unfeigned ſorrow his misfortune, which he bore with heroic courage, obſerving, that every ſhot had its commiſſion: It was well it did not take him in the head; or, if it had, what then? he ſhould have died bravely, fighting for his king and country: Death was a debt which every man owed, and muſt pay; and that now was as well as another time. I was much pleaſed and edified with the maxims of this ſea-philoſopher, who endured the amputation of his left hand without ſhrinking; the operation being performed, at his requeſt, by me, after Mackſhane, who was with difficulty prevailed to lift his head from the deck, had declared there was a neceſſity for his loſing the limb. While I was employed in dreſſing the ſtump, I aſked Jack's opinion of the battle, who, ſhaking his head, frankly told me, he believed we ſhould do no good; "For why, becauſe inſtead of dropping anchor cloſe under ſhore, where we ſhould have had to deal with one corner of Boca Chica only, we had opened the harbour, and expoſed ourſelves to the whole fire of the enemy from their ſhipping and Fort St. Joſeph, as well as from the caſtle we intended to cannonade; that, beſides, we lay at too great a diſtance to damage the walls, and three parts in four of our ſhot did not take place; for there was ſcarce any body on board who underſtood the pointing of a gun. Ah! God help us! (continued he), if your kinſman Lieutenant Bowling had been here, we ſhould have had other gueſs work." By this time our patients had increaſed to ſuch a number, that we did not know which to begin with; and the firſt mate plainly told the ſurgeon, that, if he did not get up immediately, and perform his duty, he would complain of his behaviour to the Admiral, and make application for his warrant. This remonſtance effectually rouſed Mackſhane, who was never deaf to an argument in which he thought his intereſt was concerned; he therefore roſe up, and, in order to ſtrengthen his reſolution, had recourſe more than once to a caſe-bottle of rum, which he freely communicated to the chaplain and purſer, who had as much need of ſuch extraordinary inſpiration as himſelf: Being thus ſupported, he went to work, and arms and legs were hewed down without mer-

cy. The fumes of the liquor mounting into the parſon's brain, conſpired, with his former agitation of ſpirits, to make him quite delirious; he ſtripped himſelf to the ſkin, and beſmearing his body with blood, could ſcarce be with-held from running upon deck in that condition. Jack Rattlin, ſcandalized at this deportment, endeavoured to allay his tranſports with reaſon; but, finding all he ſaid ineffectual, and great confuſion occaſioned by his frolics, he knocked him down with his right hand, and, by threats kept him quite in that ſtate of humiliation. But it was not in the power of rum to elevate the purſer, who ſat on the floor wringing his hands, and curſing the hour in which he left his peaceable profeſſion of a brewer in Rocheſter, to engage in ſuch a life of terror and diſquiet. While we diverted ourſelves at the expence of this poor devil, a ſhot happened to take us between wind and water, and (its courſe being through the purſer's ſtore room) made a terrible havock and noiſe among the jars and bottles in its way, and diſconcerted Mackſhane ſo much, that he dropt his ſcalpel, and, falling down on his knees, pronounced his *paternoſter* aloud; the purſer fell backward, and lay without ſenſe or motion; and the chaplain grew ſo outrageous, that Rattlin with one hand could not keep him under; ſo that we were obliged to confine him in the ſurgeon's cabin, where he was no doubt guilty of a thouſand extravagances. Much about this time, my old antagoniſt Crampley came down, with expreſs orders, as he ſaid, to bring me up to the quarter-deck, to dreſs a ſlight wound the captain had received by a ſplinter; his reaſon for honouring me in particular with this piece of ſervice, being, that, in caſe I ſhould be killed or diſabled by the way, my death or mutilation would be of leſs conſequence to the ſhip's company than that of the doctor or his firſt-mate. At another time perhaps I might have diſputed this order, to which I was not bound to pay the leaſt regard; but as I thought my reputation depended upon my compliance, I was reſolved to convince my rival that I was no more afraid than he of expoſing myſelf to danger. With this view I provided myſelf with dreſſings, and followed him immediately to the quarter

deck, through a moſt infernal ſcene of ſlaughter, fire, ſmoke, and uproar! Captain Oakum, who leaned againſt the mizen-maſt, no ſooner ſaw me approach in my ſhirt, with the ſleeves tucked up to my arm-pits, and my hands died with blood, than he ſignified his diſpleaſure by a frown, and aſked why the doctor himſelf did not come? I told him Crampley had ſingled me out, as if by expreſs command; at which reply he ſeemed ſurpriſed, and threatened to puniſh the midſhipman for his preſumption after the engagement: In the mean time I was ſent back to my ſtation, and ordered to tell Mackſhane, that the captain expected him immediately. I got ſafe back, and delivered my commiſſion to the doctor, who flatly refuſed to quit the poſt aſſigned to him by his inſtructions; whereupon Morgan, who, I believe, was jealous of my reputation for courage, undertook the affair, and aſcended with great intrepidity. The captain finding the ſurgeon obſtinate, ſuffered himſelf to be dreſſed, and ſwore he would confine Mackſhane as ſoon as the ſervice ſhould be over.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

A breach being made in the walls, our ſoldiers give the aſſault, and take the place without oppoſition—our ſailors at the ſame time become maſters of all the other ſtrengths near Boca Chica, and take poſſeſſion of the harbour—the good conſequence of this ſucceſs—we move nearer the town—find two forts deſerted, and the channel blocked up with ſunk veſſels; which, however, we find means to clear—land our ſoldiers at La Quinta—repulſe a body of militia—attack the caſtle of St. Lazar, and are forced to retreat with great loſs—the remains of our army are re-embarked—an effort of the admiral to take the town—the economy of our expedition deſcribed.

HAVING cannonaded the fort during the ſpace of four hours, we were all ordered to ſlip our cables, and ſheer off; but next day the engagement was renewed, and continued from the morning till the afternoon, when the enemy's fire from Boca Chica ſlackened, and towards evening was quite ſilenced. A breach being made on the other ſide, by our land battery, large

enough to admit a middle-ſized baboon, provided he could find means to climb up to it,—our general propoſed to give the aſſault that very night, and actually ordered a detachment on that duty. Providence ſtood our friend upon this occaſion, and put it into the hearts of the Spaniards to abandon the fort, which might have been maintained by reſolute men till the day of judgment, againſt all the force we could exert in the attack: And while our ſoldiers took poſſeſſion of the enemy's ramparts, without reſiſtance, the ſame good luck attended a body of ſailors, who made themſelves maſters of Fort St. Joſeph, the faſcine batteries, and one Spaniſh man of war; the other three being burnt or ſunk by the foe, that they might not fall into our hands. The taking of theſe forts, in the ſtrength of which the Spaniards chiefly confided, made us maſters of the outward harbour, and occaſioned great joy among us; as we laid our accounts with finding little or no oppoſition from the town: And, indeed, if a few great ſhips had ſailed up immediately, before they had recovered from the confuſion and deſpair that our unexpected ſucceſs had produced among them, it is not impoſſible that we might have finiſhed the affair to our ſatisfaction, without any more bloodſhed; but this ſtep our heroes diſdained, as a barbarous inſult over the enemy's diſtreſs, and gave them all the reſpite they could deſire, in order to recollect themſelves. In the mean time, Mackſhane, taking the advantage of this general exultation, waited on our captain, and pleaded his own cauſe ſo effectually, that he was re-eſtabliſhed in his good graces; and as for Crampley, there was no more notice taken of his behaviour towards me during the action. But of all the conſequences of the victory, none was more grateful than plenty of freſh water, after we had languiſhed five weeks on the allowance of a purſer's quart *per diem* for each man, in the Torrid Zone, where the ſun was vertical, and the expence of bodily fluid ſo great, that a gallon of liquor could ſcarce ſupply the waſte of twenty-four hours; eſpecially as our proviſion conſiſted of putrid ſalt beef, to which the ſailors gave the name of Iriſh horſe; ſalt pork of New England, which, though

neither fiſh nor fleſh, ſavoured of both; bread from the ſame country, every biſcuit whereof, like a piece of clock-work, moved by its own internal impulſe, occaſioned by the myriads of inſects that dwelt within it; and butter ſerved out by the gill, that taſted like train-oil thickened with ſalt. Inſtead of ſmall beer, each man was allowed three half-quarterns of brandy or rum, which were diſtributed every morning, diluted with a certain quantity of his water, without either ſugar or fruit to render it palatable; for which reaſon, this compoſition was, by the ſailors, not unaptly, ſtyled *Neceſſity*. Nor was this limitation of ſimple element owing to a ſcarcity of it on board, for there was at this time water enough in the ſhip for a voyage of ſix months, at the rate of half a gallon per day to each man: But this faſt muſt (I ſuppoſe) have been enjoined by way of penance on the ſhip's company for their ſins; or rather with a view to mortify them into a contempt of life, that they might thereby become more reſolute and regardleſs of danger. How ſimple, then, do thoſe people argue, who aſcribe the great mortality among us to our bad proviſion and want of water; and affirm, that a great many valuable lives might have been ſaved, if the uſeleſs tranſports had been employed in fetching freſh ſtock, turtle, fruit, and other refreſhments from Jamaica, and other adjacent iſlands, for the uſe of the army and fleet! ſeeing, it is to be hoped, that thoſe who died went to a better place, and thoſe who ſurvived were the more eaſily maintained. After all, a ſufficient number remained to fall before the walls of St. Lazar, where they behaved like their own country maſtiffs, which ſhut their eyes, run into the jaws of a bear, and have their heads cruſhed for their valour.

But to return to my narration: After having put garriſons into the forts we had taken, and re-embarked our ſoldiers and artillery, a piece of ſervice that detained us more than a week, we ventured up to the mouth of the inner harbour, guarded by a large fortification on one ſide, and a ſmall redoubt on the other, both of which were deſerted before our approach, and the entrance of the harbour blocked up by ſeveral old gal-

leons, and two men of war that the enemy had ſunk in the channel. We made ſhift, however, to open a paſſage for ſome ſhips, that favoured a ſecond landing of our troops, at a place called La Quinta, not far from the town, where, after a faint reſiſtance from a body of Spaniards, who oppoſed their diſembarkation, they encamped with a deſign of beſieging the caſtle of St. Lazar, which overlooked and commanded the city: Whether our renowned general had nobody in his army who knew how to approach it in form, or that he truſted entirely to the fame of his arms, I ſhall not determine; but, certain it is, a reſolution was taken in a council of war, to attack the place with muſquetry only: This was put in execution, and ſucceeded accordingly; the enemy giving them ſuch a hearty reception, that the greateſt part of the detachment took up their everlaſting reſidence on the ſpot. Our chief not reliſhing this kind of complaiſance in the Spaniards, was wiſe enough to retreat on board with the remains of his army, which, from eight thouſand able men landed on the beach near Boca Chica, was now reduced to fifteen hundred fit for ſervice. The ſick and wounded were ſqueezed into certain veſſels, which thence obtained the name of hoſpital ſhips, though methinks they ſcarce deſerved ſuch a creditable title, ſeeing few of them could boaſt of their ſurgeon, nurſe, or cook; and the ſpace between decks was ſo confined, that the miſerable patients had not room to ſit upright in their beds. Their wounds and ſtumps being neglected, contracted filth and putrefaction, and millions of maggots were hatched amidſt the corruption of their ſores. This inhuman diſregard was imputed to the ſcarcity of ſurgeons; though it is well known, that every great ſhip in the fleet could have ſpared one at leaſt for this duty; an expedient which would have been more than ſufficient to remove this ſhocking inconvenience: But, perhaps, the general was too much of a gentleman to aſk a favour of this kind from his fellow chief, who, on the other hand, would not derogate ſo much from his own dignity, as to offer ſuch aſſiſtance unaſked; for I may venture to affirm, that by this time the Demon of Diſ-

cord, with her ſooty wings, had breathed her influence upon our counſels; and it might be ſaid of theſe great men (I hope they will pardon the compariſon), as of Cæſar and Pompey, the one could not brook a ſuperior, and the other was impatient of an equal: So that, between the pride of one, and inſolence of another, the enterpriſe miſcarried, according to the proverb, "Between two ſtools the backſide falls to the ground." Not that I would be thought to liken any public concern to that opprobrious part of the human body, though I might with truth aſſert, if I durſt uſe ſuch a vulgar idiom, that the nation did hang an a—ſe at its diſappointment on this occaſion; neither would I preſume to compare the capacity of our heroic leaders to any ſuch wooden convenience as a joint-ſtool, or a cloſe-ſtool; but only to ſignify, by this ſimile, the miſtake the people committed in truſting to the union of two inſtruments that were never joined.

A day or two after the attempt on St. Lazar, the admiral ordered one of the Spaniſh men of war we had taken to be mounted with ſixteen guns, and manned with detachments from our great ſhips, in order to batter the town. Accordingly ſhe was towed into the inner harbour in the night, and moored within half a mile of the walls, againſt which ſhe began to fire at day-break; and continued about ſix hours expoſed to the oppoſition of at leaſt thirty pieces of cannon, which at length obliged our men to ſet her on fire, and get off as well as they could in their boats. This piece of conduct afforded matter of ſpeculation to all the wits either in the army or navy, who were at laſt fain to acknowledge it was a ſtroke of policy above their comprehenſion. Some entertained ſuch an irreverent opinion of the admiral's underſtanding, as to think he expected the town would ſurrender to his floating battery of ſixteen guns. Others imagined his ſole intention was to try the enemy's ſtrength, by which he ſhould be able to compute the number of great ſhips that would be neceſſary to force the town to a capitulation: But this laſt conjecture ſoon appeared groundleſs, in as much as no ſhips of any kind whatever were afterwards employed

on that ſervice. A third ſort ſwore, that no other cauſe could be aſſigned for this undertaking, than that which induced Don Quixote to attack the windmill. A fourth claſs (and that the moſt numerous, though, without doubt, compoſed of the ſanguine and malicious) plainly taxed this commander with want of honeſty, as well as ſenſe; and alleged, that he ought to have ſacrificed private pique to the intereſt of his country; that, where the lives of ſo many brave fellow-citizens were concerned, he ought to have concurred with the general, without being ſolicited, or even deſired, towards their preſervation and advantage; that, if his arguments could not diſſuade him from a deſperate enterpriſe, it was his duty to have rendered it as practicable as poſſible, without running extreme hazard; that this could have been done, with a good proſpect of ſucceſs, by ordering five or ſix large ſhips to batter the town, while the land forces ſtormed the caſtle; by theſe means a conſiderable diverſion would have been made in favour of thoſe troops, who, in their march to the aſſault, and in the retreat, ſuffered much more from the town than from the caſtle; that the inhabitants, ſeeing themſelves vigorouſly attacked on all hands, would have been divided, diſtracted, and confuſed, and, in all probability, unable to reſiſt the aſſailants. But all theſe ſuggeſtions ſurely proceeded from ignorance and malevolence, or elſe the admiral would not have found it ſuch an eaſy matter, at his return to England, to juſtify his conduct to a miniſtry at once ſo upright and diſcerning. True it is, that thoſe who undertook to vindicate him on the ſpot, aſſerted that there was not water enough for our great ſhips near the town; though this was a little unfortunately urged, becauſe there happened to be pilots in the fleet perfectly well acquainted with the ſoundings of the harbour, who affirmed there was water enough for five eighty gun ſhips to lie abreaſt, almoſt up at the very walls. The diſappointments we ſuffered occaſioned an univerſal dejection; which was not at all alleviated by the objects that daily and hourly entertained our eyes, nor by the proſpect of what muſt have inevitably happened, had we remained much longer in this place,

Such was the economy in ſome ſhips, that, rather than be at the trouble of interring the dead, the commanders ordered their men to throw their bodies overboard, many without either ballaſt or winding-ſheet; ſo that numbers of human carcaſes floated in the harbour, until they were devoured by ſharks and carrion crows, which afforded no agreeable ſpectacle to thoſe who ſurvived. At the ſame time the wet ſeaſon began, during which a deluge of rain falls from the riſing to the ſetting of the ſun without intermiſſion; and that no ſooner ceaſes, than it begins to thunder and lighten with ſuch continual flaſhing, that one can ſee to read a very ſmall print by the illumination.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

An epidemic fever rages among us—we abandon our conqueſts—I am ſeized with the diſtemper; write a petition to the captain, which is rejected—I am in danger of ſuffocation through the malice of Crampley; and relieved by a ſerjeant—my fever increaſes—the chaplain wants to confeſs me—I obtain a favourable criſis—Morgan's affection for me proved—the behaviour of Mackſhane and Crampley towards me—Captain Oakum is removed into another ſhip, with his beloved doctor—our new captain deſcribed—an adventure of Morgan.

The change of the atmoſphere, occaſioned by this phenomenon, conſpired, with the ſtench that ſurrounded us, the heat of the climate, our own conſtitutions impoveriſhed by bad proviſions, and our deſpair, to introduce the bilious fever among us, which raged with ſuch violence, that three fourths of thoſe whom it invaded died in a deplorable manner; the colour of their ſkin being, by the extreme putrefaction of the juices, changed into that of ſoot.

Our conductors, finding things in this ſituation, perceived it was high time to relinquiſh our conqueſts; and this we did, after having rendered their artillery uſeleſs, and blown up their walls with gunpowder. Juſt as we ſailed from Boca Chica on our return to Jamaica, I found myſelf threatened with the ſymptoms of this terrible diſtemper; and knowing very well that I

ſtood no chance for my life, if I ſhould be obliged to lie in the cockpit, which by this time was grown intolerable, even to people in health, by reaſon of the heat and unwholeſome ſmell of decayed proviſion, I wrote a petition to the captain, repreſenting my caſe, and humbly imploring his permiſſion to lie among the ſoldiers in the middle deck, for the benefit of the air: But I might have ſpared myſelf the trouble; for this humane commander refuſed my requeſt, and ordered me to continue in the place allotted for the ſurgeon's mates, or elſe to be contented to lie in the hoſpital, which, by the bye, was three degrees more offenſive and more ſuffocating than our own birth below. Another in my condition, perhaps, would have ſubmitted to his fate, and died in a pet; but I could not brook the thoughts of periſhing ſo pitifully, after I had weathered ſo many gales of hard fortune: I therefore, without minding Oakum's injunction, prevailed upon the ſoldiers (whoſe good will I had acquired) to admit my hammock among them, and actually congratulated myſelf upon my comfortable ſituation; which Crampley no ſooner underſtood, than he ſignified to the captain my contempt of his orders, and was inveſted with the power to turn me down again into my proper habitation. This barbarous piece of revenge incenſed me ſo much againſt the author, that I vowed, with bitter imprecations, to call him to a ſevere account, if ever it ſhould be in my power; and the agitation of my ſpirits increaſed my fever to a violent degree. While I lay gaſping for breath in this infernal abode, I was viſited by a ſerjeant, the bones of whoſe noſe I had reduced and ſet to rights, after they had been demoliſhed by a ſplinter during our laſt engagement. He being informed of my condition, offered me the uſe of his birth in the middle deck, which was encloſed with canvas, and well aired by a port-hole that remained open within it. I embraced this propoſal with joy, and was immediately conducted to the place, where I was treated, while my illneſs laſted, with the utmoſt tenderneſs and care by this grateful halberdier, who had no other bed for himſelf than a hencoop, during the whole paſſage. Here I lay, and enjoyed the breeze;

notwithſtanding which, my malady gained ground, and at length my life was deſpaired of, though I never loſt hopes of recovery, even when I had the mortification to ſee, from my cabin window, ſix or ſeven thrown overboard every day, who died of the ſame diſtemper. This confidence, I am perſuaded, conduced a great deal to the preſervation of my life, eſpecially when joined to another reſolution I took at the beginning, namely, to refuſe all medicine, which I could not help thinking co-operated with the diſeaſe, and, inſtead of reſiſting putrefaction, promoted a total degeneracy of the vital fluid. When my friend Morgan, therefore, brought his diaphoretic boluſes, I put them in my mouth, 'tis true, but without any intention of ſwallowing them; and, when he went away, ſpit them out, and waſhed my mouth with water-gruel: I ſeemingly complied in this manner, that I might not affront the blood of Caractacus, by a refuſal which might have intimated a diffidence of his phyſical capacity; for he acted as my phyſician, Doctor Mackſhane never once inquiring about me, or even knowing where I was. When my diſtemper was at the height, Morgan thought my caſe deſperate; and, after having applied a bliſter to the nape of my neck, ſqueezed my hand, bidding me, with a woful countenance, recommend myſelf to Got and my Reteemer; then taking his leave, deſired the chaplain to come and adminiſter ſome ſpiritual conſolation to me; but before he arrived, I made ſhift to rid myſelf of the troubleſome application the Welchman had beſtowed on my back. The parſon having felt my pulſe, inquired into the nature of my complaints, hemmed a little, and began thus: "Mr. Random, God out of his infinite mercy hath been pleaſed to viſit you with a dreadful diſtemper, the iſſue of which no man knows. You may be permitted to recover, and live many days on the face of the earth; and, which is more probable, you may be taken away and cut off in the flower of your youth: It is incumbent on you, therefore, to prepare for the great change, by repenting ſincerely of your ſins; of this there cannot be a greater ſign, than an ingenuous confeſſion, which I conjure you to make, without heſitation, or mental reſerva-

tion; and when I am convinced of your ſincerity, I will then give you ſuch comfort as the ſituation of your ſoul will admit of. Without doubt, you have been guilty of numberleſs tranſgreſſions to which youth is ſubject, as ſwearing, drunkenneſs, whoredom, and adultery; tell me, therefore, without reſerve, the particulars of each, eſpecially the laſt, that I may be acquainted with the true ſtate of your conſcience: For no phyſician will preſcribe for his patient until he knows the circumſtances of his diſeaſe." As I was not under any apprehenſions of death, I could not help ſmiling at the doctor's inquiſitive remonſtrance, which I told him ſavoured more of the Roman than of the Proteſtant church, in recommending auricular confeſſion; a thing, in my opinion, not at all neceſſary to ſalvation, and which, for that reaſon, I declined. This reply diſconcerted him a little; however, he explained away his meaning, in making learned diſtinctions between what was abſolutely neceſſary, and what was only convenient; then proceeded to aſk what religion I profeſſed: I anſwered, that I had not as yet conſidered the difference of religions, conſequently had not fixed on any one in particular, but that I was bred a Preſbyterian. At this word the chaplain expreſſed great aſtoniſhment, and ſaid he could not comprehend how a Preſbyterian was entitled to any poſt under the Engliſh government. Then he aſked if I had ever received the ſacrament, or taken the oaths; to which queſtions I replying in the negative, he held up his hands, aſſured me he could do me no ſervice, wiſhed I might not be in a ſtate of reprobation, and returned to his meſſmates, who were making merry in the ward-room, round a table well ſtored with bumbo * and wine. This inſinuation, terrible as it was, had not ſuch an affect upon me as the fever, which, ſoon after he had left me, grew outrageous; I began to ſee ſtrange chimeras, and concluded myſelf on the point of becoming delirious: In the mean time, being in great danger of ſuffocation, I ſtarted up in a kind of frantic fit, with an intention to plunge myſelf into the ſea; and as my friend the ſerjeant was not preſent, would certainly have cooled myſelf to ſome pur-

* Bumbo is a liquor compoſed of rum, ſugar, water, and nutmeg.

poſe, had I not perceived a moiſture upon my thigh, as I endeavoured to get out of my hammock: The appearance of this revived my hopes, and I had reflection and reſolution enough to take the advantage of this favourable ſymptom, by tearing the ſhirt from my body, and ſheets from my bed, and wrapping myſelf in a thick blanket, in which encloſure, for about a quarter of an hour, I felt the pains of hell; but it was not long before I was recompenſed for my ſuffering by a profuſe ſweat, that, burſting from the whole ſurface of my ſkin, in leſs than two hours relieved me from all my complaints, except that of weakneſs; and left me as hungry as a kite. I enjoyed a very comfortable nap, after which I was regaling myſelf with the agreeable reverie of my future happineſs, when I heard Morgan, on the outſide of the curtain, aſk the ſerjeant, if I was alive ſtill? "Alive! (cried the other), God forbid he ſhould be otherwiſe! he has lain quiet theſe five hours, and I do not chooſe to diſturb him, for ſleep will do him great ſervice." "Aye, ſaid my fellow mate, he ſleeps ſo ſound (look you), that he will never waken till the great trump blows. Got be merciful to his ſoul! He has paid his debt like an honeſt man. Aye, and moreover he is at reſt from all perſecutions, and troubles, and afflictions, of which, Got knows, and I know, he had his own ſhare. Ochree! Ochree! he was a promiſing youth indeed." So ſaying, he groaned grievouſly, and began to whine in ſuch a manner, as perſuaded me he had a real friendſhip for me. The ſerjeant, alarmed at his words, came into the birth, and while he looked upon me, I ſmiled, and tipped him the wink; he immediately gueſſed my meaning, and, remaining ſilent, Morgan was confirmed in his opinion of my being dead; whereupon he approached with tears in his eyes, in order to indulge his grief with the ſight of the object: And I counterfeited death ſo well, by fixing my eyes, and dropping my under jaw, that he ſaid, "There he lies, no petter than a lump of clay, Got help me;" and obſerved, by the diſtortion of my face, that I muſt have had a ſtrong ſtruggle. I ſhould not have been able to contain myſelf much longer, when he began to perform the laſt duty of a friend, in cloſing

on with an intention to be pulled off occaſionally, but were fixed with a curious ring on the little finger of each hand. In this garb Captain Whiffle (for that was his name) took poſſeſſion of the ſhip, ſurrounded with a crowd of attendants, all of whom, in their different degrees, ſeemed to be of their patron's diſpoſition; and the air was ſo impregnated with perfumes, that one may venture to affirm the clime of Arabia Fœlix was not half ſo ſweet-ſcented. My fellow-mate, obſerving no ſurgeon among his train, thought he had found an occaſion too favourable for himſelf to be neglected; and remembering the old proverb, "Spare to ſpeak, and ſpare to ſpeed," reſolved to ſolicit the new captain's intereſt immediatély, before any other ſurgeon could be appointed for the ſhip. With this view, he repaired to the cabin in his ordinary dreſs, conſiſting of a check ſhirt and trowſers, a brown linen waiſtcoat, and a night-cap of the ſame (neither of them very clean), which, for his future misfortune, happened to ſmell ſtrong of tobacco. Entering without any ceremony into this ſacred place, he found Captain Whiffle repoſing on a couch, with a wrapper of fine chintz about his body, and a muſlin cap bordered with lace about his head; and after ſeveral low conges, began in this manner: "Sir, I hope you will forgive, and excuſe, and pardon the preſumption of one who has not the honour of being known unto you, but who is, nevertheleſs, a ſhentleman porn and pred, and moreover has had misfortunes, Got help me, in the world." Here he was interrupted by the captain, who, on ſeeing him, had ſtarted up with great amazement at the novelty of the apparition; and having recollected himſelf, pronounced, with a look and tone ſignifying diſdain, curioſity, and ſurpriſe, "Zauns! who art thou?" "I am ſurgeon's firſt mate on board of this ſhip (replied Morgan), and I moſt vehemently deſire and beſeech you, with all ſubmiſſion, to be pleaſed to condeſcend and vouchſafe to inquire into my character, and my behaviour, and my deſerts, which, under Got, I hope, will entitle me to the vacancy of ſurgeon." As he proceeded in his ſpeech, he continued advancing towards the captain, whoſe noſtrils were no ſooner ſaluted with the aromatic flavour

that exhaled from him, than he cried with great emotion, "Heaven preſerve me! I am ſuffocated! Fellow, fellow, away with thee. Curſe thee, fellow! get thee gone. I ſhall be ſtunk to death!" At the noiſe of his outcries, his ſervants ran into his apartment, and he accoſted them thus: "Villains! cut-throats! traitors! I am betrayed! I am ſacrificed!—Will you not carry that monſter away? or muſt I be ſtifled with the ſtench of him! oh! oh!" With theſe interjections he ſunk down upon his ſettee in a fit; his valet de chambre plied him with a ſmelling bottle, one footman chafed his temples with Hungary water, another ſprinkled the floor with ſpirits of lavender, a third puſhed Morgan out of the cabin; who coming to the place where I was, ſat down with a demure countenance, and according to his cuſtom, when he received any indignity which he durſt not revenge, began to ſing a Welch ditty. I gueſſed he was under ſome agitation of ſpirits, and deſired to know the cauſe; but, inſtead of anſwering me directly, he aſked with great emotion, if I thought him a monſter and a ſtinkard? "A monſter and a ſtinkard (ſaid I, with ſome ſurpriſe), did any body call you ſo?" "Got is my judge (replied he), Captain Fiſle did call me both; aye, and all the water in the Tawy will not waſh it out of my remembrance. I do affirm, and avouch, and maintain, with my ſoul, and my pody, and my plood, look you, that I have no ſmells about me, but ſuch as a Chriſtian ought to have, except the effluvia of tobacco, which is a cephalic, odoriferous, aromatic herb, and he is a ſon of a mountain-goat who ſays otherwiſe. As for my being a monſter, let that be as it is: I am as Got was pleaſed to create me, which, peradventure, is more than I ſhall aver of him who gave me that title; for I will proclaim it before the world, that he is diſguiſed, and transfigured, and tranſmographied with affectation and whimſies, and that he is more like a papoon than one of the human race."

CHAPTER XXXV.

Captain Whiffle ſends for me—his ſituation deſcribed—his ſurgeon arrives, preſcribes for him, and puts him to bed—a bed is put up for Mr. Simper contiguous to the ſtate-room, which, with other parts of the captain's behaviour, gives the ſhip's company a very unfavourable idea of their commander—I am detained in the Weſt-Indies by the admiral, and go on board of the Lizard ſloop of war in quality of ſurgeon's mate, where I make myſelf known to the ſurgeon, who treats me very kindly—I go on ſhore, ſell my ticket, purchaſe neceſſaries, and, at my return on board, am ſurpriſed at the ſight of Crampley, who is appointed lieutenant of the ſloop—we ſail on a cruize—take a prize, in which I arrive at Port Morant, under the command of my meſs-mate, with whom I live in great harmony.

He was going on with an eulogium upon the captain, when I received a meſſage to clean myſelf, and go up to the great cabin; and with this command I inſtantly complied, ſweetening myſelf with roſe-water from the medicine-cheſt. When I entered the room, I was ordered to ſtand by the door, until Captain Whiffle had reconnoitred me at a diſtance with a ſpy glaſs. He having conſulted one ſenſe in this manner, bade me advance gradually, that his noſe might have intelligence, before it could be much offended: I therefore approached with great caution and ſucceſs, and he was pleaſed to ſay, "Aye, this creature is tolerable." I found him lolling on his couch with a languiſhing air, his head ſupported by his valet de chambre, who, from time to time, applied a ſmelling bottle to his noſe. "Vergette (ſaid he, in a ſqueaking tone), doſt thou think this wretch (meaning me) will do me no injury? may I venture to ſubmit my arm to him?" "Pon my vord (replied the valet), I do tink dat dere be great occaſion for your honour loſing one ſmall quantite of blodt; and the young man ave quelque choſe of de bonne mien." "Well then (ſaid his maſter), I think I muſt venture." Then, addreſſing himſelf to me, "Haſt thou ever blooded any body but brutes? But I need not aſk thee, for thou wilt tell me a moſt damnable lie." "Brutes, Sir (anſwered I, pulling down his glove, in order to feel his pulſe), I never meddle with brutes." "What the devil art thou about? (cried he) doſt thou intend to twiſt off my hand? God's

curſe! my arm is benumbed up to the very ſhoulder! Heaven have mercy upon me! muſt I periſh under the hands of ſavages? What an unfortunate dog was I, to come on board without my own ſurgeon, Mr. Simper!" I craved pardon for having handled him ſo roughly, and, with the utmoſt care and tenderneſs, tied up his arm with a fillet of ſilk. While I was feeling for the vein, he deſired to know how much blood I intended to take from him, and when I anſwered, "Not above twelve ounces," ſtarted up with a look full of horror, and bade me begone, ſwearing I had a deſign upon his life. Vergette appeaſed him with difficulty, and opening a bureau, took out a pair of ſcales, in one of which was placed a ſmall cup; and putting them into my hand, told me, the captain never loſt above an ounce and three drachms at one time. While I prepared for this important evacuation, there came into the cabin a young man gayly dreſſed, of a very delicate complexion, with a kind of languid ſmile on his face, which ſeemed to have been rendered habitual by a long courſe of affectation. The captain no ſooner perceived him, than, riſing haſtily, he flew into his arms, crying, "O! my dear Simper! I am exceſſively diſordered! I have been betrayed, frighted, murdered by the negligence of my ſervants, who ſuffered a beaſt, a mule, a bear to ſurpriſe me, and ſtink me into convulſions with the fumes of tobacco." Simper, who by this time, I found, was obliged to art for the clearneſs of his complexion, aſſumed an air of ſoftneſs and ſympathy, and lamented with many tender expreſſions of ſorrow, the ſad accident that had thrown him into that condition; then feeling his patient's pulſe on the outſide of his glove, gave it as his opinion, that his diſorder was entirely nervous, and that ſome drops of tincture of caſtor, and liquid laudanum would be of more ſervice to him than bleeding, by bridling the inordinate ſallies of his ſpirits, and compoſing the fermentation of his bile. I was therefore ſent to prepare this preſcription, which was adminiſtered in a glaſs of ſack poſſet; after the captain had been put to bed, and orders ſent to the officers on the quarter-deck, to let no body walk on that ſide under which he lay.

While the captain enjoyed his repoſe, the doctor watched over him, and indeed became ſo neceſſary, that a cabin was made for him contiguous to the ſtate-room, where Whiffle ſlept, that he might be at hand in caſe of accidents in the night. Next day, our commander being happily recovered, gave orders, that none of the lieutenants ſhould appear upon deck without a wig, ſword, and ruffles; nor any midſhipman, or other petty officer, be ſeen with a check ſhirt, or dirty linen. He alſo prohibited any perſon whatever, except Simper, and his own ſervants, from coming into the great cabin, without firſt ſending in to obtain leave. Theſe ſingular regulations did not prepoſſeſs the ſhip's company in his favour; but, on the contrary, gave ſcandal an opportunity to be very buſy with his character, and accuſe him of maintaining a correſpondence with his ſurgeon not fit to be named.

In a few weeks, our ſhip being under ſailing orders, I was in hope of reviſiting my native country in a very ſhort time, when the admiral's ſurgeon came on board, and ſending for Morgan and me to the quarter-deck, gave us to underſtand there was a great ſcarcity of ſurgeons in the Weſt-Indies; that he was commanded to detain one mate out of every great ſhip that was bound for England; and deſired us to agree between ourſelves, before the next day at that hour, which of us ſhould ſtay behind. We were thunderſtruck at this propoſal, and ſtared at one another ſome time without ſpeaking; at length the Welchman broke ſilence, and offered to remain in the Weſt-Indies, provided the admiral would give him a ſurgeon's warrant immediately: But he was told there was no want of chief ſurgeons, and that he muſt be contented with the ſtation of mate, till he ſhould be further provided for in due courſe: Whereupon Morgan flatly refuſed to quit the ſhip for which the Commiſſioners of the Navy had appointed him; and the other told him as plainly, that if we could not determine the affair by ourſelves before to-morrow morning, he muſt caſt lots, and abide by his chance. When I recalled to my remembrance the miſeries I had undergone in England, where I had not one friend to promote my intereſt, or favour my advancement in the navy, and, at

the ſame time, reflected on the preſent dearth of ſurgeons in the Weſt-Indies, and the unhealthineſs of the climate, which every day almoſt reduced the number, I could not help thinking my ſucceſs would be much more certain and expeditious, by my ſtaying where I was, than by returning to Europe. I therefore reſolved to comply with a good grace, and next day, when we were ordered to throw dice, told Morgan, he needed not trouble himſelf, for I would voluntarily ſubmit to the admiral's pleaſure. This frank declaration was commended by the gentleman, who aſſured me, it ſhould not fare the worſe with me for my reſignation. Indeed, he was as good as his word, and that very afternoon procured a warrant, appointing me ſurgeon's mate of the Lizard ſloop of war, which put me on a footing with every firſt mate in the ſervice.

My ticket being made out, I put my cheſt and bedding on board a canoe that lay along-ſide, and having ſhook hands with my truſty friend the ſerjeant, and honeſt Jack Rattlin, who was bound for Greenwich hoſpital, I took my leave of Morgan with many tears, after we had exchanged our ſleeve-buttons as remembrancers of each other. Having preſented my new warrant to the captain of the Lizard, I inquired for the doctor, whom I no ſooner ſaw, than I recollected him to be one of thoſe young fellows with whom I had been committed to the round-houſe, during our frolic with Jackſon, as I have related before. He received me with a good deal of courteſy, and when I put him in mind of our former acquaintance, expreſſed great joy at ſeeing me again, and recommended me to an exceeding good meſs, compoſed of the gunner and maſter's mate. As there was not one ſick perſon in the ſhip, I got leave to go aſhore next day with the gunner, who recommended me to a Jew that bought my ticket at the rate of 40 per cent. diſcount; and having furniſhed myſelf with what neceſſaries I wanted, returned on board in the evening, and, to my ſurpriſe, found my old antagoniſt Crampley walking upon deck. Though I did not fear his enmity, I was ſhocked at his appearance, and communicated my ſentiments on that ſubject to Mr. Tomlins the ſurgeon,

who told me that Crampley, by dint of ſome friends about the admiral, had procured a commiſſion, conſtituting him lieutenant on board the Lizard; and adviſed me, now he was my ſuperior officer, to behave with ſome reſpect towards him, or elſe he would find a thouſand opportunities of uſing me ill. This advice was a bitter potion to me, whom pride and reſentment had rendered utterly incapable of the leaſt ſubmiſſion to, or even of a reconciliation with, the wretch who had on many occaſions treated me ſo inhumanly: However, I reſolved to have as little connection as poſſible with him, and to ingratiate myſelf as much as I could with the reſt of the officers, whoſe friendſhip might be a bulwark to defend me from the attempts of his malice.

In leſs than a week we ſailed on a cruize, and, having weathered the eaſt end of the iſland, had the good fortune to take a Spaniſh barcolongo, with her prize, which was an Engliſh ſhip bound for Briſtol, that ſailed from Jamaica a fortnight before, without convoy. All the priſoners who were well we put on ſhore on the north ſide of the iſland; the prizes were manned with Engliſhmen, and the command of the barcolongo given to my friend the maſter's mate, with orders to carry them into Port Morant, and there to remain until the Lizard's cruize ſhould be ended, at which time ſhe would touch at the ſame place in her way to Port Royal. With him I was ſent to attend the wounded Spaniards as well as Engliſhmen, who amounted to ſixteen, and to take care of them on ſhore, in a houſe that was to be hired as an hoſpital. This deſtination gave me a great deal of pleaſure, as I ſhould for ſome time be freed from the arrogance of Crampley, whoſe inveteracy againſt me had already broke out on two or three occaſions ſince he was become a lieutenant. My meſs-mate, who very much reſembled my uncle, both in figure and diſpoſition, treated me on board of the prize with the utmoſt civility and confidence; and, among other favours, made me a preſent of a ſilver-hilted hanger, and a pair of piſtols mounted with the ſame metal, which fell to his ſhare in plundering the enemy. We arrived ſafely at Morant, and going on ſhore, pitched upon an empty ſtorehouſe,

which we hired for the reception of the wounded, who were brought to it next day, with beds and other neceſſaries; and four of the ſhip's company appointed to attend them and obey me.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

A ſtrange adventure—in conſequence of which I am extremely happy—Crampley does me ill offices with the captain: But his malice is defeated by the good nature and friendſhip of the ſurgeon—we return to Port Royal—our captain gets the command of a larger ſhip, and is ſucceeded by an old man—Brayl is provided for—we receive orders to ſail for England.

WHEN my patients were all in a fair way, my companion and commander, whoſe name was Brayl, carried me up the country to the houſe of a rich planter, with whom he was acquainted; where we were ſumptuouſly entertained, and, in the evening, ſet out on our return to the ſhip. When we had walked about a mile by moon-light, we perceived a horſeman behind us, who, coming up, wiſhed us *good even*, and aſked which way we went: His voice, which was quite familiar to me, no ſooner ſtruck my ear, than, in ſpite of all my reſolution and reflection, my hair briſtled up, and I was ſeized with a violent fit of trembling, which Brayl miſinterpreting, bade me be under no concern. I told him he was miſtaken in the cauſe of my diſorder; and, addreſſing myſelf to the perſon on horſeback, ſaid, "I could have ſworn by your voice, that you was a dear friend of mine, if I had not been certain of his death." To this addreſs, after ſome pauſe, he replied, "There are many voices as well as faces that reſemble one another; but pray, what was your friend's name?" I ſatisfied him in that particular, and gave a ſhort detail of the melancholy fate of Thomſon, not without many ſighs and ſome tears. A ſilence enſued, which laſted ſome minutes, and then the converſation turned on different ſubjects, till we arrived at a houſe on the road, where the horſeman alighted, and begged with ſo much earneſtneſs, that we would go in and drink a bowl of punch with him, that we could not

reſiſt. But if I was alarmed at his voice, what muſt my amazement be, when I diſcovered by the light the very perſon of my lamented friend! Perceiving my confuſion, which was extreme, he claſped me in his arms, and bedewed my face with tears. It was ſome time ere I recovered the uſe of my reaſon, overpowered with this event, and longer ſtill before I could ſpeak. So that all I was capable of was to return his embraces, and to mingle the overflowings of my joy with his; whilſt honeſt Brayl, affected with the ſcene, wept as faſt as either of us, and ſignified his participation of our happineſs, by hugging us both, and capering about the room like a madman. At length I retrieved the uſe of my tongue, and cried, "Is it poſſible, can you be my friend Thomſon? No certainly, alas! he was drowned! and I am now under the deception of a dream!" He was at great pains to convince me of his being the individual perſon whom I regretted, and, bidding me ſit down and compoſe myſelf, promiſed to explain his ſudden diſappearance from the Thunder, and to account for his being at preſent in the land of the living. This taſk he acquitted himſelf of, after I had drank a glaſs of punch, and recollected my ſpirits, by informing us, that, with a determination to rid himſelf of a miſerable exiſtence, he had gone in the night-time to the head, while the ſhip was on her way, from whence he ſlipped down as ſoftly as he could by the bows into the ſea, where, after he was heartily ducked, he began to repent of his precipitation, and, as he could ſwim very well, kept himſelf above water, in hopes of being taken up by ſome of the ſhips aſtern; that, in this ſituation, he hailed a large veſſel, and begged to be taken in, but was anſwered that ſhe was a heavy ſailer, and therefore they did not chooſe to loſe time by bringing to; however, they threw an old cheſt overboard for his convenience, and told him, that ſome of the ſhips aſtern would certainly ſave him; that no other veſſel came within ſight or cry of him for the ſpace of three hours, during which time he had the mortification to find himſelf in the middle of the ocean alone, without other ſupport or reſting place but what a few crazy boards afforded; till at laſt he diſcerned a

ſmall ſloop ſteering towards him, upon which he ſet up his throat, and had the good fortune to be heard and reſcued from the dreary waſte by their boat, which was hoiſted out on purpoſe. " I was no ſooner brought on board (continued he) than I fainted, and when I recovered my ſenſes, found myſelf in bed regaled with a moſt noiſome ſmell of onions and cheeſe, which made me think, at firſt, that I was in my own hammock, alongſide of honeſt Morgan, and that all which had paſſed was no more than a dream. Upon inquiry I underſtood that I was on board of a ſchooner belonging to Rhode Iſland, bound for Jamaica, with a cargo of geeſe, pigs, onions, and cheeſe; and that the maſter's name was Robertſon, by birth a North Briton, whom I knew at firſt ſight to be an old ſchool-fellow of mine. When I diſcovered myſelf to him, he was tranſported with ſurpriſe and joy, and begged to know the occaſion of my misfortune, which I did not think fit to diſcloſe, becauſe I knew his notions with regard to religion were very ſevere and confined; therefore contented myſelf with telling him, I fell overboard by accident; but made no ſcruple of explaining the nature of my diſagreeable ſtation, and of acquainting him with my determined purpoſe never to return to the Thunder man of war. Although he was not of my opinion in that particular, knowing that I muſt loſe my clothes, and what pay was due to me, unleſs I went back to my duty; yet, when I deſcribed the circumſtances of the helliſh life I led, under the tyrannic ſway of Oakum and Mackſhane; and, among other grievances, hinted a diſſatisfaction at the irreligious deportment of my ſhipmates, and the want of the true Preſbyterian goſpel doctrine; he changed his ſentiments, and conjured me with great vehemence and zeal to lay aſide all thought of riſing in the navy; and, that he might ſhow how much he had my intereſt at heart, undertook to provide for me, in ſome ſhape or other, before he ſhould leave Jamaica. This promiſe he performed to my heart's deſire, by recommending me to a gentleman of fortune, with whom I have lived ever ſince, in quality of ſurgeon and overſeer to his plantations. He and his lady are now at Kingſton, ſo that I

am, for the preſent, maſter of this houſe, to which from my ſoul I bid you welcome, and hope you will favour me with your company during the remaining part of the night."—I needed not a ſecond invitation; but Mr. Brayl, who was a diligent and excellent officer, could not be perſuaded to ſleep out of the ſhip; however, he ſupped with us, and, after having drank a cheerful glaſs, ſet out for the veſſel, which was not above three miles from the place, eſcorted by a couple of ſtout negroes, whom Mr. Thomſon ordered to conduct him. Never were two friends more happy in the converſation of each other than we, for the time it laſted: I related to him the particulars of our attempt upon Carthagena, of which he had heard but an imperfect account; and he gratified me with a narration of every little incident of his life ſince we parted. He aſſured me, it was with the utmoſt difficulty he could reſiſt his inclination of coming down to Port Royal to ſee Morgan and me, of whom he had heard no tidings ſince the day of our ſeparation; but that he was reſtrained by the fear of being detained as a deſerter. He told me, that, when he heard my voice in the dark, he was almoſt as much ſurpriſed as I was at ſeeing him afterwards; and, in the confidence of friendſhip, diſcloſed a paſſion he entertained for the only daughter of the gentleman with whom he lived, who, by his deſcription, was a very amiable young lady, and did not diſdain his addreſſes; that he was very much favoured by her parents, and did not deſpair obtaining their conſent to the match; which would at once render him independent of the world. I congratulated him on his good fortune, which he proteſted ſhould never make him forget his friends; and towards morning we betook ourſelves to reſt.

Next day he accompanied me to the ſhip, where Mr. Brayl entertained him at dinner, and we having ſpent the afternoon together, he took his leave of us in the evening, after he had forced upon me ten piſtoles, as a ſmall token of his affection. In ſhort, while we ſtaid here, we ſaw one another every day, and generally ate at the ſame table, which was plentifully ſupplied by him with all kinds of poultry, butcher's meat, oranges, limes,

lemons, pine apples, Madeira wine, and excellent rum; ſo that this ſmall interval of ten days was by far the moſt agreeable period of my life.

At length the Lizard arrived; and my patients being all fit for duty, they and I were ordered on board of her, where, I underſtood from Mr. Tomlins, that there was a dryneſs between the lieutenant and him on my account; that rancorous villain having taken the opportunity of my abſence to fill the captain's ears with a thouſand ſcandalous ſtories to my prejudice; among other things, affirming, that I had been once tranſported for theft, and that, when I was in the Thunder man of war, I had been whipt for the ſame crime. The ſurgeon, on the other hand, having heard my whole ſtory from my own mouth, defended me ſtrenuouſly, and, in the courſe of that good-natured office, recounted all the inſtances of Crampley's malice againſt me while I remained on board of that ſhip: Which declaration, while it ſatisfied the captain of my innocence, made the lieutenant as much my defender's enemy as mine. This infernal behaviour of Crampley, with regard to me, added ſuch fuel to my former reſentment, that, at certain times, I was quite beſide myſelf with the deſire of revenge, and was even tempted to piſtol him on the quarter deck, though an infamous death muſt inevitably have been my reward. But the ſurgeon, who was my confident, argued againſt ſuch a deſperate action ſo effectually, that I ſtifled the flame which conſumed me for the preſent, and reſolved to wait for a more convenient opportunity. In the mean time, that Mr. Tomlins might be the more convinced of the wrongs I ſuffered by this fellow's ſlander, I begged he would go and viſit Mr. Thomſon, whoſe wonderful eſcape I had made him acquainted with, and inquire of him into the particulars of my conduct, while he was my fellow mate. This requeſt the ſurgeon complied with, more through curioſity to ſee a perſon whoſe fate had been ſo extraordinary, than to confirm his good opinion of me, which, he aſſured me, was already firmly eſtabliſhed. He therefore ſet out for the dwelling-place of my friend, with a letter of introduction from me; and, being re-

ceived with all the civility and kindneſs I expected, returned to the ſhip, not only ſatisfied with my character beyond the power of doubt or inſinuation, but alſo charmed with the affability and converſation of Thomſon, who loaded him and me with preſents of freſh ſtocks, liquors, and fruit. As he would not venture to come and ſee us on board, leſt Crampley ſhould know and detain him, when the time of our departure approached, I obtained leave to go and bid him farewel. After we had vowed an everlaſting friendſhip, he preſſed upon me a purſe with four doubloons, which I refuſed as long as I could, without giving umbrage; and, having cordially embraced each other, I returned on board, where I found a ſmall box, with a letter directed for me, to the care of Mr. Tomlins. Knowing the ſuperſcription to be of Thomſon's hand-writing, I opened it with ſome ſurpriſe, and learned that this generous friend, not contented with loading me with the preſents already mentioned, had ſent, for my uſe and acceptance, half a dozen fine ſhirts, and as many linen waiſtcoats and caps, with twelve pair of new thread ſtockings.—Being thus provided with money, and all neceſſaries for the comfort of life, I began to look upon myſelf as a gentleman of ſome conſequence, and felt my pride dilate apace.

Next day we ſailed for Port Royal, where we arrived ſafely with our prizes; and, as there was nothing to do on board, I went aſhore, and, having purchaſed a laced waiſtcoat, with ſome other clothes, at a ſale, made a ſwaggering figure for ſome days among the taverns, where I ventured to play a little at hazard, and came off with fifty piſtoles in my pocket. Meanwhile, our captain was promoted to a ſhip of twenty guns, and the command of the Lizard given to a man turned of fourſcore, who had been lieutenant ſince the reign of King William, and, notwithſtanding his long ſervice, would have probably died in that ſtation, had he not applied ſome prize-money he had lately received, to make intereſt with his ſuperiors. My friend Brayl was alſo made an officer about the ſame time, after he had ſerved in quality of a midſhipman and mate five and twenty years.

Soon after theſe alterations, the admiral pitched upon our ſhip to carry home diſpatches for the miniſtry; and we ſet ſail for England, having firſt ſcrubbed her bottom, and taken in proviſion and water for the occaſion.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

We depart for Europe—a miſunderſtanding ariſes between the captain and ſurgeon, through the ſcandalous aſperſions of Crampley—the captain dies—Crampley tyrannizes over the ſurgeon, who falls a victim to his cruelty—I am alſo ill uſed—the ſhip ſtrikes—the behaviour of Crampley and the ſeamen on that occaſion—I get on ſhore, challenge the captain to ſingle combat—am treacherouſly knocked down, wounded, and robbed.

Now that I could return to my native country in a creditable way, I felt exceſſive pleaſure in finding myſelf out of ſight of that fatal iſland, which has been the grave of ſo many Europeans; and as I was accommodated with every thing to render the paſſage agreeable, I reſolved to enjoy myſelf as much as the inſolence of Crampley would permit. This inſidious ſlanderer had found means already to cauſe a miſunderſtanding between the ſurgeon and captain, who, by his age and infirmities, was rendered intolerably peeviſh, his diſpoſition having alſo been ſoured by a long courſe of diſappointments. He had a particular averſion to all young men, eſpecially to ſurgeons, whom he conſidered as unneceſſary animals on board of a ſhip; and, in conſequence of theſe ſentiments, never conſulted the doctor, notwithſtanding his being ſeized with a violent fit of the gout and gravel; but applied to a caſk of Holland gin, which was his ſovereign preſcription againſt all diſtempers. Whether he was at this time too ſparing, or took an overdoſe of his cordial, certain it is, he departed in the night, without any ceremony, which indeed was a thing he always deſpiſed, and was found ſtiff next morning, to the no ſmall ſatisfaction of Crampley, who ſucceeded to the command of the veſſel. For that very reaſon, Mr. Tomlins and I had no cauſe to rejoice at this event, fearing that the tyranny of our new com-

mander would now be as unlimited as his power. The firſt day of his command juſtified our apprehenſion: For, on pretence that the decks were too much crowded, he ordered the ſurgeon's hencoops, with all his fowls, to be thrown overboard; and at the ſame time prohibited him and me from appearing on the quarter-deck. Mr. Tomlins could not help complaining of theſe injuries, and, in the courſe of his expoſtulation, dropped ſome haſty words, of which Crampley taking hold, confined him to his cabin, where, in a few days, for want of air, he was attacked by a fever, which ſoon put an end to his life, after he had made his will, by which he bequeathed all his eſtate, perſonal and real, to his ſiſter, and left to me his watch and inſtruments, as memorials of his friendſhip. I was penetrated with grief on this melancholy occaſion; the more becauſe there was nobody on board to whom I could communicate my ſorrows, or of whom I could receive the leaſt conſolation or advice. Crampley was ſo far from diſcovering the leaſt remorſe for his barbarity, at the news of the ſurgeon's death, that he inſulted his memory in the moſt abuſive manner, and affirmed he had poiſoned himſelf out of pure fear, dreading to be brought to a court-martial for mutiny; for which reaſon he would not ſuffer the ſervice of the dead to be read over his body before it was thrown overboard.

Nothing but a ſpeedy deliverance could have ſupported me under the brutal ſway of this baſhaw, who, to render my life the more irkſome, ſignified to my meſs-mates a deſire that I ſhould be expelled from their ſociety. This was no ſooner hinted, than they granted his requeſt; and I was fain to eat in a ſolitary manner by myſelf during the reſt of the paſſage, which however ſoon drew to a period.

We had been ſeven weeks at ſea, when the gunner told the captain, that, by his reckoning, we muſt be in ſoundings, and deſired he would order the lead to be heaved. Crampley ſwore, he did not know how to keep the ſhip's way, for we were not within a hundred leagues of ſoundings, and therefore he would not give himſelf the trouble to caſt the lead. Accordingly we

ntinued our courſe all that afternoon and night, with-
it ſhortening ſail, although the gunner pretended to
ſcover Scilly light, and next morning proteſted in form
ainſt the captain's conduct, for which he was put in
nfinement. We diſcovered no land all that day, and
rampley was ſtill ſo infatuated as to neglect ſounding;
at at three o'clock in the morning, the ſhip ſtruck, and
mained faſt on a ſand-bank. This accident alarmed
e whole crew; the boat was immediately hoiſted out;
ut, as we could not diſcern which way the ſhore lay,
e were obliged to wait for day-light. In the mean-
me, the wind increaſed, and the waves beat againſt the
oop with ſuch violence, that we expected ſhe would
ave gone to pieces. The gunner was releaſed, and con-
ulted: He adviſed the captain to cut away the maſt, in
rder to lighten her; this expedient was performed with-
ut ſucceſs: The ſailors ſeeing things in a deſperate
ituation, according to cuſtom, broke up the cheſts be-
onging to the officers, dreſſed themſelves in their clothes,
rank their liquors without ceremony; and drunkenneſs,
umult, and confuſion enſued. In the midſt of this up-
oar, I went below to ſecure my own effects; and found
he carpenter's mate hewing down the purſer's cabin
with his hatchet, whiſtling all the while with great
compoſure. When I aſked his intention in ſo doing, he
replied very calmly, "I only want to taſte the purſer's
rum, that's all, maſter." At that inſtant the purſer com-
ing down, and ſeeing his effects going to wreck, com-
plained bitterly of the injuſtice done to him, and aſked
the fellow what occaſion he had for liquor, when in all
likelihood he ſhould be in eternity in a few minutes.
"All's one for that (ſaid the plunderer), let us live
while we can." "Miſerable wretch that thou art (cried
the purſer), what muſt be thy lot in the other world, if
thou dieſt in the commiſſion of robbery?" "Why, hell,
I ſuppoſe," replied the other, with great deliberation,
while the purſer fell on his knees, and begged of Heaven,
that we might not all periſh for the ſake of one Jonas.
During this dialogue, I clothed myſelf in my beſt ap-
parel, girded on my hanger, ſtuck my piſtols loaded in
my belt, diſpoſed of all my valuable moveables about

my perſon, and came upon deck with a reſolution of taking the firſt opportunity to get on ſhore, which, when the day broke, appeared at the diſtance of three miles a-head. Crampley finding his efforts to get the ſhip off ineffectual, determined to conſult his own ſafety, by going into the boat, which he had no ſooner done, than the ſhip's company followed ſo faſt, that ſhe would have ſunk long-ſide, had not ſome one wiſer than the reſt cut the rope, and put off. But before this happened, I had made ſeveral attempts to get in, and was always baulked by the captain, who was ſo eager in excluding me, that he did not mind the endeavours of any other body. Enraged at this inhuman partiality, and ſeeing the rope cut, I pulled one of my piſtols from my belt, and cocking it, ſwore I would ſhoot any man who would preſume to obſtruct my entrance. So ſaying, I leaped with my full exertion, and got on board of the boat with the loſs of the ſkin of my ſhins. I chanced in my deſcent to overturn Crampley, who no ſooner got up than he ſtruck at me ſeveral times with a cutlaſs, and ordered the men to throw me overboard; but they were too anxious about their own ſafety to mind what he ſaid. Though the boat was very deeply loaded, and the ſea terrible high, we made ſhift to get upon dry land in leſs than an hour after we parted from the ſloop. As ſoon as I ſet foot on *terra firma*, my indignation, which had boiled ſo long within me, broke out againſt Crampley, whom I immediately challenged to ſingle combat, preſenting my piſtols, that he might take his choice: He took one without heſitation, and, before I could cock the other, fired in my face, throwing the piſtol after the ſhot. I felt myſelf ſtunned, and imagining the bullet had entered my brain, diſcharged mine as quick as poſſible, that I might not die unrevenged; then flying upon my antagoniſt, knocked out ſeveral of his fore teeth, with the but-end of the piece, and would certainly have made an end of him with that inſtrument, had he not diſengaged himſelf, and ſeized his cutlaſs, which he had given to his ſervant when he received the piſtol. Seeing him armed in this manner, I drew my hanger, and having flung my piſtol at his head, cloſed with him in a tranſport of fury,

and thruſt my weapon into his mouth, which it enlarged on one ſide to his ear. Whether the ſmart of this wound diſconcerted him, or the unevenneſs of the ground made him reel, I know not, but he ſtaggered ſome paces back: I followed cloſe, and with one ſtroke cut the tendons of the back of his hand, upon which his cutlaſs dropt and he remained defenceleſs. I know not with what cruelty my rage might have inſpired me, if I had not at that inſtant been felled to the ground by a blow on the back part of my head, which deprived me of all ſenſation. In this deplorable ſituation, expoſed to the rage of an incenſed barbarian, and the rapine of an inhuman crew, I remained for ſome time; and whether any diſputes aroſe among them during the ſtate of my annihilation, I cannot pretend to determine; but in one particular they ſeem to have been unanimous, and acted with equal dexterity and diſpatch; for, when I recovered the uſe of underſtanding, I found myſelf alone in a deſolate place, ſtripped of my clothes, money, watch, buckles, and every thing but my ſhoes, ſtockings, breeches, and ſhirt. What a diſcovery muſt this have been to me, who but an hour before was worth ſixty guineas in caſh! I curſed the hour of my birth, the parents that gave me being, the ſea that did not ſwallow me up, the poignard of the enemy, which could not find the way to my heart, the villainy of thoſe who had left me in that miſerable condition; and, in the ecſtaſy of deſpair, reſolved to lie ſtill where I was, and periſh.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

I get up, and crawl into a barn, where I am in danger of periſhing through the fear of the country people—their inhumanity—I am ſuccoured by a reputed witch—her ſtory—her advice—ſhe recommends me as a valet to a ſingle lady, whoſe character ſhe explains.

But as I lay ruminating, my paſſion inſenſibly abated; I conſidered my ſituation in quite another light from that in which it appeared to me at firſt, and the reſult of my deliberation was to riſe if I could, and crawl to the next

inhabited place for aſſiſtance. With ſome difficulty I got upon my legs, and having examined my body, found I had received no other injury than two large contuſed wounds, one on the fore, and another on the hinder part of my head; which ſeemed to be occaſioned by the ſame weapon, namely, the but-end of a piſtol. I looked towards the ſea, but could diſcern no remains of the ſhip; ſo that I concluded ſhe was gone to pieces, and that thoſe who remained in her had periſhed: But as I afterwards learned, the gunner, who had more ſagacity than Crampley, obſerving that it was flood when he left her, and that ſhe would probably float at high water, made no noiſe about getting on ſhore, but continued on deck, in hopes of bringing her ſafe into ſome harbour, after the commander ſhould have deſerted her; for which piece of ſervice he expected, no doubt, to be handſomely rewarded. This ſcheme he accordingly executed, and was promiſed great things by the admiralty for ſaving his Majeſty's ſhip; but I never heard he reaped the fruits of his expectation. As for my own part, I directed my courſe towards a ſmall cottage I perceived, and, in the road, picked up a ſeaman's old jacket, which I ſuppoſe the thief who dreſſed himſelf in my clothes had thrown away; this was a very comfortable acquiſition to me, who was almoſt ſtiff with cold: I therefore put it on, and as my natural heat revived, my wounds, which had left off bleeding, burſt out afreſh; ſo that, finding myſelf exceſſively exhauſted, I was about to lie down in the fields, when I diſcovered a barn on my left hand, within a few yards of me: Thither I made ſhift to ſtagger, and finding the door open, went in, but ſaw nobody; however I threw myſelf upon a truſs of ſtraw, hoping to be ſoon relieved by ſome perſon or other. I had not lain here many minutes, when I ſaw a countryman come in with a pitch-fork in his hand, which he was upon the point of thruſting into the ſtraw that concealed me, and, in all probability, would have done my buſineſs, had I not uttered a dreadful groan, after having eſſayed in vain to ſpeak. This melancholy note alarmed the clown, who ſtarted back, and diſcovering a body all beſmeared with blood, ſtood trembling, with the pitch-fork extended be-

fore him, his hair briſtling up, his eyes ſtaring, his noſtrils dilated, and his mouth wide open. At another time I ſhould have been much diverted by this figure, which preſerved the ſame attitude very near ten minutes, during which time I made many unſucceſsful efforts to implore his compaſſion and aſſiſtance; but my tongue failed me, and my language was only a repetition of groans: At length an old man arrived, who, ſeeing the other in ſuch a poſture, cried, "Mercy upon en! the leaad's bewitched;—why Dick, beeſt thou beſayd thyſelf!" Dick, without moving his eyes from the object that terrified him, replied, "O vather! vather! here be either the devil or a dead mon: I doant know which o'en, but a groans woundily." The father, whoſe eyeſight was none of the beſt, pulled out his ſpectacles, and having applied them to his noſe, reconnoitred me over his ſon's ſhoulder: But no ſooner did he behold me, than he was ſeized with a fit of ſhaking, even more violent than Dick's, and, with a broken accent, addreſſed me thus: "In the name of the Vather, Zun, and Holy Ghoſt, I charge you, an you been Satan, to be gone to the Red Zea; but an you be a murdered man, ſpeak, that you may have a chriſtom burial." As I was not in a condition to ſatisfy him in this particular, he repeated his conjuration to no purpoſe; and they continued a good while in the agonies of fear. At length the father propoſed that the ſon ſhould draw nearer, and take a more diſtinct view of the apparition; but Dick was of opinion, that his father ſhould advance firſt, as being an old man paſt his labour, and if he received any miſchief, the loſs would be the ſmaller; whereas he himſelf might eſcape, and be uſeful in his generation. This prudential reaſon had no effect upon the ſenior, who ſtill kept Dick between me and him. In the mean time, I endeavoured to raiſe one hand as a ſignal of diſtreſs, but had only ſtrength ſufficient to produce a ruſtling among the ſtraw, which diſcompoſed the young peaſant ſo much, that he ſprung out at the door, and overthrew his father in his flight. The old gentleman would not ſpend time in getting up, but crawled backwards like a crab, with great ſpeed, till he had got over the threſhold,

mumbling exorciſms all the way. I was exceedingly mortified to find myſelf in danger of periſhing through the ignorance and cowardice of theſe clowns; and felt my ſpirits decay a-pace, when an old woman entered the barn, followed by the two fugitives, and with great intrepidity advanced to the place where I lay, ſaying, "If it be the devil I fear en not, and for a dead mon, a can do us no harm." When ſhe ſaw my condition, ſhe cried, "Here be no devil, but in youren fool's head. Here be a poor miſerable wretch, bleeding to death, and if a dies, we muſt be at the charge of burying him; therefore, Dick, go vetch the old wheel-barrow and put en in, and carry en to 'goodman Hodge's back door; he is more able than we to lay out money upon poor vagrants." Her advice was taken, and immediately put in execution: I was rolled to the other farmer's door, where I was tumbled out like a heap of dung; and would certainly have fallen a prey to the hogs, if my groans had not diſturbed the family, and brought ſome of them out to view my ſituation. But Hodge reſembled the Jew more than the good Samaritan, and ordered me to be carried to the houſe of the parſon, whoſe buſineſs it was to practiſe as well as to preach charity: Obſerving, that it was ſufficient for him to pay his *quota*, towards the maintenance of the poor belonging to his own pariſh. When I was ſet down at the vicar's gate, he fell into a mighty paſſion, and threatened to excommunicate him who ſent, as well as thoſe who brought me, unleſs they would move me immediately to another place. About this time, I fainted with the fatigue I had undergone, and afterwards underſtood that I was bandied from door to door through a whole village, nobody having humanity enough to adminiſter the leaſt relief to me, until an old woman, who was ſuſpected of witchcraft by the neighbourhood, hearing of my diſtreſs, received me into her houſe, and having dreſſed my wounds, brought me to myſelf with cordials of her own preparing. I was treated with great care and tenderneſs by this grave matron, who, after I had recovered ſome ſtrength, deſired to know the particulars of my laſt diſaſter. This piece of ſatisfaction I could not refuſe to one who had ſaved

my life; therefore related all my adventures without exaggeration or reſerve. She ſeemed ſurpriſed at the viciſſitudes I had undergone, and drew a happy preſage of my future life from my paſt ſufferings, then launched out into the praiſe of adverſity with ſo much ardour and good ſenſe, that I concluded ſhe was a perſon who had ſeen better days, and conceived a longing deſire to hear her ſtory. She perceived my drift by ſome words I dropped, and ſmiling, told me, there was nothing either entertaining or extraordinary in the courſe of her fortune; but, however, ſhe would communicate it to me, in conſideration of the confidence I had repoſed in her. "It is of little conſequence (ſaid ſhe) to tell the names of my parents, who are dead many years ago: Let it ſuffice to aſſure you, they were wealthy, and had no other child than me; ſo that I was looked upon as heireſs to a conſiderable eſtate, and teized with addreſſes on that account. Among the number of my admirers, there was a young gentleman of no fortune, whoſe ſole dependence was on his promotion in the army, in which at that time he bore a lieutenant's commiſſion. I conceived an affection for this amiable officer, which, in a ſhort time, increaſed to a violent paſſion, and, without entering into minute circumſtances, married him privately. We had not enjoyed one another long, in ſtolen interviews, when he was ordered with his regiment to Flanders; but, before he ſet out, it was agreed between us, that he ſhould declare our marriage to my father by letter, and implore his pardon for the ſtep we had taken without his approbation. This diſcovery was made while I was abroad viſiting, and juſt as I was about to return home, I received a letter from my father, importing, that ſince I had acted ſo undutifully and meanly, as to marry a beggar, without his privity or conſent, to the diſgrace of his family, as well as the diſappointment of his hopes, he renounced me to the miſerable fate I had entailed upon myſelf, and charged me never to ſet foot within his doors again. This rigid ſentence was confirmed by my mother, who, in a poſtſcript, gave me to underſtand, that her ſentiments were exactly conformable to thoſe of my father, and that I might ſave myſelf the trouble of mak-

ing any applications, for her reſolutions were unalterable. Thunderſtruck with my evil fortune, I called a coach and drove to my huſband's lodgings, where I found him waiting the event of his letter. Though he could eaſily divine by my looks the iſſue of his declaration, he read with great ſteadineſs the epiſtle I had received; and, with a ſmile full of tenderneſs, which I ſhall never forget, embraced me, ſaying, *I believe the good lady your mother might have ſpared herſelf the trouble of the laſt part of her poſtſcript. Well, my dear Betty, you muſt lay aſide all thoughts of a coach, till I can procure the command of a regiment.* This unconcerned behaviour, while it enabled me to ſupport my reverſe of fortune, at the ſame time endeared him to me the more, by convincing me of his diſintereſted views in eſpouſing me. I was next day boarded in company with the wife of another officer, who had long been the friend and confident of my huſband, at a village not far from London, where they parted with us in the moſt melting manner, went to Flanders, and were killed in fight of one another at the battle of the Wood. Why ſhould I tire you with a deſcription of our unutterable ſorrow at the fatal news of this event, the remembrance of which now fills my aged eyes with tears! When our grief ſubſided a little, and reflection came to our aid, we found ourſelves deſerted by the whole world, and in danger of periſhing by want: Whereupon we made application for the penſion, and were put upon the liſt. Then vowing eternal friendſhip, ſold our jewels and ſuperfluous clothes, retired to this place (which is in the county of Suſſex), bought this little houſe, where we lived many years in a ſolitary manner, indulging our mutual ſorrow, till it pleaſed Heaven to call away my companion two years ago, ſince which time I have lingered out an unhappy being, in hopes of a ſpeedy diſſolution, when I promiſe myſelf the eternal reward of all my cares. In the mean time (continued ſhe) I muſt inform you of the character I bear among the neighbours:—My converſation being different from that of the inhabitants of the village, my recluſe way of life, my ſkill in curing diſtempers, which I acquired from books ſince I ſettled here, and laſtly, my

age, have made the common people look upon me as ſomething preternatural, and I am actually at this hour believed to be a witch. The parſon of the pariſh, whoſe acquaintance I have not been at much pains to cultivate, taking umbrage at my ſuppoſed diſreſpect, has contributed not a little towards the confirmation of this opinion, by dropping certain hints to my prejudice among the vulgar, who are alſo very much ſcandalized at my entertaining this poor tabby cat with the collar about her neck, which was a favourite of my deceaſed companion."

The whole behaviour of this venerable perſon was ſo primitive, innocent, ſenſible, and humane, that I contracted a filial reſpect for her, and begged her advice with regard to my future conduct, as ſoon as I was in a condition to act for myſelf. She diſſuaded me from a deſign I had formed of travelling to London, in hopes of retrieving my clothes and pay, by returning to my ſhip, which by this time, I read in the newſpaper, was ſafely arrived in the river Thames: "Becauſe (ſaid ſhe) you run the hazard of being treated not only as a deſerter in quitting the ſloop, but alſo as a mutineer in aſſaulting your commanding officer, to the malice of whoſe revenge you will moreover be expoſed." She then promiſed to recommend me as ſervant to a ſingle lady of her acquaintance, who lived in the neighbourhood with her nephew, who was a young fox-hunter of great fortune, where I might be very happy, provided I could bear the diſpoſition and manners of my miſtreſs, which were ſomewhat whimſical and particular. But, above all things, ſhe counſelled me to conceal my ſtory, the knowledge of which would effectually poiſon my entertainment; for it was a maxim among moſt people of condition, that no gentleman in diſtreſs ought to be admitted into a family as a domeſtic, leſt he become proud, lazy, and inſolent. I was fain to embrace this humble propoſal, becauſe my affairs were deſperate; and in a few days was hired by this lady, to ſerve in quality of her footman; having been repreſented by my hoſteſs as a young man who was bred up to the ſea by his relations againſt his will, and had ſuffered ſhip-

wreck, which had increaſed his diſguſt to that way of life ſo much, that he rather choſe to go to ſervice on ſhore, than enter himſelf on board of any other ſhip. Before I took poſſeſſion of my new place, ſhe gave me a ſketch of my miſtreſs's character, that I might know better how to regulate my conduct. "Your lady (ſaid ſhe) is a maiden of forty years, not ſo remarkable for her beauty, as her learning and taſte, which is famous all over the country. Indeed ſhe is a perfect female virtuoſo; and ſo eager after the purſuit of knowledge, that ſhe neglects her perſon even to a degree of ſluttiſhneſs; this negligence, together with her contempt of the male part of the creation, gives her nephew no great concern, as by theſe means he will probably keep her fortune, which is conſiderable, in the family. He therefore permits her to live in her own way, which is ſomething extraordinary, and gratifies her in all her whimſical deſires. Her apartment is at ſome diſtance from the other inhabited parts of the houſe, and conſiſts of a dining-room, bed-chamber, and ſtudy: She keeps a cook-maid, waiting-woman, and footman of her own; and ſeldom eats or converſes with any of the family but her niece, who is a very lovely creature, and humours her aunt often to the prejudice of her own health, by ſitting up with her whole nights together; for your miſtreſs is too much of a philoſopher to be ſwayed by the cuſtoms of the world, and never ſleeps or eats like other people. Among other odd notions, ſhe profeſſes the principles of Roſicrucius; and believes the earth, air, and ſea, are inhabited by inviſible beings, with whom it is poſſible for the human ſpecies to entertain correſpondence and intimacy, on the eaſy condition of living chaſte. As ſhe hopes one day to be admitted into an acquaintance of this kind, ſhe no ſooner heard of me and my cat, than ſhe paid me a viſit, with a view, as ſhe has ſince owned, to be introduced to my familiar, and was greatly mortified to find herſelf diſappointed in her expectation. Being, by this viſionary turn of mind, abſtracted as it were from the world, ſhe cannot advert to the common occurrences of life; and therefore is fre-

quently ſo abſent, as to commit very ſtrange miſtakes and extravagancies, which you will do well to rectify and repair as your prudence ſhall ſuggeſt."

CHAPTER XXXIX.

My reception by that lady—I become enamoured of Narciſſa—recount the particulars of my laſt misfortune—acquire the good opinion of my miſtreſs—an account of the young ſquire—I am made acquainted with more particulars of Narciſſa's ſituation—conceive a mortal hatred againſt Sir Timothy—examine my lady's library and performances—her extravagant behaviour.

FRAUGHT with theſe uſeful inſtructions, I repaired to the place of her habitation, and was introduced by the waiting-woman to the preſence of my lady, who had not before ſeen me. She ſat in her ſtudy, with one foot on the ground, and the other upon a high ſtool at ſome diſtance from her ſeat; her ſandy locks hung down in a diſorder I cannot call beautiful, from her head, which was deprived of its coif, for the benefit of ſcratching with one hand, while ſhe held the ſtump of a pen in the other. Her forehead was high and wrinkled; her eyes were large, gray, and prominent; her noſe was long, ſharp, and aquiline; her mouth of vaſt capacity; her viſage meagre and freckled, and her chin beaked like a ſhoemaker's paring-knife; her upper lip contained a large quantity of plain Spaniſh, which, by continual falling, had embroidered her neck, that was not naturally very white, and the breaſt of her gown, that flowed looſe about her with a negligence truly poetic, diſcovering linen that was very fine, and to all appearance never *waſhed but in Caſtalian ſtreams*. Around her lay heaps of books, globes, quadrants, teleſcopes, and other learned apparatus: Her ſnuff-box ſtood at her right hand; at her left hand lay her handkerchief, ſufficiently uſed; and a convenience to ſpit in appeared on one ſide of her chair. She being in a reverie when we entered, the maid did not think proper to diſturb her; ſo that we waited ſome minutes unobſerved, during

which time ſhe bit the quill ſeveral times, altered her poſition, made many wry faces, and at length, with an air of triumph, repeated aloud,

Nor dare th' immortal Gods my rage oppoſe!

Having committed her ſucceſs to paper, ſhe turned towards the door, and, perceiving us, cried, "What's the matter?"—"Here's the young man (replied my conductreſs) whom Mrs. Sagely recommended as a footman to your ladyſhip." On this information ſhe ſtared in my face a conſiderable time, and then aſked my name, which I thought proper to conceal under that of John Brown. After having ſurveyed me with a curious eye, ſhe broke out into, "O! ay, thou waſt ſhipwrecked, I remember. Whether didſt thou come on ſhore on the back of a whale or a dolphin?"—To this I anſwered, I had ſwam aſhore without any aſſiſtance.—Then ſhe demanded to know if I had ever been at the Helleſpont, and ſwam from Ceſtos to Abydos. I replied, in the negative: Upon which ſhe bade the maid order a ſuit of new livery for me, and inſtruct me in the articles of my duty: So ſaying, ſhe ſpit in her ſnuff-box, and wiped her noſe with her cap, which lay on the table, inſtead of a handkerchief. We returned to the kitchen, where I was regaled by the maids, who ſeemed to vie with each other in expreſſing their regard for me; and from them I underſtood that my buſineſs conſiſted in cleaning knives and forks, laying the cloth, waiting at table, carrying meſſages, and attending my lady when ſhe went abroad. There was a very good ſuit of livery in the houſe, which had belonged to my predeceſſor, deceaſed, and it fitted me exactly; ſo that there was no occaſion for employing a tailor on my account. I had not long been equipped in this manner, when my lady's bell rung; upon which I ran up ſtairs, and found her ſtalking about the room in her ſhift and under petticoat only: I would have immediately retired as became me, but ſhe bade me come in, and air a clean ſhift for her; which operation I having performed with ſome backwardneſs, ſhe put it on before me without any ceremony, and I verily believe was ignorant of my ſex all that

time, as being quite abſorpt in contemplation. About four o'clock in the afternoon, I was ordered to lay the cloth, and place two covers, which I underſtood were for my miſtreſs and her niece, whom I had not as yet ſeen. Though I was not very dextrous at this work, I performed it pretty well for a beginner; and, when dinner was upon the table, ſaw my miſtreſs approach, accompanied by the young lady, whoſe name, for the preſent, ſhall be Narciſſa. So much ſweetneſs appeared in the countenance and carriage of this amiable apparition, that my heart was captivated at firſt ſight, and, while dinner laſted, I gazed upon her without intermiſſion. Her age ſeemed to be ſeventeen, her ſtature tall, her ſhape unexceptionable; her hair, that fell down upon her ivory neck in ringlets, black as jet; her arched eye-brows of the ſame colour; her eyes piercing, yet tender; her lips of the conſiſtence and hue of cherries; her complexion clear, delicate, and healthy; her aſpect noble, ingenuous, and humane; and the whole perſon ſo raviſhingly delightful, that it was impoſſible for any creature endued with ſenſibility, to ſee without admiring, and admire without loving her to exceſs! I began to curſe the ſervile ſtation that placed me ſo far beneath the regard of this idol of my adoration! and yet I bleſſed my fate, that enabled me to enjoy daily the ſight of ſo much perfection! When ſhe ſpoke, I liſtened with pleaſure; but, when ſhe ſpoke to me, my ſoul was thrilled with an ecſtaſy of tumultuous joy! I was even ſo happy as to be the ſubject of their converſation: For Narciſſa having obſerved me, ſaid to her aunt, "I ſee your new footman is come." Then addreſſing herſelf to me, aſked, with ineffable complacency, if I was the perſon who had been ſo cruelly uſed by robbers? When I ſatisfied her in this, ſhe expreſſed a deſire of knowing the other particulars of my fortune, both before and ſince my being ſhipwrecked. Hereupon (as Mrs. Sagely had counſelled me) I told her that I had been bound apprentice to the maſter of a ſhip, contrary to my inclination, which ſhip had foundered at ſea; that I, and four more, who chanced to be on deck when ſhe went down, made ſhift to ſwim to the ſhore, when my

companions, after having overpowered me, ſtript me to the ſhirt, and left me, as they imagined, dead of the wounds I received in my own defence. Then I related the circumſtances of my being found in a barn, with the inhuman treatment I met with from the country people and parſon; the deſcription of which, I perceived, drew tears from the charming creature's eyes! When I had finiſhed my recital, my miſtreſs ſaid, "*Ma foy! le garçon eſt bien fait!*" To which opinion Narciſſa aſſented, with a compliment to my underſtanding in the ſame language, that flattered my vanity extremely.

The converſation, among other ſubjects, turned upon the young ſquire, whom my lady inquired after under the title of the Savage; and was informed by her niece, that he was ſtill in bed, repairing the fatigue of laſt night's debauch, and recruiting ſtrength and ſpirits to undergo a fox-chaſe to-morrow morning, in company with Sir Timothy Thicket, Squire Bumper, and a great many other gentlemen of the ſame ſtamp, whom he had invited on that occaſion; ſo that, by day-break, the whole houſe would be in an uproar. This was a very diſagreeable piece of news to the virtuoſo, who proteſted ſhe would ſtuff her ears with cotton when ſhe went to bed, and take a doſe of opium to make her ſleep the more ſound, that ſhe might not be diſturbed and diſtracted by the clamour of the brutes.

When their dinner was over, I and my fellow-ſervants ſat down to ours in the kitchen, where I underſtood that Sir Timothy Thicket was a wealthy knight in the neighbourhood, between whom and Narciſſa a match had been projected by her brother, who promiſed at the ſame time to eſpouſe Sir Timothy's ſiſter; by which means, as their fortunes were pretty equal, the young ladies would be provided for, and their brothers be never the poorer; but that the ladies did not concur in the ſcheme, each of them entertaining a hearty contempt for the perſon allotted to her for a huſband by this agreement. This information begat in me a mortal averſion to Sir Timothy, whom I looked upon as my rival, and curſed in my heart for his preſumption. Next

norning, by day-break, being awaked by the noiſe of he hunters and hounds, I roſe to view the cavalcade, nd had a ſight of my competitor, whoſe accompliſhnents (the eſtate excluded) did not ſeem brilliant enough o give me much uneaſineſs with reſpect to Narciſſa, who, I flattered myſelf, was not to be won by ſuch qualifications as he was maſter of, either as to perſon or mind. My miſtreſs, notwithſtanding her precaution, was ſo much diſturbed by her nephew's company, that ſhe did not riſe till five o'clock in the afternoon: So that I had an opportunity of examining her ſtudy at leiſure, to which examination I was ſtrongly prompted by my curioſity. Here I found a thouſand ſcraps of her own poetry, conſiſting of three, four, ten, twelve, and twenty lines, on an infinity of ſubjects, which, as whim inſpired, ſhe had begun, without conſtancy or capacity to bring to any degree of compoſition: But, what was very extraordinary in a female poet, there was not the leaſt mention made of love in any of her performances. I counted fragments of five tragedies, the titles of which were, "The Stern Philoſopher—The Double Murder—The Sacrilegious Traitor—The Fall of Lucifer—and The Laſt Day." From whence I gathered, that her diſpoſition was gloomy, and her imagination delighted with objects of horror. Her library was compoſed of the beſt Engliſh hiſtorians, poets, and philoſophers; of all the French critics and poets, and of a few books in Italian, chiefly poetry, at the head of which were Taſſo and Arioſto, pretty much uſed. Beſides theſe, tranſlations of the claſſics into French, but not one book in Greek or Latin; a circumſtance that diſcovered her ignorance in theſe languages. After having taken a full view of this collection, I retired, and, at the uſual time, was preparing to lay the cloth, when I was told by the maid that her miſtreſs was ſtill in bed, and had been ſo affected with the notes of the hounds in the morning, that ſhe actually believed herſelf a hare beſet by the hunters; and begged a few greens to munch for breakfaſt. When I expreſſed my ſurpriſe at this unaccountable imagination, ſhe gave me to underſtand, that her lady was very much ſubject to whims of this nature;

ſometimes fancying herſelf an animal, ſometimes a piece of furniture, during which conceited transformations it was very dangerous to come near her, eſpecially when ſhe repreſented a beaſt; for that, lately, in the character of a cat, ſhe had flown at her, and ſcratched her face in a terrible manner; that, ſome months ago, ſhe propheſied the general conflagration was at hand, and nothing would be able to quench it but her water, which therefore ſhe kept ſo long that her life was in danger; and ſhe muſt needs have died of the retention, had they not found an expedient to make her evacuate, by kindling a bonfire under her chamber window, and perſuading her that the houſe was in flames; upon which, with great deliberation, ſhe bade them bring all the tubs and veſſels they could find, to be filled, for the preſervation of the houſe, into one of which ſhe immediately diſcharged the cauſe of her diſtemper. I was alſo informed, that nothing contributed ſo much to the recovery of her reaſon as muſic, which was always adminiſtered on thoſe occaſions by Narciſſa, who played perfectly well on the harpſichord, and to whom ſhe (the maid) was juſt then going to intimate her aunt's diſorder. She was no ſooner gone, than I was ſummoned by the bell to my lady's chamber, where I found her ſitting ſquat on her hams on the floor, in the manner of puſs when ſhe liſtens to the outcries of her purſuers. When I appeared, ſhe ſtarted up with an alarmed look, and ſprung to the other ſide of the room to avoid me, whom, without doubt, ſhe miſtook for a beagle thirſting after her life. Perceiving her extreme confuſion, I retired, and, on the ſtair-caſe, met the adorable Narciſſa coming up, to whom I imparted the ſituation of my miſtreſs: She ſaid not a word, but, ſmiling with unſpeakable grace, went into her aunt's apartment, and in a little time my ears were raviſhed with the effects of her ſkill. She accompanied the inſtrument with a voice ſo ſweet and melodious, that I did not wonder at the ſurpriſing change it produced on the ſpirits of my miſtreſs, which were ſoon compoſed to peace and ſober reflection.

About ſeven o'clock the hunters arrived, with the ſkins of two foxes and one badger, carried before them as tro-

phies of their ſucceſs: And, when they were about to ſit down to dinner (or ſupper), Sir Timothy Thicket deſired that Narciſſa would honour the table with her preſence: But this requeſt, notwithſtanding her brother's threats and entreaties, ſhe refuſed, on pretence of attending her aunt, who was indiſpoſed; ſo I enjoyed the ſatisfaction of ſeeing my rival mortified: But this diſappointment made no great impreſſion on him, who conſoled himſelf with the bottle, of which the whole company became ſo enamoured, that, after a moſt horrid uproar of laughing, ſinging, ſwearing, dancing, and fighting, they were all carried to bed in a ſtate of utter oblivion. My duty being altogether detached from the Squire and his family, I led a pretty eaſy and comfortable life, drinking daily intoxicating draughts of love from the charms of Narciſſa, which brightened on my contemplation every day more and more. Inglorious as my ſtation was, I became blind to my own unworthineſs, and even conceived hopes of one day enjoying this amiable creature, whoſe affability greatly encouraged theſe preſumptuous thoughts.

CHAPTER XL.

My miſtreſs is ſurpriſed at my learning—communicates her performances to me—I impart ſome of mine to her—am mortified at her faint praiſe—Narciſſa approves of my conduct—I gain an involuntary conqueſt over the cook-wench and dairy-maid—their mutual reſentment and inſinuations—the jealouſy of their lovers.

DURING this ſeaſon of love and tranquillity, my muſe, which had lain dormant ſo long, awoke, and produced ſeveral ſmall performances on the ſubject of my flame: But, as it concerned me nearly to remain undiſcovered in my real character and ſentiments, I was under a neceſſity of mortifying my deſire of praiſe, by confining my works to my own peruſal and applauſe. In the mean time I ſtrove to inſinuate myſelf into the good opinion of both ladies; and ſucceeded ſo well, by my diligence and dutiful behaviour, that, in a little time, I was

at leaſt a favourite ſervant; and frequently enjoyed the pleaſure of hearing myſelf mentioned in French and Italian, with ſome degree of warmth and ſurpriſe, by the dear object of all my wiſhes, as a perſon who had ſo much of the gentleman in my appearance and diſcourſe, that ſhe could not for her ſoul treat me like a common lacquey. My prudence and modeſty were not long proof againſt theſe bewitching compliments. One day, while I waited at dinner, the converſation turned upon a knotty paſſage of Taſſo's Gieruſalem, which, it ſeems, had puzzled them both: After a great many unſatisfactory conjectures, my miſtreſs, taking the book out of her pocket, turned up the place in queſtion, and read the ſentence over and over without ſucceſs; at length, deſpairing of finding the author's meaning, ſhe turned to me, ſaying, "Come hither, Bruno, let us ſee what fortune will do for us; I will interpret to thee what goes before and what follows this obſcure paragraph, the particular words of which I will alſo explain, that thou mayeſt, by comparing one with another, gueſs the ſenſe of that which perplexes us." I was too vain to let ſlip this opportunity of diſplaying my talents, therefore, without heſitation, read and explained the whole of that which had diſconcerted them, to the utter aſtoniſhment of both. Narciſſa's face and lovely neck were overſpread with bluſhes, from which I drew a favourable omen, while her aunt, after having ſtared at me a good while with a look of amazement, exclaimed, "In the name of heaven! Who art thou?" I told her I had picked up a ſmattering of Italian, during a voyage up the Straits. At this explanation ſhe ſhook her head, and obſerved, that no ſmatterer could read as I had done. She then deſired to know if I underſtood French? To which queſtion I anſwered in the affirmative: She aſked, if I was acquainted with the Latin and Greek? I replied, "A little."—"Oho! (continued ſhe) and with philoſophy and mathematics, I ſuppoſe?"—I owned, I knew ſomething of each. Then ſhe repeated her ſtare and interrogation. I began to repent of my vanity, and, in order to repair the fault I had committed, ſaid, it was not to be wondered at if I had a tolerable education, for

earning was ſo cheap in my country, that every peaſant was a ſcholar; but I hoped her ladyſhip would think my underſtanding no exception to my character. She was pleaſed to anſwer, "No, no, God forbid." During the reſt of the time they ſat at table, they behaved with remarkable reſerve.

This alteration gave me great uneaſineſs; and I paſſed the night without ſleep, in melancholy reflections on the vanity of young men, which prompts them to commit ſo many fooliſh actions, contrary to their own ſober judgment. Next day, however, inſtead of profiting by his ſelf-condemnation, I yielded ſtill more to the dictates of the principle I had endeavoured to chaſtiſe, and, if fortune had not befriended me more than prudence could expect, I ſhould have been treated with the contempt it deſerved. After breakfaſt, my lady, who was a true author, bade me follow her into the ſtudy, where ſhe expreſſed herſelf thus: "Since you are ſo learned, you cannot be void of taſte; therefore I am to deſire your opinion of a ſmall performance in poetry, which I lately compoſed. You muſt know I have planned a tragedy, the ſubject of which ſhall be the murder of a prince before the altar, where he is buſy at his devotions. After the deed is perpetrated, the regicide will harangue the people with the bloody dagger in his hand; and I have already compoſed a ſpeech, which I think will ſuit the character extremely—Here it is."—Then taking up a ſcrap of paper, ſhe read with violent emphaſis and geſture, as follows:

Thus have I ſent the ſimple king to hell,
Without or coffin, ſhrou[illegible], or paſſing bell:
To me, what are divine and human laws?
I court no ſanction but my own applauſe!
Rapes, robb'ries, treaſons, yield my ſoul delight;
And human carnage gratifies my ſight:
I drag the parent by the hoary hair,
And toſs the ſprawling infant on my ſpear,
While the fond mother's cries regale mine ear.
I fight, I vanquiſh, murder friends and foes;
Nor dare th' immortal gods my rage oppoſe.

Though I did great violence to my underſtanding in praiſing this unnatural rhapſody, I nevertheleſs extolled it as a production that of itſelf deſerved immortal fame;

and beſought her ladyſhip to bleſs the world with the fruits of thoſe uncommon talents Heaven had beſtowed upon her. She ſmiled with a look of ſelf-complacency, and, encouraged by the incenſe I had offered, communicated all her poetical works, which I applauded one by one, with as little candour as I had ſhown at firſt. Satiated with my flattery, which, I hope, my ſituation juſtified, ſhe could not in conſcience refuſe me an opportunity of ſhining in my turn; and, therefore, after a compliment to my nice diſcernment and taſte, obſerved, that, doubtleſs, I muſt have produced ſomething in that way myſelf, which ſhe deſired to ſee. This was a temptation I could by no means reſiſt. I owned, that, while I was at college, I wrote ſome ſmall detached pieces, at the deſire of a friend who was in love; and at her requeſt repeated the following verſes, which indeed my love for Narciſſa had inſpired.

On CELIA, *playing on the* Harpſichord *and* Singing.

I.

When Sappho ſtruck the quiv'ring wire,
The throbbing breaſt was all on fire:
And, when ſhe rais'd the vocal lay,
The captive ſoul was charm'd away.

II.

But had the nymph poſſeſs'd with theſe,
Thy ſofter, chaſter power to pleaſe;
Thy beauteous air of ſprightly youth,
Thy native ſmiles of artleſs truth;

III.

The worm of grief had never prey'd
On the forſaken love-ſick maid:
Nor had ſhe mourn'd an hapleſs flame,
Nor daſh'd on rocks her tender frame.

My miſtreſs paid me a cold compliment on my verſification, which, ſhe ſaid, was elegant enough, but the ſubject beneath the pen of a true poet. I was extremely nettled at her indifference, and looked at Narciſſa, who by this time had joined us, for her approbation; but ſhe declined giving her opinion, proteſting ſhe was no judge of theſe matters: So that I was forced to retire, very much baulked in my expectation, which was generally a little too ſanguine. In the afternoon, however, the waiting-maid aſſured me that Narciſſa had ex-

by Narciſſa, and I could not bear the thoughts of doing any thing derogatory of the paſſion I entertained for her.

CHAPTER XLI.

Narciſſa being in danger from the brutality of Sir Timothy, is reſcued by me, who revenge myſelf on my rival—I declare my paſſion, and retreat to the ſea-ſide—am ſurrounded by ſmugglers, and carried to Boulogne —find my uncle Lieutenant Bowling in great diſtreſs, and relieve him —our converſation.

At certain intervals, my ambition would revive; I would deſpiſe myſelf for my tame reſignation to my forlorn fate, and revolve an hundred ſchemes for aſſuming the character of a gentleman, to which I thought myſelf entitled by birth and education. In theſe fruitleſs ſuggeſtions time ſtole away unperceived, and I had already remained eight months in the ſtation of a footman, when an accident happened that put an end to my ſervitude, and for the preſent baniſhed all hopes of ſucceeding in my love.

Narciſſa went one day to viſit Miſs Thicket, who lived with her brother within leſs than a mile of our houſe, and was perſuaded to walk home in the cool of the evening, accompanied by Sir Timothy, who, having a good deal of the brute in him, was inſtigated to uſe ſome unbecoming familiarities with her, encouraged by the ſolitarineſs of a field through which they paſſed. The lovely creature was incenſed at his rude behaviour, for which ſhe reproached him in ſuch a manner, that he loſt all regard to decency, and actually offered violence to this pattern of innocence and beauty. But Heaven would not ſuffer ſo much goodneſs to be violated; and ſent me, who, paſſing by accident near the place, was alarmed with her cries, to her ſuccour. What were the emotions of my ſoul when I beheld Narciſſa, almoſt ſinking beneath the brutal force of this ſatyr! I flew like lightning to her reſcue, and he perceiving me, quitted his prey, and drew his hanger to chaſtiſe my preſumption. My indignation was too high to admit one thought

of fear: ſo that, ruſhing upon him, I ſtruck his weapon out of his hand, and uſed my cudgel ſo ſucceſsfully, that he fell to the ground, and lay, to all appearance, without ſenſe. Then I turned to Narciſſa, who had ſwooned, and ſitting down by her, gently raiſed her head, and ſupported it on my boſom, while, with my hand around her waiſt, I kept her in that poſition. My ſoul was thrilled with tumultuous joy at feeling the object of my deareſt wiſhes within my arms; and while ſhe lay inſenſible, I could not refrain from applying my cheek to hers, and raviſhing a kiſs. In a little time, the blood began to reviſit her face; ſhe opened her enchanting eyes, and having recollected her late ſituation, ſaid, with a look full of tender acknowldgment, "Dear John, I am eternally obliged to you!" So ſaying, ſhe made an effort to riſe, in which I aſſiſted her, and ſhe proceeded to the houſe, leaning upon me all the way. I was a thouſand times tempted by this opportunity to declare my paſſion, but the dread of diſobliging her reſtrained my tongue. We had not moved an hundred paces from the ſcene of her diſtreſs, when I perceived Sir Timothy riſe and walk homeward; a circumſtance, which, though it gave me ſome ſatisfaction, in as much as I thereby knew I had not killed him, filled me with juſt apprehenſion of his reſentment, which I found myſelf in no condition to withſtand; eſpecially when I conſidered his intimacy with our ſquire, to whom I knew he could juſtify himſelf for what he had done, by imputing it to his love, and deſiring his brother Bruin to take the ſame liberty with his ſiſter, without any fear of offence. When we arrived at the houſe, Narciſſa aſſured me, ſhe would exert all her influence in protecting me from the revenge of Thicket, and likewiſe engage her aunt in my favour. At the ſame time, pulling out her purſe, offered it as a ſmall conſideration for the ſervice I had done her. But I ſtood too much upon the punctilios of love, to incur the leaſt ſuſpicion of being mercenary, and refuſed the preſent, by ſaying, I had merited nothing by barely doing my duty. She ſeemed aſtoniſhed at my diſintereſtedneſs, and bluſhed: I felt the ſame ſuffuſion, and, with a downcaſt eye and broken accent, told her, I had one re-

queſt to make, which, if her generoſity would grant, I ſhould think myſelf fully recompenſed for an age of miſery. She changed colour at this preamble, and, with great confuſion, replied, ſhe hoped my good ſenſe would hinder me from aſking any thing ſhe was bound in honour to refuſe, and therefore bade me ſignify my deſire. Upon which I kneeled, and begged to kiſs her hand. She immediately, with an averted look, ſtretched it out; I imprinted on it an ardent kiſs, and bathing it with my tears, cried, "Dear Madam, I am an unfortunate gentleman, and love you to diſtraction; but would have died a thouſand deaths rather than make this declaration under ſuch a ſervile appearance, were I not determined to yield to the rigour of my fate, to fly from your bewitching preſence, and bury my preſumptuous paſſion in eternal ſilence." With theſe words I roſe and went away, before ſhe could recover her ſpirits ſo far as to make any reply. My firſt care was to go and conſult Mrs. Sagely, with whom I had maintained a friendly correſpondence ever ſince I left her houſe. When ſhe underſtood my ſituation, the good woman, with real concern, condoled me on my unhappy fate, and approved of my reſolution to leave the country, as being perfectly well acquainted with the barbarous diſpoſition of my rival, "who by this time (ſaid ſhe) has no doubt meditated a ſcheme of revenge. Indeed I cannot ſee how you will be able to elude his vengeance; being himſelf in the commiſſion, he will immediately grant warrants for apprehending you; and as almoſt all the people in this country are dependent on him or his friend, it will be impoſſible for you to find ſhelter among them: If you ſhould be apprehended, he will commit you to jail, where you may poſſibly languiſh in great miſery till the next aſſizes, and then be tranſported for aſſaulting a magiſtrate." While ſhe thus warned me of my danger, we heard a knocking at the door, which threw us both into great conſternation, as, in all probability, it was occaſioned by my purſuers: Whereupon this generous old lady, putting two guineas into my hand, with tears in her eyes, bade me, for God's ſake, get out at the back door, and conſult my ſafety as Provi-

dence ſhould direct me. There was no time for deliberation. I followed her advice, and eſcaped by the benefit of a dark night to the ſea ſide, where, while I ruminated on my next excurſion, I was all of a ſudden ſurrounded by armed men, who, having bound my hands and feet, bade me make no noiſe, on pain of being ſhot, and carried me on board of a veſſel, which I ſoon perceived to be a ſmuggling cutter. This diſcovery gave me ſome ſatisfaction at firſt, becauſe I concluded myſelf ſafe from the reſentment of Sir Timothy: But when I found myſelf in the hands of ruffians, who threatened to execute me for a ſpy, I would have thought myſelf happily quit for a year's impriſonment, or even tranſportation. It was in vain for me to proteſt my innocence: I could not perſuade them that I had taken a ſolitary walk to their haunt, at ſuch an hour, merely for my own amuſement; and I did not think it my intereſt to diſcloſe the true cauſe of my retreat, becauſe I was afraid they would have made their peace with juſtice, by ſurrendering me to the penalty of the law. What confirmed their ſuſpicion was, the appearance of a cuſtom-houſe yacht, which gave them chaſe, and had well nigh made a prize of the veſſel; when they were delivered from their fears by a thick fog, which effectually ſcreened them, and favoured their arrival at Boulogne. But before they got out of ſight of their purſuer, they held a council of war about me; and ſome of the moſt ferocious among them would have thrown me overboard, as a traitor who had betrayed them to their enemies; but others, more conſiderate, alleged, that, if they put me to death, and ſhould afterwards be taken, they could expect no mercy from the Legiſlature, which would never pardon outlawry aggravated by murder. It was therefore determined by a plurality of votes, that I ſhould be ſet on ſhore in France, and left to find my paſſage back to England as I ſhould think proper, this being puniſhment ſufficient for the bare ſuſpicion of a crime in itſelf not capital. Although this favourable determination gave me great pleaſure, the apprehenſion of being robbed would not ſuffer me to be perfectly at eaſe. To prevent this cala-

mity, as ſoon as I was untied, in conſequence of the foreſaid deciſion, I tore a ſmall hole in one of my ſtockings, into which I dropped ſix guineas, reſerving half a piece and ſome ſilver in my pocket, that, finding ſomething, they might not be tempted to make any further inquiry. This was a very neceſſary precaution; for when we came within ſight of the French ſhore, one of the ſmugglers told me, I muſt pay for my paſſage. To this declaration I replied, that my paſſage was none of my own ſeeking; therefore they could not expect a reward from me for tranſporting me into a ſtrange country by force. "Damme! (ſaid the outlaw) none of your palaver; but let me ſee what money you have got." So ſaying, he thruſt his hand into my pocket without any ceremony, and emptied it of the contents: Then caſting an eye at my hat and wig, which captivated his fancy, he took them off, and clapping his own on my head, declared, that a fair exchange was no robbery. I was fain to put up with the bargain, which was by no means favourable to me; and a little while after we went all on ſhore together.

I reſolved to take my leave of theſe deſperadoes without much ceremony, when one of them cautioned me againſt appearing to their prejudice, if ever I returned to England, unleſs I had a mind to be murdered; for which ſervice, he aſſured me, the gang never wanted agents. I promiſed to obſerve his advice, and departed for the Upper Town, where I inquired for a carbaret, or public-houſe, into which I went, with an intention of taking ſome refreſhment. In the kitchen, five Dutch ſailors ſat at breakfaſt, with a large loaf, a firkin of butter, and a cag of brandy, the bung of which they often applied to their mouths with great perſeverance and ſatisfaction. At ſome diſtance from them I perceived another perſon in the ſame garb, ſitting in a penſive ſolitary manner, entertaining himſelf with a whiff of tobacco, from the ſtump of a pipe as black as jet. The appearance of diſtreſs never failed to attract my regard and compaſſion: I approached this forlorn tar with a view to offer him my aſſiſtance; and, notwithſtanding the alteration of dreſs, and diſguiſe of a long beard, I

diſcovered in him my long loſt and lamented uncle and benefactor, Lieutenant Bowling! Good Heaven! what were the agitations of my ſoul, between the joy of finding again ſuch a valuable friend, and the ſorrow of ſeeing him in ſuch a low condition! The tears guſhed down my cheeks: I ſtood motionleſs and ſilent for ſome time; at length, recovering the uſe of ſpeech, exclaimed, "Gracious God! Mr. Bowling!" My uncle no ſooner heard his name mentioned, than he ſtarted up, crying with ſome ſurpriſe, "Holloa!" and after having looked at me ſtadfaſtly, without being able to recollect me, ſaid, "Did you call me, brother?" I told him I had ſomething extraordinary to communicate, and deſired him to give me the hearing for a few minutes in another room; but he would by no means conſent to this propoſal, ſaying, "Avaſt there, friend; none of your tricks upon travellers; if you have any thing to ſay to me, do it above board; you need not be afraid of being overheard; here are none who underſtand our lingo." Though I was loth to diſcover myſelf before company, I could no longer refrain from telling him I was his own nephew, Roderick Random. On this information, he conſidered me with great earneſtneſs and aſtoniſhment, and recalling my features, which, though enlarged, were not entirely altered ſince he had ſeen me, came up, and ſhook me by the hand very cordially, proteſting he was glad to ſee me well. After ſome pauſe, he went on thus: "And yet, my lad, I am ſorry to ſee you under ſuch colours; the more ſo, as it is not in my power, at preſent, to change them for the better, times being very hard with me." With theſe words, I could perceive a tear trickle down his furrowed cheeks, which affected me ſo much, that I wept bitterly. Imagining my ſorrow was the effect of my own misfortunes, he comforted me, with obſerving, that life was a voyage in which we muſt expect to meet with all weathers; ſometimes it was calm, ſometimes rough; that a fair gale often ſucceeded a ſtorm; that the wind did not always ſit one way, and that deſpair ſignified nothing; but that reſolution and ſkill were better than a ſtout veſſel; for why? becauſe they ra-

quire no carpenter, and grow ſtronger the more labour they undergo. I dried up my tears, which I aſſured him were not ſhed for my own diſtreſs, but for his, and begged leave to accompany him into another room, where we could converſe more at our eaſe. There I recounted to him the ungenerous uſage I had met with from Potion; at which relation he ſtarted up, ſtalked acroſs the room three or four times in a great hurry, and, graſping his cudgel, cried, "I would I were along-ſide of him—that's all—I would I were along-ſide of him!" I then gave him a detail of all my adventures and ſufferings, which affected him more than I could have imagined; and concluded with telling him that Captain Oakum was ſtill alive, and that he might return to England when he would to ſolicit his affairs, without danger or moleſtation. He was wonderfully pleaſed with this piece of information, of which, however, he ſaid he could not at preſent avail himſelf, for want of money to pay for his paſſage to London. This objection I ſoon removed, by putting five guineas into his hand, and telling him, I thought myſelf extremely happy in having an opportunity of manifeſting my gratitude to him in his neceſſity. But it was with the utmoſt difficulty I could prevail upon him to accept of two, which he affirmed were more than ſufficient to defray the neceſſary expence. After this friendly conteſt was over, he propoſed we ſhould have a meſs of ſomething: "For (ſaid he) it has been banyan day with me a great while. You muſt know I was ſhipwrecked five days ago, near a place called Liſieux, in company with thoſe Dutchmen who are now drinking below; and having but little money when I came aſhore, it was ſoon ſpent, becauſe I let them have ſhare and ſhare while it laſted. Howſomever, I ſhould have remembered the old ſaying, *Every hog his own apple*: For when they found my hold unſtowed, they went all hands to ſhooling and begging, and becauſe I would not take a ſpell at the ſame duty, refuſed to give me the leaſt aſſiſtance; ſo that I have not broke bread theſe two days." I was ſhocked at the extremity of his diſtreſs, and ordered ſome bread, cheeſe, and wine to be brought im-

mediately, to allay his hunger, until a fricaſſee of chickens could be prepared. When he had recruited his ſpirits with this homely fare, I deſired to know the particulars of his peregrination, ſince the accident at Cape Tiberoon; which were briefly theſe: The money he had about him being all ſpent at Port Louis, the civility and hoſpitality of the French cooled to ſuch a degree, that he was obliged to liſt on board of one of their king's ſhips as a common foremaſt-man, to prevent himſelf from ſtarving on ſhore. In this ſituation he continued two years, during which time he had acquired ſome knowledge of their language, and the reputation of a good ſeaman: The ſhip he belonged to was ordered home to France, where ſhe was laid up, as unfit for ſervice, and he was received on board of one of Monſieur D'Antin's ſquadron, in quality of quarter-maſter; which office he performed in a voyage to the Weſt-Indies, where they engaged with our ſhip, as before related; but his conſcience upbraiding him for ſerving the enemies of his country, he quitted the ſhip at the ſame place where he firſt liſted, and got to Curacoa in a Dutch veſſel; there he bargained with a ſkipper bound to Europe, to work for his paſſage to Holland, from whence he was in hopes of hearing from his friends in England; but was caſt away, as he mentioned before, on the French coaſt, and muſt have been reduced to the neceſſity of travelling on foot to Holland, and begging for his ſubſiſtence on the road, or of entering on board of another French man of war, at the hazard of being treated as a deſerter, if providence had not ſent me to his ſuccour. "And now, my lad (continued he), I think I ſhall ſteer my courſe directly to London, where I do not doubt of being replaced, and of having the R taken off me by the Lords of the Admiralty, to whom I intend to write a petition, ſetting forth my caſe. If I ſucceed, I ſhall have wherewithal to give you ſome aſſiſtance, becauſe, when I left the ſhip, I had two years pay due to me: Therefore I deſire to know whither you are bound; and beſides, perhaps, I may have intereſt enough to procure a warrant appointing you ſurgeon's mate of the ſhip to which I ſhall belong. For the beadle of the Admiralty

is my good friend; and he and one of the under-clerks are ſworn brothers, and that under-clerk has a good deal to ſay with one of the upper-clerks, who is very well known to the under-ſecretary, who, upon his recommendation, I hope will recommend my affair to the firſt ſecretary; and he again will ſpeak to one of the lords in my behalf: So that you ſee I do not want friends to aſſiſt me on occaſion—As for the fellow, Crampley, tho'f I know him not, I am ſure he is neither ſeaman, nor officer, by what you have told me, or elſe he could never be ſo much miſtaken in his reckoning, as to run the ſhip on ſhore on the coaſt of Suſſex, before he believed himſelf in ſoundings; neither, when that accident happened, would he have left the ſhip until ſhe had been ſtove to pieces, eſpecially when the tide was making; wherefore, by this time, I do ſuppoſe he has been tried by a court-martial, and executed for his cowardice and miſconduct." I could not help ſmiling at the deſcription of my uncle's ladder, by which he propoſed to climb to the attention of the board of Admiralty; and though I knew the world too well, to conſide in ſuch dependence myſelf, I would not diſcourage him with doubts; but aſked if he had no friend in London, who would advance a ſmall ſum of money to enable him to appear as he ought, and make a ſmall preſent to the under ſecretary, who might poſſibly diſpatch his buſineſs the ſooner on that account. He ſcratched his head, and, after ſome recollection, replied, "Why, yes, I believe Daniel Whipcord the ſhip-chandler in Wapping would not refuſe me ſuch a ſmall matter. I know I can have what credit I want, for lodging, liquor, and clothes; but as to money, I won't be poſitive: Had honeſt Block been living, I ſhould not have been at a loſs." I was heartily ſorry to find a worthy man ſo deſtitute of friends, when he had ſuch need of them; and looked upon my own ſituation as leſs miſerable than his, becauſe I was better acquainted with the ſelfiſhneſs and roguery of mankind, conſequently leſs liable to diſappointment and impoſition.

CHAPTER XLII.

He takes his paſſage in a cutter for Deal—we are accoſted by a prieſt, who proves to be a Scotchman—his profeſſion of friendſhip—he is affronted by the lieutenant, who afterwards appeaſes him by ſubmiſſion—my uncle embarks—I am introduced by a prieſt to a capuchin, in whoſe company I ſet out for Paris—the character of my fellow traveller—an adventure on the road—I am ſhocked at his behaviour.

WHEN our repaſt was ended, we walked down to the harbour, where we found a cutter that was to ſail for Deal in the evening, and Mr. Bowling agreed for his paſſage: In the mean time, we ſauntered about the town to ſatisfy our curioſity, our converſation turning on the ſubject of my deſigns, which were not as yet fixed: Neither can it be ſuppoſed that my mind was at eaſe, when I found myſelf reduced almoſt to extreme poverty, in the midſt of foreigners, among whom I had not one acquaintance to adviſe or befriend me. My uncle was ſenſible of my forlorn condition, and preſſed me to accompany him to England, where he did not doubt of finding ſome ſort of proviſion for me: But, beſides the other reaſons I had for avoiding that kingdom, I looked upon it, at this time, as the worſt country in the univerſe for a poor honeſt man to live in; and therefore determined to remain in France, at all events. I was confirmed in this reſolution, by a reverend prieſt, who paſſing by at this time, and overhearing us ſpeak Engliſh, accoſted us in the ſame language, telling us, he was our countryman, and wiſhing it might be in his power to do us any ſervice: We thanked this grave perſon for his courteous offer, and invited him to drink a glaſs with us, which he did not think proper to refuſe, and we went altogether into a tavern of his recommending. After having drank to our healths in a bumper of good Burgundy, he began to inquire into our ſituation, particularly the place of our nativity, which we no ſooner named, than he ſtarted up, and wringing our hands with great fervour, ſhed a flood of tears, crying, "I come from the ſame part of the country! perhaps you are my own relations." I was on my guard againſt his careſſes, which I ſuſpected very

much, when I remembered the adventure of the money-dropper; but, without any appearance of diffidence, obſerved, that as he was born in that part of the country, he muſt certainly know our families, which (howſoever mean our preſent appearance might be) were none of the moſt obſcure or inconſiderable. Then I diſcovered our names, to which I found he was no ſtranger: He had known my grandfather perſonally; and, notwithſtanding an abſence of fifty years from Scotland, recounted ſo many particulars of the families in the neighbourhood, that my ſcruples were entirely removed, and I thought myſelf happy in his acquaintance. In the courſe of our converſation, I diſcloſed my condition without reſerve, and diſplayed my talents to ſuch advantage, that the old father looked upon me with admiration, and aſſured me, that if I ſtaid in France, and liſtened to reaſon, I could not fail of making my fortune, to which he would contribute all in his power.

My uncle began to be jealous of the prieſt's inſinuation, and very abruptly declared, that, if ever I ſhould renounce my religion, he would break off all connexion and correſpondence with me; for it was his opinion, that no honeſt man would ſwerve from the principles in which he was bred, whether Turkiſh, Proteſtant, or Roman. The father, affronted at this declaration, with great vehemence, began a long diſcourſe, ſetting forth the danger of obſtinacy, and ſhutting one's eyes againſt the light: He ſaid, that ignorance would be no plea towards juſtification, when we had opportunities of being better informed; and that, if the minds of people had not been open to conviction, the Chriſtian religion could not have been propagated in the world; and we ſhould now be in a ſtate of Pagan darkneſs and barbarity: He endeavoured to prove, by ſome texts of Scripture, and many quotations from the fathers, that the Pope was the ſucceſſor of St. Peter, and vicar of Jeſus Chriſt; that the church of Rome was the true holy catholic church; and that the Proteſtant faith was an impious hereſy and damnable ſchiſm, by which many millions of ſouls would ſuffer everlaſting perdition. When he had finiſhed his ſermon, which I thought he pronounced with more zeal

than diſcretion, he addreſſed himſelf to my uncle, and deſired to know his objections to what had been ſaid. The lieutenant, whoſe attention had been wholly engroſſed by his own affairs, took the pipe out of his mouth, and replied, "As for me, friend, d'ye ſee, I have no objection to what you ſay; it may be either true or falſe for what I know; I meddle with no body's affairs but my own; the gunner to his linſtock, and the ſteerſman to the helm, as the ſaying is. I truſt to no creed but the compaſs, and do unto every man as I would be done by; ſo that I defy the Pope, the Devil, and the Pretender; and hope to be ſaved as well as another." This aſſociation of perſons gave great offence to the friar, who proteſted, in a mighty paſſion, that, if Mr. Bowling had not been his countryman, he would have cauſed him to be impriſoned for his inſolence. I ventured to diſapprove of my uncle's raſhneſs, and appeaſed the old gentleman, by aſſuring him, there was no offence intended by my kinſman, who, by this time, ſenſible of his error, ſhook the injured party by the hand, and aſked pardon for the freedom he had taken. Matters being amicably compromiſed, he invited us to come and ſee him in the afternoon at the convent to which he belonged, and took his leave for the preſent; when my uncle recommended it ſtrongly to me to perſevere in the religion of my foreſathers, whatever advantages I might propoſe to myſelf by a change, which could not fail of diſgracing myſelf, and diſhonouring my family. I aſſured him, no no conſideration ſhould induce me to forfeit his friendſhip and good opinion on that ſcore; at which aſſurance he diſcovered great ſatisfaction, and put me in mind of dinner, which we immediately beſpoke, and, when it was ready, ate together.

I imagined my acquaintance with the Scottiſh prieſt, if properly managed, might turn out to my advantage, and therefore reſolved to cultivate it as much as I could. With this view we viſited him at his convent, according to his invitation, where he treated us with wine and ſweetmeats, and ſhowed us every thing that was remarkable in the monaſtery. Having been thus entertained, we took our leave, though not before I had promiſed to

ſee him next day; and the time fixed for my uncle's embarking being come, I accompanied him to the harbour, and ſaw him on board. We parted not without tears, after we had embraced, and wiſhed one another all manner of proſperity; and he entreated me to write to him often, directing to Lieutenant Bowling, at the ſign of the Union Flag, near the Hermitage, London.

I returned to the houſe in which we had met, where I paſſed the night in a very ſolitary manner, reflecting on the ſeverity of my fate, and endeavouring to project ſome likely ſcheme of life for the future; but my invention failed me; I ſaw nothing but unſurmountable difficulties in my way, and was ready to deſpair at the miſerable proſpect! That I might not, however, neglect any probable means, I got up in the morning, and went directly to the father, whoſe advice and aſſiſtance I implored. He received me very kindly, and gave me to underſtand, that there was one way of life in which a perſon of my talents could not fail of making a great figure. I gueſſed his meaning, and told him once for all, I was fully determined againſt any alteration in point of religion, therefore, if his propoſal regarded the church, he might ſave himſelf the trouble of explaining it. He ſhook his head, and ſighed, ſaying, "Ah! ſon, ſon, what a glorious proſpect is here ſpoiled, by your ſtubborn prejudice! Suffer yourſelf to be perſuaded by reaſon, and conſult your temporal welfare, as well as the concerns of your eternal ſoul. I can, by my intereſt, procure your admiſſion as a noviciate into this convent, where I will ſuperintend and direct you with a truly paternal affection." Then he launched out into the praiſes of a monaſtic life, which no noiſe diſturbs, no cares moleſt, and no danger invades; where the heart is weaned from carnal attachments, the groſſer appetites ſubdued and chaſtiſed, and the ſoul wafted to divine regions of philoſophy and truth, on the wings of ſtudious contemplation. But his eloquence was loſt upon me, whom two conſiderations enabled to withſtand his temptations; namely, my promiſe to my uncle, and my averſion to an eccleſiaſtical life; for, as to the difference of religion, I looked upon it as a thing of too ſmall moment to come

in competition with a man's fortune. Finding me immoveable on this head, he told me he was more ſorry than offended at my non-compliance, and ſtill ready to employ his good offices in my behalf. "The ſame erroneous maxims (ſaid he) that obſtruct your promotion in the church, will infallibly prevent your advancement in the army; but if you can bruik the condition of a ſervant, I am acquainted with ſome people of rank at Verſailles, to whom I can give you letters of recommendation, that you may be entertained by ſome one of them in quality of *maitre d'hotel*; and I do not doubt that your qualifications will ſoon entitle you to a better proviſion." I embraced his offer with great eagerneſs; and he appointed me to come back in the afternoon, when he would not only give me letters, but likewiſe introduce me to a capuchin of his acquaintance, who intended to ſet out for Paris next morning, in whoſe company I might travel, without being at the expence of one livre during the whole journey. This piece of good news gave me infinite pleaſure; I acknowledged my obligation to the benevolent father, in the moſt grateful expreſſions; and he performed his promiſe to a tittle, in delivering the letters, and making me acquainted with the capuchin, with whom I departed next morning by break of day.

It was not long before I diſcovered my fellow-traveller to be a merry facetious fellow, who, notwithſtanding his profeſſion and appearance of mortification, loved good eating and drinking better than his roſary, and paid more adoration to a pretty girl than to the Virgin Mary, or St. Genevive. He was a thick brawny young man, with red eye-brows, a hook-noſe, a face covered with freckles; and his name was Frere Balthazar. His order did not permit him to wear linen, ſo that, having little occaſion to undreſs himſelf, he was none of the cleanlieſt animals in the world; and his conſtitution was naturally ſo ſtrongly ſcented, that I always thought it convenient to keep to the windward of him in our march. As he was perfectly well known on the road, we fared ſumptuouſly without any coſt, and the fatigue of our journey was much alleviated by the good humour

of my companion, who ſung an infinite number of catches on the ſubjects of love and wine. We took up our lodging the firſt night at a peaſant's houſe not far from Abbeville, where we were entertained with an excellent ragout, cooked by our landlord's daughters, one of whom was very handſome. After having eaten heartily, and drank a ſufficient quantity of ſmall wine, we were conducted to a barn, where we found a couple of carpets ſpread upon clean ſtraw for our reception. We had not lain in this ſituation above half an hour, when we heard ſomebody knock ſoftly at the door, upon which Balthazar got up, and let in our hoſt's two daughters, who wanted to have ſome private converſation with him in the dark; when they had whiſpered together ſome time, the capuchin came to me, and aſked if I was inſenſible to love, and ſo hard hearted as to refuſe a ſhare of my bed to a pretty maid, who had a *tendre* for me? I muſt own, to my ſhame, that I ſuffered myſelf to be overcome by my paſſion, and with great eagerneſs ſeized the occaſion, when I underſtood that the amiable Nanette was to be my bedfellow. In vain did my reaſon ſuggeſt the reſpect that I owed to my dear miſtreſs Narciſſa; the idea of that lovely charmer rather increaſed than allayed the ferment of my ſpirits; and the young paiſanne had no reaſon to complain of my remembrance. Early in the morning, the kind creatures left us to our repoſe, which laſted till eight o'clock, when we got up, and were treated at breakfaſt with chocolate and *l'eau de vie*, by our paramours, of whom we took a tender leave, after my companion had confeſſed and given them abſolution. While we proceeded on our journey, the converſation turned upon the night's adventure, being introduced by the capuchin, who aſked me how I liked my lodging: I declared my ſatisfaction, and talked in rapture of the agreeable Nanette; at which he ſhook his head, and ſmiling, ſaid, ſhe was a *morceau pour la bonne bouche*. "I never valued myſelf (continued he) upon any thing ſo much as the conqueſt of Nanette; and, vanity apart, I have been pretty fortunate in my amours." This information ſhocked me not a little, as I was well convinced of his intimacy with her ſiſter;

and though I did not care to tax him with downright inceſt, I profeſſed my aſtoniſhment at his laſt night's choice, when, I ſuppoſed, the other was at his devotion. To this hint, he anſwered, that, beſides his natural complaiſance to the ſex, he had another reaſon to diſtribute his favours equally between them, namely, to preſerve peace in the family, which could not otherwiſe be maintained; that, moreover, Nanette had conceived an affection for me, and he loved her too well to baulk her inclination; more eſpecially, when he had an opportunity of obliging his friend at the ſame time. I thanked him for this inſtance of his friendſhip, though I was extremely diſguſted at his want of delicacy, and curſed the occaſion that threw me in his way. Libertine as I was, I could not bear to ſee a man behave ſo wide of the character he aſſumed: I looked upon him as a perſon of very little worth or honeſty, and ſhould have even kept a wary eye upon my pocket, if I had thought he could have any temptation to ſteal. But I could not conceive the uſe of money to a capuchin, who is obliged, by the rules of his order, to appear like a beggar, and enjoys all other neceſſaries of life gratis; beſides, my fellow-traveller ſeemed to be of a complexion too careleſs and ſanguine to give me any apprehenſion on that ſcore; ſo that I proceeded with great confidence, in expectation of being ſoon at my journey's end.

CHAPTER XLIII.

We lodge at a houſe near Amiens, where I am robbed by the capuchin, who eſcapes while I am aſleep—I go to Noyons in ſearch of him, but without ſucceſs—make my condition known to ſeveral people, but find no relief—grow deſperate—join a company of ſoldiers—enliſt in the regiment of Picardy—we are ordered into Germany—I find the fatigues of the march almoſt intolerable—quarrel with my comrade in a diſpute about politics—he challenges me to the field, wounds and diſarms me.

THE third night of our pilgrimage we paſſed at a houſe near Amiens, where Balthazar being unknown, we ſupped upon indifferent fare, and four wine, and were faln to lie in a garret, upon an old matraſs, which, I believe,

had been in the poſſeſſion of ten thouſand myriads of fleas, time out of mind. We did not invade their territory with impunity: In leſs than a minute we were attacked by ſtings innumerable; in ſpite of which, however, we fell faſt aſleep, being exceſſively fatigued with our day's march, and did not wake till nine next morning, when ſeeing myſelf alone, I ſtarted up in a terrible fright, and examining my pockets, found my preſaging fear too true! My companion had made free with my caſh, and left me to ſeek my way to Paris by myſelf! I ran down ſtairs immediately; and, with a look full of grief and amazement, inquired for the mendicant, who, they gave me to underſtand, had ſet out four hours before, after having told them, I was a little indiſpoſed, and deſired I might not be diſturbed, but be informed when I ſhould wake that he had taken the road to Noyons, where he would wait for my coming at the Coq d'Or. I ſpoke not a word, but with a heavy heart directed my courſe to that place, at which I arrived in the afternoon, fainting with wearineſs and hunger; but learned, to my utter confuſion, that no ſuch perſon had been there! It was happy for me that I had a good deal of reſentment in my conſtitution, which animated me on ſuch occaſions againſt the villany of mankind, and enabled me to bear misfortunes otherwiſe intolerable. Boiling with indignation, I diſcovered to the hoſt my deplorable condition, and inveighed with great bitterneſs againſt the treachery of Balthazar; at which he ſhrugged up his ſhoulders, and, with a peculiar grimace in his countenance, ſaid, he was ſorry for my misfortune; but there was no remedy like patience. At that inſtant ſome gueſts arrived, to whom he haſtened to offer his ſervice, leaving me mortified at his indifference, and fully perſuaded that an innkeeper is the ſame ſordid animal all the world over. While I ſtood in the porch, forlorn and undetermined, venting ejaculations of curſes againſt the thief who robbed me, and the old prieſt who recommended him to my friendſhip, a young gentleman richly dreſſed, attended by a valet de chambre and two ſervants in livery, arrived at the inn. I thought I perceived a great deal of ſweetneſs and good nature in his

countenance; therefore he had no ſooner alighted than I accoſted him, and, in a few words, explained my ſituation: He liſtened with great politeneſs, and, when I had made an end of my ſtory, ſaid, "Well, Monſieur, what would you have me to do?" I was effectually abaſhed at this interrogation, which I believed no man of common ſenſe or generoſity could make, and made no other reply than a low bow: He returned the compliment ſtill lower, and tript into an apartment, while the landlord let me know, that my ſtanding there to interrupt company gave offence, and might do him infinite prejudice. He had no occaſion to repeat his inſinuation; I moved from the place immediately; and was ſo much tranſported with grief, anger, and diſdain, that a torrent of blood guſhed from my noſtrils. In this ecſtaſy, I quitted Noyons, and betook myſelf to the fields, where I wandered about like one diſtracted, till my ſpirits were quite exhauſted, and I was obliged to throw myſelf down at the root of a tree, to reſt my wearied limbs. Here my rage forſook me; I began to feel the importunate cravings of nature, and relapſed into ſilent ſorrow, and melancholy reflection. I revolved all the crimes I had been guilty of, and found them ſo few and venial, that I could not comprehend the juſtice of that Providence, which, after having expoſed me to ſo much wretchedneſs and danger, left me a prey to famine at laſt in a foreign country, where I had not one friend or acquaintance to cloſe my eyes, and do the laſt offices of humanity to my miſerable carcaſe. A thouſand times I wiſhed myſelf a bear, that I might retreat to woods and deſerts, far from the hoſpitable haunts of man, where I could live by my own talents, independent of treacherous friends, and ſupercilious ſcorn.

As I lay in this manner groaning over my hapleſs fate, I heard the ſound of a violin, and raiſing my head, perceived a company of men and women dancing on the graſs at ſome diſtance from me. I looked upon this to be a favourable ſeaſon for diſtreſs to attract compaſſion, when every ſelfiſh thought is baniſhed, and the heart dilated with mirth and ſocial joy; wherefore I got up and approached thoſe happy people, whom I ſoon diſcovered

e a party of ſoldiers, with their wives and children, nding and diverting themſelves at this rate, after fatigue of a march. I had never before ſeen ſuch ıtrel of ſcare-crows together, neither could I recon- their meagre gaunt looks, their ſqualid and ragged re, and every other external ſymptom of extreme ; with this appearance of feſtivity. I ſaluted them, rever, and was received with great politeneſs; after ch they formed a ring, and danced around me. This ty had a wonderful effect upon my ſpirits! I was ted with their gaiety, and, in ſpite of my diſmal ation, forgot my cares, and joined in their extrava- ce. When we had recreated ourſelves a good while his diverſion, the ladies ſpread their manteaus on the und, upon which they emptied their knapſacks of e onions, coarſe bread, and a few flaſks of poor wine: ng invited to a ſhare of the banquet, I ſat down with reſt, and in the whole courſe of my life never made ore comfortable meal. When our repaſt was ended, got up again to dance; and now that I found myſelf eſhed, I behaved to the admiration of every body: as loaded with a thouſand compliments, and profeſ- s of friendſhip; the men commended my perſon and ity, and the women were loud in praiſe of my *bonne re*; the ſerjeant in particular expreſſed ſo much re- for me, and deſcribed the pleaſures of a ſoldier's with ſo much art, that I began to liſten to his pro- of enliſting me in the ſervice; and the more I con- ed my own condition, the more I was convinced of neceſſity I was under to come to a ſpeedy determi- on. Having therefore maturely weighed the cir- ſtances *pro* and *con*, I ſignified my conſent, and was itted into the regiment of Picardy, ſaid to be the ſt corps in Europe. The company to which this mand belonged was quartered at a village not far whither we marched next day, and I was preſented y captain, who ſeemed very well pleaſed with my arance, gave me a crown to drink, and ordered me e accommodated with clothes, arms, and accoutre- ts. Then I ſold my livery ſuit, purchaſed linen,

and, as I was at great pains to learn the exerciſe, in a very ſhort time became a complete ſoldier.

It was not long before we received orders to join ſeveral more regiments, and march with all expedition into Germany, in order to reinforce Mareſchal Duc de Noailles, who was then encamped with his army on the ſide of the river Mayne, to watch the motions of the Engliſh, Hanoverians, Auſtrians, and Heſſians, under the command of the Earl of Stair. We began our march accordingly, and then I became acquainted with that part of a ſoldier's life to which I had been hitherto a ſtranger. It is impoſſible to deſcribe the hunger and thirſt I ſuſtained, and the fatigue I underwent in a march of ſo many hundred miles; during which, I was ſo much chafed with the heat and motion of my limbs, that in a very ſhort time the inſide of my thighs and legs were deprived of ſkin, and I proceeded in the utmoſt torture. This misfortune I owed to the plumpneſs of my conſtitution, which I curſed, and envied the withered condition of my comrades, whoſe bodies could not ſpare juice enough to ſupply a common iſſue, and were indeed proof againſt all manner of friction. The continual pain I felt made me fretful, and my peeviſhneſs was increaſed by the mortification of my pride in ſeeing thoſe miſerable wretches, whom a hard gale of wind would have ſcattered through the air like chaff, bear thoſe toils with alacrity, under which I was ready to ſink.

One day while we enjoyed a halt, and the ſoldiers with their wives had gone out to dance, according to cuſtom, my comrade ſtaid at home with me on pretence of friendſhip, and inſulted me with his pity and conſolation! He told me, though I was young and tender at preſent, I would ſoon be ſeaſoned to the ſervice; and he did not doubt but I ſhould have the honour to contribute in ſome meaſure to the glory of the king. "Have courage, therefore, my child (ſaid he), and pray to the good God, that you may be as happy as I am, who have had the honour of ſerving Lewis the Great, and of receiving many wounds in helping to eſtabliſh his glory." When I looked upon the contemptible object that pronounced

theſe words, I was amazed at the infatuation that poſſeſſed him; and could not help expreſſing my aſtoniſhment at the abſurdity of a rational being, who thinks himſelf highly honoured in being permitted to encounter abject poverty, oppreſſion, famine, diſeaſe, mutilation, and evident death, merely to gratify the vicious ambition of a prince, by whom his ſufferings were diſregarded, and his name utterly unknown. I obſerved, that, if his ſituation was the conſequence of compulſion, I would praiſe his patience and fortitude in bearing his lot; if he had taken up arms in defence of his injured country, he was to be applauded for his patriotiſm; or, if he had fled to this way of life as a refuge from a greater evil, he was juſtifiable in his own conſcience (though I could have no notion of miſery more extreme than that he ſuffered); but to put his condition on the footing of conducing to the glory of his prince, was no more than profeſſing himſelf a deſperate ſlave, who voluntarily underwent the utmoſt wretchedneſs and peril, and committed the moſt flagrant crimes, to ſooth the barbarous pride of a fellow-creature, his ſuperior in nothing but the power he derived from the ſubmiſſion of ſuch wretches as him. The ſoldier was very much affronted at the liberty I took with his king, which he ſaid nothing but my ignorance could excuſe: He affirmed, that the characters of princes were ſacred, and ought not to be profaned by the cenſure of their ſubjects, who were bound by their allegiance to obey their commands, of what nature ſoever, without ſcruple or repining; and adviſed me to correct the rebellious principles I had imbibed among the Engliſh, who, for their inſolence to their kings, were notorious all over the world, even to a proverb.

In vindication of my countrymen, I repeated all the arguments commonly uſed to prove that every man has a natural right to liberty; that allegiance and protection are reciprocal; that, when the mutual tie is broken by the tyranny of the king, he is accountable to the people for his breach of contract, and ſubject to the penalty of the law; and that thoſe inſurrections of the Engliſh, which are branded with the name of rebellion

by the ſlaves of arbitrary power, were no other than glorious efforts to reſcue that independence which was their birthright, from the ravenous claws of uſurping ambition. The Frenchman, provoked at the little deference I paid to the kingly name, loſt all patience, and reproached me in ſuch a manner, that my temper forſook me, and I clenched my fiſt, with an intention to give him a hearty box on the ear. Perceiving my deſign, he ſtarted back, and demanded a parley; upon which I checked my indignation, and he gave me to underſtand that a Frenchman never forgave a blow; therefore, if I was not weary of my life, I would do well to ſpare him that mortification, and do him the honour of meaſuring my ſword with his, like a gentleman. I took his advice, and followed him to a field hard by, where indeed I was aſhamed at the pitiful figure of my antagoniſt, who was a poor, little, ſhivering creature, decrepit with age, and blind of one eye. But I ſoon found the folly of judging from appearances, being at the ſecond paſs wounded in the ſword hand, and immediately diſarmed with ſuch a jerk, that I thought the joint was diſlocated. I was no leſs confounded than enraged at this event, eſpecially as my adverſary did not bear his ſucceſs with all the moderation that might have been expected; for he inſiſted upon my aſking pardon for affronting his king and him. This propoſal I would by no means comply with, but told him it was a mean condeſcenſion, which no gentleman in his circumſtances ought to propoſe, nor any in my ſituation ought to perform; and that, if he perſiſted in his ungenerous demand, I would in my turn claim ſatisfaction with my muſket, when we ſhould be more upon a par than with the ſword, of which he ſeemed ſo much maſter.

CHAPTER XLIV.

er to be revenged, I learn the ſcience of defence—We join the reſchal Duc de Noailles—are engaged with the allies at Dittengen, put to flight—the behaviour of the French ſoldiers on that occa—I induſtrioufly ſeek another combat with the old Gaſcon, and uiſh him in my turn—our regiment is put into winter-quarters at ims, where I find my friend Strap—our recognition—he ſupplies with money, and procures my diſcharge—we take a trip to Paris; n whence, by the way of Flanders, we ſet out for London, where afely arrive.

was diſconcerted at this declaration, to which he : no reply, but repaired to the dancers, among n he recounted his victory, with many exaggera- and gaſconades; while I, taking up my ſword, : to my quarters, and examined my wound, which nd was of no conſequence. The ſame day, an Iriſh mer, having heard of my misfortune, viſited me, after having condoled me on the chance of war, me to underſtand, that he was maſter of the ſword, would, in a very ſhort time, inſtruct me ſo tho- hly in that noble ſcience, that I ſhould be able to iſe the old Gaſcon for his inſolent boaſting at my nce. This friendly office he profered, on pretence he regard he had for his countrymen; but I after- ls learned, the true motive was no other than a jea- y he entertained of a correſpondence between the chman and his wife, which he did not think proper eſent in perſon. Be this as it will, I accepted his , and practiſed his leſſons with ſuch application, I ſoon believed myſelf a match for my conqueror. he mean time, we continued our march, and arrived ne camp of Mareſchal Noailles, the night before the le of Dittengen. Notwithſtanding the fatigue we undergone, our regiment was one of thoſe that e ordered next day to croſs the river, under the mand of the Duc de Gramont, to take poſſeſſion of arrow defile, through which the allies muſt of ne- ity have paſſed at a great diſadvantage, or remain ere they were, and periſh for want of proviſion, if y would not condeſcend to ſurrender at diſcretion.

How they ſuffered themſelves to be pent up in this manner, it is not my province to relate; I ſhall only obſerve, that, when we had taken poſſeſſion of our ground, I heard an old officer, in converſation with another, expreſs a ſurpriſe at the conduct of Lord Stair, who had the reputation of a good general. But it ſeems, at this time, that nobleman was over-ruled, and only acted in an inferior character; ſo that no part of the blame could be imputed to him, who declared his diſapprobation of the ſtep, in conſequence of which the whole army was in the utmoſt danger; but Providence or Deſtiny acted miracles in their behalf, by diſpoſing the Duc de Gramont to quit his advantageous poſt, paſs the defile, and attack the Engliſh, who were drawn up in order of battle on the plain, and who handled us ſo roughly, that, after having loſt a great number of men, we turned our backs without ceremony, and fled with ſuch precipitation, that many hundreds periſhed in the river, through pure fear and confuſion; for the enemy was ſo generous, that they did not purſue us one inch of ground; and if our conſternation would have permitted, we might have retreated with great order and deliberation. But, notwithſtanding the royal clemency of the king of Great Britain, who headed the allies in perſon, and, no doubt, put a ſtop to the carnage, our loſs amounted to 5000 men, among whom were many officers of diſtinction. Our miſcarriage opened a paſſage for the foe to Hanau, whither they immediately marched, leaving their ſick and wounded to the care of the French, who next day took poſſeſſion of the field of battle, buried the dead, and treated the living with humanity. This circumſtance was a great conſolation to us, who thence took occaſion to claim the victory; and the genius of the French nation never appeared more conſpicuous than now, in the rhodomontades they uttered on the ſubject of their generoſity and courage: Every man (by his own account) performed feats that eclipſed all the heroes of antiquity. One compared himſelf to a lion retiring at leiſure from his cowardly purſuers, who keep at a wary diſtance, and gall him with their darts. Another likened himſelf to a bear

that retreats with his face to the enemy, who dare not aſſail him; and the third aſſumed the character of a deſperate ſtag, that turns upon the hounds, and keeps them at bay. There was not a private ſoldier engaged, who had not, by the proweſs of his ſingle arm, demoliſhed a whole platoon, or put a ſquadron of horſe to flight; and, among others, the meagre Gaſcon extolled his exploits above thoſe of Hercules or Charlemagne. As I ſtill retained my reſentment for the diſgrace I ſuffered in my laſt rencontre with him, and, now that I thought myſelf qualified, longed for an opportunity to retrieve my honour, I magnified the valour of the Engliſh with all the hyperboles I could imagine, and decried the puſillanimity of the French in the ſame ſtyle, comparing them to hares flying before greyhounds, or mice purſued by cats; and paſſed an ironical compliment on the ſpeed he exerted in his flight, which, conſidering his age and infirmities, I ſaid was ſurpriſing. He was ſtung to the quick by this ſarcaſm, and, with an air of threatening diſdain, bade me know myſelf better, and remember the correction I had already received from him for my inſolence; for he might not always be in the humour of ſparing a wretch who abuſed his goodneſs. To this inuendo I made no reply, but a kick in the breech, which overturned him in an inſtant. He ſtarted up with wonderful agility, and, drawing his ſword, attacked me with great fury: Several people interpoſed; but when he informed them of its being an affair of honour, they retired, and left us to decide the battle by ourſelves. I ſuſtained his onſet with little damage, having only received a ſmall ſcratch on my right ſhoulder, and ſeeing his breath and vigour almoſt exhauſted, aſſaulted him in my turn, cloſed with him, and wreſted his ſword out of his hand in the ſtruggle. Having thus acquired the victory, I deſired him to beg his life; to which demand he made no anſwer, but ſhrugged up his ſhoulders to his ears, expanded his hands, elevated the ſkin on his forehead and eye-brows, and depreſſed the corners of his mouth in ſuch a manner, that I could ſcarce refrain from laughing aloud at his groteſque appearance. That I might, however,

mortify his vanity, which triumphed without bounds over my misfortune, I thruſt his ſword up to the hilt in ſomething (it was not a tanſy) that lay ſmoking on the plain, and joined the reſt of the ſoldiers with an air of tranquillity and indifference.

There was nothing more of moment attempted by either of the armies during the remaining part of the campaign, which being ended, the Engliſh marched back to the Netherlands; part of our army was detached to French Flanders, and our regiment ordered into winter quarters in Champagne. It was the fate of the grenadier company, to which I now belonged, to lie at Rheims, where I found myſelf in the utmoſt want of every thing; my pay, which amounted to five ſols a day, far from ſupplying me with neceſſaries, being ſcarce ſufficient to procure a wretched ſubſiſtence, to keep ſoul and body together; ſo that I was, by hunger and hard duty, brought down to the meagre condition of my fellow-ſoldiers, and my linen reduced from three tolerable ſhirts, to two pair of ſleeves and necks, the bodies having been long ago converted into ſpatterdaſhes; and after all, I was better provided than any private man in the regiment. In this urgency of my affairs, I wrote to my uncle in England, though my hopes from that quarter were not at all ſanguine, for the reaſons I have already explained; and, in the mean time, had recourſe to my old remedy, patience, conſoling myſelf with the flattering ſuggeſtions of a lively imagination, that never abandoned me in my diſtreſs.

One day, while I ſtood centinel at the gate of a general officer, a certain nobleman came to the door, followed by a gentleman in mourning, to whom, at parting, I heard him ſay, "You may depend upon my good offices." This aſſurance was anſwered by a low bow of the perſon in black, who, turning to go away, diſcovered to me the individual countenance of my old friend and adherent Strap. I was ſo much aſtoniſhed at the ſight, that I loſt the power of utterance, and before I could recollect myſelf, he was gone without taking any notice of me. Indeed, had he ſtaid, I ſcarcely ſhould have ventured to accoſt him; becauſe, though I was perfectly

well acquainted with the features of his face, I could not be poſitively certain as to the reſt of his perſon, which was very much altered for the better ſince he left me at London; neither could I conceive by what means he was enabled to appear in the ſphere of a gentleman, to which, while I knew him, he had not even the ambition to aſpire. But I was too much concerned in the affair to neglect further information, and therefore took the firſt opportunity of aſking the porter if he knew the gentleman to whom the marquis ſpoke. The Swiſs told me, his name was Monſieur d'Eſtrapes; that he had been valet de chambre to an Engliſh gentleman lately deceaſed; and that he was very much regarded by the marquis for his fidelity to his maſter, between whom and that noblemen a very intimate friendſhip had ſubſiſted. Nothing could be more agreeable to me than this piece of intelligence, which baniſhed all doubt of its being my friend, who had found means to frenchify his name as well as his behaviour ſince we parted. As ſoon, therefore, as I was relieved, I went to his lodging, according to a direction given me by the Swiſs, and had the good fortune to find him at home. That I might ſurpriſe him the more, I concealed my name and buſineſs, and only deſired the ſervant of the houſe to tell Monſieur d'Eſtrapes, that I begged the honour of half an hour's converſation with him. He was confounded and diſmayed at the meſſage, when he underſtood it was ſent by a ſoldier: Though he was conſcious to himſelf of no crime, all that he had heard of the Baſtile appeared to his imagination with aggravated horror, and it was not before I had waited a conſiderable time, that he had reſolution enough to bid the ſervant ſhow me up ſtairs. When I entered his chamber, he returned my bow with great civility, and endeavoured, with forced complaiſance, to diſguiſe his fear, which appeared in the paleneſs of his face, the wildneſs of his looks, and the ſhaking of his limbs. I was diverted at his conſternation, which redoubled, when I told him in French, I had buſineſs for his private ear, and demanded a particular audience. The valet being withdrawn, I aſked in the ſame language, if his name was d'Eſtrapes? to which he an-

ſwered, with a faultering tongue, "The ſame, at your ſervice." "Are you a Frenchman?" (ſaid I). "I have not the honour of being a Frenchman born (replied he), but I have an infinite veneration for the country." I then deſired he would do me the honour to look at me; which he no ſooner did, than, ſtruck with my appearance, he ſtarted back, and cried in Engliſh, "O Jeſus! ſure it can't! No, 'tis impoſſible!" I ſmiled at his interjections, ſaying, "I ſuppoſe you are too much of a gentleman to own your friend in adverſity." When he heard me pronounce theſe words in our own language, he leaped upon me in a tranſport of joy, hung about my neck, kiſſed me from ear to ear, and blubbered like a great ſchool-boy who had been whipt.—Then obſerving my dreſs, he ſet up his throat, crying, "O Lord! O Lord! that ever I ſhould live to ſee my deareſt friend reduced to the condition of a foot ſoldier in the French ſervice! Why did you conſent to my leaving you?—But I know the reaſon—you thought you had got more creditable friends, and grew aſhamed of my acquaintance.—Ah! Lord help us! though I was a little ſhort-ſighted, I was not altogether blind: And though I did not complain, I was not the leſs ſenſible of your unkindneſs, which was indeed the only thing that induced me to ramble abroad, the Lord knows whither; but I muſt own it has been a lucky ramble for me, and ſo I forgive you, and may God forgive you;—O Lord! O Lord! is it come to this?" I was nettled at the charge, which, though juſt, I could not help thinking unſeaſonable, and told him with ſome tartneſs, that, whether his ſuſpicions were well or ill grounded, he might have choſen a more convenient opportunity of introducing them; and that the queſtion now was, whether or no he found himſelf diſpoſed to lend me any aſſiſtance. "Diſpoſed! (replied he, with great emotion), I thought you had known me ſo well, as to aſſure yourſelf, without aſking, that I and all that belongs to me are at your command. In the mean time, you ſhall dine with me, and I will tell you ſomething that, perhaps, will not be diſpleaſing unto you." Then wringing my hand, he ſaid, "It makes my heart bleed to ſee you in that garb!" I

thanked him for his invitation, which, I obſerved, could not be unwelcome to a perſon who had not eaten a comfortable meal theſe ſeven months: But I had another requeſt to make, which I begged he would grant before dinner, and that was the loan of a ſhirt; for although my back had been many weeks a ſtranger to any comfort of that kind, my ſkin was not yet familiarized to the want of it. He ſtared in my face, with a woeful countenance, at this declaration, which he could ſcarce believe, until I explained it, by unbuttoning my coat, and diſcloſing my naked body; a circumſtance that ſhocked the tender-hearted Strap, who, with tears in his eyes, ran to a cheſt of drawers, and, taking out ſome linen, preſented to me a very fine ruffled holland ſhirt, and cambric neckcloth, aſſuring me, he had three dozen of the ſame kind at my ſervice. I was raviſhed at this piece of good news, and having accommodated myſelf in a moment, hugged my benefactor for his generous offer, ſaying, I was overjoyed to find him undebauched by proſperity, which ſeldom fails to corrupt the heart. He beſpoke for dinner ſome ſoup and bouillé, a couple of pullets roaſted, and a diſh of aſparagus, and in the interim entertained me with biſcuit and burgundy; after which repaſt, he entreated me to gratify his longing deſire of knowing every circumſtance of my fortune ſince his departure from London. This requeſt I complied with, beginning at the adventure of Gawky, and relating every particular event in which I had been concerned from that day to the preſent hour. During the recital, my friend was ſtrongly affected, according to the various ſituations deſcribed: He ſtarted with ſurpriſe, glowed with indignation, gaped with curioſity, ſmiled with pleaſure, trembled with fear, and wept with ſorrow, as the viciſſitudes of my life inſpired theſe different paſſions; and, when my ſtory was ended, ſignified his amazement on the whole, by lifting up his eyes and hands, and proteſting, that though I was a young man, I had ſuffered more than all the bleſſed martyrs.

After dinner, I deſired in my turn to know the particulars of his peregrination, and he ſatisfied me in a few words, by giving me to underſtand that he had

lived a year at Paris with his maſter, who in that time having acquired the language, as well as the faſhionable exerciſes, to perfection, made a tour of France and Holland, during which excurſion he was ſo unfortunate as to meet with three of his own countrymen on their travels, in whoſe company he committed ſuch exceſſes, that his conſtitution failed, and he fell into a conſumption; that, by the advice of phyſicians, he went to Montpelier for the benefit of good air, and recovered ſo well in ſix weeks, that he returned to Rheims, ſeemingly in good health, where he had not continued above a month, when he was ſeized with a looſeneſs, that carried him off in ten days, to the unſpeakable ſorrow of all who knew him, and eſpecially of Strap, who had been very happy in his ſervice, and given ſuch ſatisfaction, that his maſter, on his death-bed, recommended him to ſeveral perſons of diſtinction, for his diligence, ſobriety, and affection, and left him by will his wearing apparel, gold watch, ſword, rings, ready money, and all the moveables he had in France, to the value of three hundred pounds, "which I now (ſaid he), in the ſight of God and man, ſurrender to your abſolute diſpoſal: Here are my keys, take them, I beſeech you, and God give you joy of the poſſeſſion." My brain was almoſt turned by the ſudden change of fortune, which I could ſcarce believe real; however, I poſitively refuſed this extravagant profer of my friend, and put him in mind of my being a ſoldier; at which hint he ſtarted, crying, "Odſo! that's true—we muſt procure your diſcharge. I have ſome intereſt with a nobleman who is able to do me that favour." We conſulted about this affair, and it was determined, that Monſieur d'Eſtrapes ſhould wait upon the marquis in the morning, and tell him he had by accident found his brother, whom he had not ſeen for many years before, a private ſoldier in the regiment of Picardy, and implore that nobleman's intereſt for his diſcharge. In the mean time we enjoyed ourſelves over a bottle of good burgundy, and ſpent the evening in concerting ſchemes for our future conduct, in caſe I ſhould be ſo lucky as to get rid of the army. The buſineſs was to make ourſelves eaſy for life, by means of his legacy, a

ask very difficult, and, in the usual methods of laying out money, altogether impracticable; so that, after much canvassing, we could come to no resolution that night, but when we parted, recommended the matter to the serious attention of each other. As for my own part, I puzzled my imagination to no purpose: When I thought of turning merchant, the smallness of our stock, and the risk of seas, enemies, and markets, deterred me from that scheme: If I should settle as a surgeon in my own country, I would find the business already overstocked; or, if I pretended to set up in England, must labour under want of friends, and powerful opposition, obstacles unsurmountable by the most shining merit: Neither should I succeed in my endeavours to rise in the state, inasmuch as I could neither flatter nor pimp for courtiers, nor prostitute my pen in defence of a wicked and contemptible administration. Before I could form any feasible project, I fell asleep, and my fancy was blessed with the image of the dear Narcissa, who seemed to smile upon my passion, and offer her hand as a reward for all my toils.

Early in the morning, I went to the lodgings of my friend, whom I found exulting over his happy invention; for I no sooner entered his apartment, than he addressed himself to me in these words, with a smile of self-applause: "Well, Mr. Random, a lucky thought may come into a fool's head sometimes. I have hit it—I'll hold you a button my plan is better than yours, for all your learning. But you shall have the preference in this, as in all other things; therefore proceed, and let us know the effects of your meditation—and then I will impart my own simple excogitations." I told him, that not one thought had occurred to me that deserved the least notice, and signified my impatience to be acquainted with the fruits of his reflection. "As we have not (said he) money sufficient to maintain us during a tedious expectation, it is my opinion, that a bold push must be made; and I see none so likely to succeed as your appearing in the character of a gentleman (which is your due), and making your addresses to some lady of fortune who can render you independent at once. Nay, don't

ſtare—I affirm that this ſcheme is both prudent and honourable; for I would not have you throw yourſelf away upon an old toothleſs wheezing dame, whoſe breath would ſtink you into a conſumption in leſs than three months; neither would I adviſe you to aſſume the character of a wealthy ſquire, as your common fortune-hunters do, by which means many a poor lady is cheated into matrimony, and, inſtead of enjoying the pomp and grandeur that was promiſed, ſees her dowry ſeized by her huſband's rapacious creditors, and herſelf reduced to miſery and deſpair. No, I know you have a ſoul that diſdains ſuch impoſition; and are maſter of qualifications both of mind and body, which alone entitle you to a match that will ſet you above the world. I have clothes in my poſſeſſion that a duke need not be aſhamed to wear. I believe they will fit you as they are; if not, there are plenty of tailors in France. Let us take a ſhort trip to Paris, and provide ourſelves with all other neceſſaries, then ſet out for England, where I intend to do myſelf the honour of attending you in quality of a valet. This expedient will ſave you the expence of a ſervant, ſhaving and dreſſing; and I doubt not but, by the bleſſing of God, we ſhall bring matters to a ſpeedy and fortunate iſſue." Extravagant as this propoſal was, I liſtened to it with pleaſure, becauſe it flattered my vanity, and indulged a ridiculous hope I began to entertain of inſpiring Narciſſa with a mutual flame.

After breakfaſt, Monſieur d'Eſtrapes went to pay his devoirs to the marquis, and was ſo ſucceſsful in his application, that I obtained a diſcharge in a few days; upon which we ſet out for Paris. Here I had time to reflect and congratulate myſelf upon this ſudden tranſition of fate, which to bear with moderation required ſome degree of philoſophy and ſelf-denial. This truth will be more obvious, if I give a detail of the particulars, to the quiet poſſeſſion of which I was raiſed in an inſtant, from the moſt abject miſery and contempt. My wardrobe conſiſted of five faſhionable coats full mounted, two of which were plain, one of cut velvet, one trimmed with gold, and another with ſilver lace; two frocks, one of white drab with large plate buttons, the other of

blue with gold binding; one waiſtcoat of gold brocade, one of blue ſatin embroidered with ſilver, one of green ſilk trimmed with broad figured gold-lace, one of black ſilk with fringes, one of white ſatin, one of black cloth, and one of ſcarlet; ſix pair of cloth breeches, one pair of crimſon, and another of black velvet; twelve pair of white ſilk ſtockings, as many of black ſilk, and the ſame number of fine cotton; one hat laced with gold *point d'Eſpagne*, another with ſilver lace ſcolloped, a third with gold binding, and a fourth plain; three dozen of fine ruffled ſhirts, as many neckcloths; one dozen of cambric handkerchiefs, and the like number of ſilk. The other moveables which I poſſeſſed, by the generoſity and friendſhip of Strap, were a gold watch with a chaſed caſe, two valuable diamond rings, two mourning ſwords, one with a ſilver handle, and a fourth cut ſteel inlaid with gold, a diamond ſtock-buckle, and a ſet of ſtone buckles for the knees and ſhoes; a pair of ſilver mounted piſtols with rich houſings; a gold-headed cane, and a ſnuff-box of tortoiſeſhell mounted with gold, having the picture of a lady in the top. The gentleman left many other things of value, which my friend had converted into caſh before I met with him; ſo that, over and above theſe particulars, our ſtock in ready money amounted to ſomething more than two hundred pounds.

Thus equipped, I put on the gentleman of figure, and, attended by my honeſt friend, who was contented with the ſtation of my valet, viſited the Louvre, examined the gallery of Luxemburgh, and appeared at Verſailles, where I had the honour of ſeeing his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty eat a conſiderable quantity of olives. During the month I ſpent at Paris, I went ſeveral times to court, the Italian comedy, opera, and play-houſe, danced at a maſquerade, and, in ſhort, ſaw every thing remarkable in and about that capital. Then we ſet out for England by the way of Flanders, paſſed through Bruſſels, Ghent, and Bruges, and took ſhipping at Oſtend, from whence in fourteen hours we arrived at Deal, hired a poſt-chaiſe, and in twelve hours more got ſafe to London, having diſpoſed of our heavy baggage in the waggon.

CHAPTER XLV.

I inquire for my uncle, and underſtand he is gone to ſea—take lodgings at Charing-croſs—go to the play, where I meet with an adventure—dine at an ordinary; the gueſts deſcribed—become acquainted with Medlar and Doctor Wagtail.

As ſoon as we alighted at the inn, I diſpatched Strap to inquire for my uncle, at the Union Flag in Wapping; and he returned in a little time, with an account of Mr. Bowling's having gone to ſea, mate of a merchant-ſhip, after a long and unſucceſsful application and attendance at the admiralty; where, it ſeems, the intereſt he depended upon was not ſufficient to reinſtate him, or recover the pay that was due to him when he quitted the Thunder.

Next day I hired very handſome lodgings not far from Charing-croſs; and, in the evening, dreſſed myſelf in a plain ſuit of true Paris cut, and appeared in a front box at the play, where I ſaw a good deal of company, and was vain enough to believe, that I was obſerved with an uncommon degree of attention and applauſe. This ſilly conceit intoxicated me ſo much, that I was guilty of a thouſand ridiculous coquetries; and I dare ſay, how favourable ſoever the thoughts of the company might be at my firſt appearance, they were ſoon changed, by my abſurd behaviour, into pity or contempt. I roſe and ſat down, covered and uncovered my head twenty times between the acts; pulled out my watch, clapped it to my ear, wound it up, ſet it, gave it the hearing again; diſplayed my ſnuff-box, affected to take ſnuff, that I might have an opportunity of ſhowing my brilliant, and wiped my noſe with a perfumed handkerchief; then dangled my cane, and adjuſted my ſword-knot, and acted many more fooleries of the ſame kind, in hopes of obtaining the character of a pretty fellow, in the acquiring of which I found two conſiderable obſtructions in my diſpoſition, namely, a natural reſerve, and jealous ſenſibility. Fain would I have entered into converſation with the people around me; but I was reſtrained by the fear of being cenſured for my aſſurance, as well as by reflecting that

I was more entitled to a compliment of this kind from them, than they to ſuch condeſcenſion from a ſtranger like me. How often did I redden at the frequent whiſpers and loud laughter of my fellow beaus, which I imagined were excited by me! and how often did I envy the happy indifference of thoſe choice ſpirits, who beheld the diſtreſs of the ſcene, without diſcovering the leaſt ſymptom of approbation or concern! My attention was engaged in ſpite of myſelf, and I could not help weeping with the heroine of the ſtage; though I practiſed a great many ſhifts to conceal this piece of unpolite weakneſs. When the play was ended, I ſat waiting for an opportunity of handing ſome lady to her coach; but every one was attended by ſuch a number of officious gallants, that for a long time I was baulked in my expectation. At length, however, I perceived a very handſome creature, genteelly dreſſed, ſitting by herſelf in a box, at ſome diſtance from me; upon which I went up to her, and offered my ſervice. She ſeemed to be in ſome confuſion, thanked me for my complaiſance, and with a tender look declined giving me the trouble; looking at her watch, and teſtifying her ſurpriſe at the negligence of her footman, whom ſhe had ordered to have a chair ready for her at that hour. I repeated my entreaty with all the eloquence and compliment I was maſter of; and, in the event, ſhe was prevailed upon to accept of a propoſal I made, to ſend my ſervant for a chair or coach: Accordingly, Strap was detached for that purpoſe, and returned without ſucceſs: By this time the play-houſe was quite empty, and we were obliged to retire. As I led her through the paſſage, I obſerved five or ſix young fellows of faſhion, ſtanding in a corner, one of whom, as I thought, tipt my charmer the wink, and when we were paſt, I heard them ſet up a loud laugh. This note arouſed my attention, and I was reſolved to be fully ſatisfied of this lady's character, before I ſhould have any nearer connection with her. As no convenience appeared, I propoſed to conduct her to a tavern, where we might ſtay a few minutes, till my ſervant could fetch a coach from the Strand. She ſeemed particularly ſhy of truſting herſelf in a tavern with a

ſtranger; but at laſt yielded to my pathetic remonſtrances, rather than endanger her health, by remaining in a cold damp thorough-fare. Having thus far ſucceeded, I begged to know what wine ſhe would be pleaſed to drink a glaſs of; but ſhe profeſſed the greateſt averſion to all ſorts of ſtrong liquors; and it was with much difficulty that I could perſuade her to eat a jelly. In the mean time, I endeavoured to alleviate the uneaſineſs ſhe diſcovered, by ſaying all the agreeable things I could think of; at which ſhe would often ſigh, and regard me with a languiſhing look, that ſeemed however too near a-kin to the lewd leer of a courtezan. This diſcovery, added to my former ſuſpicion, while it put me upon my guard againſt her arts, diveſted me of reſerve, and enabled me to entertain her with gaiety and freedom. In the courſe of our converſation, I preſſed her to allow me the honour of waiting upon her next day at her lodgings; a requeſt which ſhe, with many apologies, refuſed, leſt it ſhould give umbrage to Sir John, who was of a diſpoſition apt to be fretted with trifles. This information, by which I was to underſtand that her huſband was a knight, did not check my addreſſes, which became more and more importunate, and I was even hardy enough to raviſh a kiſs. But, O Heavens! inſtead of banqueting on the ambroſial flavour that her delicacy of complexion promiſed, I was almoſt ſuffocated with the ſteams of Geneva! An exhalation of this kind, from a mouth which had juſt before declared an utter abhorrence of all ſpiritous liquors, not only changed my doubts into certainty, but my raptures into loathing; and it would have been impoſſible for me to have preſerved common complaiſance five minutes longer, when my ſervant returned with the coach. I took the advantage of this occaſion, and preſented my hand to the lady, who put in practice againſt me the whole artillery of her charms, ogling, languiſhing, ſighing, and ſqueezing, with ſo little reſerve, that Strap perceived her tenderneſs, and rubbed his hands with joy as he followed us to the door; but I was proof againſt all her endearments, and handed her into the coach with an intention to take my leave immediately. She gueſſed my deſign, and invited me to

her houſe, whiſpering, that now Sir John was gone to bed, ſhe could have the pleaſure of my converſation for half an hour without interruption. I told her, there was no mortification I would not undergo, rather than endanger the repoſe of her ladyſhip; and bidding the coachman drive on, wiſhed her a good night. She loſt all temper at my indifference, and ſtopping the coach at the diſtance of about twenty yards from me, popped out her head, and bawled with the lungs of a fiſh-woman, "Damn you, you dog, won't you pay the coach-hire?" As I made no anſwer, ſhe held forth againſt me with an eloquence peculiar to herſelf; calling me pitiful fellow, ſcoundrel, and an hundred ſuch appellations; concluding with an oath, that, for all my appearance, ſhe believed I had got no money in my pocket.

Having thus vented her indignation, ſhe ordered the coachman to proceed, and I returned to the tavern, where I beſpoke ſomething for ſupper, very well pleaſed at the iſſue of this adventure. I diſpenſed with the attendance of the waiter at table, on pretence that my own ſervant was preſent, and when we were alone, ſaid to Strap, "Well, Monſieur d'Eſtrapes, what do you think of this lady?" My friend, who had not opened his mouth ſince her departure, could make no other reply than the monoſyllable "Think!" which he pronounced with a note of fear and aſtoniſhment. Surpriſed at this emphaſis, I ſurveyed my valet, and perceiving a wildneſs in his looks, aſked if he had ſeen his grandfather's ghoſt! "Ghoſt! (ſaid he) I am ſure I have ſeen a devil incarnate! Who would have thought that ſo much deviliſh malice and Billingſgate could lurk under ſuch ſweetneſs of countenance and modeſty of behaviour? Ah! God help us! *Fronti nulla fides—nimium ne crede colori*—but we ought to down on our knees, and bleſs God for delivering us from the jaws of that painted ſepulchre." I was pretty much of Strap's opinion, and though I did not believe myſelf in any danger from the allurements of that ſiſterhood, I determined to act with great circumſpection for the future, and ſhun all commerce of that kind, as equally prejudicial to my purſe and conſtitution.

My next care was to introduce myſelf into a ſet of good acquaintance; for which purpoſe I frequented a certain coffee-houſe, noted for the reſort of good company, Engliſh as well as foreigners, where my appearance procured all the civilities and advances I could deſire. As there was an ordinary in the ſame houſe, I went up ſtairs to dinner with the other gueſts, and found myſelf at a table with thirteen people, the greateſt part of whom were better dreſſed than myſelf. The converſation, which was moſtly carried on in French, turned chiefly on politics; and I ſoon found the whole company was in the French intereſt, myſelf excepted, and a teſty old gentleman, who contradicted every thing that was advanced in favour of his Moſt Chriſtian Majeſty, with a ſurlineſs truly Engliſh. But this truſty patriot, who had never been out of his own country, and drew all his maxims and notions from prejudice and hearſay, was very unequal to his antagoniſts, who were ſuperior to him in learning and experience, and often took the liberty of travellers, in aſſerting things which were not ſtrictly true, becauſe they thought themſelves in no danger of being detected by him. The claim of the Queen of Spain to the Auſtrian dominions in Italy was fully explained and vindicated by a perſon who ſat oppoſite to me, and, by the ſolemnity of his manner, and the richneſs of his apparel, ſeemed to be a foreign ambaſſador. This diſſertation produced another on the Pragmatic Sanction, handled with great warmth by a young gentleman at my right hand, dreſſed in a green frock trimmed with gold, who juſtified the French king for his breach of that contract, and affirmed that he could not have obſerved it, without injuring his own glory. Although I was not at all convinced by this gentleman's arguments, I could not help admiring his vivacity, which I imagined muſt be the effect of his illuſtrious birth and noble education, and accordingly rated him in my conjecture as a young prince on his travels. The diſcourſe was afterwards ſhifted by an old gentleman of a very martial appearance, to the laſt campaign, when the battle of Dittengen was fought

over again, with ſo many circumſtances to the honour of the French, and diſadvantage of the Allies, that I began to entertain ſome doubts of my having been there in perſon, and took the liberty to mention ſome objections to what he advanced. This freedom introduced a diſpute, which laſted a good while, to the mortification of all preſent; and was at laſt referred to the determination of a grave perſon, whom they ſtyled Doctor, and who, under a ſhow of great moderation, decided it againſt me, with ſo little regard to truth, that I taxed him with partiality in pretty ſevere terms, to the no ſmall entertainment of the true Engliſh politician, who rejoiced at my defence of a cauſe he had ſo often eſpouſed without ſucceſs. My opponent, pleaſed with the victory he had gained, affected a great deal of candour, and told me, he ſhould not have been ſo poſitive, if he had not been at great pains to inform himſelf of each particular. "Indeed (ſaid he) I am convinced that, the previous ſteps conſidered, things could not happen otherwiſe; for we generals, who have ſeen ſervice, though we may not be on the ſpot ourſelves, know by the leaſt ſketch of the diſpoſition what muſt be the event." He then cenſured, with great freedom, every circumſtance of the conduct of thoſe who commanded the Allies; from thence made a tranſition to the miniſtry, which he honoured with many invectives, for employing people who had neither experience nor capacity, to the prejudice of old officers who had been diſtinguiſhed for both; dropped many hints of his own importance; and concluded with obſerving, that the French and Spaniards knew better how to value generals of merit; the good effects of which are ſeen in the conqueſts they gain, and the admirable diſcipline of their troops, which are at the ſame time better clothed and paid than any ſoldiers in the univerſe. Theſe remarks furniſhed the green knight with an opportunity of launching out in the praiſe of the French government in general, civil as well as military; on which occaſion he made many odious compariſons to the diſadvantage of the Engliſh. Every body, almoſt, aſſented to the obſervations he made; and the doctor gave his ſanction, by ſaying, the

people in France were undoubtedly the happieſt ſubjects in the world. I was ſo much aſtoniſhed and confounded at their infatuation and effrontery, that I had not power to utter one word in oppoſition to their aſſertions; but my moroſe aſſociate could not put up with the indignity that was offered to Old England, and therefore, with a ſatirical grin, addreſſed himſelf to the general in theſe words: "Sir, Sir, I have often heard it ſaid, *She's a villainous bird that befouls her own neſt.* As for what thoſe people who are foreigners ſay, I don't mind it, they know no better; but you, who were bred and born, and have got your bread under the Engliſh government, ſhould have more regard to gratitude, as well as truth, in cenſuring your native country. If the miniſtry have thought fit to lay you aſide, I ſuppoſe they have their own reaſons for ſo doing; and you ought to remember that you ſtill live on the bounty of this nation. As for theſe gentlemen (meaning the prince and ambaſſador), who make ſo free with our conſtitution, laws, and genius of our people, I think they might ſhow a little more reſpect for their benefactors, who, I muſt own, are to blame in harbouring, protecting, and encouraging ſuch ungrateful vagrants as they are." At theſe words the chevalier in green ſtarted up in a great paſſion, and, laying his hand on the hilt of his hanger, exclaimed, "Ha, *foutre!*" The Engliſhman, on the other hand, graſping his cane, cried, "Don't *foutre* me, ſirrah, or, by G—d, I'll knock you down." The company interpoſed,—the Frenchman ſat down again, and his antagoniſt proceeded—"Lookee, Monſieur, you know very well, that, had you dared to ſpeak ſo freely of the adminiſtration of your own country in Paris, as you have done of ours in London, you would have been ſent to the Baſtile without ceremony, where you might have rotted in a dungeon, and never ſeen the light of the ſun again. Now, Sir, take my word for it, although our conſtitution ſcreens us from ſuch oppreſſion, we want not laws to chaſtiſe the authors of ſeditious diſcourſe; and if I hear another ſyllable out of your mouth, in contempt or prejudice of this kingdom, I will give you a convincing proof of what I advance, and

have you laid by the heels for your preſumption." This declaration had an effect on the company as ſudden as ſurpriſing. The young prince became ſupple as a ſpaniel; the ambaſſador trembled; the general ſat ſilent and abaſhed; and the doctor, who, it ſeems, had felt the rod of power, grew pale as death, and aſſured us all, that he had no intention to affront any perſon or people. "Your principles, doctor (reſumed the old gentleman), are no ſecret—I have nothing to ſay upon that head; but am very much ſurpriſed, that a man, who deſpiſes us ſo much, ſhould, notwithſtanding, live among us, when he has no viſible motive for ſo doing—Why don't you take up your habitation in your beloved France, where you may rail at England without cenſure?" To this remonſtrance the doctor thought proper to make no reply; and an unſocial ſilence enſued; which I perceiving, took notice, that it was pity ſuch idle diſputes, maintained very often through whim or diverſion, ſhould create any miſunderſtanding among gentlemen of good ſenſe; and propoſed to drink down all animoſity in another bottle. This motion was applauded by the whole company: The wine was brought, and the Engliſh champion, declaring he had no ſpleen againſt any man for differing in opinion from him, any more than for difference of complexion, drank to the good health of all preſent; the compliment was returned, and the converſation once more became unreſerved, though more general than before. Among other topics, the ſubject of war was introduced, on which the general declaimed with great eloquence, recounting many of his own exploits by way of illuſtration. In the courſe of his harangue, he happened to mention the word *epaulement;* upon which the teſty gentleman aſked the meaning of that term. "I'll tell you what an epaulement is (replied he)—I never ſaw an epaulement but once—and that was at the ſiege of Namur—in a council of war, Monſieur Cohorn, the famous engineer, affirmed that the place could not be taken." "Yes (ſaid the prince of Vaudemont), it may be taken by an epaulement." This was immediately put in execution, and in twenty-four hours Mareſchal Boufflers was fain

to capitulate." Here he made a full ſtop; and the old gentleman repeated the queſtion, "But pray what is an epaulement?" To this interrogation the officer made no reply, but rung the bell, and called for a bill, which being brought, he threw down his proportion of the reckoning, and, telling the company he would ſhow them an epaulement when his majeſty ſhould think fit to entruſt him with the command of our army abroad, ſtrutted away with great dignity. I could not imagine why he was ſo ſhy of explaining one of the moſt ſimple terms of fortification; which I forthwith deſcribed as a ſide-work compoſed of earth, gabions, or faſcines: but I was very much ſurpriſed when I afterwards underſtood that his reſerve proceeded from his ignorance. Having paid our bill, we adjourned to the coffee-room, where my fellow-labourer inſiſted on treating me with a diſh, giving me to underſtand at the ſame time, that I had acquired his good opinion, both with reſpect to my principles and underſtanding. I thanked him for his compliment, and, profeſſing myſelf an utter ſtranger in this part of the world, begged he would have the goodneſs to inform me of the quality and characters of the people who dined above. This requeſt was a real favour to one of his diſpoſition, which was no leſs communicative than curious: he therefore complied with great ſatisfaction, and told me, to my extreme aſtoniſhment, that the ſuppoſed young prince was a dancer at one of the theatres, and the ambaſſador no other than a fidler belonging to the opera. "The doctor (ſaid he) is a Roman catholic prieſt, who ſometimes appears in the character of an officer, and aſſumes the name of Captain; but more generally takes the garb, title, and behaviour of a phyſician, in which capacity he wheedles himſelf into the confidence of weak-minded people, and, by arguments no leſs ſpecious than falſe, converts them from their religion and allegiance. He has been in the hands of juſtice more than once for ſuch practices; but he is a ſly dog, and manages matters with ſo much craft, that hitherto he has eſcaped for a ſhort impriſonment.—As for the general, you may ſee he has owed his promotion

more to his intereſt than his capacity; and, now that the eyes of the miniſtry are opened, his friends dead, or become inconſiderable, he is ſtruck off the liſt, and obliged to put up with a yearly penſion: In conſequence of this reduction, he is become malcontent, and inveighs againſt the government, in all companies, with ſo little diſcretion, that I am ſurpriſed at the lenity of the adminiſtration in overlooking his inſolence; but the truth of the matter is, he owes his ſafety to his weakneſs and want of importance. He has ſeen a little, and but a little ſervice; and yet, if you will take his word for it, there has not been a great action performed in the field ſince the Revolution, in which he was not principally concerned. When a ſtory is told of any great general, he immediately matches it with one of himſelf, though he is often unhappy in his invention, and commits ſuch groſs blunders in the detail, that every body is in pain for him. Cæſar, Pompey, and Alexander the Great, are contiuually in his mouth; and as he reads a good deal without any judgment to digeſt it, his ideas are confuſed, and his harangues as unintelligible as infinite; for, once he begins, there is no chance of his leaving off ſpeaking, while one perſon remains to yield attention; therefore the only expedient I know for putting a ſtop to his loquacity, is to lay hold of ſome incongruity he has uttered, and demand an explanation; or aſk the meaning of ſome difficult term that he knows by name only. This method will effectually put him to ſilence, if not to flight, as it happened when I inquired about an *epaulement*. Had he been acquainted with the ſignification of that word, his triumph would have been intolerable, and we muſt have quitted the field firſt, or been worried with impertinence." Having thus gratified my curioſity, the old gentleman began to diſcover his own, in queſtions relating to myſelf, to which I thought proper to return ambiguous anſwers. "I preſume, Sir (ſaid he) you have travelled." I anſwered, "Yes," "I dare ſay you would find it very expenſive," ſaid he. I replied, "To be ſure, one cannot travel without money." "That I know by experience (ſaid he), for I myſelf take a trip to Bath or Tunbridge every

ſeaſon; and one muſt pay ſauce for what he has on the road, as well in other countries as in this—That's a very pretty ſtone in your ring,—give me leave, Sir—the French have attained a wonderful ſkill in making compoſitions of this kind. Why, now, this looks almoſt as well as a diamond." "Almoſt as well, Sir (ſaid I), why not altogether? I am ſure, if you underſtand any thing of jewels, you muſt perceive at firſt ſight, that this ſtone is a real diamond, and that of a very fine water. Take it in your hand and examine it." He did ſo, with ſome confuſion, and returned it, ſaying, "I aſk your pardon, I ſee it is a true brilliant of immenſe value." I imagined his reſpect for me increaſed after this inquiry; therefore, to captivate his eſteem the more, I told him, I would ſhow him a ſeal of compoſition, engraved after a very valuable antique; upon which I pulled out my watch, with a rich gold chain, adorned with three ſeals ſet in gold, and an opal ring. He viewed each of them with great eagerneſs, handled the chain, admired the chaſed caſe, and obſerved, that the whole muſt have coſt me a vaſt ſum of money. I affected indifference, and replied in a careleſs manner, "Some trifle of ſixty or ſeventy guineas." He ſtared in my face for ſome time, and then aſked if I was an Engliſhman? I anſwered in the negative. "You are from Ireland then, Sir, I preſume ſaid he. I made the ſame reply. "O! perhaps (ſaid he) you was born in one of our ſettlements abroad." I ſtill anſwered, No. He ſeemed very much ſurpriſed, and ſaid, he was ſure I was not a foreigner. I made no reply, but left him upon the tenterhooks of impatient uncertainty. He could not contain his anxiety, but aſked pardon for the liberties he had taken, and, to encourage me the more to diſcloſe my ſituation, diſplayed his own without reſerve: "I am (ſaid he) a ſingle man, have a conſiderable annuity, on which I live according to my own inclination, and make the ends of the year meet very comfortably. As I have no eſtate to leave behind me, I am not troubled with the importunate officiouſneſs of relations or legacy hunters, and I conſider the world as made for me, not me for the world: It is my maxim therefore to enjoy it while I

can, and let futurity ſhift for itſelf." While he thus indulged his own talkative vein, and at the ſame time, no doubt, expected a retaliation from me, a young man entered, dreſſed in black velvet, and an enormous tie-wig, with an air in which natural levity and affected ſolemnity were ſo jumbled together, that, on the whole, he appeared a burleſque on all decorum. This ridiculous oddity danced up to the table at which we ſat, and, after a thouſand grimaces, aſked my friend, by the name of Mr. Medlar, if we were not engaged upon buſineſs. My companion put on a ſurly countenance, and replied, "No great buſineſs, Doctor—but however"—"O! then (cried the phyſician) I muſt beg your indulgence a little, —pray pardon me, gentlemen.—Sir (ſaid he, addreſſing himſelf to me), your moſt humble ſervant, I hope you will forgive me, Sir—I muſt beg the favour to ſit, Sir—Sir, I have ſomething of conſequence to impart to my friend Mr. Medlar—Sir, I hope you will excuſe my freedom in whiſpering, Sir." Before I had time to give this complaiſant perſon my permiſſion, Mr. Medlar cried, "I'll have no whiſpering; if you have any thing to ſay to me, ſpeak with an audible voice." The doctor ſeemed a little diſconcerted at this exclamation, and, turning again to me, made a thouſand apologies for pretending to make myſtery of any thing, a piece of caution which he ſaid was owing to his ignorance of my connection with Mr. Medlar; but, now he underſtood I was a friend, he would communicate what he had to ſay in my hearing. He then began, after two or three hems, in this manner: "You muſt know, Sir, I am juſt come from dinner at my Lady Flareit's (then addreſſing himſelf to me), a lady of quality, Sir, at whoſe table I have the honour of dining ſometimes. There was Lady Stately, and my Lady Larum, and Mrs. Dainty, and Miſs Biddy Gigler, upon my word, a very good-natured young lady, with a very pretty fortune, Sir. There were alſo my Lord Straddle, Sir John Shrug, and Mr. Billy Chatter, who is actually a very facetious young gentleman. So, Sir, her ladyſhip ſeeing me exceſſively fatigued, for ſhe was the laſt of fifteen patients (people of diſtinction, Sir) whom I had

viſited this forenoon—inſiſted upon my ſtaying dinner, though, upon my word, I proteſt I had no appetite; however, in compliance with her ladyſhip's requeſt, Sir, I ſat down, and the converſation turning upon different ſubjects, among other things, Mr. Chatter aſked very earneſtly when I ſaw Mr. Medlar. I told him I had not had the pleaſure of ſeeing you theſe nineteen hours and an half; for you may remember, Sir, it was nearly about that time; I won't be poſitive as to a minute."—"No! (ſays he) then I deſire you will go to his lodgings immediately after dinner, and ſee what's the matter with him, for he muſt certainly be very bad from having eat laſt night ſuch a vaſt quantity of raw oyſters." The cruſty gentleman, who, from the ſolemnity of his delivery, expected ſomething extraordinary, no ſooner heard his concluſion, than he ſtarted up in a teſty humour, crying, "Pſhaw! pſhaw! d—n your oyſters;" and walked away after a ſhort compliment of, "Your ſervant, Sir," to me. The doctor got up alſo, ſaying, "I vow and proteſt, upon my word, I am actually amazed," and followed Mr. Medlar to the bar, which was hard by, where he was paying for his coffee; there he whiſpered ſo loud, that I could overhear, "Pray who is this gentleman?" His friend replied haſtily, "I might have known that before now, if it had not been for your impertinent intruſion," and walked off very much diſappointed. The ceremonious phyſician returned immediately, and ſat down by me, aſking a thouſand pardons for leaving me alone: and giving me to underſtand, that what he had communicated to Mr. Medlar at the bar was an affair of the laſt importance, that would admit of no delay. He then called for ſome coffee, and launched out into the virtues of that berry, which, he ſaid, in cold phlegmatic conſtitutions, like his, dried up the ſuperfluous moiſture, and braced the relaxed nerves. He told me it was utterly unknown to the ancients; and derived its name from an Arabian word, which I might eaſily perceive by the ſound and termination. From this topic he transferred his diſquiſitions to the verb *drink*, which he affirmed was improperly applied to the taking of coffee, in as much as peo-

ple did not drink, but ſip or ſipple that liquor; that the genuine meaning of drinking is to quench one's thirſt, or commit a debauch by ſwallowing wine; that the Latin word, which conveyed the ſame idea, was *bibere* or *potare*, and that of the Greeks *pinein* or *poteein*, though he was apt to believe they were differently uſed on different occaſions. For example: To drink a vaſt quantity, or, as the vulgar expreſs it, to drink an ocean of liquor, was in Latin *potare*, and in Greek *poteein*; and, on the other hand, to uſe it moderately, was *bibere* and *pinein*; that this was only a conjecture of his own, which, however, ſeemed to be ſupported by the word *bibulous*, which is particularly applied to the pores of the ſkin, that can only drink a very ſmall quantity of the circumambient moiſture, by reaſon of the ſmallneſs of their diameters; whereas, from the verb *poteein* is derived the ſubſtantive *potamos*, which ſignifies a river, or vaſt quantity of liquor. I could not help ſmiling at this learned and important inveſtigation; and, to recommend myſelf the more to my new acquaintance, whoſe diſpoſition I was by this time well informed of, I obſerved, that what he alleged did not, to the beſt of my remembrance, appear in the writings of the ancients; for Horace uſes the words *poto* and *bibo* indifferently for the ſame purpoſe, as in the twentieth ode of his firſt Book:

Vile potabis modicis ſabinum cantharis,——
——Et prœlo domitam caleno tu bibes uvam.

That I had never heard of the verb *poteein*, but that *potamos*, *potema*, and *potos*, were derived from *pino*, *poſo*, *pepoka*; in conſequence of which the Greek poets never uſe any other word for feſtal drinking. Homer deſcribes Neſtor at his cups in theſe words;

Neſtora d'ouk elathen jache *pinonta* perempes.

And Anacreon mentions it on the ſame occaſion almoſt in every page,

Pionti de onion hedun
Otan ton *pino* oinon.
Opliz' ego de *pino*.

And in a thouſand other places. The doctor, who, doubtleſs, intended by his criticiſm to give me a high

idea of his erudition, was infinitely ſurpriſed to find himſelf ſchooled by one of my appearance; and after a conſiderable pauſe, cried, "Upon my word! you are in the right, Sir—I find I have not conſidered this affair with my uſual accuracy." Then accoſting me in Latin, which he ſpoke very well, the converſation was maintained full two hours, on a variety of ſubjects, in that language; and indeed, he ſpoke ſo judiciouſly, that I was convinced, notwithſtanding his whimſical appearance, and attention to trifles, that he was a man of extenſive knowledge, eſpecially in books; he looked upon me, as I afterwards underſtood from Mr. Medlar, as a prodigy in learning, and propoſed that very night, if I was not engaged, to introduce me to ſeveral young gentlemen of fortune and faſhion, with whom he had an appointment at the Bedford coffee-houſe.

CHAPTER XLVI.

Wagtail introduces me to a ſet of fine gentlemen, with whom I ſpend the evening at a tavern—our converſation—the characters of my new companions—the doctor is roaſted—the iſſue of our debauch.

I ACCEPTED his offer with pleaſure, and we went thither in a hackney coach, where I ſaw a great number of gay figures fluttering about, moſt of whom ſpoke to the doctor with great familiarity. Among the reſt, ſtood a group of them round the fire, whom I immediately knew to be the very perſons who had the night before, by their laughing, alarmed my ſuſpicion of the lady who had put herſelf under my protection. They no ſooner perceived me enter with Dr. Wagtail (for that was my companion's name), than they tittered and whiſpered one to another; and I was not a little ſurpriſed to find that theſe were the gentlemen to whoſe acquaintance he deſigned to recommend me; for when he obſerved them together, he told me who they were, and deſired to know by what name he ſhould introduce me. I ſatisfied him in that particular, and he advanced with great gravity, ſaying, "Gentlemen, your moſt obedient—give me leave

to introduce my friend Mr. Random to your ſociety." Then turning to me, "Mr. Random, this is Mr. Bragwell—Mr Banter, Sir—Mr. Chatter—my friend Mr. Slyboot, and Mr. Ranter, Sir." I ſaluted each of them in order, and when I came to take Mr. Slyboot by the hand, I perceived him to thruſt his tongue in his cheek, to the no ſmall entertainment of the company; but I did not think proper to take any notice of it on this occaſion. Mr. Ranter too (who I afterwards learned was a player) diſplayed his talents, by mimicking my air, features, and voice, while he returned my compliment: This feat I ſhould not have been ſo ſenſible of, had not I ſeen him behave in the ſame manner to my friend Wagtail, when he made up to them at firſt. But for once I let him enjoy the fruits of his dexterity without queſtion or controul, reſolved, however, to chaſtiſe his inſolence at a more convenient opportunity. Mr. Slyboot, gueſſing I was a ſtranger, aſked if I had been lately in France? and when I anſwered in the affirmative, inquired if I had ſeen the Luxembourg gallery? I told him I had conſidered it more than once, with great attention: Upon this, a converſation enſued, in which I diſcovered him to be a painter. While we were diſcourſing upon the particulars of this famous collection, I overheard Banter aſk Dr. Wagtail, where he had picked up this Mr. Random—To which queſtion the phyſician anſwered, "Upon my word, a mighty pretty ſort of a gentleman—a man of fortune, Sir,—he has made the grand tour, and ſeen the beſt company in Europe, Sir."—"What, he told you ſo, I ſuppoſe? (ſaid the other) I take him to be neither more nor leſs than a French valet de chambre." "Oh! barbarous, barbarous! (cried the doctor) this is actually, upon my word, altogether unaccountable. I know all his family perfectly well, Sir; he is of the Randoms of the north—a very ancient houſe, Sir, and a diſtant relation of mine." I was extremely nettled at the conjecture of Mr. Banter, and began to entertain a very indifferent opinion of my company in general; but as I might poſſibly by their means acquire a more extenſive and agreeable acquaintance, I determined to bear theſe little mortifications as

long as I could, without injuring the dignity of my character. After having talked for ſome time on the weather, plays, politics, and other coffee-houſe ſubjects, it was propoſed that we ſhould ſpend the evening at a noted tavern in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired in a body. Having taken poſſeſſion of a room, called for French wine, and beſpoke ſupper, the glaſs went about pretty freely, and the characters of my aſſociates opened upon me more and more. It ſoon appeared, that the doctor was entertained as a butt for the painter and player to exerciſe their wit upon, for the diverſion of the company. Mr. Ranter began the game, by aſking him what was good for a hoarſeneſs, lowneſs of ſpirits, and indigeſtion, for he was troubled with all theſe complaints to a very great degree. Wagtail immediately undertook to explain the nature of his caſe, and in a very prolix manner harangued upon prognoſtics, diagnoſtics, ſymptomatics, therapeutics, inanition, and repletion; then calculated the force of the ſtomach and lungs in their reſpective operations; aſcribed the player's malady to a diſorder in theſe organs, proceeding from hard drinking and vociferation, and preſcribed a courſe of ſtomachics, with abſtinence from venery, wine, loud ſpeaking, laughing, ſinging, coughing, ſneezing, or hollowing. "Pah, Pah (cried Ranter, interrupting him), the remedy is worſe than the diſeaſe.—I wiſh I knew where to find ſome tinder-water." "Tinder-water! (ſaid the doctor) upon my word I don't apprehend you, Mr. Ranter." "Water extracted from tinder (replied the other), an univerſal ſpecific for all diſtempers incident to man. It was invented by a learned German monk, who, for a valuable conſideration, imparted the ſecret to Paracelſus." "Pardon me (cried the painter), it was firſt uſed by Solomon, as appears by a Greek manuſcript in his own hand-writing, lately found at the foot of mount Lebanon, by a peaſant who was digging for potatoes." "Well (ſaid Wagtail), in all my vaſt reading, I never met with ſuch a preparation! neither did I know till this minute, that Solomon underſtood Greek, or that potatoes grew in Paleſtine." Here Banter interpoſed, ſaying, he was ſurpriſed that Doctor

Wagtail ſhould make the leaſt doubt of Solomon's underſtanding Greek, when he is repreſented to us as the wiſeſt and beſt educated prince in the world; and as for potatoes, they were tranſplanted thither from Ireland, in the time of the Cruſades, by ſome knights of that country. "I profeſs (ſaid the doctor) there is nothing more likely—I would actually give a vaſt ſum for a ſight of that manuſcript, which muſt be ineſtimable—And if I underſtood the proceſs, would ſet about it immediately." The player aſſured him the proceſs was very ſimple—that he muſt cram a hundred weight of dry tinder into a glaſs retort, and diſtilling it by the force of animal heat, it would yield half a ſcruple of inſipid water, one drop of which is a full doſe. "Upon my integrity! (exclaimed the credulous doctor) this is very amazing! and extraordinary! that a *caput mortuum* ſhall yield any water at all—I muſt own I have always been an enemy to ſpecifics, which I thought inconſiſtent with the nature of the animal economy; but certainly the authority of Solomon is not to be queſtioned. I wonder where I ſhall find a glaſs retort large enough to contain ſuch a vaſt quantity of tinder, the conſumption of which moſt undoubtedly raiſe the price of paper—or where I ſhall find animal heat ſufficient even to warm ſuch a maſs." Slyboot informed him, that he might have a retort blown for him as big as a church; and that the eaſieſt method of raiſing the vapour by animal heat, would be to place it in the middle of an infirmary for feveriſh patients, who might lie upon matraſſes around, and in contact with it. He had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than Wagtail exclaimed, in a rapture, "An admirable expedient, as I hope to be ſaved! I will poſitively put it in practice." This ſimplicity of the phyſician furniſhed excellent diverſion for the company, who, in their turns, ſneered at him in ironical compliments, which his vanity ſwallowed as the genuine ſentiments of their hearts. Mr. Chatter, impatient of ſo long a ſilence, now broke out, and entertained us with a catalogue of all the people who danced at the laſt Hampſtead aſſembly, with a moſt circumſtantial account of the dreſs and ornaments of each, from

the lappets of the ladies to the ſhoe buckles of the men; concluding with telling Bragwell, that his miſtreſs Melinda was there, and ſeemed to miſs him; and ſoliciting his company at the next occaſion of that kind. "No, no, demme (ſaid Bragwell), I have ſomething elſe to mind than dangling after a parcel of giddy-headed girls; beſides, you know my temper is ſo unruly, that I am apt to involve myſelf in ſcrapes, when a woman is concerned. The laſt time I was there, I had an affair with Tom Trippet." "O! I remember that (cried Banter); you lugged out before the ladies; and I commend you for ſo doing, becauſe you had an opportunity of ſhowing your manhood without running any riſk." "Riſk! (ſaid the other, with a fierce countenance) damn my blood! I fear no riſks. I an't afraid of lugging out againſt any man that wears a head, damme! 'tis well known I have drawn blood more than once, and loſt ſome too; but what does that ſignify?" The player begged this champion to employ him as his ſecond the next time he intended to kill, for he wanted to ſee a man die of a ſtab, that he might know how to act ſuch a part the more naturally on the ſtage. "Die! (replied the hero): No, by God! I know better things than to incur the verdict of a Middleſex jury—I ſhould look upon my fencing-maſter to be an ignorant ſon of a bitch, if he had not taught me to prick any part of my antagoniſt's body that I pleaſe to diſable." "Oho! (cried Slyboot) if that be the caſe, I have a favour to aſk: You muſt know I am employed to paint a Jeſus on the croſs; and my purpoſe is to repreſent him at that point of time when the ſpear is thruſt into his ſide. Now, I ſhould be glad you would, in my preſence, pink ſome impertinent fellow into convulſions, without endangering his life, that I may have an opportunity of taking a good clever agony from nature: The doctor will direct you where to enter, and how far to go; but pray let it be as near the left ſide as poſſible." Wagtail, who took this propoſal ſeriouſly, obſerved, that it would be a very difficult matter to penetrate into the left ſide of the thorax, without hurting the heart, and of conſequence killing the patient; but he believed it was poſſible for a man

of a very nice hand, and exact knowledge of anatomy, to wound the diaphragma ſomewhere about the ſkirts, which might induce a ſingultus, without being attended with death; that he was ready to demonſtrate the inſertion of that muſcle to Mr. Bragwell; but deſired to have no concern with the experiment, which might eſſentially prejudice his reputation, in caſe of miſcarriage. Bragwell was as much impoſed upon by the painter's waggery as the doctor, and declined engaging in the affair, ſaying, he had a very great regard for Mr. Slyboot, but had laid it down as a maxim, never to fight except when his honour was engaged. A thouſand jokes of this kind were uttered; the wine circulated; ſupper was ſerved in; we ate heartily; returned to the bottle; Bragwell became noiſy and troubleſome; Banter grew more and more ſevere; Ranter rehearſed; Slyboot made faces at the whole company; I ſung French catches, and Chatter kiſſed me with great affection; while the doctor, with a woful countenance, ſat ſilent like a diſciple of Pythagoras. At length, it was propoſed by Bragwell, that we ſhould ſcour the hundreds, ſweat the conſtable, maul the watch, and then reel ſoberly to bed.

While we deliberated on this expedition, the waiter came into the room, and aſked for Doctor Wagtail; when he underſtood he was preſent, he told him there was a lady below to inquire for him; at which meſſage the phyſician ſtarted from his melancholy contemplation, and, with a look of extreme confuſion, aſſured the company, he could not poſſibly be the perſon wanted, for he had no connection with any lady whatever, and bade the drawer tell her ſo. "For ſhame! (cried Banter) would you be ſo impolite as to refuſe a lady the hearing? perhaps ſhe comes for a conſultation. It muſt be ſome extraordinary affair that brings a lady to a tavern at this time o'night. Mr. Ranter, pray do the doctor's baiſemains to the lady, and ſquire her hither." The player immediately ſtaggered out, and returned, leading in, with much ceremony, a tall ſtrapping wench, whoſe appearance proclaimed her occupation. We received her with the utmoſt ſolemnity, and with a good deal of entreaty ſhe was perſuaded to ſit, when a profound ſilence enſued,

during which ſhe fixed her eyes, with a diſconſolate look, on the doctor, who was utterly confounded at her behaviour, and returned her melancholy fourfold. At length, after a good many piteous ſighs, ſhe wiped her eyes, and accoſted him thus: "What! not one word of comfort? Will nothing ſoften that ſtony heart of thine? Not all my tears! not all my affliction! not the inevitable ruin thou haſt brought upon me! Where are thy vows, thou faithleſs perjured man? Haſt thou no honour?—no conſcience—no remorſe for thy perfidious conduct towards me!—Anſwer me, wilt thou at laſt do me juſtice, or muſt I have recourſe to heaven or hell for my revenge?" If poor Wagtail was amazed before ſhe ſpoke, what muſt his confuſion be on hearing this addreſs! His natural paleneſs changed into a ghaſtly clay colour, his eyes rolled, his lips trembled, and he anſwered, in an accent not to be deſcribed, "Upon my word, honour, and ſalvation! Madam, you are actually miſtaken in my perſon. I have a moſt particular veneration for your ſex, and am actually incapable of injuring any lady in the ſmalleſt degree, Madam;—beſides, Madam, to the beſt of my recollection, I never had the honour of ſeeing you before, as I hope to be ſaved, Madam!" "How, traitor! (cried ſhe) doſt thou diſown me then?—Miſtaken! no, too well I know that fair bewitching face! too well I know that falſe enchanting tongue!—Alas! gentlemen, ſince the villain compels me, by his unkindneſs, to expoſe myſelf and him, know that this betrayer, under the ſpecious pretence of honourable addreſſes, won my heart, and, taking advantage of his conqueſt, robbed me of my virgin treaſure, and afterwards abandoned me to my fate! I am now four months gone with child by him, turned out of doors by my relations, and left a prey to miſery and want! Yes, thou barbarian (ſaid ſhe, turning to Wagtail), thou tiger, thou ſuccubus! too well thou knoweſt my ſituation—but I will tear out thy faithleſs heart, and deliver the world from ſuch a monſter." So ſaying, ſhe ſprung forward at the doctor, who with incredible agility jumped over the table, and ran behind Bragwell, while the reſt of us endeavoured to appeaſe the furious heroine. Although every body in the com-

pany affected the utmoſt ſurpriſe, I could eaſily perceive it was a ſcheme concerted among them to produce diverſion at the doctor's expence; and being under no concern about the conſequence, I entered into the confederacy, and enjoyed the diſtreſs of Wagtail, who, with tears in his eyes, begged the protection of the company, declaring himſelf as innocent of the crime laid to his charge, as the fœtus in utero; and hinting, at the ſame time, that nature had not put it into his power to be guilty of ſuch a treſpaſs—"Nature! (cried the lady) there was no nature in the caſe—he abuſed me by the help of charms and ſpells; or elſe how is it poſſible that any woman could have liſtened to the addreſſes of ſuch a ſcare-crow? Were theſe owliſh eyes made for ogling; that carrion complexion to be admired; or that mouth like a horſe-ſhoe to be kiſſed? No, no, you owe your ſucceſs to your filtres, to your drugs and incantations; and not to your natural talents, which are in every reſpect mean and contemptible." The doctor now thought he had got an opportunity of vindicating himſelf effectually; and deſired the complainant to compoſe herſelf but for half an hour, in which he undertook to prove the abſurdity of believing in the power of incantations, which were only idle dreams of ignorance and ſuperſtition. He accordingly pronounced a very learned diſcourſe upon the nature of ideas, the power and independence of the mind, the properties of ſtimulating medicines, the difference between a proneneſs to venery, which many ſimples would create, and a paſſion limited to one object, which can only be the reſult of ſenſe and reflection; and concluded with a pathetic remonſtrance, ſetting forth his unhappineſs in being perſecuted with the reſentment of a lady whom he had never injured, nor even ſeen before that occaſion, and whoſe faculties were, in all likelihood, ſo much impaired by her misfortunes, that an innocent perſon was in danger of being ruined by her diſorder. He had no ſooner finiſhed his harangue, than the forlorn princeſs renewed her lamentations, and cautioned the company againſt his eloquence, which, ſhe ſaid, was able to bias the moſt impartial bench in Chriſtendom. Banter ad-

viſed him to eſpouſe her immediately, as the only means to ſalve his reputation, and offered to accompany him to the Fleet for that purpoſe; but Slyboot propoſed that a father ſhould be purchaſed for the child, and a comfortable alimony ſettled on the mother. Ranter promiſed to adopt the infant *gratis*. Wagtail was ready to worſhip him for his generoſity; and, though he perſiſted in proteſting his innocence, condeſcended to every thing, rather than his unblemiſhed character ſhould be called in queſtion. The lady rejected the propoſal, and inſiſted on matrimony. Bragwell took up the cudgels for the doctor, and undertook to rid him of her importunity for half a guinea; upon which Wagtail, with great eagerneſs, pulled out his purſe, and put it into the hand of his friend, who, taking half a piece out of it, gave it to the plaintiff, and bade her thank God for her good fortune. When ſhe had received this bounty, ſhe affected to weep, and begged, ſince the phyſician had renounced her, he would at leaſt vouchſafe her a parting kiſs: This he was prevailed upon to grant, with great reluctance, and went up with his uſual ſolemnity to ſalute her; when ſhe laid hold of his cheek with her teeth, and held faſt, while he roared with anguiſh, to the unſpeakable diverſion of all preſent. When ſhe thought proper to releaſe him, ſhe dropped a low curtſey to the company, and quitted the room, leaving the doctor in the utmoſt horror, not ſo much on account of the pain, as the apprehenſion of the conſequence of the bite; for by this time he was convinced of her being mad. Banter preſcribed the actual cautery, and put the poker in the fire to be heated, in order to ſear the place. The player was of opinion that Bragwell ſhould ſcoop out the part affected with the point of his ſword; but the painter prevented both theſe dreadful operations, by recommending a balſam he had in his pocket, which never failed to cure the bite of a mad dog: So ſaying, he pulled out a ſmall bladder of black paint; with which he inſtantly anointed not only the ſore, but the greateſt part of the patient's face, and left it in a frightful condition. In ſhort, the poor creature was ſo haraſſed with fear and

vexation, that I pitied him extremely, and ſent him home in a chair, contrary to the inclination of every body preſent.

This freedom of mine gave umbrage to Bragwell, who teſtified his diſpleaſure, by ſwearing a few threats, without making any application; which being perceived by Slyboot, who ſat by me, he, with a view of promoting a quarrel, whiſpered to me, that he thought Bragwell uſed me very ill; but every man was the beſt judge of his own affairs. I anſwered aloud, that I would neither ſuffer Mr. Bragwell nor him to uſe me ill with impunity, and that I ſtood in no need of his counſel, in regard to the regulation of my conduct. He thought proper to aſk a thouſand pardons, and aſſure me he meant no offence; while Bragwell feigned himſelf aſleep, that he might not be obliged to take notice of what paſſed. But the player, who had more animal ſpirits and leſs diſcretion than Slyboot, unwilling to let the affair reſt where he had dropped it, jogged Mr. Bragwell, and told him ſoftly, that I called him names, and threatened to cudgel him. This particular I underſtood by his ſtarting, and crying, "Blood and wounds! you lie! No man durſt treat me ſo ignominiouſly—Mr. Random, did you call me names, and threaten to drub me?" I denied the imputation, and propoſed to puniſh the ſcoundrel, who endeavoured to foment diſturbance in the company: Bragwell ſignified his approbation, and drew his ſword; I did the ſame, and accoſted the actor in theſe words: "Lookee, Mr. Ranter, I know you poſſeſs all the mimicry and miſchievous qualities of an ape, becauſe I have obſerved you put them all in practice more than once to-night, on me and others; now I want to ſee if you reſemble one in nimbleneſs alſo; therefore I deſire you to leap over this ſword without heſitation." So ſaying, I held it parallel to the horizon, at the diſtance of about three feet from the floor, and called, "Once—twice—thriee, and away;" but, inſtead of complying with my command, he ſnatched his hat and hanger, and aſſuming the looks, ſwagger, and phraſe of Piſtol, burſt out into

the following exclamation: "Ha! muſt I then perform inglorious prank, of ſylvan ape in mountain foreſt caught! Death rock me aſleep, abridge my doleful days, and lay my head in fury's lap. Have we not Hiren here?" This buffoonery did not anſwer his expectation, for by this time the company was bent on ſeeing him in a new character. Mr. Banter deſired me to hold my ſword a foot or two higher, that he might have the better opportunity of exerting himſelf. The painter told him, if he performed well, he would recommend him as a vaulter to the proprietors of Sadler's-wells; and Bragwell, crying "Leap for the king," applied the point of his ſword to the player's poſteriors with ſuch ſucceſs, that he ſprung over in a trice, and, finding the door unguarded, vaniſhed in a twinkling; glad, no doubt, of having paid his ſhare of the reckoning ſo eaſily.

It being now near two o'clock in the morning, we diſcharged the bill, and ſallied out into the ſtreet. The painter ſlunk away without taking his leave. Billy Chatter, being unable to ſpeak or ſtand, was ſent to a bagnio; and Banter and I accompanied Bragwell to Moll King's coffee-houſe, where, after he had kicked half a dozen hungry whores, we left him aſleep on a bench, and directed our courſe towards Charing-croſs, near which place both he and I lodged.

The natural dryneſs of my companion being overcome by liquor, he honoured me by the way with many compliments and profeſſions of friendſhip, for which I made ſuitable acknowledgments, and told him, I thought myſelf happy in having, by my behaviour, removed the unfavourable opinion he entertained of me at firſt ſight. He was ſurpriſed at this declaration, and begged me to explain myſelf: Upon which I mentioned what I had overheard him ſay of me to Wagtail in the coffee-houſe. He laughed, and made an apology for his freedom, aſſuring me, that my appearance had very much prepoſſeſſed him in my favour; and what he ſaid was only intended as a joke on the doctor's ſolemnity. I was highly pleaſed at being undeceived in this parti-

cular, and not a little proud of the good opinion of this wit, who ſhook me by the hand at parting, and promiſed to meet me next day at the ordinary.

CHAPTER XLVII.

Strap communicates to me a conqueſt he had made of a chandler's widow—finds himſelf miſerably miſtaken—I go to the opera—admire Melinda—am cautioned by Banter—go to the aſſembly at Hampſtead—dance with that young lady—receive an inſolent meſſage from Bragwell, whoſe metal is ſoon cooled—am in favour with my miſtreſs, whom I viſit next day; and am bubbled out of eighteen guineas at cards—Strap triumphs at my ſucceſs, but is aſtoniſhed at my expence—Banter comes to my lodging, is very ſarcaſtic at my expence, and borrows five guineas from me, as a proof of his friendſhip.

In the morning before I got up, Strap came into my chamber, and, finding me awake, hemmed ſeveral times, ſcratched his head, caſt his eyes upon the ground, and, with a very fooliſh kind of ſimper upon his face, gave me to underſtand he had ſomething to communicate. "By your countenance (ſaid I) I expect to hear good tidings." "Indifferent (replied he, tittering), that is, hereafter as it ſhall be. You muſt know I have ſome thoughts of altering my condition." "What! cried I, aſtoniſhed), a matrimonial ſcheme? O rare Strap! thou haſt got the heels of me at laſt." "N'—no leſs, I aſſure you (ſaid he, burſting into a laugh of ſelf-approbation); a tallow-chandler's widow, that lives hard by, has taken a liking to me—A fine jolly dame, as plump as a partridge. She has a well furniſhed houſe, a briſk trade, and a good deal of the ready. I may have her for the aſking. See told a friend of mine, a brother footman, that ſhe would take me out of a ſtinking clout. But I refuſed to give my final anſwer, till I knew your opinion of the matter." I congratulated Monſieur d'Eſtrapes upon his conqueſt, and approved of the ſcheme, provided he could be aſſured of thoſe circumſtances of her fortune; but adviſed him to do nothing raſhly, and give me an opportunity of ſeeing the lady before matters ſhould be brought to a concluſion. He

aſſured me he would do nothing without my conſent and approbation, and that very morning, while I was at breakfaſt, introduced his inamorata to my acquaintance. She was a ſhort thick woman, about the age of thirty-ſix, and had a particular prominence of belly, which I perceived at firſt ſight, not without ſome ſuſpicion of foul play. I deſired her, however, to ſit, and treated her with a diſh of tea; the diſcourſe turning on the good qualities of Strap, whom I repreſented as a prodigy of ſobriety, induſtry, and virtue.—When ſhe took her leave, he followed her to the door, and returned licking his lips, and aſking if I did not think ſhe was a luſcious creature. I made nó myſtery of my apprehenſion, but declared my ſentiments of her without reſerve; at which he was not ſurpriſed, telling me he had obſerved the ſame ſymptom, but was informed by his friend that ſhe was only livergrown, and would in a few months be as ſmall in the waiſt as ever. "Yes (ſaid I), a few weeks, I believe will do the buſineſs. In ſhort, Strap, it is my opinion, that you are egregiouſly impoſed upon; and that this friend is no other than a raſcal who wants to palm his trull upon you for a wife, that he may at once deliver himſelf from the importunities of the mother, and the expence of her bantling; for which reaſon I would not have you truſt implicitly to the report he makes of her wealth, which is inconſiſtent with his behaviour; nor run your head precipitately into a nooſe, that you may afterwards wiſh exchanged for the hangman's. He ſeemed very much ſtartled at my inſinuation, and promiſed to look twice before he leaped; ſaying, with ſome heat, "Odds, if I find his intention is to betray me, we ſhall ſee which of us is the better man." My prediction was verified in leſs than a fortnight; her great belly producing an infant, to the unſpeakable amazement of Strap, who was, before this happened, inclinable to believe I had refined a little too much in my penetration. His falſe friend diſappeared; and in a few days after an execution was iſſued againſt her goods and houſehold furniture, which were ſeized by the creditors.

Meanwhile I met my friend Banter at the ordinary,

and in the evening went to the opera with him and Mr. Chatter, who pointed out Melinda in one of the boxes, and offered to introduce me to her, obſerving at the ſame time, that ſhe was a reigning toaſt worth ten thouſand pounds. This piece of information made my heart bound with joy, and I diſcovered great eagerneſs to accept the propoſal; upon which he aſſured me I ſhould dance with her at the next aſſembly, if he had any influence in that quarter: So ſaying, he went round, ſpoke to her ſome minutes, and, as I imagined, pointed at me; then returning, told me, to my inexpreſſible pleaſure, that I might depend upon what he had promiſed, for ſhe was now engaged as my partner. Banter, in a whiſper, gave me to underſtand, that ſhe was an incorrigible coquette, who would grant the ſame favour to any young fellow in England of a tolerable appearance, merely to engage him among the herd of her admirers, that ſhe might have the pleaſure of ſeeing them daily increaſe; that ſhe was of a cold inſenſible diſpoſition, dead to every paſſion but vanity, and ſo blind to merit, that he would lay any wager the wealthieſt fool ſhould carry her at laſt. I attributed a good deal of this intelligence to the ſatirical turn of my friend, or reſentment for having himſelf ſuffered a rebuff from the lady in queſtion; and, at any rate, truſted ſo much to my own accompliſhments, as to believe no woman could reſiſt the ardour of my addreſſes.

Full of this confidence I repaired to Hampſtead, in company with Billy Chatter, my Lord Hobble, and Doctor Wagtail. There I ſaw a very brilliant aſſembly, before whom I had the honour to walk a minuet with Melinda, who charmed me with her frank manner and eaſineſs of behaviour. Before the country dances began, I received a meſſage, by a perſon I did not know, from Bragwell, who was preſent, importing that nobody who knew him preſumed to dance with Melinda, while he was there in perſon; and that I would do well to relinquiſh her without noiſe, becauſe he had a mind to lead up a country dance with her. This extraordinary intimation, which was delivered in the lady's hearing, did not at all diſcompoſe me, who by this time was

pretty well acquainted with the character of my rival. I therefore, without the leaſt ſymptom of concern, bade the gentleman tell Mr. Bragwell, that, ſince I was ſo happy as to obtain the lady's conſent, I ſhould not be ſolicitous about his; and deſired the bearer himſelf to bring me no ſuch impertinent meſſages for the future. Melinda affected a ſort of confuſion, and pretended to wonder that Mr. Bragwell ſhould give himſelf ſuch liberties with regard to her, who had no manner of connection with the fellow. I laid hold of this opportunity to diſplay my valour, and offered to call him to an account for his inſolence, a propoſal which ſhe abſolutely refuſed, under pretence of conſulting my ſafety; though I could perceive by the ſparkling of her eyes, that ſhe would not have thought herſelf affronted in being the ſubject of a duel. I was by no means pleaſed with this diſcovery of her thoughts, which not only argued the moſt unjuſtifiable vanity, but likewiſe the moſt barbarous indifference; however, I was allured by her fortune, and reſolved to gratify her pride, in making her the occaſion of a public quarrel between me and Bragwell, who, I was pretty certain, would never drive matters to a dangerous extremity.

While we danced together, I obſerved this formidable rival at one end of the room, encircled with a cluſter of beaux, to whom he talked with great vehemence, caſting many big looks at me, from time to time: I gueſſed the ſubject of his diſcourſe, and as ſoon as I had handed my partner to her ſeat, ſtrutted up to the place where he ſtood, and, cocking my hat in his face, demanded aloud, if he had any thing to ſay to me. He anſwered with a ſullen tone, "Nothing at preſent, Sir;" and turned about upon his heel. "Well (ſaid I), you know where I am to be found at any time." His companions ſtared at one another, and I returned to the lady, whoſe features brightened at my approach, and immediately a whiſper run through the whole room; after which ſo many eyes were turned upon me, that I was ready to ſink with confuſion. When the ball broke up, I led her to her coach, and, like a true French gallant, would have got up behind it, in order to protect her

from violence on the road; but ſhe abſolutely refuſed my offer, and expreſſed her concern that there was not an empty ſeat for me within the vehicle.

Next day in the afternoon, I waited on her at her lodgings, by permiſſion, in company with Chatter, and was very civilly received by her mother, with whom ſhe lived; there were a good many faſhionable people preſent, chiefly young fellows, and immediately after tea, a couple of card tables were ſet, at one of which I had the honour to play with Melinda, who, in leſs than three hours, made ſhift to plunder me of eight guineas. I was well enough content to loſe a little money with a good grace, that I might have an opportunity in the mean time to ſay ſoft things, which are ſtill moſt welcome when attended with good luck; but I was by no means ſatisfied of her fair play, a circumſtance that ſhocked me not a little, and greatly impaired my opinion of her diſintereſtedneſs and delicacy. However, I was reſolved to profit by this behaviour, and treat her in my turn with leſs ceremony; accordingly, I laid cloſe ſiege to her, and finding her not at all diſguſted with the groſs incenſe I offered, that very night made a declaration of love in plain terms. She received my addreſſes with great gaiety, and pretended to laugh them off; but, at the ſame time, treated me with ſuch particular complacency, that I was perſuaded I had made a conqueſt of her heart, and concluded myſelf the happieſt man alive. Elevated with theſe flattering ideas, I ſat down again to cards, after ſupper, and with great cheerfulneſs ſuffered myſelf to be cheated of ten guineas more.

It was late before I took my leave, after being favoured with a general invitation; and when I got into bed, the adventures of the day hindered me from ſleeping. Sometimes I pleaſed myſelf with the hopes of poſſeſſing a fine woman with ten thouſand pounds; then I would ruminate on the character I had heard of her from Banter, and compare it with the circumſtances of her conduct towards me, which ſeemed to bear too great a reſemblance to the picture he had drawn. This introduced a melancholy reflection on the expence I

had undergone, and the ſmallneſs of my funds to ſupport it, which, by the bye, were none of my own. In ſhort, I found myſelf involved in doubts and perplexities, that kept me awake the greateſt part of the night.

In the morning, Strap, with whom I had not converſed for two days, preſented himſelf with the utenſils for ſhaving me; upon which, I aſked his opinion of the lady whom he had ſeen me conduct to her coach at Hampſtead. "Odd! ſhe's a delicious creature (cried he) and, as I am informed, a great fortune. I am ſorry you did not inſiſt on going home with her. I dare ſay, ſhe would not have refuſed your company; for ſhe ſeems to be a good humoured ſoul." "There's a time for all things (ſaid I). You muſt know, Strap, I was in company with her till one o'clock this morning." I had no ſooner pronounced theſe words than he began to caper about the room, and ſnap his fingers, crying in a tranſport, "The day's our own!—the day's our own!" I gave him to underſtand that his triumph was a little premature, and that I had more difficulties to ſurmount than he was aware of; then I recounted to him the intelligence I had received from Banter. At which he changed colour, ſhook his head, and obſerved there was no faith in woman. I told him I was reſolved to make a bold puſh notwithſtanding, although I foreſaw it would lead me into a great expence; and bade him gueſs the ſum I had loſt laſt light at cards. He ſcratched his chin, and proteſted his abhorrence of cards, the very name of which being mentioned, made him ſweat with vexation, as it recalled the money-dropper to his remembrance: "But, however (ſaid he), you have to do with other gueſs-people now. Why, I ſuppoſe, if you had a bad run laſt night, you would ſcarce come off for leſs than ten or twelve ſhillings." I was mortified at this piece of ſimplicity, which I imagined, at that time, was all affected by way of reprimand for my folly; and aſked with ſome heat, if he thought I ſpent the evening in a cellar with chairmen and bunters; giving him to know at the ſame time, that my expence had amounted to eighteen guineas. It would require the pencil of Hogarth to expreſs the aſtoniſhment and concern of

Strap, on hearing this piece of news; the baſon in which he was preparing the lather for my chin, dropped out of his hands, and he remained ſome time immoveable in that ludicrous attitude, with his mouth open, and his eyes thruſt forward conſiderably beyond their ſtation; but remembering my diſpoſition, which was touchy and impatient of controul, he ſmothered his chagrin, and attempted to recollect himſelf. With this view, he endeavoured to laugh, but, in ſpite of his teeth, broke out into a whimper, took up his waſh-ball and pewter-pot, ſcrubbed my beard with the one, and diſcharged the other upon my face. I took no notice of his confuſion, but after he had fully recovered himſelf, put him in mind of his right, and aſſured him of my readineſs to ſurrender his effects whenever he ſhould think proper to demand them. He was nettled at my inſinuation, which he thought proceeded from my diſtruſt of his friendſhip; and begged I would never talk to him in that ſtrain again, unleſs I had a mind to break his heart.

This good creature's unalterable friendſhip for me, affected me with the moſt grateful ſentiments, and acted as a ſpur to my reſolution of acquiring a fortune, that I might have it in my power to manifeſt my generoſity in my turn. For this purpoſe I determined to bring matters to a ſpeedy concluſion with Melinda; well knowing that a few ſuch nights as the laſt, would effectually incapacitate me from proſecuting that or any other advantageous amour.

While my meditation was buſied in planning out my future conduct, Mr. Banter favoured me with a viſit; and, after breakfaſt, aſked how I had paſſed the preceding evening. I anſwered, I was very agreeably entertained at a private houſe. "Yes (ſaid he, with a ſarcaſtic ſmile), you deſerved ſomething extraordinary for the price you paid." I was ſurpriſed at this remark, and pretended ignorance of his meaning. "Come, come, Random (continued he), you need not make a myſtery of it to me, the whole town has it. I wiſh that fooliſh affair between you and Bragwell at Hampſtead had been leſs public. It has ſet all the buſy-bodies at work to

find out your real character and ſituation; and you cannot imagine what conjectures have already circulated at your expence. One ſuſpects you to be a Jeſuit in diſguiſe; another thinks you are an agent from the Pretender; a third believes you to be an upſtart gameſter, becauſe nobody knows any thing of your family or fortune; a fourth is of opinion that you are an Iriſh fortune hunter." This laſt hypotheſis touched me ſo nearly, that, to conceal my confuſion, I was fain to interrupt his detail, and damn the world for an envious meddling community, that would not ſuffer a gentleman to live without moleſtation. He took no notice of this apoſtrophe, but went on, "For my own part, I neither know, nor deſire to know, who, or what you are; this I am certain of, that few people make a myſtery of their origin or ſituation, who can boaſt of any thing advantageous in either; and my own opinion of the matter is, that you have raiſed yourſelf by your induſtry, from nothing to the appearance you now maintain, and which you endeavour to ſupport by ſome matrimonial ſcheme." Here he fixed his eyes ſtedfaſtly upon me, and perceiving my face covered with bluſhes, told me, now he was confirmed in his opinion;—"Look ye, Random (ſaid he), I have divined your plan, and am confident it will never ſucceed. You are too honeſt, and too ignorant of the town, to practiſe the neceſſary cheats of your profeſſion, and detect the conſpiracies that will be formed againſt you. Beſides, you are downright baſhful—what the devil! ſet up for a fortune hunter before you have conquered the ſenſe of ſhame! Perhaps you are entitled by your merit, and I believe you are, to a richer and better wife than Melinda; but, take my word for it, ſhe is not to be won at that rate; or, if you are ſo lucky as to carry her, between you and me, you may ſay as Teague did, *By my ſoul, I have gained a loſs!* She would take care to ſpend her fortune in a twinkling, and ſoon make you ſick of her extravagance." I was alarmed by his diſcourſe, while I reſented the freedom of it, and expreſſed my diſguſt, by telling him, he was miſtaken in my intentions, and deſiring he would give me leave to regulate my con-

duct according to the dictates of my own reaſon. He made an apology for the liberty he had taken, and aſcribed it to the warmth of his friendſhip for me; as an uncommon inſtance of which, he borrowed five guineas, aſſuring me, there were very few people in the world whom he would ſo far favour with his confidence. I gave him the money, and profeſſed myſelf ſo well convinced of his ſincerity, that he had no occaſion to put it to ſuch extraordinary proofs for the future. "I thought (ſaid he) to have aſked five pieces more, but hearing you was bubbled of eighteen laſt night, I preſumed you might be out of caſh, and reſolved to model my demand accordingly." I could not help admiring the cavalier behaviour of this ſpark, of whom I deſired to know his reaſon for ſaying I was bubbled. He then gave me to underſtand, that, before he came to my lodgings, he had beat up Tom Toſsle, who, having been preſent, informed him of the particulars, rehearſed all the fine things I ſaid to Melinda, with which he propoſes to entertain the town; and, among other circumſtances, aſſured him, my miſtreſs cheated with ſo little art, that nobody but a mere novice could have been impoſed upon.

The thoughts of becoming a ſubject of raillery for coxcombs, and loſing my money to boot, ſtung me to the quick; but I made a virtue of my indignation, and ſwore that no man ſhould, with impunity, either aſperſe the character of Melinda, or turn my behaviour into ridicule. He replied in a dry manner, that I would find it an Herculean taſk to chaſtiſe every body who would laugh at my expence; and as for the character of Melinda, he did not ſee how it could ſuffer by what was laid to her charge; for that cheating at cards, far from being reckoned a blemiſh among people of faſhion, was looked upon as an honourable indication of ſuperior genius and addreſs. "But let us wave this ſubject (ſaid he), and go to the coffee-houſe, in order to make a party for dinner."

CHAPTER XLVIII.

We repair to the coffee-houſe, where we overhear a curious diſpute between Wagtail and Medlar, which is referred to our deciſion—the doctor gives an account of his experiment—Medlar is roaſted by Banter at the ordinary—the old gentleman's advice to me.

BEING as willing to drop the theme, as he to propoſe it, I accompanied him thither, where we found Mr. Medlar and Dr. Wagtail diſputing upon the word *Cuſtard*, which the phyſician affirmed ſhould be ſpelled with a *G*, becauſe it was derived from the Latin verb *guſtare*, "to taſte." But Medlar pleaded cuſtom in behalf of *C*, obſerving, that, by the doctor's rule, we ought to change pudding into budding, becauſe it is derived from the French word *Boudin*; and in that caſe why not retain the original orthography and pronunciation of all the foreign words we have adopted; by which means our language would become a diſſonant jargon, without ſtandard or propriety. The controverſy was referred to us; and Banter, notwithſtanding his real opinion to the contrary, decided it in favour of Wagtail: Upon which the peeviſh annuitant aroſe, and uttering the monoſyllable Piſh! with great emphaſis, removed to another table.

We then inquired of the doctor what progreſs he had made in the experiment of diſtilling tinder-water; and he told us he had been at all the glaſs-houſes about town, but could find nobody who would undertake to blow a retort large enough to hold the third part of the quantity preſcribed; but he intended to try the proceſs on as much as would produce five drops, which would be ſufficient to prove the ſpecific, and then he would make it a parliamentary affair: that he had already purchaſed a conſiderable weight of rags, in reducing which to tinder, he had met with a misfortune, which had obliged him to change his lodgings; for he had gathered them in a heap on the floor, and ſet fire to them with a candle, on the ſuppoſition that the boards would ſuſtain no damage, becauſe it is the nature of flame to aſcend; but by ſome very extraordinary accident, the

wood was invaded, and began to blaze with great violence, which diſordered him ſo much, that he had not preſence of mind enough to call for aſſiſtance, and the whole houſe muſt have been conſumed, with him in the midſt of it, had not the ſmoke that rolled out of the windows in clouds, alarmed the neighbourhood, and brought people to his ſuccour. That he had loſt a pair of black velvet breeches and a tie-wig in the hurry, beſides the expence of the rags, which were rendered uſeleſs by the water uſed to quench the flame, and the damage of the floor, which he was compelled to repair. That his landlord, believing him diſtracted, had inſiſted on his quitting his apartment at a minute's warning, and he was put to incredible inconvenience; but now he was ſettled in a very comfortable houſe, and had the uſe of a large paved yard for preparing his tinder: So that he hoped in a very ſhort time to reap the fruits of his labour.

After having congratulated the doctor on his proſpect, and read the papers, we repaired to an auction of pictures, where we entertained ourſelves an hour or two: From thence we adjourned to the Mall, and after two or three turns, went back to dinner, Banter aſſuring us, that he intended to roaſt Medlar at the ordinary; and indeed we were no ſooner ſet than this Cynic began to execute his purpoſe, by telling the old gentleman, that he looked extremely well, conſidering the little ſleep he had enjoyed laſt night. To this compliment Medlar made no reply, but by a ſtare accompanied with a ſignificant grin;—and Banter went on thus: "I don't know whether moſt to admire, the charity of your mind, or the vigour of your body. Upon my ſoul, Mr. Medlar, you do generous things with the beſt taſte of any man I know! You extend your compaſſion to real objects, and exact only ſuch returns as they are capable of making. You muſt know, gentlemen (ſaid he, turning to the company), I had been up moſt part of the night with a friend who is ill of a fever, and on my return home this morning chanced to paſs by a gin-ſhop ſtill open, whence iſſued a confuſed ſound of mirth and jollity: Upon which I popped in my head, and perceived Mr. Medlar dancing

bare-headed in the midſt of ten or twenty ragged bunters, who rejoiced at his expence. But indeed, Mr. Medlar, you ought not to ſacrifice your conſtitution to your benevolence. Conſider you grow old apace; and therefore have a reverend care of your health, which muſt certainly be very much impaired by theſe nocturnal expeditions." The teſty ſenior could no longer contain himſelf, but cried haſtily, "'Tis well known that your tongue is no ſlander." "I think (ſaid the other) you might ſpare that obſervation, as you are very ſenſible, that my tongue has done you ſignal ſervice on many occaſions. You may remember, that when you made your addreſſes to the fat widow, who kept a public houſe at Iſlington, there was a report ſpread very much to the prejudice of your manhood, which coming to the ears of your miſtreſs, you was diſcarded immediately, and I brought matters to a reconciliation, by aſſuring her you had three baſtards at nurſe in the country: How you ruined your own affair afterwards, it is neither my buſineſs nor inclination to relate." This anecdote, which had no other foundation than in Banter's own invention, afforded a good deal of mirth to every body preſent, and provoked Mr. Medlar beyond all ſufferance; ſo that he ſtarted up in a mighty paſſion, and, forgetting that his mouth was full, beſpattered thoſe who ſat next to him, while he diſcharged his indignation in a volley of oaths, and called Banter inſignificant puppy, impertinent jackanapes, and an hundred ſuch appellations; telling the company, he had invented theſe falſe malicious aſperſions, becauſe he would not lend him money to ſquander away upon rooks and whores. "A very likely ſtory (ſaid Banter), that I ſhould attempt to borrow money of a man who is obliged to practiſe a thouſand ſhifts to make his weekly allowance hold out till Saturday's night. Sometimes he ſleeps four and twenty hours at a ſtretch, by which means he ſaves three meals, beſides coffeehouſe expence. Sometimes he is fain to put up with bread and cheeſe and ſmall beer for dinner; and ſometimes he regales on two penny worth of ox cheek in a cellar." "You are a lying miſcreant (cried Medlar, in an ecſtacy of rage), I can always command money enough to

pay your tailor's bill, which I am ſure is no trifle; and I have a good mind to give you a convincing proof of my circumſtances, by proſecuting you for defamation, ſirrah." By this time the violence of his wrath had deprived him of his appetite, and he ſat ſilent, unable to ſwallow one mouthful, while his tormentor enjoyed his mortification, and increaſed his chagrin, by adviſing him to lay in plentifully for his next day's faſt.

Dinner being ended, we came down ſtairs to the coffee-room, and Banter went away to keep an appointment, ſaying, he ſuppoſed he ſhould ſee Wagtail and me in the evening at the Bedford coffeehouſe. He was no ſooner gone, than the old gentleman took me aſide, and ſaid, he was ſorry to ſee me ſo intimate with that fellow, who was one of the moſt graceleſs rakes about town, and had already waſted a good eſtate and conſtitution upon harlots; that he had been the ruin of many a young man, by introducing them into debauched company, and ſetting a lewd example of all manner of wickedneſs; and that, unleſs I was on my guard, he would ſtrip me in a ſhort time both of my money and reputation. I thanked him for his information, and promiſed to conduct myſelf accordingly, wiſhing, however, his caution had been a few hours more early, by which means I might have ſaved five guineas. Notwithſtanding this intelligence, I was inclineable to impute ſome part of the charge to Medlar's revenge for the liberties taken with him at dinner; and therefore, as ſoon as I could diſengage myſelf, applied to Wagtail for his opinion of the character in queſtion; reſolved to compare their accounts, allowing for the prejudice of each, and to form my judgment upon both, without adhering ſtrictly to either. The doctor aſſured me, that he was a very pretty gentleman of family and fortune; a ſcholar, a wit, a critic, and perfectly well acquainted with the town; that his honour and courage were unqueſtionable, though ſome extravagancies he had been guilty of, and his talents for ſatire, had procured him enemies, and made ſome people ſhy of his acquaintance. From theſe different ſketches, I concluded that Banter was a young fellow of ſome parts, who had ſpent his fortune, but re-

tained his appetites, and fallen out with the world, because he could not enjoy it to his wiſh.

I went to the Bedford coffeehouſe in the evening, where I met my friends, from thence proceeded to the play, and afterwards carried them home to my lodgings, where we ſupped in great good humour.

CHAPTER XLIX.

I receive a challenge—the conſequences of it—the quarrel being made up, am put in arreſt, by the care and affection of Strap—but immediately releaſed upon explaining my affair—the behaviour of Mr. Oregan and his two friends—I viſit Melinda, whom I divert with an account of the duel—propoſe marriage—ſhe refers the matter to her mother, of whom I make a ſolemn demand of her daughter—the old lady's behaviour—I am diſcarded—reſent their diſdain.

WHEN I was ready to go abroad next day, Strap brought me a letter, *To Mr. Random, Eſq; Thoſe*—Which, upon opening, I found contained a challenge, conceived in theſe very extraordinary terms:

"SIR,

"WHEREAS I am informed that you make love to Miſs Melinda Gooſetrap—This is to let you know that ſhe is under promiſe of marriage to me; and that I am at this preſent waiting at the back of Montague-houſe, with a pair of good piſtols in my hand; and if you will keep your appointment, I will make your tongue confeſs (after the breath is out of your body) that you do not deſerve her ſo well as

Yours, &c.
ROURK OREGAN."

I gueſſed from the ſtyle and ſubſcription of this billet, that my rival was a true Mileſian, and was not a little uneaſy at the contents, eſpecially that part in which he aſſerted his right to my miſtreſs by promiſe, a circumſtance I did not know how to reconcile to her good ſenſe and penetration. However, this was no time for me to decline the defiance, becauſe the ſucceſs of my addreſſes

might in a great meaſure depend upon my behaviour in that affair. I therefore immediately loaded my piſtols, and betook myſelf in a hackney-coach to the place appointed, where I found a tall raw-boned man, with a hard-featured countenance, and black buſhy beard, walking by himſelf, wrapped up in a ſhabby great coat, over which his own hair deſcended in a leathern queue from his head, that was covered with a greaſy hat trimmed with a tarniſhed *point d'Eſpagne*. He no ſooner perceived me advancing, than he pulled a piſtol from his boſom, and preſenting it at me, ſnapped it without the leaſt preamble. Alarmed at this rude ſalutation, I made a ſtand; and before he could adjuſt his other piece, fired one of mine at him, without doing any damage. By this time he was ready with his ſecond, that flaſhed in the pan without going off: Upon which he called, with a true Tipperary cadence, "Fire away, honey,"—and began to hammer his flint with great deliberation. But I was reſolved to make uſe of the advantage fortune had given me; and therefore ſtepped up, without throwing away my fire, deſiring him to aſk his life, or prepare for another world; but this ſtout Hibernian refuſed to condeſcend, and complained bitterly of my having quitted my ground before he could return my ſhot; ſaying I ought to go back to my ſtation, and let him have an equal chance with me. I endeavoured to perſuade him that I had given him a double chance already; and it was my buſineſs to prevent him from enjoying a third; —but now, ſince I had an opportunity, I demanded a parley, and deſired to know his condition, and reaſon for calling me to the field, who, to the beſt of my remembrance, far from having done him any injury, had never before ſeen him. He told me, that he was a gentleman of fortune, who had ſpent all he had, and hearing that Melinda had got ten thouſand pounds, he intended to make himſelf maſter of that ſum by eſpouſing her, and was determined, in an honourable way, to cut the throats of all thoſe who ſtood between him and his hopes. I then demanded to know the foundation of his hopes; and, now that I had ſeen him, being more and more aſtoniſhed at the circumſtance of the promiſe, de-

fired that he would explain that myſtery: He gave me to underſtand, that he truſted entirely to his birth and perſonal merit; that he had frequently written to Melinda, ſetting forth his claim and pretenſions, but ſhe was never kind enough to ſend an anſwer, or even to admit him into her preſence; and that the promiſe he mentioned in his letter was made by his friend Mr. Gahagan, who aſſured him, that no woman could reſiſt a man of his appearance. I could not forbear laughing to exceſs at the ſimplicity of my rival, who did not ſeem to reliſh my mirth, but began to be very ſerious: Upon which I endeavoured to appeaſe him, by giving him my word and honour, that, far from prejudicing his addreſſes to the lady, I would repreſent him to her in the moſt favourable light I could with any regard to truth; but he muſt not be ſurpriſed if ſhe ſhould remain blind to his deſerts, for nothing was more capricious than a woman's mind, and the affection of that ſex was ſeldom purchaſed with virtue alone. That my declaration might have the better effect, I took notice of his diſhabille, and profeſſing ſorrow at ſeeing a gentleman reduced, ſlipped two guineas into his hand; at ſight of which he threw away his piſtols, and, hugging me in his arms, cried, "Arrah, by Jeſus now, you are the beſt friend I have met with theſe ſeven long years." When I had ſuffered ſome minutes in his embrace, he quitted me, and picking up his ruſty arms, wiſhed the devil might burn him if he ſhould give me any further trouble about womankind.

The quarrel being thus amicably compoſed, I begged leave to look at his piſtols, which I found ſo crazy and ſo foul, that I believe it was happy for him neither of them was diſcharged, for one of them would certainly have ſplit in the going off, and he would, in all probability, have loſt his hand in the exploſion; but what gave me a lively idea of the man's character was to find, upon examination, that one of them had been loaded without being primed, and the other primed without a charge.

While we walked home together, I expreſſed a deſire of knowing my new friend's hiſtory; and he in-

formedme of his having ſerved in the German army as a volunteer againſt the Turks; that, for his behaviour at the ſiege of Belgrade, he had been honoured with an enſign's commiſſion, and afterwards promoted to the rank of lieutenant, in which ſtation it was his misfortune to affront his captain, who challenged him to the field, and was killed in the duel, upon which he was obliged to retreat;—that he had been in England ſome years ſoliciting his friends for proviſion in the Britiſh army; but being hitherto unſucceſsful, was deſired by Mr. Gahagan to turn his thoughts to matrimony, and make his fortune by an advantageous match; in conſequence of which advice, he had made up to Melinda, and having heard, by means of an Iriſh footman in the family, that I was her chief favourite, had called me out, in hopes of removing by my death, the greateſt obſtruction to his deſires; but now he was convinced of my honour and generoſity, he ſwore by the bleſſed virgin, he would think of her no more, if there was not another woman in the world. As a farther proof of his veracity, which I did not at all doubt, he opened an old iron ſnuff-box, and pulled out his commiſſion in the Imperial army, and his captain's challenge, which he preſerved as teſtimonials of his character. I was ſo well convinced of this poor man's honeſty and courage, that I determined to ſpeak in his behalf to ſome of my acquaintance, who might recommend his caſe to the conſideration of thoſe who could provide for him; and in the mean time to accommodate him with a few clothes, by which his appearance would be much mended, and himſelf enabled to renew his ſolicitations in perſon.

As we walked along, converſing ſocially together, we were met by a file of muſketeers, and Strap at their head, who no ſooner approached, than, with a frantic look, he cried, "ſeize them!—in the name of God! ſeize them.—We were accordingly ſurrounded, and I put in arreſt by the corporal, who was commanding officer; but Captain Oregan diſengaged himſelf, and ran with ſuch ſpeed towards Tottenham-court-road, that he was out of ſight in a moment. When my arms were delivered up, and myſelf ſecured, Strap became a little

more compoſed, and aſked pardon for the liberty he had taken, which he hoped I would excuſe, as it proceeded from his affection: He then told me, that, ſuſpecting the letter (which by the bye was brought by the author himſelf) contained ſomething extraordinary, he had peeped through the key-hole, and ſeen me load my piſtols; upon which he ran down to Whitehall, and applied to the officer on guard for a party to put me in arreſt; but before he returned, I was gone in a coach; that he had inquired which way I went, and having heard that duels were commonly fought at the back of Montague-houſe, he conducted the guard to this place were he thanked God for having found me ſafe and ſound. I gave him to underſtand, that I forgave his officious concern for once, but cautioned him in pretty ſevere terms, for making me the ſubject of idle converſation for the future; then turning to the corporal, thanked him for his care, and gave him a crown to drink with his men, aſſuring him that the rencontre was over long before he came up, and every thing compromiſed, as he might have obſerved by our behaviour; as a farther proof of which he would find, upon examination, that one of my piſtols had been diſcharged;—but this civil perſon, without giving himſelf or me any further trouble, received the bounty with a thouſand bows and acknowledgments, and returning the piſtols, releaſed me immediately.

He was not gone a hundred yards, when my friend Oregan came up, in order to reſcue me, with two tatterdemalions whom he had engaged for that purpoſe about the purlieus of St. Giles: one of them was armed with a muſket that wanted a lock, and another with a ruſty broad ſword; but their dreſs ſurpaſſed all deſcription. When he underſtood I was already free, he made an apology for his abrupt departure, and introdueed me to his two companions: Firſt, to counſellor Fitz-clabber, who, he told me, was then employed in compiling a hiſtory of the kings of Munſter, from Iriſh manuſcripts; and then to his friend Mr. Gahagan, who was a profound philoſopher and politician, and had projected many excellent ſchemes for the good of his country. But it ſeems theſe literati had been very ill rewarded for their ingenious

labours; for between them both there was but one ſhirt and half a pair of breeches. I thanked them very kindly for their readineſs to aſſiſt me, and having offered my ſervice in my turn, bade them good morrow, deſiring Oregan to accompany me to my lodgings, where he was fitted with decent clothes from my wardrobe, ſo much to his ſatisfaction, that he ſwore eternal gratitude and friendſhip to me, and, at my requeſt, recounted all the adventures of his life.

In the afternoon I waited on Melinda, who received me with great kindneſs and familiarity, and laughed exceſſively at my adventure with the Iriſhman, to whoſe wiſhes ſhe was no ſtranger, having more than a dozen letters in her poſſeſſion, which he had wrote to her on the ſubject of love, and which, for my entertainment, ſhe ſubmitted to my peruſal. Having made ourſelves merry at the expence of this poor admirer, I ſeized the opportunity of her mother's going out of the room, and introduced my own paſſion, which I recommended to her with all the ardour and eloquence I was maſter of. I flattered, ſighed, ſwore, entreated, and acted a thouſand extravagancies, in hopes of making ſome impreſſion on her heart; but ſhe heard every thing I ſaid without diſcovering the leaſt emotion; and other company came in, before ſhe would vouchſafe one ſerious reply. After tea, the cards were brought in, according to cuſtom, and it was my good fortune to have Melinda for my partner; by which means inſtead of loſing, I came off with five guineas clear gain.

I ſoon became acquainted with a good many people of faſhion, and ſpent my time in the modiſh diverſions of the town, ſuch as plays, operas, maſquerades, drums, aſſemblies, and puppet-ſhows; chiefly in company with Melinda, whom I cultivated with all the eagerneſs and addreſs that my proſpect could inſpire, and my education afford: I ſpared neither my perſon nor my purſe, to gratify her vanity and pride; my rivals were intimidated, and indeed outſhone; and, after all, I began to fear that the dear creature had not a heart to loſe. At laſt, finding myſelf unable to ſupport the expence of this amour much longer, I was determined to bring the

matter to a criſis; and one evening, while we were together by ourſelves, complained of her indifference, deſcribed the tortures of ſuſpenſe to a loveſick mind, and preſſed her to diſcloſe her ſentiments of matrimony and me, with ſuch earneſtneſs, that ſhe could not, with all her art, ſhift the ſubject, but was obliged to come to an eclairciſſement. She told me with a careleſs air, that ſhe had no objection to my perſon, and, if I could ſatisfy her mother in other particulars, I ſhould not find her averſe to the match; but ſhe was reſolved to do nothing in ſuch a momentous concern without the advice and conſent of her parent. This was no very agreeable declaration to me, whoſe aim had been to win her inclination firſt, and then ſecure my conqueſt by a private marriage, to which I flattered myſelf ſhe would expreſs no reluctance. That I might not, however, deſert my cauſe before it was deſperate, I waited on her mother, and with great formality demanded the daughter in marriage. The good lady, who was a very notable woman, behaved with great ſtate and civility; thanked me for the honour I intended her family; and ſaid, ſhe did not doubt that I was in all reſpects qualified to make a woman happy; but it concerned her, as a parent anxious about the welfare of her child, to inquire into the particulars of my fortune, and know what ſettlement I propoſed to make. To this intimation, which would have utterly diſconcerted me if I had not expected it, I replied, without heſitation, that, though my fortune was very ſmall, I was a gentleman by birth and education, would maintain her daughter in the ſphere of a gentlewoman, and ſettle her own dowry on her and her heirs for ever. This careful matron did not ſeem to reliſh my propoſal, but obſerved with a demure countenance, that there was no neceſſity for ſettling that upon her child which was her own already: However, if I pleaſed, her lawyer ſhould confer with mine upon the matter; and, in the mean time, ſhe deſired I would favour her with the peruſal of my rent-roll. Notwithſtanding the vexation I was under, I could ſcarce forbear laughing in her face, at the mention of my rent-roll, which was, indeed, a ſevere piece of ſatire upon my pretenſions. I frankly owned I

had no landed eſtate; and told her, that I could not exactly ſpecify the ſum I was maſter of, until I had regulated my affairs, which were at preſent in ſome diſorder; but that I would take an opportunity of ſatisfying her on that head very ſoon.

It was not long before I took my leave, and returned to my lodgings in a very melancholy mood, perſuaded that I had nothing more to expect from that quarter. I was confirmed in this opinion next day, when I went back with a view of explaining myſelf more fully to the old gentlewoman; and was told by the footman, that his ladies were not at home, although I had ſeen Melinda through the blinds at a parlour window, as I went up to the door. Incenſed at this affront, I quitted the door, without ſaying one word, and as I repaſſed the parlour, bowed to Miſs, who ſtill remained in the ſame ſituation, ſecurely ſcreened, as ſhe thought, from my view.

This diſappointment gave me more uneaſineſs on Strap's account, than my own; for I was in no danger of dying for love of Melinda; on the contrary, the remembrance of my charming Narciſſa was a continual check upon my conſcience, during the whole courſe of my addreſſes; and perhaps contributed to the bad ſucceſs of my ſcheme, by controuling my raptures, and condemning my deſign.

There was a neceſſity for informing my companion of every thing that happened to me, and I performed this piece of duty in an affected paſſion, ſwearing I would be his pack-horſe no longer, and deſiring him to take the management of his affairs into his own hands. This fineſſe had the deſired effect; for, inſtead of grumbling over my miſcarriage, Strap was frightened at the paſſion I feigned, and begged me, for the love of God, to be appeaſed; obſerving, that, although we had ſuffered a great loſs, it was not irreparable; and if fortune frowned today, ſhe might perhaps ſmile to-morrow. I pretended to acquieſce in his remarks, praiſe his equanimity, and promiſe to improve by misfortune. He, on the other hand, pretended to be perfectly well ſatisfied with my conduct, and conjured me to follow the dictates of my own reflection; but, in ſpite of all his affectation, I could

perceive his inward affliction, and his viſage ſenſibly increaſed in longitude from that day.

CHAPTER L.

I long to be revenged on Melinda—apply to Banter for his aſſiſtance—he contrives a ſcheme for that purpoſe, which is put in execution with great ſucceſs—I make an attempt on the heart of Miſs Gripewell, but am diſappointed—grow melancholy at my diſappointment, and have recourſe to the bottle—receive a billetdoux—am raviſhed with the contents— find myſelf involved in an intrigue, which I imagined would make my fortune—am confounded at my miſtake, which baniſhes all thoughts of matrimony.

In the mean time, my attention was wholly engroſſed in ſearch of another miſtreſs and the deſire of being revenged on Melinda, in both which ſchemes I was very much aſſiſted by Billy Chatter, who was ſuch a neceſſary creature among the ladies, that in all private dances he engaged the men. To him therefore I applied, deſiring he would introduce me to a partner of ſome figure at the next private aſſembly, for the ſake of a frolic, the intention of which I would afterwards communicate. Billy, who had heard ſomething of a difference between Melinda and me, immediately ſmoked part of my deſign, and thinking I only wanted to alaam her jealouſy a little, promiſed to gratify my deſire, by matching me with a partner worth thirty thouſand pounds, whom the ladies of this end of the town had lately taken under their management and protection. Upon further inquiry, I found this perſon's name was Miſs Biddy Gripewell; that her father, who had been a pawnbroker, died inteſtate, by which means all his ſubſtance deſcended to his daughter, who was ſo little a favourite, that, could the old man have prevailed with his own rapacious diſpoſition to part with as much money as would have paid the expence of a will, ſhe would have inherited a ſixth part of his fortune; that, during his life, far from being educated in a way ſuitable to ſuch great expectations, ſhe was obliged to live like a ſervant wench, and do the moſt menial offices in the family. But his funeral was no ſooner per-

formed, than ſhe aſſumed the fine lady, and found ſo many people of both ſexes to flatter, careſs, and inſtruct her, that, for want of diſcretion and experience, ſhe was grown inſufferably vain and arrogant, and pretended to no leſs than a duke or earl at leaſt for her huſband. That ſhe had the misfortune to be neglected by the Engliſh quality, but a certain poor Scottiſh lord was then making intereſt to be introduced to her acquaintance. In the mean time, ſhe was fallen into the hands of a notable lady, who had already diſpoſed of her to a lieutenant of foot, a diſtant relation of her ladyſhip's, though Miſs, as yet, knew nothing of the affair. And, laſtly, that, if I propoſed to dance with her, I muſt give him leave to repreſent me as a knight or foreign count at leaſt. I was raviſhed at this piece of information, and conſented, for one night, to perſonate a French Marquis, that I might the eaſier fulfil my revenge.

Having made the appointment with Chatter, I went to Banter's lodgings, as I had by this time conceived a great opinion of his penetration and knowledge; and, after I had enjoined ſecrecy, told him every circumſtance of my diſgrace with Melinda, and imparted the plan I had projected to mortify that proud coquette, deſiring his advice in improving, and aſſiſtance in executing the ſcheme. Nothing could be more agreeable to his miſanthropical temper, than an account of her behaviour and my reſentment: He applauded my reſolution and propoſed that I ſhould not only provide myſelf with a proper partner, but alſo procure ſuch an one for Miſs Gooſetrap as ſhould infallibly entail upon her the ridicule of all her acquaintance: For this purpoſe he mentioned his barber, who, he ſaid, was an exceeding coxcomb lately come from Paris, whoſe abſurd affectation and grimace would eaſily paſs upon her for the ſprightly politeſſe of a gentleman improved by travel. I hugged him for this hint; and he aſſured me, it would be no difficult matter to make him believe, that Melinda, having ſeen him by accident, was captivated by his appearance, and longed for his acquaintance. He actually engaged him on this pretence, and painted his good fortune in ſuch colours, that the poor ſhaver was quite beſide himſelf with joy.

He was immediately fitted with a tawdry ſuit of clothes belonging to Banter, and by him recommended to Chatter, as a very pretty fellow juſt returned from his travels. Mr. Billy, who acted as a gentleman uſher to a great many of the fair ſex in and about town, undertook at once to beſpeak Melinda in his behalf; and every thing happened according to my wiſh.

At the time appointed, I appeared dreſſed to the beſt advantage; and, in the character of Marquis, had the honour of opening the ball with the rich heireſs, who attracted the eyes of the whole company, by the prodigious number of jewels with which ſhe was adorned. Among others, I perceived Melinda, who could no more conceal her envy than aſtoniſhment at my ſucceſs: Her curioſity was ſtill more flagrant and tormenting, for ſhe had never ſeen Miſs Gripewell before; and Chatter, who alone could give her any ſatisfaction on that head, was engaged in converſation at the other end of the room. I obſerved her impatience, and exulted in her chagrin; and, after my partner was ſet, took the opportunity of paſſing by her to make a ſlight bow without ſtopping; which completed my triumph and her indignation. She changed colour, bridled up, aſſumed an air of diſdain, and flirted her fan with ſuch a fury, that it went to pieces in a moment, to the no ſmall entertainment of thoſe who ſat near and obſerved her.

At length the metamorphoſed barber took her out, and acted his part with ſuch ridiculous extravagance, that the mirth of the whole company was excited at his expence, and his partner ſo much aſhamed, that, before the country-dances began, ſhe retired in great confuſion, under pretence of being taken ſuddenly ill, and was followed by her gallant, who, no doubt, imagined her indiſpoſition was nothing but love; and laid hold of the occaſion of conducting her home, to comfort her, with an aſſurance of his entertaining a reciprocal paſſion. They were no ſooner gone, than an inquiſitive whiſper of "Who is he?" ran round the room; and Chatter could give no other intelligence about him, than that he was a man of fortune juſt returned from his travels: I, who alone was acquainted with his real quali-

ty, affected ignorance, well knowing that female curioſity would not reſt ſatisfied with ſuch a general account, and that the diſcovery would proceed with a better grace from any body than me.

Meanwhile, I was tempted by the richneſs of the prize, to practiſe upon Miſs Gripewell's heart, but ſoon found it too well fortified with pride and indifference to yield to any efforts in my own character, and I neither would nor could preſerve the title I had borrowed longer than that night.

As I expected, every thing came to light next day. The barber, in pure ſimplicity of heart, detected himſelf to Melinda, and diſcovered the foundation of his hopes: ſhe ſickened at the affront, and was aſhamed to ſhow her face in public for many weeks after this accident. Poor Chatter found it impoſſible to juſtify himſelf to her ſatisfaction; was in utter diſgrace with Miſs Gripewell, for having impoſed me upon her as a nobleman; and ſuffered very much in his character and influence among the ladies in general.

Finding my finances diminiſhed more than one half, and my project as little advanced as on the firſt day of my arrival in town, I began to deſpair of my ſucceſs, and grew melancholy at the proſpect of approaching want. To diſpel the horrors of this fiend, I had recourſe to the bottle, and kept more company than ever. I became particularly attached to the playhouſe, converſed with the actors behind the ſcenes, grew acquainted with a body of Templars, and in a ſhort time commenced a profeſſed wit and critic. Indeed I may ſay, without vanity, that I was much better qualified than any one of my companions, who were, generally ſpeaking, of all the creatures I ever converſed with, the moſt ignorant and aſſuming. By means of theſe avocations, I got the better of care, and learned to ſeparate my ideas in ſuch a manner, that whenever I was attacked by a gloomy reflection, I could ſhove it aſide, and call in ſome agreeable reverie to my aſſiſtance. This was not the caſe with Strap, who practiſed a thouſand ſhifts to conceal the ſorrow that preyed upon his carcaſe, and reduced him to the reſemblance of a mere ſkeleton.

While I thus poſted, in a thoughtleſs manner, towards poverty, I one day received, by the penny-poſt, a letter written in a woman's hand, containing a great many high-flown compliments, warm proteſtations of love, couched in a very poetical ſtyle, an earneſt deſire of knowing whether or not my heart was engaged, by leaving an anſwer at a certain place, directed to R. B., and the whole ſubſcribed, "Your incognita." I was tranſported with joy on reading the contents of this billet-doux, which I admired as a maſterpiece of tenderneſs and elegance, and was already up to the ears in love with the author, whom my imagination repreſented as a lady of fortune in the bloom of youth and beauty. Elevated with this conjecture, I went to work, and exhauſted my invention in compoſing an anſwer ſuitable to the ſublimity of her ſtyle, and the ardour of her ſentiments. I expreſſed my admiration of her wit in terms the moſt hyperbolical; and, while I acknowledged myſelf unworthy of her regard, declared myſelf enamoured of her underſtanding; and, in the moſt pathetic manner, implored the honour of an interview. Having finiſhed this performance, and communicated it to Strap, who ſkipped about for joy, I diſpatched him with it to the place appointed, which was the houſe of a milliner not far from Bond-ſtreet, and deſired him to keep watch near the door for ſome time, that he might diſcover the perſon who ſhould call for it. In leſs than an hour he returned with a joyful countenance, and told me, that, ſoon after he had delivered the letter, a chairman was called, to whom it was given, with directions to carry it to the houſe of a rich gentleman in the neighbourhood, whither he (Strap) followed him, and ſaw it put into the hands of a waiting woman, who paid the meſſenger, and ſhut the door: That, upon inquiry at an alehouſe hard by, where he called for a pint of beer, he underſtood, the gentleman to whom the houſe belonged had an only daughter, very handſome, who would inherit his whole eſtate, and who certainly was the author of the billet I had received. I was of the ſame opinion, and hugging myſelf in the happy proſpect, dreſſed immediately, and paſſed in great ſtate by the houſe that

contained my unknown admirer. Nor was my vanity diſappointed; for I perceived a beautiful young creature ſtanding at one of the windows of the dining-room, who, I imagined, obſerved me with more than common curioſity. That I might indulge her view, and at the ſame time feaſt my own, I affected to ſtop, and gave orders to Strap, in the ſtreet, juſt oppoſite to her ſtation, by which means I had an opportunity of ſeeing her more diſtinctly, and of congratulating myſelf on having made a conqueſt of ſo much perfection. In a few minutes ſhe retired, and I betook myſelf to the ordinary, in a rapture of hope, which deprived me of my appetite for that meal, and ſent me home in the evening to indulge my contemplation.

Early next day, I was favoured with another epiſtle from my unknown charmer, ſignifying her unutterable joy at the receipt of mine, which, while it made a tender of my heart, convinced her of the value of it. Above all things, ſhe profeſſed extreme pleaſure in finding me ſo much attached to her underſtanding, a circumſtance that not only flattered her in the moſt ſenſible part, but at the ſame time argued my own ſagacity. As for the interview I deſired, ſhe aſſured me, that I could not be more eager for ſuch an occaſion than ſhe; but ſhe muſt not only ſacrifice a little more to decorum, but be ſatisfied of my honourable intentions, before ſhe would grant that requeſt: Meanwhile, ſhe gave me to underſtand, that although ſhe might owe ſome deference to the opinion of certain perſons, ſhe was reſolved, in an affair that ſo nearly concerned her happineſs, to conſult her own inclination, preferable to the advice of the whole world; eſpecially as ſhe was urged to ſuch condeſcenſion by no conſideration of fortune, what ſhe depended upon being her own without reſtriction or controul. Struck with admiration at the philoſophy and ſelf-denial of my miſtreſs, who ſeemed inſenſible of the beauty ſhe poſſeſſed, and, in particular, raviſhed with that piece of intelligence, by which I learned her fortune was independent, I reſumed the pen, launched out into encomiums on the dignity of her ſentiments, affected to undervalue the charms of external beauty, pre-

tended to ground my paſſion on the qualities of her mind, complained of her rigour in ſacrificing my repoſe to an over-ſcrupulous regard to decorum, and declared the purity of my deſigns in the moſt ſolemn and pathetic vows. This performance being ſealed and directed, was ſent to the place appointed, by Strap, who, that we might be ſtill the more confirmed in our belief, renewed his watch, and in a little time brought back the ſame information as before, with this addition, that Miſs Sparkle (the name of my correſpondent), looking out at the window, no ſooner ſaw the meſſenger arrive, than ſhe ſhut the caſement in a ſort of beautiful confuſion, and diſappeared; eager, no doubt, to hear from the dear object of her love.

My doubts now vaniſhed, the long-expected port appeared, and I looked upon myſelf as perfectly ſecure of that happineſs I had been in queſt of ſo long. After dinner, I ſauntered, in company with Doctor Wagtail, to that part of the town in which my enamorata lived; and as he was a mere regiſter, inquired of him into the name, character, and fortune of every body who poſſeſſed a good houſe in the ſtreets through which we paſſed; when it came to his turn to mention Sir John Sparkle, he repreſented him as a man of an immenſe eſtate, and narrow diſpoſition, who mewed up his only child, a fine young lady, from the converſation of mankind, under the ſtrict watch and inſpection of an old governante, who was either ſo honeſt, envious, or inſatiable, that nobody had been, as yet, able to make her a friend, or get acceſs to her charge, though numbers attempted it every day; not ſo much on account of her expectations from her father, who, being a widower, might marry again, and have ſons, as for a fortune of twelve thouſand pounds left her by an uncle, of which ſhe could not be deprived. This piece of news exactly tallying with the laſt part of the letter I had been honoured with in the morning, had ſuch an effect on me, that any man, except Wagtail, might have obſerved my emotion; but his attention was too much engroſſed by the contemplation of his own importance, to ſuffer him to be affected with the deportment of any other body, unleſs it hap-

pened to be ſo particular, that he could not help taking notice of it.

When I had diſengaged myſelf from him, whoſe converſation grew inſipid to me, I went home, and made Strap acquainted with the fruit of my reſearches. This faithful ſquire was almoſt choked with tranſports, and even wept with joy; but whether on account of himſelf or me, I ſhall not pretend to determine. Next day a third billet-doux was brought to me, containing many expreſſions of tenderneſs, mingled with ſome affecting doubts, about the artifice of man, the inconſtancy of youth, and the jealouſy often attending the moſt ſincere paſſion; withal deſiring I would excuſe her, if ſhe ſhould try me a little longer, before ſhe declared herſelf beyond the power of retracting. Theſe intereſting ſcruples added fuel to my flame, and impatience to my hope; I redoubled my complaints of her indifference, and preſſed her to an aſſignation with ſuch fervid entreaties, that, in a few days, ſhe conſented to meet me at the houſe of that milliner who had forwarded all my letters. During the interval between the date of her promiſe and the hour of appointment, my pride ſoared beyond all reaſon and deſcription; I loſt all remembrance of the gentle Narciſſa, and my thoughts were wholly employed in planning triumphs over the malice and contempt of the world.

At length the happy hour arrived, I flew to the place of rendezvous, and was conducted into an apartment, where I had not waited ten minutes, when I heard the ruſtling of ſilk, and the ſound of feet aſcending the ſtairs: My heart took the alarm, and beat quick, my cheeks glowed, my nerves thrilled, and my knees ſhook with ecſtaſy! I perceived the door opening, ſaw a gold brocade petticoat advance, and ſprung forward to embrace my charmer. Heaven and earth! how ſhall I paint my ſituation, when I found Miſs Sparkle converted into a wrinkled hag turned of ſeventy! I was ſtruck dumb with amazement, and petrified with horror! This ancient Urganda perceived my diſorder, and approaching with a languiſhing air, ſeized my hand, aſking, in a ſqueaking tone, if I was indiſpoſed. Her

monſtrous affectation completed the diſguſt I had conceived for her at firſt appearance; and it was a long time before I could command myſelf ſo much as to behave with common civility: At length, however, I recollected myſelf, and pronounced an apology for my behaviour, which, I ſaid, proceeded from a dizzineſs that ſeized me all of a ſudden. My hoary dulcinea, who, no doubt, had been alarmed at my confuſion, no ſooner learned the cauſe to which I now aſcribed it, than ſhe diſcovered her joy in a thouſand amorous coquetries, and aſſumed the ſprightly airs of a girl of ſixteen. One while, ſhe ogled me with her dim eyes, quenched in rheum; then, as if ſhe was aſhamed of that freedom, ſhe affected to look down, bluſh, and play with her fan; then toſs her head, that I might not perceive a palſy that ſhook it, aſk ſome childiſh queſtions with a liſping accent, giggle and grin with her mouth ſhut, to conceal the ravages of time upon her teeth, leer upon me again, ſigh piteouſly, fling herſelf about in her chair to ſhow her agility, and act a great many more abſurdities that youth and beauty can alone excuſe. Shocked as I was at my diſappointment, my diſpoſition was incapable of affronting any perſon who loved me; I therefore endeavoured to put a good face on the matter for the preſent, reſolved to drop the whole affair as ſoon as I ſhould get clear of her company; with this view, I uttered ſome civil things, and, in particular, deſired to know the name and condition of the lady who had honoured me ſo much. She told me her name was Withers; that ſhe lived with Sir John Sparkle in quality of governeſs to his only daughter, in which ſituation ſhe had picked up a comfortable ſufficiency to make her eaſy for life; that ſhe had the pleaſure of ſeeing me at church, where my appearance and deportment made ſuch an impreſſion upon her heart, that ſhe could enjoy no eaſe until ſhe had inquired into my character, which ſhe found ſo amiable in all reſpects, that ſhe yielded to the violence of her inclination, and ventured to declare her paſſion, with too little regard, perhaps, to the decorum of her ſex; but ſhe hoped I would forgive a treſpaſs of which I myſelf was, in ſome meaſure, the cauſe, and impute her intru-

ſion to the irreſiſtible dictates of love. No decayed rake ever ſwallowed a bolus with more reluctance than I felt in making a reply ſuitable to this compliment, when, inſtead of the jewel, I found the crazy caſket only in my power; and yet my hopes began to revive a little, when I conſidered, that, by carrying on the appearance of an intrigue with the duenna, I might poſſibly obtain acceſs to her charge. Encouraged by this ſuggeſtion, my temper grew more ſerene, my reſerve wore off, I talked *en cavalier*, and even made love to this antiquated coquette, who ſeemed extremely happy in her adorer, and ſpread all her allurements to make her imagined conqueſt more ſecure. The good woman of the houſe treated us with tea and ſweet-meats, and afterwards withdrew, like a civil experienced matron as ſhe was. Left thus to our mutual endearments, Miſs Withers (for ſhe was ſtill a maiden) began to talk of matrimony, and expreſſed ſo much impatience in all her behaviour, that had ſhe been fifty years younger, I might poſſibly have gratified her longing without having recourſe to the church; but this ſtep my virtue as well as intereſt forbade. When the inclinations of an old maid ſettle upon a young fellow, he is perſecuted with her addreſſes; but ſhould he once grant her the favour, he will never be able to diſentangle himſelf from her importunities and reproaches. It was my buſineſs to defer the ceremony as long as poſſible, under the moſt ſpecious pretences, with a view of becoming acquainted with Miſs Sparkle, in the mean time; and I did not deſpair of ſucceſs, when I conſidered, that, in the courſe of our correſpondence, I ſhould, in all probability, be invited to viſit my miſtreſs in her own apartment, and by theſe means have an oportunity of converſing with her charming ward. Pleaſed with this proſpect, my heart dilated with joy, I talked in raptures to the ſtale governante, and kiſſed her ſhrivelled hand with great devotion: She was ſo much tranſported with her good fortune, that ſhe could not contain her ecſtaſy, but flew upon me like a tygreſs, and preſſed her ſkinny lips to mine; when (as it was no doubt concerted by her evil genius) a doſe of garlic ſhe had ſwallowed that morning, to diſpel wind I ſuppoſe, began to operate with

ſuch a ſudden exploſion, that human nature, circumſtanced as I was, could not endure the ſhock with any degree of temper. I loſt all patience and reflection, flung away from her in an inſtant, ſnatched my hat and cane, and ran down ſtairs as if the devil had me in purſuit, and could ſcarce reſtrain the convulſion of my bowels, which were grievouſly offended by the perfume that aſſaulted me. Strap, who waited my return with impatience, ſeeing me arrive in the utmoſt diſorder, ſtood motionleſs with apprehenſion, and durſt not inquire into the cauſe.

After I had waſhed my mouth more than once, and recruited my ſpirits with a glaſs of wine, I recounted to him every particular of what had happened; to which he made no other reply for ſome time, than lifting up his eyes, claſping his hands, and uttering a hollow groan. At length he obſerved, in a melancholy tone, that it was a thouſand pities my organs were ſo delicate as to be offended with the ſmell of garlic: "Ah! God help us, ſaid he, 'tis not the ſteams of garlic, no, nor of ſomething elſe, that would give me the leaſt uneaſineſs—ſee what it is to be a cobler's ſon." I replied haſtily, "I wiſh then you would go and retrieve my miſcarriage." At this ſuggeſtion he ſtarted, forced a ſmile, and left the room, ſhaking his head. Whether the old gentlewoman reſented my abrupt departure ſo much, that her love changed into diſdain, or was aſhamed to ſee me on account of her infirmity, I know not; but I was never troubled again with her paſſion.

CHAPTER LI.

I cultivate an acquaintance with two noblemen—am introduced to Earl Strutwell—his kind promiſes and invitation—the behaviour of his porter and lacquey—he receives me with an appearance of uncommon affection—undertakes to ſpeak in my behalf to the miniſter—informs me of his ſucceſs, and wiſhes me joy—introduces a converſation about Petronius Arbiter—falls in love with my watch, which I preſs upon him—I make a preſent of a diamond ring to Lord Straddle—impart my good fortune to Strap and Banter, who diſabuſes me, to my utter mortification.

BAFFLED hitherto in my matrimonial ſchemes, I began to queſtion my talents for the ſcience of fortune-hunting, and to bend my thoughts towards ſome employment under the government. With the view of procuring which, I cultivated the acquaintance of Lords Straddle and Swillpot, whoſe fathers were men of intereſt at court. I found theſe young noblemen as open to my advances as I could deſire: I accompanied them in their midnight rambles, and often dined with them at taverns, where I had the honour of paying the reckoning.

I one day took the opportunity, while I was loaded with proteſtations of friendſhip, to diſcloſe my deſire of being ſettled in ſome ſinecure, and to ſolicit their influence in my behalf. Swillpot ſqueezing my hand, ſaid I might depend upon his ſervice, by God. The other ſwore that no man would be more proud than he to run my errands. Encouraged by theſe declarations, I ventured to expreſs an inclination to be introduced to their fathers, who were able to do my buſineſs at once. Swillpot frankly owned he had not ſpoke to his father theſe three years; and Straddle aſſured me his father having lately diſobliged the miniſter, by ſubſcribing his name to a proteſt in the Houſe of Peers, was thereby rendered incapable of ſerving his friends at preſent; but he undertook to make me acquainted with Earl Strutwell, who was hand and glove with a certain perſon who ruled the roaſt. This offer I embraced with many acknowledgments, and plied him ſo cloſely, in ſpite of a thouſand evaſions, that he found himſelf under a neceſſity of keeping his word,

and actually carried me to the levee of this great man, where he left me in a crowd of fellow-dependents, and was uſhered to a particular cloſet audience; from whence in a few minutes he returned with his Lordſhip, who took me by the hand, aſſured me he would do me all the ſervice he could, and deſired to ſee me often. I was charmed with my reception, and although I had heard that a courtier's promiſe is not to be depended upon, I thought I diſcovered ſo much ſweetneſs of temper and candour in this Earl's countenance, that I did not doubt of finding my account in his protection. I reſolved, therefore, to profit by this permiſſion, and waited on him next audience day, when I was favoured with a particular ſmile, ſqueeze of the hand, and a whiſper, ſignifying that he wanted half an hour's converſation with me in private, when he ſhould be diſengaged, and for that purpoſe deſired me to come and drink a diſh of chocolate with him to-morrow morning. This invitation, which did not a little flatter my vanity and expectation, I took care to obſerve, and went to his Lordſhip's houſe at the time appointed. Having rapped at the gate, the porter unbolted and kept it half open, placing himſelf in the gap, like ſoldiers in a breach, to diſpute my paſſage. I aſked if his Lord was ſtirring! He anſwered with a ſurly aſpect, "No." "At what hour does he commonly riſe?" ſaid I: "Sometimes ſooner, ſometimes later," ſaid he, cloſing the door upon me by degrees. I then told him, I was come by his Lordſhip's own appointment; to which intimation this Cerberus replied, "I have received no orders about the matter;" and was upon the point of ſhutting me out, when I recollected myſelf all of a ſudden, and ſlipping a crown into his hand, begged as a favour that he would inquire, and let me know whether or not the Earl was up. The grim janitor relented at the touch of my money, which he took with all the indifference of a tax-gatherer, and ſhowed me into a parlour, where, he ſaid, I might amuſe myſelf till ſuch time as his Lord ſhould be awake. I had not ſat ten minutes in this place, when a footman entered, and, without ſpeaking, ſtared at me; I interpreted this piece of his behaviour

into, "Pray, Sir, what is your buſineſs?" and aſked the ſame queſtion I had put to the porter, when I accoſted him firſt. The lacquey made the ſame reply, and diſappeared before I could get any further intelligence. In a little time he returned, on pretence of poking the fire, and looked at me again with great earneſtneſs; upon which I began to percive his meaning, and tipping him with half a crown, deſired he would be ſo good as to fall upon ſome method of letting the Earl know that I was in the houſe. He made a low bow, ſaid, "Yes, Sir," and vaniſhed. This bounty was not thrown away, for in an inſtant he came back, and conducted me to a chamber, where I was received with great kindneſs and familiarity by his Lordſhip, whom I found juſt riſen, in his morning gown and ſlippers. After breakfaſt, he entered into a particular converſation with me about my travels, the remarks I had made abroad, and examined me to the full extent of my underſtanding. My anſwers ſeemed to pleaſe him very much; he frequently ſqueezed my hand, and looking at me with a ſingular complacency in his countenance, bade me depend upon his good offices with the miniſtry in my behalf. "Young men of your qualifications (ſaid he) ought to be cheriſhed by every adminiſtration. For my own part, I ſee ſo little merit in the world, that I have laid it down as a maxim, to encourage the leaſt appearance of genius and virtue to the utmoſt of my power—you have a great deal of both; and will not fail of making a figure one day, if I am not miſtaken; but you muſt lay your account with mounting by gradual ſteps to the ſummit of your fortune. Rome was not built in a day. As you underſtand the languages perfectly well, how would you like to croſs the ſea as ſecretary to an embaſſy?" I aſſured his Lordſhip, with great eagerneſs, that nothing could be more agreeable to my inclination: Upon which he bade me make myſelf eaſy, my buſineſs was done, for he had a place of that kind in his view. This piece of generoſity affected me ſo much, that I was unable for ſome time to expreſs my gratitude, which at length broke out in acknowledgments of my own unworthineſs, and encomiums on his benevolence. I could not even help

ſhedding tears at the goodneſs of this Noble Lord, who no ſooner perceived them than he caught me in his arms, and hugged and kiſſed me with a ſeemingly paternal affection. Confounded at this uncommon inſtance of fondneſs for a ſtranger, I remained a few moments ſilent and aſhamed, then roſe and took my leave, after he had aſſured me that he would ſpeak to the miniſter in my favour that very day; and deſired that I would not for the future give myſelf the trouble of attending at his levee, but come at the ſame hour every day when he ſhould be at leiſure, that is, three times a week.

Though my hopes were now very ſanguine, I determined to conceal my proſpect from every body, even from Strap, until I ſhould be more certain of ſucceſs; and, in the mean time, give my patron no reſpite from my ſolicitations. When I renewed my viſit, I found the ſtreet door open to me, as if by enchantment; but, in my paſſage towards the preſence room, I was met by the valet de chambre, who caſt ſome furious looks at me, the meaning of which I could not comprehend. The Earl ſaluted me at entrance with a tender embrace, and wiſhed me joy of his ſucceſs with the Premier, who, he ſaid, had preferred his recommendation to that of two other noblemen very urgent in behalf of their reſpective friends, and abſolutely promiſed that I ſhould go to a certain foreign court, in quality of ſecretary to an Ambaſſador and Plenipotentiary, who was to ſet out in a few weeks, on an affair of vaſt importance to the nation. I was thunderſtruck with my good fortune, and could make no other reply, than kneel, and attempt to kiſs my benefactor's hand; which ſubmiſſion he would not permit, but, raiſing me up, preſſed me to his breaſt with ſurpriſing emotion, and told me he had now taken upon himſelf the care of making my fortune. What enhanced the value of the benefit ſtill the more, was his making light of the favour, and ſhifting the converſation to another ſubject: Among other topics of diſcourſe, that of the *belles lettres* was introduced, upon which his Lordſhip held forth with great taſte and erudition, and diſcovered an intimate knowledge of the authors of antiquity. "Here's a book (ſaid he, taking

one from his boſom), written with great elegance and ſpirit, and though the ſubject may give offence to ſome narrow-minded people, the author will always be held in eſteem by every perſon of wit and learning." So ſaying, he put into my hand Petronius Arbiter, and aſked my opinion of his wit and manner. I told him, that, in my opinion, he wrote with great eaſe and vivacity, but was withal ſo lewd and indecent, that he ought to find no quarter or protection among people of morals and taſte. "I own (replied the Earl), that his taſte in love is generally decried, and indeed condemned by our laws; but perhaps that may be more owing to prejudice and miſapprehenſion, than to true reaſon and deliberation. The beſt man among the ancients is ſaid to have entertained that paſſion; one of the wiſeſt of their legiſlators has permitted the indulgence of it in his commonwealth; the moſt celebrated poets have not ſcrupled to avow it: At this day it prevails not only over all the eaſt, but in moſt parts of Europe; in our own country it gains ground apace, and in all probability will become in a ſhort time a more faſhionable vice than ſimple fornication. Indeed, there is ſomething to be ſaid in vindication of it; for, notwithſtanding the ſeverity of the law againſt offenders in this way, it muſt be confeſſed that the practice of this paſſion is unattended with that curſe and burden upon ſociety, which proceeds from a race of miſerable and deſerted baſtards, who are either murdered by their parents, deſerted to the utmoſt want and wretchedneſs, or bred up to prey upon the commonwealth: And it likewiſe prevents the debauchery of many a young maiden, and the proſtitution of honeſt mens wives; not to mention the conſideration of health, which is much leſs liable to be impaired in the gratification of this appetite, than in the exerciſe of common venery, which, by ruining the conſtitutions of our young men, has produced a puny progeny, that degenerates from generation to generation: Nay, I have been told, that there is another motive, perhaps more powerful than all theſe, that induces people to cultivate this inclination, namely the exquiſite pleaſure attending its ſucceſs."

From this diſcourſe, I began to be apprehenſive that his Lordſhip, finding I had travelled, was afraid I might have been infected with this ſpurious and ſordid deſire abroad, and took this method of ſounding my ſentiments on the ſubject. Fired at this ſuppoſed ſuſpicion, I argued againſt it with great warmth, as an appetite unnatural, abſurd, and of pernicious conſequence; and declared my utter deteſtation and abhorrence of it in theſe lines of the ſatiriſt:

> Eternal infamy the wretch confound
> Who planted firſt that vice on Britiſh ground!
> A vice! that, 'ſpite of ſenſe and nature, reigns,
> And poiſons genial love, and manhood ſtains."

The Earl ſmiled at my indignation, told me he was glad to find my opinion of the matter ſo conformable to his own, and that what he had advanced was only to provoke me to an anſwer, with which he profeſſed himſelf perfectly well pleaſed.

After I had enjoyed a long audience, I happened to look at my watch, in order to regulate my motions by it; and his Lordſhip obſerving the chaſed caſe, deſired to ſee the device, and examine the execution, which he approved with ſome expreſſions of admiration. Conſidering the obligations I lay under to his Lordſhip, I thought there could not be a fitter opportunity than the preſent to manifeſt in ſome ſhape my gratitude; I therefore begged he would do me the honour to accept of the watch, as a ſmall teſtimony of the ſenſe I had of his Lordſhip's generoſity; but he refuſed it in a peremptory manner, and ſaid he was ſorry I ſhould entertain ſuch a mercenary opinion of him; obſerving at the ſame time, that it was the moſt beautiful piece of workmanſhip he had ever ſeen, and deſiring to know where he could have ſuch another. I begged a thouſand pardons for the freedom I had taken, which I hoped he would impute to nothing elſe than the higheſt veneration for his perſon—told him that, as it came to my hand by accident in France, I could give him no information about the maker, for there was no name on the inſide; and once more humbly entreated that he would indulge me ſo far as to uſe it for my ſake. He was

ſtill poſitive in refuſing it; but was pleaſed to thank me for my generous offer, ſaying, it was a preſent that no nobleman need be aſhamed of receiving; though he was reſolved to ſhow his diſintereſtedneſs with regard to me, for whom he had conceived a particular friendſhip; and inſiſted (if I was willing to part with the watch) upon knowing what it had coſt, that he might at leaſt indemnify me, by refunding the money. On the other hand, I aſſured his Lordſhip, that I ſhould look upon it as an uncommon mark of diſtinction, if he would take it without further queſtion; and, rather than diſoblige me, he was at laſt perſuaded to put it in his pocket, to my no ſmall ſatisfaction, who took my leave immediately, after having received a kind ſqueeze, and an injunction to depend upon his promiſe.

Buoyed up with this reception, my heart opened; I gave away a guinea among the lacqueys who eſcorted me to the door, flew to the lodgings of Lord Straddle, upon whom I forced my diamond ring, as an acknowledgment for the great ſervice he had done me, and from thence hied me home, with an intent of ſharing my happineſs with honeſt Strap. I determined, however, to heighten his pleaſure, by depreſſing his ſpirits at firſt, and then bringing in the good news with double reliſh. For this purpoſe, I affected the appearance of diſappointment and chagrin, and told him in an abrupt manner, that I had loſt the watch and diamond. Poor Hugh, who had been already haraſſed into a conſumption by intelligence of this ſort, no ſooner heard theſe words, than, unable to contain himſelf, he cried, with diſtraction in his looks, "God in heaven forbid!" I could carry on the farce no longer, but, laughing in his face, told him every thing that had paſſed, as above recited. His features were immediately unbended, and the tranſition was ſo affecting, that he wept with joy; called my Lord Strutwell by the appellations of Jewel, Phœnix, *Rara avis*; and praiſing God, that there was ſtill ſome virtue left among our nobility. Our mutual congratulations being over, we gave way to our imaginations, and anticipated our happineſs by proſecuting our ſucceſs through the different ſteps of promotion, till I

arrived at the rank of a prime miniſter, and he to that of my firſt ſecretary.

Intoxicated with theſe ideas, I went to the ordinary, where, meeting with Banter, I communicated the whole affair in confidence to him, concluding with an aſſurance that I would do him all the ſervice in my power. He heard me to an end with great patience, then regarding me a good while with a look of diſdain, pronounced, "So your buſineſs is done, you think?" "As good as done, I believe," ſaid I, "I'll tell you (replied he) what will do it ſtill more effectually—A halter—'Sdeath! if I had been ſuch a gull to two ſuch ſcoundrels as Strutwell and Straddle, I would without any more ado tuck myſelf up." Shocked at this exclamation, I deſired him with ſome confuſion to explain himſelf: Upon which he gave me to underſtand, that Straddle was a poor contemptible wretch, who lived by borrowing and pimping for his fellow peers; that, in conſequence of this laſt capacity, he had doubtleſs introduced me to Strutwell, who was ſo notorious for a paſſion for his own ſex, that he was amazed his character had never reached my ears; and that, far from being able to obtain for me the poſt he had promiſed, his intereſt at court was ſo low, that he could ſcare provide for a ſuperannuated footman once a year, in the cuſtoms or exciſe;—that it was a common thing for him to amuſe ſtrangers whom his jackals ran down, with ſuch aſſurances and careſſes as he had beſtowed on me, until he had ſtripped them of their caſh and every thing valuable about them;—very often of their chaſtity, and then leave them a prey to want and infamy;—that he allowed his ſervants no other wages than that part of the ſpoil which they could glean by their induſtry; and the whole of his conduct towards me was ſo glaring, that nobody who knew any thing of mankind could have been impoſed upon by his inſinuations.

I leave the reader to judge how I reliſhed this piece of information, which precipitated me from the moſt exalted pinnacle of hope to the loweſt abyſs of deſpondence; and well nigh determined me to take Banter's advice, and finiſh my chagrin with a halter. I had no room to ſuſpect the veracity of my friend, becauſe, upon

recollection, I found every circumſtance of Strutwell's behaviour exactly tallying with the character he had deſcribed: His hugs, embraces, ſqueezes, and eager looks, were now no longer a myſtery; no more than his defence of Petronius, and the jealous frown of his valet de chambre, who, it ſeems, had been the favourite pathic of his lord.

CHAPTER LII.

I attempt to recover my watch and jewel, but to no purpoſe—reſolve to revenge myſelf on Strutwell, by my importunity—am reduced to my laſt guinea—obliged to inform Strap of my neceſſity, who is almoſt diſtracted with the news—but, nevertheleſs, obliged to pawn my beſt ſword for preſent ſubſiſtence—that ſmall ſupply being exhauſted, I am almoſt ſtupified with my misfortunes—go to the gaming table, by the advice of Banter, and come off with unexpected ſucceſs—Strap's ecſtacy—Mrs. Gawky waits upon me, profeſſes remorſe for her perfidy, and implores my aſſiſtance—I do myſelf a piece of juſtice by her means, and afterwards reconcile her to her father.

I WAS ſo confounded, that I could make no reply to Banter, who reproached me with great indignation, for having thrown away upon raſcals that which, had it been converted into ready money, would have ſupported the rank of a gentleman for ſome months, and enabled me, at the ſame time, to oblige my friends. Stupified as I was, I could eaſily divine the ſource of his concern, but ſneaked away in a ſolitary manner, without yielding the leaſt anſwer to his expoſtulations; and began to deliberate with myſelf in what manner I ſhould attempt to retrieve the moveables I had ſo fooliſhly loſt. I ſhould have thought it no robbery to take them again by force, could I have done it without any danger of being detected; but as I could have no ſuch opportunity, I reſolved to work by fineſſe, and go immediately to the lodgings of Straddle, where I was ſo fortunate as to find him—"My lord (ſaid I), I have juſt now recollected, that the diamond I had the honour of preſenting to you is looſened a little in the ſocket, and there is a young fellow juſt arrived from Paris, who is reckoned the beſt jeweller in Europe; I knew him in France, and

if your lordſhip will give me leave, will carry the ring to him to be ſet to rights." His lordſhip was not to be caught in this ſnare—he thanked me for my offer, and told me, that having himſelf obſerved the defect, he had already ſent it to his own jeweller to be mended. And indeed, by this time, I believe it was in the jeweller's hands, though not in order to be mended, for it ſtood in need of no alteration.

Baulked in this piece of politics, I curſed my ſimplicity, but reſolved to play a ſurer game with the earl, which I thus deviſed. I did not doubt of being admitted into familiar converſation with him as before, and hoped by ſome means to get the watch into my hand; then, on pretence of winding or playing with it, drop it on the floor, when in all probability the fall would diſorder the work ſo as to ſtop its motion: This event would furniſh me with an opportunity of inſiſting upon carrying it away, in order to be repaired; and then I ſhould have been in no hurry to bring it back. What pity it was I could not find an occaſion of putting this fine ſcheme in execution! When I went to renew my viſit to his lordſhip, my acceſs to the parlour was as free as ever; but after I had waited ſome time, the valet de chambre came in with his lordſhip's compliments, and a deſire to ſee me to-morrow at his levee, he being at preſent ſo much indiſpoſed, that he could not ſee company. I interpreted this meſſage into a bad omen, and came away muttering curſes againſt his lordſhip's politeneſs, and ready to go to loggerheads with myſelf for being ſo egregiouſly duped. But that I might have ſome ſatisfaction for the loſs I had ſuſtained, I beſieged him cloſely at his levee, and perſecuted him with my ſolicitations; not without faint hopes, indeed, of reaping ſomething more from my induſtry, than the bare pleaſure of making him uneaſy; though I could never obtain another private hearing, during the whole courſe of my attendance; neither had I reſolution enough to undeceive Strap, whoſe looks in a little time were ſo whetted with impatience, that, whenever I came home, his eyes devoured me, as it were, with eagerneſs of attention,

At length, however, finding myſelf reduced to my laſt guinea, I was compelled to diſcloſe my neceſſity, though I endeavoured to ſweeten the diſcovery by rehearſing to him the daily aſſurances I received from my patron. But theſe promiſes were not of efficacy ſufficient to ſupport the ſpirits of my friend, who no ſooner underſtood the lowneſs of my finances, than, uttering a dreadful groan, he exclaimed, "In the name of God, what ſhall we do?"—In order to comfort him, I ſaid, that many of my acquaintance, who were in a worſe condition than we, ſupported, notwithſtanding, the character of gentlemen; and adviſing him to thank God that we had as yet incurred no debt, propoſed he ſhould pawn my ſword of ſteel inlaid with gold, and truſt to my diſcretion for the reſt. This expedient was wormwood and gall to poor Strap, who, in ſpite of his invincible affection for me, ſtill retained notions of economy and expence ſuitable to the narrowneſs of his education; nevertheleſs, he complied with my requeſt, and raiſed ſeven pieces on the ſword in a twinkling. This ſupply, inconſiderable as it was, made me as happy for the preſent, as if I had kept five hundred pounds in bank; for by this time I was ſo well ſkilled in procraſtinating every troubleſome reflection, that the proſpect of want ſeldom affected me very much, let it be never ſo near. And now, indeed, it was nearer than I imagined; my landlord having occaſion for money, put me in mind of my being indebted to him five guineas in lodging, and telling me he had a ſum to make up, begged I would excuſe his importunity, and diſcharge the debt. Though I could ill ſpare ſo much caſh, my pride took the reſolution of diſburſing it. This I did in a cavalier manner, after he had written a diſcharge, telling him with an air of ſcorn and reſentment, I ſaw he was reſolved that I ſhould not be long in his books; while Strap, who ſtood by, and knew my circumſtances, wrung his hands in ſecret, gnawed his nether lip, and turned yellow with deſpair. Whatever appearance of indifference my vanity enabled me to put on, I was thunderſtruck with this demand, which I had no ſooner ſatisfied, than I haſtened into company, with a view of beguiling my

cares with converſation, or of drowning them with wine.

After dinner, a party was accordingly made in the coffeehouſe, from whence we adjourned to the tavern, where, inſtead of ſharing the mirth of the company, I was as much chagrined at their good humour as a damned ſoul in hell would be at a glimpſe of heaven. In vain did I ſwallow bumper after bumper! the wine had loſt its effect upon me, and, far from raiſing my dejected ſpirits, could not even lay me aſleep. Banter, who was the only intimate I had (Strap excepted), perceived my anxiety, and, when we broke up, reproached me with puſillanimity, for being caſt down at any diſappointment that ſuch a raſcal as Strutwell could be the occaſion of. I told him I did not at all ſee how Strutwell's being a raſcal alleviated my misfortune; and gave him to underſtand, that my preſent grief did not ſo much proceed from that diſappointment, as from the low ebb of my fortune, which was ſunk to ſomething leſs than two guineas. At this declaration, he cried, "Pſha! is that all?" and aſſured me there were a thouſand ways of living in town without a fortune, he himſelf having ſubſiſted many years entirely by his wit. I expreſſed an eager deſire of being acquainted with ſome of theſe methods; and he, without further expoſtulation, bade me follow him. He conducted me to a houſe under the piazzas in Covent-Garden, which we entered, and having delivered our ſwords to a grim fellow, who demanded them at the foot of the ſtair-caſe, aſcended to the ſecond ſtory, where I ſaw multitudes of people ſtanding round two gaming tables, loaded in a manner with gold and ſilver. My conductor told me this was the houſe of a worthy Scotch lord, who, uſing the privilege of his peerage, had ſet up public gaming tables, from the profits of which he drew a comfortable livelihood. He then explained the difference between the *ſitters* and the *betters;* characterized the firſt as old rooks, and the laſt as bubbles; and adviſed me to try my fortune at the ſilver table, by betting a crown at a time. Before I would venture any thing, I conſidered the company more particularly; and there appeared

ſuch a groupe of villanous faces, that I was ſtruck with horror and aſtoniſhment at the ſight! I ſignified my ſurpriſe to Banter, who whiſpered in my ear, that the bulk of thoſe preſent were ſharpers, highwaymen, and apprentices, who, having embezzled their maſters caſh, made a deſperate puſh in this place, to make up their deficiencies. This account did not encourage me to hazard any part of my ſmall pittance; but at length, being teazed by the importunities of my friend, who aſſured me there was no danger of being ill uſed, becauſe people were hired by the owner to ſee juſtice done to every body, I began by riſking one ſhilling, and in leſs than an hour my winning amounted to thirty. Convinced by this time of the fairneſs of the game, and animated with ſucceſs, there was no need of further perſuaſion to continue the play: I lent Banter (who ſeldom had any money in his pocket) a guinea, which he carried to the gold table, and loſt in a moment. He would have borrowed another, but finding me deaf to his arguments, went away in a pet. Meanwhile, my gain advanced to ſix pieces, and my deſire for more increaſed in proportion; ſo that I moved to the higher table, where I laid half a guinea on every throw; and fortune ſtill favouring me, I became a fitter, in which capacity I remained until it was broad day; when I found myſelf, after many viciſſitudes, one hundred and fifty guineas in pocket.

Thinking it now high time to retire with my booty, I aſked if any body would take my place, and made a motion to riſe; upon which an old Gaſcon, who ſat oppoſite to me, and of whom I had won a little money, ſtarted up with fury in his looks, crying, "*Reſtez, foutre reſte, il faut donner moi mon ravanche!*" At the ſame time, a Jew who ſat near the other, inſinuated that I was more beholden to art than fortune for what I had got; that he had obſerved me wipe the table very often, and that ſome of the diviſions ſeemed to be greaſy. This intimation produced a great deal of clamour againſt me, eſpecially among the loſers, who threatened with many oaths and imprecations to take me up by a warrant as a ſharper, unleſs I would compromiſe the affair by

refunding the greateſt part of my winning. Though I was far from being eaſy under this accuſation, I relied upon my innocence, threatened in my turn to proſecute the Jew for defamation, and boldly offered to ſubmit my cauſe to the examination of any juſtice in Weſtminſter; but they knew themſelves too well to put their characters on that iſſue, and finding I was not to be intimidated into any conceſſion, dropped their plea, and made way for me to withdraw. I would not, however, ſtir from the table, until the Iſraelite had retracted what he had ſaid to my diſadvantage, and aſked pardon before the whole aſſembly.

As I marched out with my prize, I happened to tread upon the toes of a tall raw-boned fellow, with a hooked noſe, fierce eyes, black thick eye-brows, a pig-tail wig of the ſame colour, and a formidable hat pulled over his forehead, who ſtood gnawing his fingers in the crowd, and no ſooner felt the application of my ſhoe-heel, than he roared out in a tremendous voice, "Blood and wounds! you ſon of a whore, what's that for?" I aſked pardon with a great deal of ſubmiſſion, and proteſted I had no intention of hurting him: But the more I humbled myſelf, the more he ſtormed, and inſiſted upon gentlemanly ſatisfaction, at the ſame time provoking me with ſcandalous names that I could not put up with; ſo that I gave a looſe to my paſſion, returned his Billingſgate, and challenged him to follow me down to the piazzas. His indignation cooling as mine warmed, he refuſed my invitation, ſaying, he would chooſe his own time, and returned towards the table, muttering threats, which I neither dreaded, nor diſtinctly heard: but deſcending with great deliberation, received my ſword from the door-keeper, whom I gratified with a guinea, according to the cuſtom of the place, and went home in a rapture of joy.

My faithful valet, who had ſat up all night in the utmoſt uneaſineſs on my account, let me in with his face beſlubbered with tears, and followed me to my chamber, where he ſtood ſilent like a condemned criminal, in expectation of hearing that every ſhilling was ſpent. I gueſſed the ſituation of his thoughts, and, aſſuming a ſul-

len look, bade him fetch me ſome water to waſh. He replied, without lifting his eyes from the ground, "In my ſimple conjecture, you have more occaſion for reſt, not having (I ſuppoſe) ſlept theſe four and twenty hours." "Bring me ſome water," ſaid I, in a peremptory tone; upon which he ſneaked away ſhrugging his ſhoulders. Before he returned, I had ſpread my whole ſtock on the table in the moſt oſtentatious manner; ſo that, when it firſt ſaluted his view, he ſtood like one entranced, and having rubbed his eyes more than once, to aſſure himſelf of his being awake, broke out into, "Lord have mercy upon us! what a vaſt treaſure is here!" "'Tis all our own, Strap (ſaid I); take what is neceſſary, and redeem the ſword immediately." He advanced towards the table, ſtopped ſhort by the way, looked at the money and me by turns, and, with a wildneſs in his countenance, produced from joy checked by diſtruſt, cried, "I dare ſay, it is honeſtly come by." To remove his ſcruples, I made him acquainted with the whole ſtory of my ſucceſs, which when he heard, he danced about the room in an ecſtaſy, crying, "God be praiſed! a white ſtone! —God be praiſed! a white ſtone!" So that I was afraid the ſudden change of fortune had diſordered his intellects, and that he was run mad with joy. Extremely concerned at this event, I attempted to reaſon him out of his frenzy, but to no purpoſe; for, without regarding what I ſaid, he continued to friſk up and down, and repeat his rhapſody of "God be praiſed! a white ſtone!" At laſt I roſe in the utmoſt conſternation, and, laying violent hands upon him, put a ſtop to his extravagance, by fixing him down to a ſettee that was in the room. This conſtraint baniſhed his delirium; he ſtarted, as if juſt awoke, and, terrified at my behaviour, cried, "What is the matter?" When he learned the cauſe of my apprehenſion, he was aſhamed of his tranſports, and told me, that, in mentioning the white ſtone, he alluded to the *dies faſti* of the Romans, *albo lapide notati*.

Having no inclination to ſleep, I ſecured m
dreſſed, and was juſt going abroad, when the ſe
the houſe told me there was a gentlewoman at t
who wanted to ſpeak with me. Surpriſed at this i

tion, I bade Strap ſhow her up, and in leſs than a minute ſaw a young woman of a ſhabby decayed appearance enter my room. After half a dozen curtſeys, ſhe began to ſob, and told me her name was Gawky; upon which information I immediately recollected the features of Miſs Lavement, who had been the firſt occaſion of my misfortunes. Though I had all the reaſon in the world to reſent her treacherous behaviour to me, I was moved at her diſtreſs, and profeſſing my ſorrow at ſeeing her ſo reduced, deſired her to ſit, and inquired into the particulars of her ſituation. She fell upon her knees, and implored my forgiveneſs for the injuries ſhe had done me, proteſting before God, that ſhe was forced, againſt her inclination, into that helliſh conſpiracy which had almoſt deprived me of my life, by the entreaties of her huſband, who having been afterwards renounced by his father, on account of his marriage with her, and unable to ſupport a family on his pay, left his wife at her father's houſe, and went with the regiment to Germany, where he was broke for miſbehaviour at the battle of Dettingen, ſince which time ſhe had heard no tidings of him. She then gave me to underſtand, with many ſymptoms of penitence, that it was her misfortune to bear a child four months after marriage, by which event her parents were ſo incenſed, that ſhe was turned out of doors with the infant, that died ſoon after; and had hitherto ſubſiſted in a miſerable indigent manner, on the extorted charity of a few friends, who were now quite tired of giving: That, not knowing where or how to ſupport herſelf one day longer, ſhe had fled for ſuccour even to me, who, of all mankind, had the leaſt cauſe to aſſiſt her, relying upon the generoſity of my diſpoſition, which, ſhe hoped, would be pleaſed with this opportunity of avenging itſelf in the nobleſt manner on the wretch who had wronged me. I was very much affected with her diſcourſe, and having no cauſe to ſuſpect the ſincerity of her repentance, raiſed her up, freely pardoned all ſhe had done againſt me, and promiſed to befriend her as much as lay in my power.

Since my laſt arrival in London, I had made no advances to the apothecary, imagining it would be impoſſi-

ble for me to make my innocence appear, ſo unhappily was my accuſation circumſtanced. Strap indeed had laboured to juſtify me to the ſchoolmaſter; but, far from ſucceeding in his attempt, Mr. Concordance dropped all correſpondence with him, becauſe he refuſed to quit his connection with me. Things being in this ſituation, I thought a fairer opportunity of vindicating my character could not offer than that which now preſented itſelf. I therefore ſtipulated with Mrs. Gawky, that, before I would yield her the leaſt aſſiſtance, ſhe ſhould do me the juſtice to clear my reputation, by explaining upon oath, before a magiſtrate, the whole of the conſpiracy, as it had been executed againſt me. When ſhe had given me this ſatisfaction, I preſented her with five guineas, a ſum ſo much above her expectation, that ſhe could ſcarce believe the evidence of her ſenſes, and was ready to worſhip me for my benevolence. The declaration, ſigned with her own hand, I ſent to her father, who, upon recollecting and comparing the circumſtances of my charge, was convinced of my integrity, and waited on me next day, in company with his friend the ſchoolmaſter, to whom he had communicated my vindication. After mutual ſalutation, Monſieur Lavement began a long apology for the unjuſt treatment I had received; but I ſaved him a good deal of breath, by interrupting his harangue, and aſſuring him, that, far from entertaining a reſentment againſt him, I thought myſelf obliged to his lenity, which allowed me to eſcape, after ſuch ſtrong preſumptions of guilt appeared againſt me. Mr. Concordance, thinking it now his turn to ſpeak, obſerved, that Mr. Random had too much candour and ſagacity to be diſobliged at their conduct, which, all things conſidered, could not have been otherwiſe, with any honeſty of intention. "Indeed (ſaid he), if the plot had been unravelled to us by any ſupernatural intelligence, if it had been whiſpered by a genie, communicated by a dream, or revealed by an angel from on high, we ſhould have been to blame in crediting ocular demonſtration: but as we were left in the miſt of mortality, it cannot be expected we ſhould be incapable of impoſition. I do aſſure you, Mr. Random, no man on earth is more pleaſed than

I am at this triumph of your character; and as the news of your misfortune panged me to the very entrails, this manifeſtation of your innocence makes my midriff quiver with joy." I thanked him for his concern, deſired them to undeceive thoſe of their acquaintance who judged harſhly of me, and, having treated them with a glaſs of wine, repreſented to Lavement the deplorable condition of his daughter, and pleaded her cauſe ſo effectually, that he conſented to ſettle a ſmall annuity on her for life; but could not be perſuaded to take her home, becauſe her mother was ſo much incenſed that ſhe would never ſee her.

CHAPTER LIII.

I purchaſe new clothes—reprimand Strutwell and Straddle.—Banter propoſes another matrimonial ſcheme.—I accept of his terms—ſet out for Bath in a ſtage-coach, with the young lady and her mother—the behaviour of an officer and lawyer—our fellow travellers deſcribed—a ſmart dialogue between my miſtreſs and the captain.

HAVING finiſhed this affair to my ſatisfaction, I found myſelf perfectly at eaſe, and looking upon the gaming-table as a certain reſource for a gentleman in want, became more gay than ever. Although my clothes were almoſt as good as new, I grew aſhamed of wearing them, becauſe I thought every body, by this time, had got an inventory of my wardrobe. For which reaſon, I diſpoſed of a good part of my apparel to a ſaleſman in Monmouth-ſtreet for half the value, and bought two new ſuits with the money. I likewiſe purchaſed a plain gold watch, deſpairing of recovering that which I had ſo fooliſhly given to Strutwell, whom, notwithſtanding, I ſtill continued to viſit at his levee, until the Ambaſſador he had mentioned ſet out with a ſecretary of his own chooſing. I thought myſelf then at liberty to expoſtulate with his lordſhip, whom I treated with great freedom in a letter, for amuſing me with vain hopes, when he neither had the power nor inclination to provide for me. Nor was I leſs reſerved with Straddle, whom I in perſon reproached for miſrepreſenting to me the charac-

ter of Strutwell, which I did not ſcruple to aver was infamous in every reſpect. He ſeemed very much enraged at my freedom, talked a great deal about his quality and honour, and began to make ſome compariſons which I thought ſo injurious to mine, that I demanded an explanation with great warmth; and he was mean enough to equivocate, and condeſcend in ſuch a manner, that I left him with a hearty contempt of his behaviour.

About this time, Banter, who had obſerved a ſurpriſing and ſudden alteration in my appearance and diſpoſition, began to inquire very minutely into the cauſe; and as I did not think fit to let him know the true ſtate of the affair, leſt he might make free with my purſe, on the ſtrength of having propoſed the ſcheme that filled it, I told him that I had received a ſmall ſupply from a relation in the country, who at the ſame time had promiſed to uſe all his intereſt (which was not ſmall) in ſoliciting ſome poſt for me that ſhould make me eaſy for life. "If that be the caſe (ſaid Banter) perhaps you won't care to mortify yourſelf a little, in making your fortune another way. I have a relation who is to ſet out for Bath next week, with an only daughter, who being ſickly and decrepit, intends to drink the waters for the recovery of her health. Her father, who was a rich Turkey merchant, died about a year ago, and left her with a fortune of twenty thouſand pounds, under the ſole management of her mother, who is my kinſwoman. I would have put in for the plate myſelf, but there is a breach at preſent between the old woman and me. You muſt know, that ſome time ago I borrowed a ſmall ſum of her, and promiſed, it ſeems, to pay it before a certain time; but being diſappointed in my expectation of money from the country, the day elapſed, without my being able to take up my note; upon which ſhe wrote a peremptory letter, threatening to arreſt me, if I did not pay the debt immediately. Nettled at this preciſe behaviour, I ſent a damned ſevere anſwer, which enraged her ſo much, that ſhe actually took out a writ againſt me. Whereupon, finding the thing grow ſerious, I got a friend to advance the money for me, diſcharged the debt, went to her houſe, and abuſed her for her unfriend-

ly dealing. She was provoked by my reproaches, and ſcolded in her turn. The little deformed urchin joined her mother with ſuch virulence and volubility of tongue, that I was fain to make my retreat, after having been honoured with a great many ſcandalous epithets, which gave me plainly to underſtand that I had nothing to hope from the eſteem of the one, or the affection of the other. As they are both utter ſtrangers to life, it is a thouſand to one that the girl will be picked up by ſome ſcoundrel or other at Bath, if I don't provide for her otherwiſe. You are a well-looking fellow, Random, and can behave as demurely as a quaker. Now, if you will give me an obligation for five hundred pounds, to be paid ſix months after your marriage, I will put you in a method of carrying her in ſpite of all oppoſition."

This propoſal was too advantageous for me to be refuſed: The writing was immediately drawn up and executed; and Banter giving me notice of the time when, and the ſtage coach in which they were to ſet out, I beſpoke a place in the ſame convenience, and having hired a horſe for Strap, who was charmed with the proſpect, ſet forward accordingly.

As we embarked before day, I had not the pleaſure for ſome time of ſeeing Miſs Snapper (that was the name of my miſtreſs), nor even of perceiving the number and ſex of my fellow-travellers, although I gueſſed that the coach was full, by the difficulty I found in ſeating myſelf. The firſt five minutes paſſed in a general ſilence, when all of a ſudden, the coach heeling to one ſide, a boiſterous voice pronounced, "To the right and left, cover your flanks, damme! whiz!" I eaſily diſcovered, by the tone and matter of this exclamation, that it was uttered by a ſon of Mars; neither was it hard to conceive the profeſſion of another perſon who ſat oppoſite to me, and obſerved, that we ought to have been well ſatisfied of the ſecurity before we entered upon the premiſes. Theſe two ſallies had not the deſired effect: We continued a good while as mute as before, till at length the gentleman of the ſword, impatient of longer ſilence, made a ſecond effort, by ſwearing, he had got into a meeting of quakers. "I believe ſo too (ſaid a ſhrill fe-

male voice at my left hand), for the ſpirit of folly begins to move." "Out with it then, madam," replied the ſoldier. "You ſeem to have no occaſion for a midwife," cried the lady. "Damn my blood! (exclaimed the other), a man can't talk to a woman, but ſhe immediately thinks of a midwife." "True, Sir," ſaid ſhe, "I long to be delivered." "What! of a mouſe, madam?" ſaid he. "No, Sir," ſaid ſhe, "of a fool." "Are you far gone with a fool?" ſaid he. "Little more than two miles," ſaid ſhe. "By Gad, you are a wit, madam!" cried the officer. "I wiſh I could with any juſtice return the compliment," ſaid the lady. "Zounds, I have done," ſaid he. "Your bolt is ſoon ſhot, according to the old proverb," ſaid ſhe. The warrior's powder was quite ſpent; the lawyer adviſed him to drop the proſecution; and a grave matron, who ſat on the left hand of the victorious wit, told her, ſhe muſt not let her tongue run ſo faſt among ſtrangers. This reprimand, ſoftened with the appellation of *child*, convinced me that the ſatirical lady was no other than Miſs Snapper, and I reſolved to regulate my conduct accordingly. The champion, finding himſelf ſo ſmartly handled, changed his battery, and began to expatiate on his own exploits. "You talk of ſhot, Madam (ſaid he), damme! I have both given and received ſome ſhot in my time. I was wounded in the ſhoulder by a piſtol-ball at Dettingen, where—I ſay nothing—but by G—d! if it had not been for me—all's one for that—I deſpiſe boaſting, d—me! whiz!" So ſaying, he whiſtled one part and hummed another of Black Joke; then addreſſing himſelf to the lawyer, went on thus: "Would't you think it damned hard, after having, at the riſk of your life, recovered the ſtandard of a regiment, that had been loſt, to receive no preferment for your pains! I don't chooſe to name no names, ſink me! but howſomever, this I will refer by G—d, and that is this, a muſqueteer of the French guards, having taken a ſtandard from a certain cornet of a certain regiment, damme! was retreating with his prize as faſt as his horſe's heels could carry him, ſink me! Upon which, I ſnatched up a firelock that belonged to a dead man, damme! whiz! and ſhot his

horſe under him, d—n my blood! The fellow got upon his feet, and began to repoſe me; upon which I charged my bayonet breaſt high, and ran him through the body, by G—d! One of his comrades coming to his aſſiſtance, ſhot me in the ſhoulder, as I told you before; another gave me a confuſion on the head with the butt end of his carbine; but, damme! that did not ſignify. I killed one, put the other to flight, and taking up the ſtandard, carried it off very deliberately. But the beſt joke of all was, the ſon of a b—ch of a cornet who had ſurrendered it in a cowardly manner, ſeeing it in my poſſeſſion, demanded it from me, in the front of the line. "D—n my blood (ſays he), where did you find my ſtandard?" ſays he. "D—n my blood (ſaid I)—where (ſaid I) did you loſe it!" ſaid I. "That's nothing to you (ſays he)—'tis my ſtandard (ſays he), and by G—d I'll have it," ſays he. "D—n—tion ſeize me (ſays I), if you ſhall (ſays I), till I have firſt delivered it to the General (ſays I); and accordingly I went to the head-quarters, after the battle, and delivered it to my Lord Stair, who promiſed to do for me, but I am no more than a poor lieutenant ſtill, damn my blood."

Having vented this repetition of expletives, the lawyer owned he had not been requited according to his deſerts; obſerved, that the labourer is always worthy of his hire, and aſked if the promiſe was made before witneſſes, becauſe in that caſe the law would compel the General to perform it;——but underſtanding that the promiſe was made over a bottle, without being reſtricted to time or terms, he pronounced it not valid in law, proceeded to inquire into the particulars of the battle, and affirmed, that although the Engliſh had drawn themſelves into a premunire at firſt, the French managed their cauſe ſo lamely in the courſe of the diſpute, that they would have been utterly nonſuited, had they not obtained a *noli proſequi*. In ſpite of theſe enlivening touches, the converſation was like to ſuffer another long interruption; when the lieutenant, unwilling to conceal any of his accompliſhments, that could be diſplayed in his preſent ſituation, offered to regale the company with a ſong; and interpreting our ſilence into a deſire of hearing, be-

gan to warble a faſhionable air, the firſt ſtanza of which he pronounced thus:

Would you taſk the moon-ty'd hair,
To yon flagrant beau repair;
Where waving with the popling vow,
The bantling fine will ſhelter you, &c.

The ſenſe of the reſt he perverted as he went on, with ſuch ſurpriſing facility, that I could not help thinking he had been at ſome pains to burleſque the performance. Miſs Snapper aſcribed it to the true cauſe, namely ignorance; and when he aſked her how ſhe reliſhed his muſic, anſwered, that, in her opinion, the muſic and the words were much of a piece. "O damn my blood! (ſaid he), I take that as a high compliment; for every body allows the words are damnable fine." "They may be ſo (replied the lady) for aught I know, but they are above my comprehenſion." "I an't obliged to find you comprehenſion, madam, curſe me!" cried he. "No, nor to ſpeak ſenſe neither," ſaid ſhe. "Damn my heart (ſaid he), I'll ſpeak what I pleaſe." Here the lawyer interpoſed, by telling him there were ſome things he muſt not ſpeak. And upon being defied to give an inſtance, mentioned treaſon and defamation. "As for the King (cried the ſoldier), God bleſs him—I eat his bread, and have loſt blood in his cauſe, therefore I have nothing to ſay to him—but by G—d, I dare ſay any thing to any other man." "No (ſaid the lawyer), you dare not call me a rogue." "Damme, for what?" ſaid the other. "Becauſe (replied the counſellor) I ſhould have a good action againſt you, and recover." "Well, well (cried the officer), if I dare not call you rogue, I dare think you one, damme." This ſtroke of wit he accompanied with a loud laugh of ſelf-approbation, which unluckily did not affect the audience, but effectually ſilenced his antagoniſt, who did not open his mouth for the ſpace of an hour, except to clear his pipe with three *hems*, which, however, produced nothing.

CHAPTER LIV.

Day breaking, I have the pleaſure of viewing the perſon of Miſs Snapper, whom I had not ſeen before—the ſoldier is witty upon me—is offended, talks much of his valour—is reprimanded by a grave gentlewoman—we are alarmed with the cry of highwaymen—I get out of the coach, and ſtand in my own defence—they ride off without having attacked us—I purſue them—one of them is thrown from his horſe and taken—I return to the coach—am complimented by Miſs Snapper—the captain's behaviour on this occaſion—the prude reproaches me in a ſoliloquy—I upbraid her in the ſame manner—the behaviour of Mrs. Snapper at breakfaſt, diſobliges me—the lawyer is witty upon the officer, who threatens him.

In the mean time, day breaking in upon us, diſcovered to one another the faces of their fellow-travellers, and I had the good fortune to find my miſtreſs not quite ſo deformed nor diſagreeable as ſhe had been repreſented to me. Her head, indeed, bore ſome reſemblance to a hatchet, the edge being repreſented by her face; but ſhe had a certain delicacy in her complexion, and a great deal of vivacity in her eyes, which were very large and black; and though the protuberance of her breaſt, when conſidered alone, ſeemed to drag her forwards, it was eaſy to perceive an equivalent on her back which balanced the other, and kept her body in equilibrio. On the whole, I thought I ſhould have great reaſon to congratulate myſelf, if it ſhould be my fate to poſſeſs twenty thouſand pounds encumbered with ſuch a wife. I began therefore to deliberate about the moſt probable means of acquiring the conqueſt, and was ſo much engroſſed by this idea, that I ſcarce took any notice of the reſt of the people in the coach, but revolved my project in ſilence; while the converſation was maintained as before, by the object of my hopes, the ſon of Mars, and the barriſter, who by this time had recollected himſelf, and talked in terms as much as ever. At length a diſpute happened, which ended in a wager, to be determined by me, who was ſo much abſorbed in contemplation, that I neither heard the reference nor the queſtion, which was put to me by each in his turn; affronted at my ſuppoſed contempt, the ſoldier, with great vocifera-

tion, ſwore, I was either dumb or deaf, if not both, and that I looked as if I could not ſay Boh to a gooſe. Arouſed at this obſervation, I fixed my eyes upon him, and pronounced with emphaſis, the interjection *Boh!* Upon which he cocked his hat in a fierce manner, and cried, "Damme, Sir, what d'ye mean by that?" Had I intended to anſwer him, which by the bye was not my deſign, I ſhould have been anticipated by Miſs, who told him, my meaning was to ſhow that I could cry Boh to a gooſe; and laughed very heartily at my laconic reproof. Her explanation and mirth did not help to appeaſe his wrath, which broke out in ſeveral martial inſinuations, ſuch as—"I do not underſtand ſuch freedoms, damme! Damn my blood! I'm a gentleman, and bear the king's commiſſion. 'Sblood! ſome people deſerve to have their noſes pulled for their impertinence." I thought to have checked theſe ejaculations by a frown; becauſe he had talked ſo much of his valour, that I had long ago rated him as an aſs in a lion's ſkin; but this expedient did not anſwer my expectation; he took umbrage at the contraction of my brows, ſwore he did not value my ſulky looks a fig's end, and proteſted he feared no man breathing. Miſs Snapper ſaid ſhe was very glad to find herſelf in company with a man of ſo much courage, who, ſhe did not doubt, would protect us from all the attempts of highwaymen during our journey. "Make yourſelf perfectly eaſy on that head, madam (replied the officer); I have got a pair of piſtols (here they are) which I took from a horſe officer at the battle of Dettingen—they are double loaded, and if any highwayman in England robs you of the value of a pin, while I have the honour of being in your company, damn my heart." When he had expreſſed himſelf in this manner, a prim gentlewoman, who had ſat ſilent hitherto, opened her mouth, and ſaid, ſhe wondered how any man could be ſo rude as to pull out ſuch weapons before ladies. "Damme, madam (cried the champion) if you are ſo much afraid at ſight of a piſtol, how d'ye propoſe to ſtand fire if there ſhould be occaſion?" She then told him, that if ſhe thought he could be ſo unmannerly as to uſe fire-arms in her preſence,

whatever might be the occaſion, ſhe would get out of the coach immediately, and walk to the next village, where ſhe might procure a convenience to herſelf. Before he could make any anſwer, my Dulcinea interpoſed, and obſerved, that, far from being offended at a gentleman's uſing his arms in his own defence, ſhe thought herſelf very lucky in being along with one by whoſe valour ſhe ſtood a good chance of ſaving herſelf from being rifled. The prude caſt a diſdainful look at Miſs, and ſaid, that people who have but little to loſe are ſometimes the moſt ſolicitous about preſerving it. The old lady was affronted at this innuendo, and took notice, that people ought to be very well informed before they ſpoke ſlightingly of other people's fortunes, leſt they diſcover their own envy, and make themſelves ridiculous. The daughter declared, that ſhe did not pretend to vie with any body in point of riches; and if the lady who inſiſted upon non-reſiſtence, would promiſe to indemnify us for all the loſs we ſhould ſuſtain, ſhe would be one of the firſt to perſuade the captain to ſubmiſſion, in caſe we ſhould be attacked. To this propoſal, reaſonable as it was, the reſerved lady made no other reply, than a ſcornful glance and a toſs of her head. I was very well pleaſed with the ſpirit of my miſtreſs; and even wiſhed for an opportunity of diſtinguiſhing my courage under her eye, which I believed could not fail of prepoſſeſſing her in my favour; when all of a ſudden, Strap rode up to the coach-door, and told us in a great fright, that two men on horſeback were croſſing the heath (for by this time we had paſſed Hounſlow), and made directly towards us. This piece of information was no ſooner delivered than Mrs. Snapper began to ſcream, her daughter grew pale, the other lady pulled out her purſe to be in readineſs, the lawyer's teeth chattered, while he pronounced, "T'is no matter—we'll ſue the county, and recover." The captain gave evident ſigns of confuſion; and I, after having commanded the coachman to ſtop, opened the door, jumped out, and invited the warrior to follow me. But finding him backward and aſtoniſhed, I took his piſtols, and giving them to Strap, who had by this time alighted,

and trembled very much, I mounted on horſeback, and taking my own (which I could better depend upon) from the holſters, cocked them both, and faced the robbers, who were now very near us. Seeing me ready to oppoſe them on horſeback, and another man armed afoot, they made a halt at ſome diſtance to reconnoitre us, and, after having rode round us twice, myſelf ſtill facing about as they rode, went off the ſame way as they came, at a hand-gallop. A gentleman's ſervant coming up with a horſe at the ſame time, I offered him a crown to aſſiſt me in purſuing them; which he no ſooner accepted, than I armed him with the officer's piſtols, and we galloped after the thieves, who, truſting to the ſwiftneſs of their horſes, ſtopped till we came within ſhot of them, and then firing at us, put their nags to the full ſpeed. We followed them as faſt as our beaſts could carry us; but not being ſo well mounted as they, our efforts would have been to little purpoſe, had not the horſe of one of them ſtumbled, and thrown his rider with ſuch violence over his head, that he lay ſenſeleſs when we came up, and was taken without the leaſt oppoſition; while his comrade conſulted his own ſafety in flight, without regarding the diſtreſs of his friend. We ſcarce had time to make ourſelves maſters of his arms, and tie his hands together, before he recovered his ſenſes, when learning his ſituation, he affected ſurpriſe, demanded to know by what authority we uſed a gentleman in that manner, and had the impudence to threaten us with a proſecution for robbery. In the mean time we perceived Strap coming up with a crowd of people, armed with different kinds of weapons; and, among the reſt a farmer, who no ſooner perceived the thief, whom we had ſecured, than he cried with great emotion, "There's the fellow who robbed me an hour ago, of twenty pounds in a canvas bag." He was immediately ſearched, and the money found exactly as it had been deſcribed: Upon which we committed him to the charge of the countryman, who carried him to the town of Hounſlow, which it ſeems the farmer had alarmed; and I, having ſatisfied the footman for his trouble, according to promiſe, returned with Strap to the coach, where I

found the captain and lawyer buſy in adminiſtering ſmelling bottles and cordials to the grave lady, who had gone into a fit at the noiſe of the firing.

When I had taken my ſeat, Miſs Snapper, who from the coach had ſeen every thing that happened, made me a compliment on my behaviour, and ſaid, ſhe was glad to ſee me returned, without having received any injury: her mother too owned herſelf obliged to my reſolution; and the lawyer told me, that I was entitled by act of parliament to a reward of forty pounds, for having apprehended a higwayman. The ſoldier obſerved, with a countenance in which impudence and ſhame ſtruggling, produced ſome diſorder, that if I had not been in ſuch a damned hurry to get out of the coach, he would have ſecured the rogues effectually, without all this buſtle and loſs of time, by a ſcheme which my heat and precipitation ruined. "For my own part (continued he), I am always extremely cool on theſe occaſions." "So it appeared; by your trembling," ſaid the young lady. "Death and damnation (cried he) your ſex protects you, madam; if any man on earth durſt tell me ſo much, I'd ſend him to hell, damn my heart! in an inſtant." So ſaying, he fixed his eyes upon me, and aſked if I had ſeen him tremble? I anſwered without heſitation, "Yes." "Damme, Sir (ſaid he), d'ye doubt my courage?" I replied, "Very much." This declaration quite diſconcerted him. He looked blank, and pronounced with a faultering voice, "O! 'tis very well—damn my blood! I ſhall find a time." I ſignified my contempt of him, by thruſting my tongue in my cheek, which humbled him ſo much, that he ſcarce ſwore another oath aloud during the whole journey.

The preciſe lady having recruited her ſpirits by the help of ſome ſtrong waters, began a ſoliloquy, in which ſhe wondered that any man, who pretended to maintain the character of a gentleman, could, for the ſake of a little paltry coin, throw perſons of honour into ſuch quandaries as might endanger their lives; and profeſſed her ſurpriſe, that women were not aſhamed to commend ſuch brutality; at the ſame time vowing, that for the future ſhe would never ſet foot in a ſtage coach,

if a private convenience could be had for love or money.

Nettled at her remarks, I took the ſame method of conveying my ſentiments, and wondered in my turn that any woman of common ſenſe, ſhould be ſo unreaſonable as to expect that people who had neither acquaintance or connection with her, would tamely allow themſelves to be robbed and maltreated, merely to indulge her capricious humour. I likewiſe confeſſed my aſtoniſhment at her inſolence and ingratitude in taxing a perſon with brutality, who deſerved her approbation and acknowledgment; and vowed, that if ever ſhe ſhould be aſſaulted again, I would leave her to the mercy of the ſpoiler, that ſhe might know the value of my protection.

This perſon of honour did not think fit to carry on the altercation any further, but ſeemed to chew the cud of her reſentment, with the creſt-fallen captain, while I entered into diſcourſe with my charmer, who was the more pleaſed with my converſation, as ſhe had conceived a very indifferent opinion of my intellects from my former ſilence. I ſhould have had cauſe to be equally ſatisfied with the ſprightlineſs of her genius, could ſhe have curbed her imagination with judgment; but ſhe laboured under ſuch a profuſion of talk, that I dreaded her unruly tongue, and felt by anticipation the horrors of an eternal clack! However, when I conſidered, on the other hand, the joys attending the poſſeſſion of twenty thouſand pounds, I forgot her imperfections, ſeized occaſion by the fore-lock, and endeavoured to inſinuate myſelf into her affection. The careful mother kept a ſtrict watch over her, and though ſhe could not help behaving civilly to me, took frequent opportunities of diſcouraging our communication, by reprimanding her for being ſo free with ſtrangers, and telling her ſhe muſt learn to ſpeak leſs, and think more. Abridged of the uſe of ſpeech, we converſed with our eyes, and I found the young lady very eloquent in this kind of diſcourſe. In ſhort, I had reaſon to believe that ſhe was ſick of the old gentlewoman's tuition, and that I ſhould find it no difficult matter to ſuperſede her authority.

When we arrived at the place where we were to breakfaſt, I alighted, and helped my miſtreſs out of the coach, as well as her mother, who called for a private room, to which they withdrew, in order to eat by themſelves. As they retired together, I perceived that Miſs had got more twiſts from nature, than I had before obſerved, for ſhe was bent ſideways in the figure of an S, ſo that her progreſſion very much reſembled that of a crab. The prude alſo choſe the captain for her meſsmate, and ordered breakfaſt for two only to be brought into another ſeparate room; while the lawyer and I, deſerted by the reſt of the company, were fain to put up with each other. I was a good deal chagrined at the ſtately reſerve of Mrs. Snapper, who I thought did not uſe me with all the complaiſance I deſerved; and my companion declared, that he had been a traveller for twenty years, and never knew the ſtage-coach rules ſo much infringed before. As for the honourable gentlewoman, I could not conceive the meaning of her attachment to the lieutenant; and aſked the lawyer if he knew for which of the ſoldier's virtues ſhe admired him? The counſellor facetiouſly replied, "I ſuppoſe the lady knows him to be an able conveyancer, and wants him to make a ſettlement in tail." I could not help laughing at the archneſs of the barriſter, who entertained me during breakfaſt, with a great deal of wit of the ſame kind, at the expence of our fellow-travellers; and among other things ſaid, he was ſorry to find the young lady ſaddled with ſuch encumberances.

When we had made an end of our repaſt, and paid our reckoning, we went into the coach, took our places, and bribed the driver with ſixpence, to revenge us on the reſt of his fare, by hurrying them away in the midſt of their meal. This taſk he performed to our ſatisfaction, after he had diſturbed their enjoyment with his importunate clamour. The mother and daughter obeyed the ſummons firſt, and coming to the coach door, were obliged to deſire the coachman's aſſiſtance to get in, becauſe the lawyer and I had agreed to ſhow our reſentment by our neglect. They were no ſooner ſeated, than the captain appeared as much heated as if he had

been purſued a dozen miles by an enemy; and immediately after him came the lady, not without ſome marks of diſorder. Having helped her up, he entered himſelf, growling a few oaths againſt the coachman, for his impertinent interruption; and the lawyer comforted him by ſaying, that if he had ſuffered a *niſi prius* through the obſtinacy of the defendant, he might have an opportunity to join iſſue at the next ſtage. This laſt expreſſion gave offence to the grave gentlewoman, who told him, if ſhe was a man, ſhe would make him repent of ſuch obſcenity, and thanked God ſhe had never been in ſuch company before. At this inſinuation, the captain, thought himſelf under a neceſſity of eſpouſing the lady's cauſe; and accordingly threatened to cut off the lawyer's ears, if he ſhould give his tongue any ſuch liberties for the future. The poor counſellor begged pardon, and univerſal ſilence enſued.

CHAPTER LV.

I reſolve to ingratiate myſelf with the mother, and am favoured by accident—the preciſe lady finds her huſband, and quits the coach—the captain is diſappointed of his dinner—we arrive at Bath—I accompany Miſs Snapper to the long room, where ſhe is attacked by beau Naſh, and turns the laugh againſt him—I make love to her, and receive a check—ſquire her to an aſſembly, where I am bleſſed with a ſight of my dear Narciſſa, which diſcompoſes me ſo much, that Miſs Snapper obſerving my diſorder, is at pains to diſcover the cauſe—is piqued at the occaſion, and, in our way home, pays me a ſarcaſtic compliment—I am met by Miſs Williams, who is maid and confident of Narciſſa—ſhe acquaints me with her lady's regard for me while under the diſguiſe of a ſervant, and deſcribes the tranſports of Narciſſa on ſeeing me at the aſſembly, in the character of a gentleman—I am ſurpriſed with an account of her aunt's marriage, and make an appointment to meet Miſs Williams next day.

DURING this unſocial interval, my pride and intereſt maintained a ſevere conflict, on the ſubject of Miſs Snapper, whom the one repreſented as unworthy of notice, and the other propoſed as the object of my whole attention: the advantages and diſadvantages attending ſuch a match were oppoſed to one another by my imagination: And at length my judgment gave it ſo much in favour

of the firſt, that I reſolved to proſecute my ſcheme with all the addreſs in my power. I thought I perceived ſome concern in her countenance, occaſioned by my ſilence, which ſhe, no doubt, imputed to my diſguſt at her mother's behaviour; and as I believed the old woman could not fail of aſcribing my muteneſs to the ſame motive, I determined to continue that ſullen conduct towards her, and fall upon ſome other method of manifeſting my eſteem for the daughter: Nor was it difficult for me to make her acquainted with my ſentiments by the expreſſion of my looks, which I modelled into the characters of humility and love; and which were anſwered by her with all the ſympathy and approbation I could deſire. But when I began to conſider, that without further opportunities of improving my ſucceſs, all the progreſs I had hitherto made would not much avail, and that ſuch opportunities could not be enjoyed without the mother's permiſſion; I concluded it would be requiſite to vanquiſh her coldneſs and ſuſpicion by my aſſiduities and reſpectful behaviour on the road; and ſhe would in all likelihood invite me to viſit her at Bath, where I did not fear of being able to cultivate her acquaintance as much as would be neceſſary to the accompliſhment of my purpoſe. And indeed accident furniſhed me with an opportunity of obliging her ſo much, that ſhe could not, with any appearance of good manners, forbear to gratify my inclination.

When we arrived at our dining-place, we found all the eatables in the inn beſpoke by a certain nobleman, who had got the ſtart of us; and in all likelihood my miſtreſs and her mother muſt have dined with Duke Humphrey, had I not exerted myſelf in their behalf, and bribed the landlord with a glaſs of wine, to curtail his Lordſhip's entertainment of a couple of fowls and ſome bacon, which I ſent with my compliments to the ladies. They accepted my treat with a great many thanks, and deſired I would favour them with my company at dinner, where I amuſed the old gentlewoman ſo ſucceſsfully, by maintaining a ſeemingly diſintereſted eaſe in the midſt of my civility, that ſhe ſignified a deſire of being better acquainted, and hoped I would be ſo kind as to

ſee her ſometimes at Bath. While I enjoyed myſelf in this manner, the preciſe lady had the good fortune to meet with her huſband, who was no other than gentleman, or, in other words, valet de chambre to the very nobleman whoſe coach ſtood at the door. Proud of the intereſt ſhe had in the houſe, ſhe affected to ſhow her power by introducing the captain to her ſpouſe, as a perſon who had treated her with great civility; upon which he was invited to a ſhare of their dinner; while the poor lawyer, finding himſelf utterly abandoned, made application to me, and was, through my interceſſion, admitted into our company. Having ſatisfied our appetites, and made ourſelves merry at the expence of the perſon of honour, the civil captain, and complaiſant huſband, I did myſelf the pleaſure of diſcharging the bill by ſtealth, for which I received a great many apologies and acknowledgments from my gueſts, and we re-imbarked at the firſt warning. The officer was obliged, at laſt, to appeaſe his hunger with a luncheon of bread and cheeſe, and a pint bottle of brandy, which he diſpatched in the coach, curſing the inappetence of his Lordſhip, who had ordered dinner to be put back a whole hour.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which was finiſhed next day, when I waited on the ladies to the houſe of a relation, in which they intended to lodge, and paſſing that night at the inn, took lodgings in the morning for myſelf.

The forenoon was ſpent in viſiting every thing that was worth ſeeing in the place, in company with a gentleman to whom Banter had given me a letter of introduction; and in the afternoon I waited on the ladies, and found Miſs a good deal indiſpoſed with the fatigue of the journey. As they foreſaw they ſhould have occaſion for a male acquaintance to ſquire them at all public places, I was received with great cordiality, and had the mother's commiſſion to conduct them next day to the long room, which we no ſooner entered, than the eyes of every body preſent were turned upon us; and when we had ſuffered the martyrdom of their looks for ſome time, a whiſper circulated at our expence, which was accompanied with many contemptuous ſmiles and tittering ob-

ſervations, to my utter ſhame and confuſion. I did not ſo much conduct as follow my charge to a place where ſhe ſeated her mother and herſelf, with aſtoniſhing compoſure, notwithſtanding the unmannerly behaviour of the whole company, which ſeemed to be aſſumed merely to put her out of countenance. The celebrated Mr. Naſh, who commonly attends in this place, as maſter of the ceremonies, perceiving the diſpoſition of the aſſembly, took upon himſelf the taſk of gratifying their ill-nature ſtill further, by expoſing my miſtreſs to the edge of his wit. With this view he approached us, with many bows and grimaces, and after having welcomed Miſs Snapper to the place, aſked her, in the hearing of all preſent, if ſhe could inform him the name of Tobit's dog. I was ſo much incenſed at his inſolence that I ſhould certainly have kicked him where he ſtood, without ceremony, had not the young lady prevented the effects of my indignation, by replying, with the utmoſt vivacity, "His name was Naſh, and an impudent dog he was." This repartee, ſo unexpected and juſt, raiſed ſuch an univerſal laugh at the aggreſſor, that all his aſſurance was inſufficient to ſupport him under their deriſion; ſo that, after he had endeavoured to compoſe himſelf, by taking ſnuff, and forcing a ſmile, he was obliged to ſneak off in a very ludicrous attitude; while my Dulcinea was applauded to the ſkies, for the brilliancy of her wit, and her acquaintance immediately courted by the beſt people of both ſexes in the room. This event, with which I was infinitely pleaſed at firſt, did not fail of alarming me, upon further reflection, when I conſidered, that the more ſhe was careſſed by perſons of diſtinction, the more her pride would be inflamed, and conſequently the obſtacles to my ſucceſs multiplied and enlarged. Nor were my preſaging fears untrue. That very night I perceived her a little intoxicated with the incenſe ſhe had received; and though ſhe ſtill behaved with a particular civility to me, I foreſaw, that, as ſoon as her fortune ſhould be known, ſhe would be ſurrounded with a ſwarm of admirers, ſome one of whom might poſſibly, by excelling me in point of wealth, or in the arts of flattery and ſcandal, ſupplant me in her eſteem, and find means to make the mother of

his party. I reſolved therefore to loſe no time, and being invited to ſpend the evening with them, found an opportunity, in ſpite of the old gentlewoman's vigilance, to explain the meaning of my glances in the coach, by paying homage to her wit, and profeſſing myſelf enamoured of her perſon. She bluſhed at my declaration, and in a favourable manner diſapproved of the liberty I had taken, putting me in mind of our being ſtrangers to each other, and deſiring I would not be the means of interrupting our acquaintance by any ſuch unſeaſonable ſtrokes of gallantry for the future: My ardour was effectually checked by this reprimand, which was, however, delivered in ſuch a gentle manner, that I had no cauſe to be diſobliged; and the arrival of her mother relieved me from a dilemma, in which I ſhould not have known how to demean myſelf a minute longer. Neither could I reſume the eaſineſs of carriage with which I came in. My ſhiftleſs acted on the reſerve, and the converſation beginning to flag, the old lady introduced her kinſwoman of the houſe, and propoſed a hand at whiſt.

While we amuſed ourſelves at this diverſion, I underſtood from the gentlewoman, that there was to be an aſſembly next night, at which I begged to have the honour of dancing with Miſs. She thanked me for the favour I intended her, aſſured me ſhe never did dance, but ſignified a deſire of ſeeing the company; when I offered my ſervice, which was accepted; not a little proud of being exempted from appearing with her, in a ſituation, that, notwithſtanding my profeſſion to the contrary, was not at all agreeable to my inclination.

Having ſupped, and continued the game, till ſuch time as the ſucceſſive yawns of the mother warned me to be gone, I took my leave, and went home, where I made Strap very happy with an account of my progreſs. Next day I put on my gayeſt apparel, and went to drink tea at Mrs. Snapper's, according to appointment, when I found, to my inexpreſſible ſatisfaction, that ſhe was laid up with the tooth-ach, and that Miſs was to be intruſted to my care. Accordingly, we ſet out for the ball-room pretty early in the evening, and took poſſeſſion of a commodious place, where we had not ſat longer

than a quarter of an hour, when a gentleman dreſſed in a green frock came in, leading a young lady, whom I immediately diſcovered to be the adorable Narciſſa! Good heaven! what were the thrillings of my ſoul at that inſtant! my reflection was overwhelmed with a torrent of agitation! my heart throbbed with ſurpriſing violence! a ſudden miſt overſpread my eyes! my ears were invaded with a dreadful ſound! I panted for want of breath, and, in ſhort, was for ſome moments entranced! This firſt tumult ſubſiding, a crowd of flattering ideas ruſhed upon my imagination: Every thing that was ſoft, ſenſible, and engaging in the character of that dear creature, recurred to my remembrance, and every favourable circumſtance of my own qualifications appeared in all the aggravation of ſelf-conceit, to heighten my expectation! Neither was this tranſport of long duration: The dread of her being already diſpoſed of intervened, and overcaſt my enchanting reverie! My preſaging apprehenſion repreſented her encircled in the arms of ſome happy rival, and of conſequence for ever loſt to me! I was ſtung with this ſuggeſtion, and believing the perſon who conducted her to be the huſband of this amiable young lady, already devoted him to my fury, and ſtood up to mark him for my vengeance; when I recollected, to my unſpeakable joy, her brother, the fox-hunter, in the perſon of her gallant. Undeceived ſo much to my ſatisfaction in this particular, I gazed, in a frenzy of delight, on the irreſiſtible charms of his ſiſter, who no ſooner diſtinguiſhed me in the crowd, than her evident confuſion afforded a happy omen to my flame. At ſight of me ſhe ſtartled, the roſes inſtantly vaniſhed from her poliſhed cheeks, and returned in a moment with a double glow that overſpread her lovely neck, while her enchanting boſom heaved with ſtrong emotion. I hailed theſe favourable ſymptoms, and, lying in wait for her looks, did homage with my eyes. She ſeemed to approve my declaration, by the complacency of her aſpect; and I was ſo tranſported with her diſcovery, that more than once I was on the point of making up to her to diſcloſe the throbbings of my heart in perſon, had not that profound veneration which her

preſence always inſpired, reſtrained the unſeaſonable impulſe. All my powers being engroſſed in this manner, it may eaſily be imagined how ill I entertained Miſs Snapper, on whom I could not now turn my eyes, without making compariſons very little to her advantage. It was not even in my power to return diſtinct anſwers to the queſtions ſhe aſked from time to time, ſo that ſhe could not help obſerving my abſence of mind; and having a turn for obſervation, watched my glances, and tracing them to the divine object, diſcovered the cauſe of my diſorder. That ſhe might, however, be convinced of the truth of her conjecture, ſhe began to interrogate me with regard to Narciſſa, and, notwithſtanding all my endeavours to diſguiſe my ſentiments, perceived my attachment by my confuſion. Upon which ſhe aſſumed a ſtatelineſs of behaviour, and ſat ſilent during the remaining part of the entertainment. At any other time, her ſuſpicion would have alarmed me; but now I was elevated by my paſſion above every other conſideration. The miſtreſs of my ſoul having retired with her brother, I diſcovered ſo much uneaſineſs at my ſituation, that Miſs Snapper propoſed to go home, and while I conducted her to a chair, told me ſhe had too great a regard for me to keep me any longer in torment. I feigned ignorance of her meaning, and having ſeen her ſafely at her lodgings, took my leave, and went home in an ecſtacy, where I diſcloſed every thing that had happened to my confident and humble ſervant Strap, who did not reliſh the accident ſo well as I expected, and obſerved that a bird in hand is worth two in the buſh. "But however (ſaid he), you know beſt,—you know beſt." Next day, as I went to the Pump-room, in hopes of ſeeing or hearing ſome tidings of my fair enſlaver, I was met by a gentlewoman, who having looked hard at me, cried, "O Chriſt! Mr. Random!" Surpriſed at this exclamation, I examined the countenance of the perſon who ſpoke, and immediately recogniſed my old ſweetheart and fellow-ſufferer, Miſs Williams.

I was mightily pleaſed to find this unfortunate woman under ſuch a decent appearance, profeſſed my joy at ſeeing her ſo well, and deſired to know where I

ſhould have the pleaſure of her converſation. She was as heartily rejoiced at the apparent eaſineſs of my fortune, and gave me to know, that ſhe, as yet, had no habitation that ſhe could properly call her own, but would wait on me at any place I ſhould pleaſe to appoint. Underſtanding that ſhe was unengaged for the preſent, I ſhowed her the way to my own lodgings, where, after a very affectionate ſalutation, ſhe informed me of her being very happy in the ſervice of a young lady to whom ſhe was recommended by a former miſtreſs deceaſed, into whoſe family ſhe had recommended herſelf by the honeſt deceit ſhe had concerted while ſhe lived with me in the garret at London. She then expreſſed a vehement deſire to be acquainted with the viciſſitudes of my life ſince we parted, and excuſed her curioſity on account of the concern ſhe had for my intereſt. I forthwith gratified her requeſt, and when I deſcribed my ſituation in Suſſex, perceived her to attend to my ſtory with particular eagerneſs. She interrupted me when I had finiſhed that period, with, "Good God! is it poſſible!"—and then begged I would be ſo good as to continue my relation; which I did as briefly as I could, burning with impatience to know the cauſe of her ſurpriſe, about which I had already formed a very intereſting conjecture. When I had brought my adventures down to the preſent day, ſhe ſeemed very much affected with the different circumſtances of my fortune; and ſaying with a ſmile, ſhe believed my diſtreſſes were now at a period, proceeded to inform me, that the lady whom ſhe ſerved, was no other than the charming Narciſſa, who had honoured her with her confidence for ſome time; in conſequence of which truſt, ſhe had often repeated the ſtory of John Brown, with great admiration and regard; that ſhe loved to dwell upon the particulars of his character, and did not ſcruple to own a tender approbation of his flame. I became delirious at this piece of intelligence, ſtrained Miſs Williams in my embrace, called her the angel of my happineſs, and acted ſuch extravagances, that ſhe might have been convinced of my ſincerity, had ſhe not been ſatisfied of my honour before. As ſoon as I was in condition to yield attention, ſhe de-

ſcribed the preſent ſituation of her miſtreſs, who had no ſooner reached her lodgings the night before, than ſhe cloſeted her, and, in a rapture of joy, gave her to know that ſhe had ſeen me at the ball, where I appeared in the character which ſhe always thought my due, with ſuch advantage of transformation, that unleſs my image had been engraven on her heart, it would have been impoſſible to know me for the perſon who had worn her aunt's livery; that, by the language of my eyes, ſhe was aſſured of the continuance of my paſſion for her, and conſequently of my being unengaged to any other; and that, though ſhe did not doubt I would ſpeedily fall upon ſome method of being introduced, ſhe was ſo impatient to hear of me, that ſhe (Miſs Williams) had been ſent abroad this very morning, on purpoſe to learn the name and character I at preſent bore. My boſom had been hitherto a ſtranger to ſuch a flood of joy as now ruſhed upon it: My faculties were overborne by the tide: It was ſome time before I could open my mouth, and much longer ere I could utter a coherent ſentence. At length, I fervently requeſted her to lead me immediately to the object of my adoration: But ſhe reſiſted my importunity, and explained the danger of ſuch premature conduct. "How favourable ſoever (ſaid ſhe) my lady's inclination towards you may be, you may depend upon it, ſhe will not commit the ſmalleſt treſpaſs on decorum, either in diſcloſing her own, or in receiving a declaration of your paſſion; and although the great veneration I have for you has prompted me to reveal what ſhe communicated to me in confidence, I know ſo well the ſeverity of her ſentiments with reſpect to the punctilios of her ſex, that, if ſhe could learn the leaſt ſurmiſe of it, ſhe would not only diſmiſs me as a wretch unworthy of her benevolence, but alſo for ever ſhun the efforts of your love." I aſſented to the juſtneſs of her remonſtrance, and deſired ſhe would aſſiſt me with her advice and direction: Upon which, it was concerted between us, that, for the preſent, I ſhould be contented with her telling Narciſſa, that, in the courſe of her inquiries, ſhe could only learn my name; and that if, in a day or two, I could fall upon no other method

of being introduced to her miſtreſs, ſhe would deliver a letter from me, on pretence of conſulting her happineſs; and ſay that I met her in the ſtreets, and bribed her to this piece of ſervice. Matters being thus adjuſted, I kept my old acquaintance to breakfaſt, and learned, from her converſation, that my rival Sir Timothy had drunk himſelf into an apoplexy, of which he died five months ago; that the ſavage was ſtill unmarried; and that his aunt had been ſeized with a whim which he little expected, and choſen the ſchoolmaſter of the pariſh for her lord and huſband; but matrimony not agreeing with her conſtitution, ſhe had been hectic and dropſical a good while, and was now at Bath, in order to drink the waters for the recovery of her health; that her niece had accompanied her thither at her requeſt, and attended her with the ſame affection as before, notwithſtanding the miſtake ſhe had committed; and that her nephew, who had been exaſperated at the loſs of her fortune, did not give his attendance out of good will, but purely to have an eye on his ſiſter, leſt ſhe ſhould likewiſe throw herſelf away, without his conſent or approbation. Having enjoyed ourſelves in this manner, and made an aſſignation to meet next day at a certain place, Miſs Williams took her leave; and Strap's looks being very inquiſitive about the nature of the communication ſubſiſting between us, I made him acquainted with the whole affair, to his great aſtoniſhment and ſatisfaction.

CHAPTER LVI.

I become acquainted with Narciſſa's brother, who invites me to his houſe, where I am introduced to that adorable creature—After dinner, the ſquire retires to take his nap—Freeman, gueſſing the ſituation of my thoughts, withdraws likewiſe on pretence of buſineſs—I declare my paſſion to Narciſſa—am well received—charmed with her converſation—The ſquire detains us to ſupper—I elude his deſign by a ſtratagem, and get home ſober.

In the afternoon, I drank tea at the houſe of Mr. Freeman, to whom I had been recommended by Banter;

where I had not ſat five minutes, till the fox-hunter came in, and by his familiar behaviour appeared to be intimate with my friend. I was at firſt under ſome concern, leſt he ſhould recollect my features; but when I found myſelf introduced to him as a gentleman from London, without being diſcovered, I bleſſed the opportunity that brought me into his company, hoping that, in the courſe of our acquaintance, he would invite me to his houſe. Nor were my hopes fruſtrated; for, as we ſpent the evening together, he grew extremely fond of my converſation, aſked a great many childiſh queſtions about France and foreign parts; and ſeemed ſo highly entertained with my anſwers, that, in his cups, he ſhook me often by the hand, pronounced me an honeſt fellow, and, in fine, deſired our company at dinner next day in his own houſe. My imagination was ſo much employed in anticipating the happineſs I was to enjoy next day, that I ſlept very little that night; but, riſing early in the morning, went to the place appointed, where I met my ſhe-friend, and imparted to her my ſucceſs with the ſquire. She was very much pleaſed at the occaſion, which (ſhe ſaid) could not fail of being agreeable to Narciſſa, who, in ſpite of her paſſion for me, had mentioned ſome ſcruples relating to my true ſituation and character, which the delicacy of her ſentiments ſuggeſted, and which ſhe believed I would find it neceſſary to remove, though ſhe did not know how. I was a good deal ſtartled at this inſinuation, becauſe I foreſaw the difficulty I ſhould find in barely doing myſelf juſtice; for although it never was my intention to impoſe myſelf upon any woman, much leſs on Narciſſa, as a man of fortune, I laid claim to the character of a gentleman, by birth, education, and behaviour; and yet (ſo unlucky had the circumſtances of my life fallen out) I ſhould find it a very hard matter to make good my pretenſions even to theſe, eſpecially to the laſt, which was the moſt eſſential. Miſs Williams was as ſenſible as I of this my diſadvantage, but comforted me with obſerving, that when once a woman had beſtowed her affections on a man, ſhe cannot help judging of him in all reſpects with a partiality eaſily influenced in his favour: She remarked, that

although ſome ſituations of my life had been low, yet none of them had been infamous; that my indigence had been the crime not of me, but of fortune; and that the miſeries I had undergone, by improving the faculties both of mind and body, qualified me the more for any dignified ſtation, and would of conſequence recommend me to the good graces of any ſenſible woman: She therefore adviſed me to be always open and unreſerved to the inquiries of my miſtreſs, without unneceſſarily betraying the meaneſt occurrences of my fate, and truſt to the ſtrength of her love and reflection for the reſt. The ſentiments of this ſenſible young woman, on this as well as on almoſt every other ſubject, perfectly agreed with mine; I thanked her for the care ſhe took of my intereſts, and promiſing to behave myſelf according to her direction, we parted, after ſhe had aſſured me, that I might depend upon her beſt offices with her miſtreſs, and that ſhe would from time to time communicate to me ſuch intelligence as ſhe ſhould procure relating to my flame. Having dreſſed myſelf to the beſt advantage, I waited for the time of dinner with the moſt fearful impatience; and as the hour drew nigh, my heart beat with ſuch increaſed velocity, and my ſpirits contracted ſuch diſorder, that I began to ſuſpect my reſolution, and even to wiſh myſelf diſengaged. At laſt Mr. Freeman called at my lodgings, in his way, and I accompanied him to the houſe where all my happineſs was depoſited. We were very kindly received by the ſquire, who ſat ſmoking his pipe in a parlour, and aſked if we choſe to drink any thing before dinner: Though I never had more occaſion for a cordial, I was aſhamed to accept his offer, which was alſo refuſed by my friend. We ſat down, however, and entered into converſation, which laſted half an hour, ſo that I had time to recollect myſelf; and, ſo capricious were my thoughts, even to hope that Narciſſa would not appear—when all of a ſudden, a ſervant coming in, gave us notice that dinner was upon the table—and my perturbation returned with ſuch violence, that I could ſcarce conceal it from the company as I aſcended the ſtair-caſe. When I entered the dining-room, the firſt object that ſaluted my raviſhed eyes was the divine Nar-

ciſſa, bluſhing like Aurora, adorned with all the graces that meekneſs, innocence, and beauty can diffuſe! I was ſeized with a giddineſs, my knees tottered, and I ſcarce had ſtrength enough to perform the ceremony of ſalutation, when her brother, ſlapping me on the ſhoulder, cried, "Meaſter Randan, that there is my ſiſter." I approached her with eagerneſs and fear; but in the moment of our embrace, my ſoul was agonized with rapture! It was a lucky circumſtance for us both, that my entertainer was not endued with an uncommon ſtock of penetration; for our mutual confuſion was ſo manifeſt, that Mr. Freeman perceived it, and as we went home together, congratulated me on my good fortune. But ſo far was Bruin from entertaining the leaſt ſuſpicion, that he encouraged me to begin a converſation with my miſtreſs in a language unknown to him, by telling her, that he had brought a gentleman who could jabber with her in French and other foreign lingos, as faſt as ſhe pleaſed; then turning to me, ſaid, "Odds bods! I wiſh you would hold diſcourſe with her in your French or Italiano, and tell me if ſhe underſtands it as well as ſhe would be thought to do—there's her aunt and ſhe will chatter together whole days in it, and I can't have a mouthful of Engliſh for love or money." I conſulted the look of my amiable miſtreſs, and found her averſe to his propoſal, which ſhe declined with a ſweetneſs of denial peculiar to herſelf, as a piece of diſreſpect to that part of the company which did not underſtand the language in queſtion. As I had the happineſs of ſitting oppoſite to her, I feaſted my eyes much more than my palate, which ſhe tempted in vain with the moſt delicious bits carved by her fair hand, and recommended by her perſuaſive tongue; but all my other appetites were ſwallowed up in the immenſity of my love, which I fed by gazing inceſſantly on the delightful object. Dinner was ſcarce ended, when the ſquire became very drowſy, and, after ſeveral dreadful yawns, got up, ſtretched himſelf, took two or three turns acroſs the room, begged we would allow him to take a ſhort nap, and having laid a ſtrong injunction on his ſiſter to detain us till his return, went to his repoſe without further ceremony.

He had not been gone many minutes, when Freeman, gueſſing the ſituation of my heart, and thinking he could not do me a greater favour than to leave me alone with Narciſſa, pretended to recollect himſelf all of a ſudden, and ſtarting up, begged the lady's pardon for half an hour, for he had luckily remembered an engagement of ſome conſequence, that he muſt perform at that inſtant; ſo ſaying, he took his leave, promiſing to come back time enough for tea, leaving my miſtreſs and me in great confuſion. Now that I enjoyed an opportunity of diſcloſing the pantings of my ſoul, I had not power to uſe it. I ſtudied many pathetic declarations, but when I attempted to give them utterance, my tongue denied its office; and ſhe ſat ſilent, with a downcaſt look, full of anxious alarm, her boſom heaving with expectation of ſome great event. At length I endeavoured to put an end to this ſolemn pauſe, and began with, "It is very ſurpriſing, Madam,"—Here the ſound dying away, I made a full ſtop—while Narciſſa ſtarting, bluſhed, and, with a timid accent, anſwered, "Sir?" Confounded at this note of interrogation, I pronounced, with the moſt ſheepiſh baſhfulneſs, "Madam!" To which ſhe replied, "I beg pardon—I thought you had ſpoke to me." Another pauſe enſued—I made another effort; and though my voice faultered very much at the beginning, made ſhift to expreſs myſelf in this manner: "I ſay, Madam, 'tis very ſurpriſing that love ſhould act ſo inconſiſtent with itſelf, as to deprive its votaries of the uſe of their faculties when they have moſt need of them. Since the happy occaſion of being alone with you preſented itſelf, I have made many unſucceſsful attempts to declare a paſſion for the lovelieſt of her ſex—a paſſion which took poſſeſſion of my ſoul, while my cruel fate compelled me to wear a ſervile diſguiſe ſo unſuitable to my birth, ſentiments, and, let me add, my deſerts; yet favourable in one reſpect, as it furniſhed me with opportunities of ſeeing and adoring your perfections—Yes, Madam, it was then your dear idea entered my boſom, where it has lived unimpaired in the midſt of numberleſs cares, and animated me againſt a thouſand dangers and calamities." While I ſpoke thus, ſhe concealed her face with her fan,

and when I ceaſed ſpeaking, recovering herſelf from the moſt beautiful confuſion, told me, ſhe thought herſelf very much obliged by my favourable opinion of her, and that ſhe was very ſorry to hear I had been unfortunate. Encouraged by this gentle reply, I proceeded, owned myſelf ſufficiently recompenſed by her kind compaſſion for what I had undergone, and declared that the future happineſs of my life depended ſolely upon her. "Sir (ſaid ſhe), I ſhould be very ungrateful, if, after the ſignal protection you once afforded me, I ſhould refuſe to contribute towards your happineſs, in any reaſonable condeſcenſion." Tranſported at this acknowledgment, I threw myſelf at her feet, and begged ſhe would regard my paſſion with a favourable eye: She was alarmed at my behaviour, entreated me to riſe, leſt her brother ſhould diſcover me in that poſture, and to ſpare her, for the preſent, upon a ſubject for which ſhe was altogether unprepared. In conſequence of this remonſtrance, I roſe, aſſuring her I would rather die than diſobey her; but in the mean time begged her to conſider how precious the minutes of this opportunity were, and what reſtraint I put upon my inclinations in ſacrificing them to her deſire. She ſmiled with unſpeakable ſweetneſs, and ſaid there would be no want of opportunities, provided I could maintain the good opinion her brother had conceived of me; and I, enchanted by her charms, ſeized her hand, which I well nigh devoured with kiſſes. But ſhe checked my boldneſs with a ſeverity of countenance, and deſired I would not ſo far forget myſelf to her as to endanger the eſteem ſhe had for me; ſhe reminded me of our being almoſt ſtrangers to each other, and of the neceſſity there was for her knowing me better before ſhe could take any reſolution in my favour; and, in ſhort, mingled ſo much good ſenſe and complacency in her reproof, that I became as much enamoured of her underſtanding, as I had been before of her beauty, and aſked pardon for my preſumption with the utmoſt reverence of conviction. She forgave my offence with her uſual affability; and ſealed my pardon with a look ſo full of bewitching tenderneſs, that for ſome minutes my ſenſes were loſt in ecſtacy! I afterwards endeavoured to

regulate my behaviour according to her deſire, and turn the converſation upon a more indifferent ſubject: But her preſence was an unſurmountable obſtacle to my deſign; while I beheld ſo much excellence, I found it impoſſible to call my attention from the contemplation of it! I gazed with unutterable fondneſs! I grew mad with admiration! "My condition is inſupportable! (cried I) I am diſtracted with paſſion! why are you ſo exquiſitely fair? Why are you ſo enchantingly good? Why has nature dignified you with charms ſo much above the ſtandard of women? and, wretch that I am, how dares my unworthineſs aſpire to the enjoyment of ſuch perfection?"

She was ſtartled at my ravings, reaſoned down my tranſport, and by her irreſiſtible eloquence ſoothed my ſoul into a ſtate of tranquil felicity; but, leſt I might ſuffer a relapſe, induſtriouſly promoted other ſubjects to entertain my imagination. She chid me for having omitted to inquire about her aunt, who (ſhe aſſured me) in the midſt of all her abſence of temper, and detachment from common affairs, often talked of me with uncommon warmth. I profeſſed my veneration for the good lady, excuſed my omiſſion, by imputing it to the violence of my love, which engroſſed my whole ſoul, and deſired to know the ſituation of her health. Upon which the amiable Narciſſa repeated what I had heard before, of her marriage, with all the tenderneſs for her reputation that the ſubject would admit of; told me ſhe lived with her huſband hard by, and was ſo much afflicted with the dropſy, and waſted by a conſumption, that ſhe had ſmall hopes of her recovery. Having expreſſed my ſorrow for her diſtemper, I queſtioned her about my good friend Mrs. Sagely, who I learned (to my great ſatisfaction) was ſtill in good health, and who had, by the encomiums ſhe beſtowed upon me after I was gone, confirmed the favourable impreſſions my behaviour at parting had made on Narciſſa's heart. The circumſtance introduced an inquiry into the conduct of Sir Timothy Thicket, who (ſhe informed me) had found means to incenſe her brother ſo much againſt me, that ſhe found it impoſſible to undeceive him; but, on the contrary, ſuf-

fered very much in her own character by his ſcandalous inſinuations: That the whole pariſh was alarmed, and actually in purſuit of me; ſo that ſhe had been in the utmoſt conſternation upon my account, well knowing how little my own innocence, and her teſtimony, would have weighed with the ignorance, prejudice, and brutality of thoſe who muſt have judged me, had I been apprehended. That Sir Timothy, having been ſeized with a fit of the apoplexy, from which with great difficulty he was recovered, began to be apprehenſive of death, and to prepare himſelf accordingly for that great event; as a ſtep to which he ſent for her brother, owned with great contrition the brutal deſign he had upon her, and of conſequence acquitted me of the aſſault, robbery, and correſpondence with her, which he laid to my charge; after which confeſſion he lived about a month in a languiſhing condition, and was carried off by a ſecond aſſault.

Every word that this dear creature ſpoke rivetted the chains with which ſhe held me enſlaved: My miſchievous fancy began to work, and the tempeſt of my paſſion to wake again; when the return of Freeman deſtroyed the tempting opportunity, and enabled me to quell the riſing tumult. A little while after, the ſquire ſtaggered into the room, rubbing his eyes, and called for his tea, which he drank out of a ſmall bowl, qualified with brandy, while we took it in the uſual way. Narciſſa left us in order to viſit her aunt; and when Freeman and I propoſed to take our leave, the fox-hunter inſiſted on our ſpending the evening at his houſe with ſuch obſtinacy of affection, that we were obliged to comply. For my own part, I ſhould have been glad of the invitation, by which, in all likelihood, I ſhould be bleſſed with more of his ſiſter's company, had I not been afraid of riſking her eſteem, by entering into a debauch of drinking with him, which, from the knowledge of his character, I foreſaw would happen; but there was no remedy. I was forced to rely upon the ſtrength of my conſtitution, which I hoped would reſiſt intoxication longer than the ſquire's, and to truſt to the good-nature and diſcretion of my miſtreſs for the reſt.

Our entertainer, reſolving to begin by times, ordered the table to be furniſhed with liquor and glaſſes immediately after tea; but we abſolutely refuſed to ſet in for drinking ſo ſoon, and prevailed upon him to paſs away an hour or two at whiſt, in which we engaged as ſoon as Narciſſa returned. The ſavage and I happened to be partners at firſt; and as my thoughts were wholly employed in a more intereſting game, I played ſo ill, that he loſt all patience, ſwore bitterly, and threatened to call for wine if they would not grant him another aſſociate. This deſire was gratified, and Narciſſa and I were of a ſide; he won for the ſame reaſon that made him loſe before; I was ſatisfied, my lovely partner did not repine, and the time ſlipped away very agreeably, until we were told that ſupper was ſerved in another room.

The ſquire was enraged to find the evening ſo unprofitably ſpent, and wreaked his vengeance on the cards, which he tore, and committed to the flames with many execrations, threatening to make us redeem our loſs with a large glaſs and quick circulation; and indeed we had no ſooner ſupped, and my charmer withdrawn, than he began to put his threats in execution. Three bottles of port (for he drank no other ſort of wine) were placed before us, with as many water-glaſſes, which were immediately filled to the brim, after his example, by each out of his reſpective allowance, and emptied in a trice, *to the beſt in Chriſtendom.* Though I ſwallowed this and the next as faſt as the glaſs could be repleniſhed, without heſitation or ſhow of reluctance, I perceived that my brain would not be able to bear many bumpers of this ſort; and, dreading the perſeverance of a champion who began with ſuch vigour, I determined to make up for the deficiency of my ſtrength by a ſtratagem, which I actually put in practice when the ſecond courſe of bottles was called for. The wine being ſtrong and heady, I was already a good deal diſcompoſed by the diſpatch we had made, Freeman's eyes began to reel, and Bruin himſelf was elevated into a ſong, which he uttered with great vociferation. When I therefore ſaw the ſecond round brought in, I aſſumed a gay air, en-

tertained him with a French catch on the ſubject of drinking, which, though he did not underſtand it, delighted him highly, and telling him that your choice ſpirits at Paris never troubled themſelves with glaſſes, aſked if he had not a bowl or cup in the houſe that would contain a whole quart of wine. "Odds niggers! (cried he) I have a ſilver caudle cup that holds juſt the quantity, for all the world—fetch it hither, Numps." The veſſel being produced, I bade him decant his bottle into it, which he having done, I nodded in a very deliberate manner, and ſaid, "Pledge you." He ſtared at me for ſome time, and crying, "What! all at one pull, Meaſter Randan!"—I anſwered, "At one pull, Sir,—you are no milk-ſop—we ſhall do you juſtice." "Shall you (ſaid he, ſhaking me by the hand), odd then, I'll ſee it out, an't were a mile to the bottom. Here's to our better acquaintance, Meaſter Randan." So ſaying, he applied it to his lips, and emptied it in a breath. I knew the effect of it would be almoſt inſtantaneous; therefore, taking the cup, began to diſcharge my bottle into it, telling him he was now qualified to drink with the Cham of Tartary. I had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than he took umbrage at them, and, after ſeveral attempts to ſpit, made ſhift to ſtutter out, "A f—t for your Chams of T—Tartary! a am a f—f—free born Engliſhman, worth th—three thouſand a year, and v—value no man, damme!" Then dropping his jaw, and fixing his eyes, he hickuped aloud, and fell upon the floor as mute as a flounder. Mr. Freeman, heartily glad at his defeat, aſſiſted me in carrying him to bed, where we left him to the care of his ſervants, and went home to our reſpective habitations, congratulating each other on our good fortune.

CHAPTER LVII.

Miſs Williams informs me of Narciſſa's approbation of my flame—I appeaſe the ſquire—write to my miſtreſs, am bleſſed with an anſwer—beg leave of her brother to dance with her at a ball; obtain his conſent and hers—enjoy a private converſation with her—am perplexed with reflections—have the honour of appearing her partner at a ball—we are complimented by a certain nobleman—he diſcovers ſome ſymptoms of a paſſion for Narciſſa—I am ſtung with jealouſy—Narciſſa alarmed, retires—I obſerve Melinda in the company—the ſquire is captivated by her beauty.

I WAS met next morning, at the uſual place, by Miſs Williams, who gave me joy of the progreſs I had made in the affection of her miſtreſs, and bleſſed me with an account of that dear creature's converſation with her, after ſhe had retired the night before from our company. I could ſcarce believe her information, when ſhe recounted her expreſſions in my favour, ſo much more warm and paſſionate were they than my moſt ſanguine hopes had preſaged; and was particularly pleaſed to hear that ſhe approved of my behaviour to her brother after ſhe withdrew. Tranſported at the news of my happineſs, I preſented my ring to the meſſenger, as a teſtimony of my gratitude and ſatisfaction; but ſhe was above ſuch mercenary conſiderations, and refuſed my compliment with ſome reſentment, ſaying ſhe was not a little mortified to ſee my opinion of her ſo low and contemptible. I did myſelf a piece of juſtice by explaining my behaviour on this head, and, to convince her of my eſteem, promiſed to be ruled by her directions in the proſecution of the whole affair, which I had ſo much at heart, that the repoſe of my life depended upon the conſequence.

As I fervently wiſhed for another interview, where I might pour out the effuſions of my love without danger of being interrupted, and perhaps reap ſome endearing return from the queen of my deſires, I implored her advice and aſſiſtance in promoting this event: But ſhe gave me to underſtand, that Narciſſa would make no precipitate compliances of this kind, and that I would do well to cultivate her brother's acquaintance, in the courſe of which I ſhould not want opportunities of removing that

reſerve which my miſtreſs thought herſelf obliged to maintain during the infancy of our correſpondence. In the mean time ſhe promiſed to tell her lady, that I had endeavoured, by preſents and perſuaſions, to prevail upon her (Miſs Williams) to deliver a letter from me, which ſhe had refuſed to charge herſelf with, until ſhe ſhould know Narciſſa's ſentiments of the matter; and ſaid, by theſe means ſhe did not doubt of being able to open a literary communication between us, which could not fail of introducing more intimate connections.

I approved of her counſel, and our appointment being renewed for next day, left her with an intent of falling upon ſome method of being reconciled to the ſquire, who, I ſuppoſed, would be offended with the trick we had put upon him. With this view, I conſulted Freeman, who, from his knowledge of the fox hunter's diſpoſition, aſſured me there was no other method of pacifying him, than that of ſacrificing ourſelves, for one night, to an equal match with him in drinking: This expedient I found myſelf neceſſitated to comply with, for the intereſt of my paſſion, and therefore determined to commit the debauch at my own lodgings, that I might run no riſk of being diſcovered by Narciſſa in a ſtate of brutal degeneracy. Mr. Freeman, who was to be of the party, went at my deſire to the ſquire, in order to engage him, while I took care to furniſh myſelf for his reception. My invitation was accepted, my gueſts honoured me with their company in the evening, when Bruin gave me to underſtand that he had drank many tuns of wine in his life, but was never ſerved ſuch a trick as I had played upon him the night before. I promiſed to atone for my treſpaſs, and having ordered to every man his bottle, began the conteſt with a bumper to the health of Narciſſa. The toaſts circulated with great devotion, the liquor began to operate, our mirth grew noiſy, and as Freeman and I had the advantage of drinking ſmall French claret, the ſavage was effectually tamed before our ſenſes were in the leaſt affected, and carried home in an apoplexy of drunkenneſs.

I was next morning, as uſual, favoured with a viſit from my kind and punctual confidante, who telling me

ſhe was permitted to receive my letters for her miſtreſs, I took up the pen immediately, and following the firſt dictates of my paſſion, wrote as follows:

"DEAR MADAM,

"WERE it poſſible for the powers of utterance to reveal the ſoft emotions of my ſoul; the fond anxiety, the glowing hopes, the chilling fears, that rule my breaſt by turns; I ſhould need no other witneſs than this paper, to evince the purity and ardour of that flame your charms have kindled in my heart. But, alas! expreſſion wrongs my love! I am inſpired with conceptions that no language can convey! Your beauty fills me with wonder! your underſtanding with raviſhment, and your goodneſs with adoration! I am tranſported with deſire, diſtracted with doubts, and tortured with impatience! Suffer me then, lovely arbitreſs of my fate, to approach you in perſon, to breathe in ſoft murmurs my paſſion to your ear, to offer the ſacrifice of a heart overflowing with the moſt genuine and diſintereſted love; to gaze with ecſtacy on the divine object of my wiſhes, to hear the muſic of her enchanting tongue! and to rejoice in her ſmiles of approbation, which will baniſh the moſt intolerable ſuſpenſe from the boſom of

Your enraptured
R——R——."

HAVING finiſhed this effuſion, I committed it to the care of my faithful friend, with an injunction to ſecond my entreaty with all her eloquence and influence; and in the mean time went to dreſs, with an intention of viſiting Mrs. Snapper and Miſs, whom I had utterly neglected, and indeed almoſt forgot, ſince my dear Narciſſa had reſumed the empire of my ſoul. The old gentlewoman received me very kindly, and Miſs affected a frankneſs and gaiety, which, however, I could eaſily perceive were forced and diſſembled; among other things, ſhe pretended to joke me upon my paſſion for Narciſſa, which ſhe averred was no ſecret, and aſked if I intended to dance with her at the next aſſembly. I was a good deal concerned to find myſelf become the town-talk on this ſubject, leſt the ſquire, having notice of my inclinations,

ſhould diſapprove of them, and, by breaking off all correſpondence with me, deprive me of the opportunities I now enjoyed. But I reſolved to uſe the intereſt I had with him, while it laſted; and that very night meeting him occaſionally, aſked his permiſſion to ſolicit her company at the ball, which he very readily granted, to my inexpreſſible ſatisfaction.

Having been kept awake the greateſt part of the night, by a thouſand delightful reveries that took poſſeſſion of my fancy, I got up by times, and flying to the place of rendezvous, had in a little time the pleaſure of ſeeing Miſs Williams approach with a ſmile on her countenance, which I interpreted into a good omen. Neither was I miſtaken in my preſage: She preſented me with a letter from the idol of my ſoul, which, after having kiſſed it devoutly, I opened with the utmoſt eagerneſs, and was bleſſed with her approbation in theſe terms:

"SIR,

"To ſay I look upon you with indifference, would be a piece of diſſimulation, which I think no decorum requires, and no cuſtom can juſtify. As my heart never felt an impreſſion that my tongue was aſhamed to declare, I will not ſcruple to own myſelf pleaſed with your paſſion, confident of your integrity, and ſo well convinced of my own diſcretion, that I ſhould not heſitate in granting you the interview you deſire, were I not overawed by the prying curioſity of a malicious world, the cenſure of which might be fatally prejudicial to the reputation of

Your

NARCISSA."

No anchorite in the ecſtaſy of devotion ever adored a relique with more fervour than that with which I kiſſed this inimitable proof of my charmer's candour, generoſity, and affection! I read it over an hundred times; was raviſhed with her confeſſion in the beginning; but the ſubſcription of *Your Narciſſa*, yielded me ſuch delight as I had never felt before. My happineſs was ſtill increaſed by Miſs Williams, who bleſſed me with a repetition of her lady's tender expreſſions in

my favour, when ſhe received and read my letter. In ſhort, I had all the reaſon in the world to believe that this gentle creature's boſom was poſſeſſed by a paſſion for me, as warm, though perhaps not ſo impetuous, as mine for her.

I informed my friend of the ſquire's conſent to my dancing with Narciſſa at the ball, and deſired her to tell her miſtreſs, that I would do myſelf the honour of viſiting her in the afternoon, in conſequence of his permiſſion, when I hoped to find her as indulgent as her brother had been complaiſant in that particular. Miſs Williams expreſſed a good deal of joy, at hearing I was ſo much in favour with the fox-hunter, and ventured to aſſure me, that my viſit would be very agreeable to my miſtreſs, the rather, becauſe Bruin was engaged to dine abroad. This was a circumſtance, which, I ſcarce need ſay, pleaſed me. I went immediately to the long-room, where I found him, and affecting to know nothing of his engagement, told him, I would do myſelf the pleaſure to wait upon him in the afternoon, and to preſent his ſiſter with a ticket for the ball. He ſhook me by the hand, according to cuſtom, and giving me to underſtand that he was to dine abroad, deſired me to go and drink tea with Narciſſa notwithſtanding, and promiſed to prepare her for my viſit in the mean time.

Every thing ſucceeding thus to my wiſh, I waited with incredible impatience for the time, which no ſooner arrived, than I haſtened to the ſcene, which my fancy had pre-occupied long before. I was introduced accordingly to the dear enchantreſs, whom I found accompanied by Miſs Williams, who, on pretence of ordering tea, retired at my approach. This favourable accident, which alarmed my whole ſoul, diſordered her alſo. I found myſelf actuated by an irreſiſtible impulſe; I advanced to her with eagerneſs and awe, and, profiting by the confuſion that prevailed over her, claſped the fair angel in my arms, and imprinted a glowing kiſs upon her lips, more ſoft and fragrant than the dewy roſe-bud juſt burſting from the ſtem! Her face was in an inſtant covered with bluſhes—her eyes ſparkled with reſentment—I threw myſelf at her feet, and implored

her pardon. Her love became advocate in my cauſe; her look ſoftened into forgiveneſs; ſhe raiſed me up, and chid me with ſo much ſweetneſs of diſpleaſure, that I ſhould have been tempted to repeat the offence, had not the coming in of a ſervant with the tea-board prevented my preſumption. While we were ſubject to be interrupted or overheard, we converſed about the approaching ball, at which ſhe promiſed to grace me as a partner; but when the equipage was removed, and we were left alone, I reſumed the more intereſting theme, and expreſſed myſelf with ſuch tranſport and agitation, that my miſtreſs, fearing I would commit ſome extravagance, rung the bell for her maid, whom ſhe detained in the room, as a check upon my vivacity: I was not ſorry for this precaution, becauſe I could unboſom myſelf without reſerve before Miſs Williams, who was the confidante of us both. I therefore gave a looſe to the inſpirations of my paſſion, which operated ſo ſucceſſfully upon the tender affections of Narciſſa, that ſhe laid aſide the conſtraint ſhe had hitherto wore, and bleſſed me with the moſt melting declaration of her mutual flame! It was impoſſible for me to forbear taking the advantage of this endearing condeſcenſion. She now gently yielded to my embraces; while I, encircling all that I held dear within my arms, taſted in advance the joys of that paradiſe I hoped in a little time wholly to poſſeſs! We ſpent the afternoon in all the ecſtacy of hope, that the moſt fervent love, exchanged by mutual vows, could inſpire; and Miſs Williams was ſo much affected with our chaſte careſſes, which recalled the ſad remembrance of what ſhe was, that her eyes were filled with tears.

The evening being pretty far advanced, I forced myſelf from the dear object of my flame, who indulged me in a tender embrace at parting; and repairing to my lodgings, communicated to my friend Strap every circumſtance of my happineſs, which filled him with ſo much pleaſure, that it ran over at his eyes; and he prayed heartily, that no envious devil might, as formerly, daſh the cup of bleſſing from my lip. When I reflected on what had happened, and eſpecially on the

unreſerved proteſtations of Narciſſa's love, I could not help being amazed at her omitting to inquire into the particular circumſtances of life and fortune of one whom ſhe had favoured with her affection, and I began to be a little anxious about the ſituation of her finances, well knowing that I ſhould do an irreparable injury to the perſon my ſoul held moſt dear, if I ſhould eſpouſe her, without being able to ſupport her in the rank which was certainly her due. I had heard indeed, while I ſerved her aunt, that her father had left her a conſiderable ſum; and that every body believed ſhe would inherit the greateſt part of her kinſwoman's dowry; but I did not know how far ſhe might be reſtricted by the old gentleman's will, in the enjoyment of what he left her; and I was too well informed of the virtuoſo's late conduct, to think my miſtreſs could have any expectations from that quarter. I confided, however, in the good ſenſe and policy of my charmer, who, I was ſure, would not conſent to unite her fate with mine, before ſhe had fully conſidered and provided for the conſequence.

The ball night being arrived, I dreſſed myſelf in a ſuit I had reſerved for ſome grand occaſion; and having drank tea with Narciſſa and her brother, conducted my angel to the ſcene, where ſhe in a moment eclipſed all her female competitors for beauty, and attracted the admiration of the whole aſſembly. My heart dilated with pride on this occaſion, and my triumph rejected all bounds, when, after we had danced together, a certain nobleman, remarkable for his figure and influence in the *beau monde*, came up, and in the hearing of all preſent, honoured us with a very particular compliment, upon our accompliſhments and appearance: but this tranſport was ſoon checked, when I perceived his Lordſhip attach himſelf with great aſſiduity to my miſtreſs, and ſay ſome warm things, which, I thought, ſavoured too much of paſſion. It was then I began to feel the pangs of jealouſy—I dreaded the power and addreſs of my rival—I ſickened at his diſcourſe; when ſhe opened her lips to anſwer, my heart died within me. When ſhe ſmiled, I felt the pains of the damned! I was enraged at his preſumption; I

curſed her complaiſance; at length he quitted her, and went to the other ſide of the room. Narciſſa ſuſpecting nothing of the rage that inflamed me, put ſome queſtions to me, as ſoon as he was gone, to which I made no reply, but aſſumed a grim look, which too well denoted the agitation of my breaſt, and ſurpriſed her not a little. She no ſooner obſerved my emotion, than ſhe changed colour, and aſked what ailed me? but before I could make anſwer, her brother pulling me by the ſleve, bade me take notice of a lady who ſat fronting us, whom I immediately, to my vaſt aſtoniſhment, diſtinguiſhed to be Melinda, accompanied by her mother, and an elderly gentleman, whom I did not know. "Wounds! Mr. Randan (cried the ſquire), is ſhe not a delicate piece of ſtuff? 'Sdeath! I have a good mind—if I thought ſhe was a ſingle perſon"—Notwithſtanding the perplexity I was in, I had reflection enough to foreſee that my paſſion might ſuffer greatly by the preſence of this lady, who in all probability would revenge herſelf upon me for having formerly diſgraced her, by ſpreading reports to my prejudice. I was therefore alarmed at theſe ſymptoms of the ſquire's admiration; and for ſome time did not know what reply to make, when he aſked my opinion of her beauty: At length I came to a determination, and told him that her name was Melinda, that ſhe had a fortune of ten thouſand pounds, and was ſaid to be under promiſe of marriage to a certain lord, who deferred his nuptials a few months, until he ſhould be of age. I thought this piece of intelligence, which I had myſelf invented, would have hindered him effectually from entertaining any farther thoughts of her; but I was egregiouſly miſtaken. The fox-hunter had too much ſelf-ſufficiency, to deſpair of ſucceſs againſt any competitor on earth. He therefore made light of her engagement, ſaying, with a ſmile of ſelf-approbation, "Mayhap ſhe will change her mind—what ſignifies his being a lord? I think myſelf as good a man as e'er a lord in Chriſtendom;—and I'll ſee if a commoner worth three thouſand a year won't ſerve her turn." This determination ſtartled me not a little: I knew he would ſoon diſcover the contrary of what I advanced; and as I believed he would

find her ear open to his addreſſes, did not doubt of meeting with every obſtacle in my amour that her malice could invent, and her influence execute. This reflection increaſed my chagrin. My vexation was evident. Narciſſa inſiſted on going home immediately; and as I led her to the door, her noble admirer, with a look full of languiſhment, directed to her a profound bow, which ſtung me to the ſoul. Before ſhe went into the chair, ſhe aſked, with an appearance of concern, what was the matter with me? and I could pronounce no more than, "By heaven! I'm diſtracted."

CHAPTER LVIII.

Tortured with jealouſy, I go home and abuſe Strap—receive a meſſage from Narciſſa, in conſequence of which I haſten to her apartment, where her endearing aſſurances baniſh all my doubts and apprehenſions—in my retreat diſcover ſomebody in the dark, whom, ſuſpecting to be a ſpy, I reſolve to kill; but, to my great ſurpriſe, am convinced of his being no other than Strap—Melinda ſlanders me—I become acquainted with Lord Quiverwit, who endeavours to ſound me with regard to Narciſſa—the ſquire is introduced to his Lordſhip, and grows cold towards me—I learn from my confidante, that this nobleman profeſſes honourable love to my miſtreſs, who continues faithful to me, notwithſtanding the ſcandalous reports ſhe has heard to my prejudice—I am mortified with an aſſurance that her whole fortune depends upon the pleaſure of her brother—Mr. Freeman condoles me on the decline of my character, which I vindicate ſo much to his ſatisfaction, that he undertakes to combat fame in my behalf.

HAVING uttered this exclamation, at which ſhe ſighed, I went home in the condition of a frantic bedlamite; and finding the fire in my apartment almoſt extinguiſhed, vented my fury upon poor Strap, whoſe ear I pinched with ſuch violence, that he roared hideouſly with pain, and, when I quitted my hold, looked ſo fooliſhly aghaſt, that no unconcerned ſpectator could have ſeen him, without being ſeized with an immoderate fit of laughter. It is true, I was ſoon ſenſible of the injury I had done, and aſked pardon for the outrage I had committed; upon which my faithful valet, ſhaking his head, ſaid, "I forgive you, and may God forgive you." But he could not help ſhedding ſome tears at my unkindneſs. I felt unſpeak-

able remorſe for what I had done, curſed my own ingratitude, and conſidered his tears as a reproach that my ſoul, in her preſent diſturbance, could not bear. It ſet all my paſſions into a ferment, I ſwore horrible oaths without meaning or application, I foamed at the mouth, kicked the chairs about the room, and played abundance of mad pranks, that frightened my friend almoſt out of his ſenſes. At length my tranſport ſubſided, I became melancholy, and wept inſenſibly.

During this ſtate of dejection, I was ſurpriſed with the appearance of Miſs Williams, whom Strap, blubbering all the while, had conducted into the chamber, without giving me previous notice of her approach. She was extremely affected with my condition, which ſhe had learned from him, begged me to moderate my paſſion, ſuſpend my conjectures, and follow her to Narciſſa, who deſired to ſee me forthwith. That dear name operated upon me like a charm! I ſtarted up, and without opening my lips, was conducted into her apartment through the garden, which we entered by a private door. I found the adorable creature in tears!—I was melted at the ſight—we continued ſilent for ſome time—my heart was too full to ſpeak—her ſnowy boſom heaved with fond reſentment; at laſt ſhe ſobbing cried, "What have I done to diſoblige you?" My heart was pierced with the tender queſtion!—I drew near with the utmoſt reverence of affection!—I fell upon my knees before her, and kiſſing her hand, exclaimed, "O! thou art all goodneſs and perfection!—I am undone by my want of merit!—I am unworthy to poſſeſs thy charms, which heaven hath deſtined for the arms of ſome more favoured being." She gueſſed the cauſe of my diſquiet, upbraided me gently for my ſuſpicion, and gave me ſuch flattering aſſurances of her eternal fidelity, that all my doubts and fears forſook me, and peace and ſatisfaction reigned within my breaſt.

At midnight I left the fair nymph to her repoſe, and being let out by Miſs Williams, at the garden gate by which I entered, began to explore my way homeward in the dark, when I heard at my back a noiſe like that of a baboon when he mews and chatters. I turned in-

ſtantly, and perceiving ſomething black, concluded I was diſcovered by ſome ſpy employed to watch for that purpoſe: Arouſed at this conjecture, by which the reputation of the virtuous Narciſſa appeared in jeopardy, I drew my ſword, and would have ſacrificed him to her fame, had not the voice of Strap reſtrained my arm: It was with great difficulty he could pronounce, "D—d—do! mum—um—um—murder me, if you pleaſe." Such an effect had the cold upon his jaws, that his teeth rattled like a pair of caſtanets. Pleaſed to be thus undeceived, I laughed at his conſternation, and aſked what brought him thither? Upon which he gave me to underſtand, that his concern for me had induced him to follow me to that place, where the ſame reaſon had detained him till now; and he frankly owned, that, in ſpite of the eſteem he had for Miſs Williams, he began to be very uneaſy about me, conſidering the diſpoſition in which I went abroad, and if I had ſtaid much longer, would have certainly alarmed the neighbourhood in my behalf. The knowledge of this his intention confounded me! I repreſented to him the miſchievous conſequences that would have attended ſuch a raſh action, and cautioning him ſeverely againſt any ſuch deſign for the future, concluded my admonition with an aſſurance, that, in caſe he ſhould ever act ſo madly, I would, without heſitation, put him to death. "Have a little patience (cried he, in a lamentable tone), your diſpleaſure will do the buſineſs, without your committing murder." I was touched with this reproach; and, as ſoon as we got home, made it my buſineſs to appeaſe him, by explaining the cauſe of that tranſport during which I had uſed him ſo unworthily.

Next day, when I went into the long-room, I obſerved ſeveral whiſpers circulate all of a ſudden, and did not doubt that Melinda had been buſy with my character; but I conſoled myſelf with the love of Narciſſa, upon which I reſted with the moſt perfect confidence, and going up to the rowly-powly table, won a few pieces from my ſuſpected rival, who, with an eaſy politeneſs, entered into converſation with me, and deſiring my company at the coffeehouſe, treated me with tea and chocolate.

I remembered Strutwell, and guarded againſt his inſinuating behaviour; nor was my ſuſpicion wrong placed; he artfully turned the diſcourſe upon Narciſſa, and endeavoured, by hinting at an intrigue he pretended to be engaged in elſewhere, to learn what connection there was between her and me. But all his fineſſe was ineffectual; I was convinced of his diſſimulation, and gave ſuch general anſwers to his inquiries, that he was forced to drop the ſubject, and talk of ſomething elſe.

While we converſed in this manner, the ſavage came in with another gentleman, who introduced him to his Lordſhip; and he was received with ſuch peculiar marks of diſtinction, that I was perſuaded the courtier intended to uſe him in ſome ſhape or other; and from thence I drew an unlucky omen. But I had more cauſe to be diſmayed the following day, when I ſaw the ſquire in company with Melinda and her mother, who honoured me with ſeveral diſdainful glances; and when I afterwards threw myſelf in his way, inſtead of the cordial ſhake of the hand, he returned my ſalute with a cold repetition of "Servant, ſervant;" which he pronounced with ſuch indifference, or rather contempt, that, if he had not been Narciſſa's brother, I ſhould have affronted him in public.

Theſe occurrences diſturbed me not a little. I foreſaw the brooding ſtorm, and armed myſelf with reſolution for the occaſion; but Narciſſa being at ſtake, I was far from being reſigned. I could have renounced every other comfort of life with ſome degree of fortitude; but the proſpect of loſing her diſabled all my philoſophy, and tortured my ſoul into madneſs.

Miſs Williams found me next morning full of anxious tumult, which did not abate, when ſhe told me, that my Lord Quiverwit, having profeſſed honourable intentions, had been introduced to my lovely miſtreſs by her brother, who had, at the ſame time, from the information of Melinda, ſpoke of me as an Iriſh fortune-hunter, without either birth or eſtate; who ſupported myſelf in the appearance of a gentleman by ſharping and other infamous practices; and who was of ſuch an obſcure origin, that I did not even know my own extraction.

Though I expected all this malice, I could not hear it with temper, eſpecially as truth was ſo blended with falſehood in the aſſertion, that it would be almoſt impoſſible to ſeparate the one from the other in my vindication. But I ſaid nothing on this head, being impatient to know how Narciſſa had been affected with the diſcovery. That generous creature, far from believing theſe imputations, was no ſooner withdrawn with her confidante, than ſhe inveighed with great warmth againſt the malevolence of the word, to which only ſhe aſcribed the whole of what had been ſaid to my diſadvantage; and calling every circumſtance of my behaviour to her into review before her, found every thing ſo polite, honourable, and diſintereſted, that ſhe could not harbour the leaſt doubt of my being the gentleman I aſſumed. "I have indeed (ſaid ſhe) purpoſely forbore to aſk the particulars of his life, leſt the recapitulation of ſome misfortunes, which he has undergone, ſhould give him pain: And, as to the article of his fortune, I own myſelf equally afraid of inquiring into it, and of diſcovering the ſituation of my own, leſt we ſhould find ourſelves both unhappy in the explanation; for, alas! my proviſion is conditional, and depends entirely on my marrying with my brother's conſent."

I was thunderſtruck with this intelligence; the light forſook my eyes, the colour vaniſhed from my cheeks, and I remained in a ſtate of univerſal trepidation! My female friend perceiving my diſorder, encouraged me with aſſurances of Narciſſa's conſtancy, and the hope of ſome accident favourable to our love; and, as a further conſolation, gave me to underſtand, that ſhe had acquainted my miſtreſs with the outlines of my life; and that, although ſhe was no ſtranger to the preſent low ſtate of my finances, her love and eſteem were rather increaſed than diminiſhed by the knowledge of my circumſtances. I was greatly comforted by this aſſurance, which ſaved me a world of confuſion and anxiety: For I muſt have imparted my ſituation one day to Narciſſa; and this taſk I could not have performed without ſhame and diſorder.

As I did not doubt that, by this time, the ſcandalous

aſperſions of Melinda were diffuſed all over the town, I reſolved to collect my whole ſtrength of aſſurance, to brow-beat the efforts of her malice, and to publiſh her adventure with the frenchified barber, by way of repriſal. In the mean time, having promiſed to be at the garden gate about midnight, Miſs Williams took her leave, bidding me repoſe myſelf entirely on the affection of my dear Narciſſa, which was as perfect as inviolable. Before I went abroad, I was viſited by Freeman, who came on purpoſe to inform me of the infamous ſtories that were raiſed at my expence. I heard them with great temper, and in my turn diſcloſed every thing that had happened between Melinda and me; and, among other circumſtances, entertained him with the ſtory of the barber, letting him know what ſhare his friend Banter had in that affair: he was convinced of the injury my reputation had ſuffered, and no longer doubting the fountain from whence this deluge of ſlander had flowed upon me, undertook to undeceive the town in my behalf, and roll the ſtream back upon its ſource; but, in the mean time, cautioned me from appearing in public while the prepoſſeſſion was ſo ſtrong againſt me, leſt I ſhould meet with ſome affront that might have bad conſequences.

CHAPTER LIX.

I receive an extraordinary meſſage at the door of the long-room, which I however enter, and affront the ſquire, who threatens to take the law of me—rebuke Melinda for her malice—ſhe weeps with vexation—Lord Quiverwit is ſevere upon me—I retort his ſarcaſm—am received with the utmoſt tenderneſs by Narciſſa, who deſires to hear the ſtory of my life—we vow eternal conſtancy to one another—I retire—am waked by a meſſenger, who brings a challenge from Quiverwit, whom I meet, engage, and vanquiſh.

I THANKED him for his advice, which, however, my pride and reſentment would not permit me to follow; for he no ſooner left me, in order to do juſtice to my character among his friends and acquaintance, than I ſallied out, and went directly to the long-room. I was

met at the door by a ſervant, who preſented to me a billet without a ſubſcription, importing that my preſence was diſagreeable to the company, and deſiring I would take the hint without further diſturbance, and beſtow myſelf elſewhere for the future. This peremptory meſſage filled me with indignation. I followed the fellow who delivered it, and ſeizing him by the collar, in preſence of all the company, threatened to put him inſtantly to death, if he did not diſcover the ſcoundrel who had charged him with ſuch an impudent commiſſion, that I might puniſh him as he deſerved. The meſſenger, affrighted at my menaces and furious looks, fell upon his knees, and told me, that the gentleman who ordered him to deliver the letter was no other than Narciſſa's brother, who, at that time, ſtood at the other end of the room, talking to Melinda. I went up to him immediately, and, in the hearing of his inamorata, accoſted him in theſe words: "Look'ee, Squire, was it not for one conſideration that protects you from my reſentment, I would cane you where you ſtand, for having had the preſumption to ſend me this ſcurrilous intimation;" which I tore to pieces, and threw in his face: At the ſame time darting an angry regard at his miſtreſs, I told her, I was ſorry ſhe had put it out of my power to compliment her upon her invention, but at the expence of her good-nature and veracity. Her admirer, whoſe courage never roſe but in proportion to the wine he had ſwallowed, inſtead of reſenting my addreſs in what is called an honourable way, threatened to proſecute me for an aſſault, and took witneſſes accordingly; while ſhe, piqued at his puſillanimous behaviour, and enraged at the ſarcaſm I had uttered againſt her, endeavoured to make her quarrel a public cauſe, and wept aloud with ſpite and vexation. The tears of a lady could not fail of attracting the notice and concern of the ſpectators, to whom ſhe complained of my rudeneſs with great bitterneſs, ſaying, if ſhe was a man, I durſt not uſe her ſo. The greateſt part of the gentlemen, already prejudiced againſt me, were offended at the liberty I had taken, as appeared from their looks; though none of them ſignified their diſguſt any other way, except my Lord Qui-

verwit, who ventured to ſay, with a ſneer, that I was in the right to eſtabliſh my own character, of which he had now no longer any doubt. Nettled at this ſevere equivoque, which raiſed a laugh at my expence, I replied with ſome warmth, "I am proud of having in that particular got the ſtart of your Lordſhip." He made no anſwer to my repartee, but, with a contemptuous ſmile, walked off, leaving me in a very diſagreeable ſituation. In vain did I make up to ſeveral people of my acquaintance, whoſe converſation, I hoped, would baniſh my confuſion; every body ſhunned me like a perſon infected, and I ſhould not have been able to bear my diſgrace, had not the idea of the ever-faithful and fond Narciſſa come to my relief. I quitted the ſcene of my mortification, and ſauntering about the town, happened to wake from my contemplation, when I found myſelf juſt oppoſite to a toy-ſhop, which I entered, and purchaſed a ring ſet with a ruby in the form of a heart, ſurrounded by diamond ſparks, for which I paid ten guineas, intending it for a preſent to the charmer of my ſoul.

I was introduced, at the hour appointed, to this divine creature, who, notwithſtanding what ſhe had heard to my diſadvantage, received me with the utmoſt confidence and tenderneſs; and having been informed of the general ſketches of my life by Miſs Williams, expreſſed a deſire of knowing the particular circumſtances, which I related with great candour, omitting, however, ſome things, that I concluded altogether improper for her ear, and which the reader's reflection will eaſily ſuggeſt. As my ſtory was little elſe than a recital of misfortunes, the tear of ſympathy ceaſed not to trickle down her enchanting eyes during the whole of the narration, which when I had finiſhed, ſhe recompenſed me for my trouble with the moſt endearing proteſtations of eternal love. She bewailed her reſtricted condition, as it was the means of retarding my happineſs; told me, that Lord Quiverwit, by her brother's permiſſion, had been to drink tea with her that very afternoon, and actually propoſed marriage; and ſeeing me extremely affected with this piece of information, offered to give me a convincing proof of her affection, by eſpouſing me in private, and leaving the reſt

with that imputation! She is a thouſand times more chaſte than the mother that bore you; and I will aſſert her honour with my heart's blood!" So ſaying, I ruſhed upon him with more eagerneſs than addreſs, and endeavouring to get within his point, received a wound in my neck, which redoubled my rage. He excelled me in temper as well as in ſkill, by which means he parried my thruſts with great calmneſs, until I had almoſt exhauſted my ſpirits; and when he perceived me beginning to flag, attacked me fiercely in his turn. Finding himſelf however better oppoſed than he expected, he reſolved to follow his longe, and cloſe with me; accordingly, his ſword entered my waiſtcoat, on the ſide of the breaſt bone, and running up between my ſhirt and ſkin, appeared over my ſhoulder: I imagined that his weapon had perforated my lungs, and of conſequence that the wound was mortal; therefore, determined not to die unrevenged, I ſeized his ſhell, which was cloſe to my breaſt, before he could diſentangle his point, and keeping it faſt with my left hand, ſhortened my own ſword with my right, intending to run him through the heart; but he received the thruſt in the left arm, which penetrated up to the ſhoulder-blade. Diſappointed in this expectation, and afraid ſtill that death would fruſtrate my revenge, I grappled with him, and, being much the ſtronger, threw him upon the ground, where I wreſted his ſword out of his hand; and, ſo great was my confuſion, inſtead of turning the point upon him, ſtruck out three of his fore-teeth with the hilt. In the mean time, our ſervants ſeeing us fall, ran up to ſeparate and aſſiſt us; but, before their approach, I was upon my feet, and had diſcovered, that my ſuppoſed mortal wound was only a ſlight ſcratch. The knowledge of my own ſafety diſarmed me of a good deal of my reſentment, and I began to inquire with ſome concern into the ſituation of my antagoniſt, who remained on the ground bleeding plentifully at his mouth and arm, I helped his footman to raiſe him, and having bound up his wound with my handkerchief, aſſured him it was not dangerous; I likewiſe reſtored his ſword, and offered to ſupport him to his houſe. He thanked me with an air of ſullen dignity; and whiſper-

ing, that I ſhould hear from him ſoon, went away, leaning on his ſervant's ſhoulder.

I was ſurpriſed at this promiſe, which I conſtrued into a threat, and reſolved, if ever he ſhould call me out again, to uſe whatever advantage fortune might give me over him in another manner. In the mean time, I had leiſure to take notice of Strap, who ſeemed quite ſtupified with horror: I comforted him with an aſſurance that I had received no damage, and explained the nature of this affair, as we walked homeward. By the time I had got into my apartment, I found the wound in my neck ſtiff and uneaſy, and a good deal of clotted blood run down upon my ſhirt: Upon which, I pulled off my coat and waiſtcoat, and unbuttoned my collar, that I might dreſs it with more eaſe. My friend no ſooner perceived my ſhirt quite dyed with blood, than imagining I had got at leaſt twenty thouſand wounds, he cried, "O Jeſus!" and fell flat on the floor. I ſtopped the bleeding with a little dry lint, and applying a plaſter over it, cleanſed myſelf from the gore, ſhifted and dreſſed, while he lay ſenſeleſs at my feet; ſo that, when he recovered, and ſaw me perfectly well, he could ſcarce believe his own eyes. Now that the danger was paſt, I was very well pleaſed with what had happened, hoping that it would ſoon become known, and conſequently dignify my character not a little in this place. I was alſo proud of having ſhown myſelf, in ſome ſhape, worthy the love of Narciſſa, who, I was perſuaded, would not think the worſe of me for what I had done.

CHAPTER LX.

I am viſited by Freeman, with whom I appear in public, and am careſſed —am ſent for by Lord Quiverwit, whoſe preſence I quit in a paſſion— Narciſſa is carried off by her brother—I intend to purſue him, and am diſſuaded by my friend—engage in play, and loſe all my money—ſet out for London—try my fortune at the gaming-table without ſucceſs —receive a letter from Narciſſa—bilk my tailor.

WHILE I entertained myſelf with theſe reflections, the news of the duel being communicated [illegible] unknown

channel, ſpread all over the town. I was viſited by Freeman, who teſtified his ſurpriſe at finding me; for, he was told, that Lord Quiverwit being dead of his wounds, I had abſconded, in order to avoid the cognizance of the law. I aſked if people gueſſed the occaſion of the quarrel; and underſtanding it was attributed to his Lordſhip's reſentment of my reply in the long-room, confirmed that conjecture, glad to find Narciſſa unſuſpected. My friend, after I had aſſured him that my antagoniſt was in no danger, wiſhed me joy of the event, than which, he ſaid, nothing could happen more opportunely to ſupport the idea he had given of my character to his friends, among whom he had been very aſſiduous in my behalf.

On the ſtrength of this aſſurance, I went with him to the coffee-houſe, where I was ſaluted by a great many of thoſe very perſons who had ſhunned me the preceding day; and I found every body making merry with the ſtory of Melinda's French gallant. While I remained in this place, I received a meſſage from Lord Quiverwit, deſiring, if I was not engaged, to ſee me at his houſe.

Thither I immediately repaired, and was conducted to an apartment, where I was received by his lordſhip in bed. When we were left by ourſelves, he thanked me, in very polite terms, for having uſed the advantage fortune had given me over him with ſuch moderation; and aſked pardon for any offence his reſentment might have prompted him to commit. "I would willingly (ſaid he) make you my friend; but as it is impoſſible for me to diveſt myſelf of my paſſion for Narciſſa, I am too well convinced of your ſentiments, to think we ſhall ever agree on that ſubject. I took the liberty, therefore, of ſending for you, in order to own candidly, that I cannot help oppoſing your ſucceſs with that young lady; though, at the ſame time, I promiſe to regulate my oppoſition by the dictates of juſtice and honour: This, however, I think proper to advertiſe you of, that ſhe has no independent fortune, and if you ſhould even ſucceed in your addreſſes, you would have the mortification to ſee her reduced to indigence, unleſs you have wherewithal to ſupport her—And I am credibly in-

formed of your incapacity that way—Nay, I will confeſs, that, urged by this conſideration, I have actually ſent notice to her brother of the progreſs I ſuſpect you have made in her affection, and deſired him to take his precautions accordingly. Alarmed and provoked at this information, I told his lordſhip, that I did not ſee how he could reconcile that piece of conduct with his profeſſion of open dealing, and flung away from him in a paſſion.

As I walked homeward, in hope of hearing from my miſtreſs as uſual by means of Miſs Williams, I was ſurpriſed with the waving of a handkerchief from the window of a coach and ſix that paſſed by me at full ſpeed; and, upon further obſervation, I ſaw a ſervant on horſeback riding after it, who, I knew by his livery, belonged to the ſquire. Thunderſtruck with this diſcovery, the knowledge of my misfortune ruſhed all at once upon my reflection! I gueſſed immediately that the ſignal was made by the dear hand of Narciſſa, who, being hurried away in conſequence of Lord Quiverwit's meſſage to her brother, had no other method of relating her diſtreſs, and imploring my aſſiſtance. Frantic with this conjecture, I ran to my lodgings, ſnatched my piſtols, and ordered Strap to get poſt-horſes, with ſuch incoherence of ſpeech and diſorder, that the poor valet, terrified with the ſuſpicion of another duel, inſtead of providing what I deſired, went forthwith to Freeman, who, being informed of my behaviour, came ſtraight to my apartment, and conjured me ſo pathetically to make him acquainted with the cauſe of my uneaſineſs, that I could not refuſe telling him my happineſs was fled with Narciſſa, and that I muſt retrieve her, or periſh. He repreſented the madneſs of ſuch an undertaking, and endeavoured to divert me from it with great ſtrength of friendſhip and reaſon. But all his arguments would have been ineffectual, had he not put me in mind of the dependence I ought to have on the love of Narciſſa, and the attachment of her maid, who could not fail of finding opportunities to advertiſe me of their ſituation; and at the ſame time demonſtrated the injury my charmer's reputation muſt ſuffer from my precipitate retreat. I

was convinced and compoſed by theſe conſiderations: I appeared in public with an air of tranquillity, was well received by the beſt company in town, and, my misfortune taking air, condoled accordingly; while I had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing Melinda ſo univerſally diſcountenanced, that ſhe was fain to return to London, in order to avoid the ſcoffs and cenſure of the ladies at Bath. But though the hope of hearing from the darling of my ſoul ſupported my ſpirits a little while, I began to be very uneaſy, when, at the end of ſeveral weeks, I found that expectation diſappointed. In ſhort, melancholy and deſpondence took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; and repining at that providence, which, by acting the ſtepmother towards me, kept me from the fruition of my wiſhes, I determined, in a fit of deſpair, to riſk all I had at the gaming-table, with a view of acquiring a fortune ſufficient to render me independent for life, or of plunging myſelf into ſuch a ſtate of miſery as would effectually cruſh every ambitious hope that now tortured my imagination.

Actuated by this fatal reſolution, I engaged in play, and, after ſome turns of fortune, found myſelf, at the end of three days, worth a thouſand pounds; but it was not my intention to ſtop here, for which cauſe I kept Strap ignorant of my ſucceſs, and continued my career, until I was reduced to five guineas, which I would have hazarded alſo, had I not been aſhamed to fall from a bet of two hundred pounds to ſuch a petty ſum.

Having thus executed my ſcheme, I went home, amazed to find myſelf ſo much at eaſe, and informed my friend Strap of my miſchance, with ſuch calmneſs, that he, imagining I joked, affected to receive the tidings with great equanimity. But both he and I found ourſelves miſtaken very ſoon. I had miſinterpreted my own ſtupidity into deliberate reſignation; and he had reaſon to believe me in earneſt, when he ſaw me next morning agitated with the moſt violent deſpair, which he endeavoured to alleviate with all the conſolation in his power.

In one of my lucid intervals, however, I charged him to take a place in the ſtage-coach for London, and in

the mean time paid my debts in Bath, which amounted to thirty ſhillings only. Without taking leave of my friends, I embarked, Strap having the good fortune to find a return-horſe, and arrived in town, without having met with any thing remarkable on the road. While we croſſed Bagſhot-heath, I was ſeized with a ſort of inclination to retrieve my fortune, by laying paſſengers under contribution in ſome ſuch place. My thoughts were ſo circumſtanced at this time, that I ſhould have digeſted the crime of robbery, ſo righteouſly had I concerted my plan, and ventured my life in the execution, had I not been deterred by reflecting upon the infamy that attends detection.

The apartment I formerly lived in being unengaged, I took poſſeſſion of it, and next day went in queſt of Banter, who received me with open arms, in expectation of having his bond diſcharged to his liking: But when he underſtood what had happened, his countenance changed of a ſudden; and he told me, with a dryneſs of diſpleaſure peculiar to himſelf, that, if he was in my place, he would put it out of fortune's power to play him ſuch another trick, and be avenged of his own indiſcretion at once. When I deſired him to explain his meaning, he pointed to his neck, raiſed himſelf on his tip-toes, and was going away without any further ceremony, when I put him in mind of my indigence, and demanded the five guineas I had formerly lent him. "Five guineas! (cried he) Zounds! had you acted with common prudence, you might have had twenty thouſand in your pocket by this time. I depended upon five hundred from you, as much as if I had had notes for it in the bank; and by all the rules of equity, you are indebted to me for that ſum." I was neither pleaſed nor convinced by this computation, and inſiſted on my right with ſuch determined obſtinacy, that he was fain to alter his tone, and appeaſe my clamour, by aſſuring me, that he was not maſter of five ſhillings. Society in diſtreſs generally promotes good underſtanding among people; from being a dun, I de[illegible]ded to be a client, and aſked his advice about re[illegible]y loſſes. He counſelled me to have recourſe ag[illegible]uing-

D[illegible]

table, where I ſucceeded ſo well before, and put myſelf in a condition by ſelling my watch. I followed his directions, and having accommodated him with a few pieces, went to the place, where I loſt every ſhilling.

Then I returned to my lodgings full of deſperate reſolution, and having made Strap acquainted with my fate, ordered him to pawn my ſword immediately, that I might be enabled to make another effort. This affectionate creature no ſooner underſtood my purpoſe, than, ſeized with inſuppreſſible ſorrow at the proſpect of my miſery, he burſt into tears, and aſked what I propoſed to do, after the ſmall ſum he could raiſe on the ſword ſhould be ſpent? "On my own account (ſaid he), I am quite unconcerned; for, while God ſpares me health and theſe ten fingers, I can earn a comfortable ſubſiſtence any where; but what muſt become of you, who have leſs humility to ſtoop, and more appetites to gratify?" Here I interrupted him, by ſaying, with a gloomy aſpect, I ſhould never want a reſoure while I had a loaded piſtol in poſſeſſion. Stupified with horror at this dreadful inſinuation, he ſtood mute for ſome time, and then broke out into, "God of his infinite mercy enable you to withſtand that temptation of the devil! Conſider your immortal ſoul—there is no repentance in the grave. O Lord! that ever we ſhould come to this—Are we not enjoined to reſign ourſelves to the will of Heaven!—where is your patience? *Durum patientia frango*—you are but a young man—there may be many good things in ſtore for you—*Accidit in punctto, quod non ſperatur in anno*—remember your uncle Mr. Bowling; perhaps he is now on his voyage homeward, pleaſing himſelf with the hopes of ſeeing and relieving you; nay, peradventure he is already arrived, for the ſhip was expected about this time." A ray of hope ſhot athwart my ſoul at this ſuggeſtion; I thanked my friend for his ſeaſonable recollection, and, after having promiſed to take no reſolution till his return, diſmiſſed him to Wapping for intelligence.

In his abſence I was viſited by Banter, who being informed of my bad luck at play, told me, that fortune would probably be one day weary of perſecuting me.

"In the mean time (ſaid he), here is a letter for you, which I received juſt now encloſed in one from Freeman." I ſnatched it with eagerneſs, and knowing the ſuperſcription to be of Narciſſa's hand-writing, kiſſed it with tranſport, and having opened it, read,

"IT is with great difficulty that I have ſtolen from the obſervation of thoſe ſpies who are ſet over me, this opportunity of telling you, that I was ſuddenly carried away from Bath by my brother, who was informed of our correſpondence by Lord Quiverwit, whom, I ſince underſtand, you have wounded in a duel on my account. As as am fully convinced of your honour and love, I hope I ſhall never hear of ſuch deſperate proofs of either for the future. I am ſo ſtrictly watched, that it will be impoſſible for you to ſee me, until my brother's ſuſpicions ſhall abate, or Heaven contrive ſome other unforeſeen event in our behalf. In the mean time you may depend on the conſtancy and affection of

"Your own

"NARCISSA."

"P. S. Miſs Williams, who is my fellow-priſoner, deſires to be remembered to you. We are both in good health, and only in pain for you, eſpecially as it will be impracticable for you to convey any meſſage or letter to the place of our confinement; for which reaſon, pray deſiſt from the attempt, that, by miſcarrying, might prolong our captivity.

N——."

This kind letter afforded me great conſolation: I communicated it to Banter, and at the ſame time ſhowed him her picture: He approved of her beauty and good ſenſe, and could not help owning, that my neglect of Miſs Snapper was excuſable, when ſuch a fine creature engroſſed my attention.

I began to be reconciled to my fate, and imagined, that, if I could contrive means of ſubſiſting until my uncle ſhould arrive, in caſe he was not already at home, he would enable me to do ſomething effectual in behalf

of my love and fortune. I therefore conſulted Banter about a preſent ſupply, who no ſooner underſtood that I had credit with a tailor, than he adviſed me to take off two or three ſuits of rich clothes, and convert them into caſh, by ſelling them at half price to a ſaleſman in Monmouth-ſtreet. I was ſtartled at this propoſal, which I thought ſavoured a little of fraud; but he rendered it palatable, by obſerving, that in a few months I might be in a condition to do every body juſtice; and in the mean time I was acquitted by the honeſty of my intention. I ſuffered myſelf to be perſuaded by his ſalvo, by which my neceſſity, rather than my judgment, was convinced; and when I found there were no accounts of the ſhip in which my uncle embarked, actually put the ſcheme in practice, and raiſed by it five and twenty guineas, paying him for his advice with the odd five.

CHAPTER LXI.

I am arreſted—carried to the Marſhalſea—find my old acquaintance beau Jackſon in that jail—he informs me of his adventures—Strap arrives, and with difficulty is comforted—Jackſon introduces me to a poet—I admire his converſation and capacity—am deeply affected with my misfortune—Strap hires himſelf as a journeyman barber.

But this expedient was in a few weeks attended with a conſequence I did not foreſee; a player having purchaſed one of the ſuits which were expoſed to ſale, appeared in it on the ſtage one night, while my tailor unfortunately happened to be preſent. He knew it immediately, and inquired minutely into the affair, diſcovered my whole contrivance; upon which he came to my lodgings, and telling me that he was very much ſtraitened for want of money, preſented his bill, which amounted to 50l. Surpriſed at this unexpected addreſs, I affected to treat him cavalierly, ſwore ſome oaths, aſked if he doubted my honour, and, telling him I ſhould take care whom I dealt with for the future, bade him come again in three days. He obeyed me punctually, demanded his money, and finding himſelf amuſed

with bare promiſes, arreſted me that very day in the ſtreet. I was not much ſhocked at this adventure, which, indeed, put an end to a ſtate of horrible expectation; but I refuſed to go to a ſpunging-houſe, where I heard there was nothing but the moſt flagrant impoſition; and a coach being called, was carried to the Marſhalſea, attended by a bailiff and his follower, who were very much diſappointed and chagrined at my reſolution.

The turnkey, gueſſing from my appearance that I had money in my pocket, received me with the repetition of the Latin word *depone*, and gave me to underſtand, that I muſt pay before-hand for the apartment I ſhould chooſe to dwell in. I deſired to ſee his conveniencies, and hired a ſmall paultry bed-chamber for a crown a-week, which, in any other place, would have let for half the money. Having taken poſſeſſion of this diſmal habitation, I ſent for Strap, and my thoughts were buſied in collecting matter of conſolation to that faithful ſquire, when ſomebody knocked at my door, which I no ſooner opened, than a young fellow entered, in very ſhabby clothes, and marvellous foul linen. After a low bow, he called me by my name, and aſked if I had forgot him. His voice aſſiſted me in recollecting his perſon, whom I ſoon recognized to be my old acquaintance Jackſon, of whom mention is made in the firſt part of my memoirs. I ſaluted him cordially, expreſſed my ſatisfaction of finding him alive, and condoled him on his preſent ſituation, which, however, did not ſeem to affect him much, for he laughed very heartily at the occaſion of our meeting ſo unexpectedly in this place. Our mutual compliments being paſt, I inquired about his amour with the lady of fortune, which ſeemed to be ſo near a happy concluſion when I had the pleaſure of ſeeing him laſt; and, after an immoderate fit of laughter, he gave me to underſtand, that he had been egregiouſly bit in that affair. "You muſt know (ſaid he) that a few days after our adventure with the bawd and her b—ches, I found means to be married to that ſame fine lady you ſpeak of, and paſſed the night with her at her lodgings, ſo much to her ſatisfaction, that early in the morning, after a good deal of ſnivilling and ſobbing, ſhe owned,

that, far from being an heireſs of great fortune, ſhe was no other than a common woman of the town, who had decoyed me into matrimony, in order to enjoy the privilege of a *femme couverte;* and that, unleſs I made my eſcape immediately, I ſhould be arreſted for a debt of her contracting, by bailiffs employed and inſtructed for that purpoſe. Startled at this intimation, I roſe in a twinkling, and taking leave of my ſpouſe with ſeveral hearty damns, got ſafe into the verge of the court, where I kept ſnug until I was appointed ſurgeon's mate of a man of war at Portſmouth; for which place I ſet out on Sunday, went on board of my ſhip, in which I ſailed to the Straits, where I had the good fortune to be made ſurgeon of a ſloop that came home a few months after, and was put out of commiſſion; whereupon I came to London, imagining myſelf forgotten, and freed from my wife and her creditors; but had not been in town a week before I was arreſted for a debt of her's, amounting to 20l. and brought to this place, where I have been fixed by another action ſince that time. However, you know my diſpoſition; I defy care and anxiety; and being on the half-pay liſt, make ſhift to live here tolerably eaſy. I congratulated him on his philoſophy, and remembering that I was in his debt, repaid the money he formerly lent me, which, I believe, was far from being unſeaſonable. I then inquired about the economy of the place, which he explained to my ſatisfaction; and after we had agreed to meſs together, he was juſt going to give orders for dinner, when Strap arrived.

I never in my life ſaw ſorrow ſo extravagantly expreſſed in any countenance as in that of my honeſt friend, which was, indeed, particularly adapted by nature for ſuch impreſſions. When we were left by ourſelves, I communicated to him my diſaſter, and endeavoured to conſole him with the ſame arguments he had formerly uſed to me, withal repreſenting the fair chance I had of being relieved in a ſhort time by Mr. Bowling. But his grief was unutterable; he ſeemed to give attention without liſtening, and wrung his hands in ſilence; ſo that I was in a fair way of being infected by his behaviour, when Jackſon returned, and perceiving the deference I

paid to Strap, although in a footman's habit, diſtributed his crumbs of comfort with ſuch mirth, jollity, and unconcern, that the features of the diſtreſſed ſquire relaxed by degrees; he recovered the uſe of ſpeech, and began to be a little more reconciled to this lamentable event. We dined together on boiled beef and greens, brought from a cook's ſhop in the neighbourhood; and although this meal was ſerved up in a manner little correſponding with the ſphere of life in which I had lately lived, I made a virtue of neceſſity, ate with good appetite, and treated my friends with a bottle of wine, which had the deſired effect, of increaſing the good humour of my fellow-priſoner, and exhilerating the ſpirits of Strap, who now talked cavalierly of my misfortune.

After dinner, Jackſon left us to our private affairs; when I deſired my friend to pack up all our things, and carry them to ſome cheap lodging he ſhould chooſe for himſelf in the neighbourhood of the Marſhalſea, after he had diſcharged my lodging, for which purpoſe I gave him money. I likewiſe recommended to him the keeping my misfortune ſecret, and ſaying to my landlord, or any other who ſhould inquire for me, that I was gone into the country for a few weeks; at the ſame time I laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to call every ſecond day upon Banter, in caſe he ſhould receive any letter for me from Narciſſa, by the channel of Freeman; and by all means to leave a direction for himſelf, at my uncle's lodgings in Wapping, by which I might be found when my kinſman ſhould arrive.

When he departed to execute theſe orders (which, by the bye, were punctually performed that very night), I found myſelf ſo little ſeaſoned to my ſituation, that I dreaded reflection, and ſought ſhelter from it in the company of the beau, who, promiſing to regale me with a lecture upon taſte, conducted me to the common ſide, where I ſaw a number of naked miſerable wretches aſſembled together. We had not been here many minutes, when a figure appeared, wrapt in a dirty rug, tied about his loins with two pieces of liſt, of different colours, knotted together; having a black buſhy beard, and his head covered with a huge maſs of brown peri-

wig, which ſeemed to have been raviſhed from the crown of ſome ſcare-crow. This apparition, ſtalking in with great ſolemnity, made a profound bow to the audience, who ſignified their approbation by a general reſponſe of "How d'ye do, doctor?" He then turned towards us, and honoured Jackſon with a particular ſalutation: Upon which my friend, in a formal manner, introduced him to me, by the name of Mr. Melopoyn.—This ceremony being over, he advanced into the middle of the congregation, which crowded around him, and hemming three times, to my utter aſtoniſhment, pronounced with great ſignificance of voice and geſture, a very elegant and ingenious diſcourſe upon the difference between genius and taſte, illuſtrating his aſſertions with apt quotations from the beſt authors, ancient as well as modern. When he had finiſhed his harangue, which laſted a full hour, he bowed again to the ſpectators, not one of whom (I was informed) underſtood ſo much as a ſentence of what he had uttered. They manifeſted, however, their admiration and eſteem by a voluntary contribution, which, Jackſon told me, one week with another, amounted to eighteen pence. This moderate ſtipend, together with ſome ſmall preſents that he received for making up differences, and deciding cauſes amongſt the priſoners, juſt enabled him to breathe and walk about, in the groteſque figure I have deſcribed—I underſtood alſo, that he was an excellent poet, and had compoſed a tragedy, which was allowed by every body who had ſeen it to be a performance of great merit; that his learning was infinite, his morals unexceptionable, and his modeſty invincible. Such a character could not fail of attracting my regard; I longed impatiently to be acquainted with him, and deſired Jackſon would engage him to ſpend the evening in my apartment. My requeſt was granted, he favoured us with his company, and in the courſe of our converſation, perceiving that I had a ſtrong paſſion for the *Belles Lettres*, acquitted himſelf ſo well on that ſubject, that I expreſſed a fervent deſire of ſeeing his productions. In this point too he gratified my inclination;—he promiſed to bring his tragedy to my room next day, and in the mean time entertained me with ſome detached

pieces, which gave me a very advantageous idea of his poetical talent. Among other things I was particularly pleaſed with ſome elegies, in imitation of Tibullus; one of which I beg leave to ſubmit to the reader, as a ſpecimen of his complexion and capacity.

I.

Where now are all my flattering dreams of joy?
Monimia, give my ſoul her wonted reſt;—
Since firſt thy beauty fix'd my roving eye,
Heart-gnawing cares corrode my penſive breaſt!

II.

Let happy lovers fly where pleaſures call,
With feſtive ſongs beguile the fleeting hour;
Lead beauty through the mazes of the ball,
Or preſs her wanton in love's roſeate bower.

III.

For me, no more I'll range th' empurpled mead,
Where ſhepherds pipe, and virgins dance around;
Nor wander through the woodbine's fragrant ſhade,
To hear the muſic of the grove reſound.

IV.

I'll ſeek ſome lonely church, or dreary hall,
Where fancy paints the glimm'ring taper blue,
Where damps hang mould'ring on the ivy'd wall,
And ſheeted ghoſts drink up the midnight dew.

V.

There, leagu'd with hopeleſs anguiſh and deſpair,
A while in ſilence o'er my fate repine:
Then, with a long farewel to love and care,
To kindred duſt my weary limbs conſign.

VI.

Wilt thou, Monimia, ſhed a gracious tear
On the cold grave where all my ſorrows reſt;
Strew vernal flowers, applaud my love ſincere,
And bid the turf lie eaſy on my breaſt!

I was wonderfully affected with this pathetic complaint, which ſeemed ſo well calculated for my own diſappointment in love, that I could not help attaching the idea of Narciſſa to the name of Monimia, and of forming ſuch melancholy preſages of my paſſion, that I could not recover my tranquillity, and was fain to have recourſe to the bottle, which prepared me for a profound ſleep, that I could not otherwiſe have enjoyed. Whether theſe impreſſions invited and introduced a train of other melancholy reflections, or my fortitude was all exhauſted in the effort I made againſt deſpondence, during the firſt day of my impriſonment, I cannot determine;

but I awoke in the horrors, and found my imagination haunted with ſuch diſmal apparitions, that I was ready to deſpair;—and I believe the reader will own, I had no great cauſe to congratulate myſelf, when I conſidered my ſituation. I was interrupted in the midſt of theſe gloomy apprehenſions by the arrival of Strap, who contributed not a little to the re-eſtabliſhment of my peace, by letting me know that he had hired himſelf as a journeyman barber; by which means he would be able not only to ſave me a conſiderable expence, but even make ſhift to lay up ſomething for my ſubſiſtence after my money ſhould be ſpent, in caſe I ſhould not be relieved before.

CHAPTER LXII.

I read Melopoyn's tragedy, and conceive a vaſt opinion of his genius—he recounts his adventures.

WHILE we ate our breakfaſt together, I made him acquainted with the character and condition of the poet, who came in with his play at that inſtant, and imagining we were engaged about buſineſs, could not be prevailed upon to ſit; but, leaving his performance, went away. My friend's tender heart was melted at the ſight of a gentleman and Chriſtian (for he had a great veneration for both theſe epithets) in ſuch miſery; and aſſented with great cheerfulneſs to a propoſal I made of clothing him with our ſuperfluities; a taſk with which he charged himſelf, and departed immediately to perform it.

He was no ſooner gone, than I locked my door, and ſat down to the tragedy, which I read to the end with vaſt pleaſure, not a little amazed at the conduct of the managers who had rejected it. The fable, in my opinion, was well choſen, and naturally conducted; the incidents intereſting, the characters beautifully contraſted, ſtrongly marked, and well ſupported; the diction poetical, ſpirited, and correct; the unities of the drama maintained with the moſt ſcrupulous exactneſs; the opening gradual and engaging, the *peripeteia* ſurpriſing, and the cataſtrophe affecting. In ſhort, I judged it by the laws

of Ariſtotle and Horace, and could find nothing in it exceptionable, but a little too much embelliſhment in ſome few places, which objection he removed to my ſatisfaction, by a quotation from Ariſtotle's Poetics, importing, that the leaſt intereſting parts of a poem ought to be raiſed and dignified by the charms and energy of diction.

I revered his genius, and was ſeized with an eager curioſity to know the particular events of a fortune ſo unworthy of his merit. At that inſtant Strap returned with a bundle of clothes, which I ſent with my compliments to Mr. Melopoyn, as a ſmall token of my regard, and deſired the favour of his company to dinner. He accepted my preſent and invitation, and in leſs than half an hour made his appearance in a decent dreſs, which altered his figure very much to his advantage. I perceived, by his countenance, that his heart was big with gratitude, and endeavoured to prevent his acknowledgments, by aſking pardon for the liberty I had taken; he made no reply, but, with an aſpect full of admiration and eſteem, bowed to the ground, while the tears guſhed from his eyes. Affected with theſe ſymptoms of an ingenuous mind, I ſhifted the converſation, and complimented him on his performance, which, I aſſured him, afforded me infinite pleaſure. My approbation made him happy; dinner being ſerved, and Jackſon arrived, I begged their permiſſion for Strap to ſit at table with us, after having informed them, that he was a perſon to whom I was extremely obliged; they were kind enough to grant that favour, and we ate together with great harmony and ſatisfaction.

Our meal being ended, I expreſſed my wonder at the little regard Mr. Melopoyn had met with from the world; and ſignified a deſire of hearing how he had been treated by the managers of the playhouſes, to whom I underſtood from Jackſon he had offered his tragedy without ſucceſs. "There is ſo little entertaining in the incidents of my life (ſaid he), that I am ſure the recital will not recompence your attention; but, ſince you diſcover an inclination to know them, I underſtand my duty too well to diſappoint your deſire."

"My father, who was a curate in the country, being, by the narrowneſs of his circumſtances, hindered from maintaining me at the univerſity, took the charge of my education upon himſelf, and laboured with ſuch induſtry and concern in the undertaking, that I had little cauſe to regret the want of public maſters. Being at great pains to conſult my natural bias, he diſcovered in me, betimes, an inclination for poetry; upon which he recommended me to an intimate acquaintance with the claſſics, in the cultivation of which he aſſiſted me with paternal zeal and uncommon erudition. When he thought me ſufficiently acquainted with the ancients, he directed my ſtudies to the beſt modern authors, French and Italian, as well as Engliſh, and laid a particular injunction upon me to make myſelf maſter of my mother tongue.

"About the age of eighteen, I grew ambitious of undertaking a work of ſome conſequence; and, with my father's approbation, actually planned the tragedy you have read; but, before I had finiſhed four acts, that indulgent parent died, and left my mother and me in very indigent circumſtances. A near relation, compaſſionating our diſtreſs, took us into his family, where I brought my fable to a concluſion; and ſoon after that period my mother quitted this life. When my ſorrow for this melancholy event had ſubſided, I told my kinſman, who was a farmer, that having paid my laſt duty to my parent, I had now no attachment to detain me in the country, and therefore was reſolved to ſet out for London, and offer my play to the ſtage, where I did not doubt of acquiring a large ſhare of fame as well as fortune; in which caſe I ſhould not be unmindful of my friends and benefactors. My couſin was raviſhed with the proſpect of my felicity, and willingly contributed towards the expence of fitting me out for my expedition.

"Accordingly I took a place in the waggon, and arrived in town, where I hired an apartment in a garret, willing to live as frugal as poſſible, until I ſhould know what I had to expect from the manager, to whom I intended to offer my play. For, though I looked upon myſelf as perfectly ſecure of a good reception, imagin-

ing that a patentee would be as eager to receive, as I to preſent my production, I did not know whether or not he might be pre-engaged in favour of another author, a circumſtance that would certainly retard my ſucceſs. On this conſideration too, I determined to be ſpeedy in my application, and even to wait upon one of the managers the very next day. For this purpoſe, I inquired of my landlord if he knew where either or both of them lived; and he being curious to know my buſineſs, and at the ſame time appearing to be a very honeſt friendly man (a tallow-chandler), I made him acquainted with my deſign; upon which he told me, that I went the wrong way to work; that I would not find ſuch eaſy acceſs to a manager as I imagined; and that, if I delivered my performance without proper recommendation, it would be as one to a thouſand if ever it ſhould be minded. "Take my advice (ſaid he), and your buſineſs is done. One of the patentees is a good catholic, as I am, and uſes the ſame father who confeſſes me. I will make you acquainted with this good prieſt, who is an excellent ſcholar, and if he ſhould approve of your play, his recommendation will go a great way in determining Mr. Supple to bring it on the ſtage." I applauded his expedient, and was introduced to the friar, who having peruſed the tragedy, was pleaſed to ſignify his approbation, and commended me, in particular, for having avoided all reflections upon religion. He promiſed to uſe all his influence with his ſon Supple in my behalf, and to inform himſelf that very day at what time it would be proper for me to wait upon him with the piece. He was punctual in performing his engagement, and next morning gave me to underſtand that he had mentioned my affair to the manager, and that I had no more to do, than to go to his houſe any time in the forenoon, and make uſe of his name, upon which I ſhould find immediate admittance. I took this advice, put my performance in my boſom, and, having received directions, went immediately to the houſe of Mr. Supple, and knocked at the door, which had a wicket in the middle, faced with a net-work of iron. Through this a ſervant having viewed me for ſome time, demanded to know my

buſineſs. I told him my buſineſs was with Mr. Supple and that I came from Mr O'Varniſh. He examined my appearance once more, then went away, returned in a few minutes, and ſaid his maſter was buſy, and could not be ſeen. Although I was a little mortified at my diſappointment, I was perſuaded that my reception was owing to Mr. Supple's ignorance of my errand; and, that I might meet with no more obſtructions of the ſame kind, I deſired Mr. O'Varniſh to be my introductor the next time. He complied with my requeſt, and obtained immediate admittance to the manager, who received me with the utmoſt civility, and promiſed to read my play with the firſt convenience. By his own appointment, I called again in a fortnight, but he was gone out; I returned in a week after, and the poor gentleman was extremely ill; I renewed my viſit in a fortnight after that, and he aſſured me, he had been ſo much fatigued with buſineſs, that he had not been able as yet to read it to an end; but he would take the firſt opportunity; and, in the mean time, obſerved, that what he had juſt ſeen of it was very entertaining. I comforted myſelf with this declaration a few weeks longer, at the end of which I appeared again before his wicket, was let in, and found him laid up with the gout. I no ſooner entered his chamber, than, looking at me with a languiſhing eye, he ſaid, "Mr. Melopoyn, I'm heartily ſorry for an accident that has happened during my illneſs. You muſt know, that my eldeſt boy, finding your manuſcript upon the table in the dining-room, where I uſed to read it, carried it into the kitchen, and leaving it there, a negligent wench of a cook-maid, miſtaking it for waſte paper, has expended it all but a few leaves in ſinging fowls upon the ſpit. But I hope the misfortune is not irreparable, ſince, no doubt, you have ſeveral copies."

"I proteſt to you, my good friend, Mr. Random, I was extremely ſhocked at this information; but the good-natured gentleman ſeemed to be ſo much affected with my misfortune, that I ſuppreſſed my concern, and told him, that although I had not another copy, I ſhould be able to retrieve the loſs by writing another from my memory, which was very tenacious. You cannot ima-

gine how well pleaſed Mr. Supple was at this aſſurance; he begged I would ſet about it immediately, and carefully revolve and recollect every circumſtance, before I pretended to commit it to paper, that it might be the ſame individual play that he had peruſed. Encouraged by this injunction, which plainly demonſtrated how much he intereſted himſelf in the affair, I talked my remembrance and induſtry, and in three weeks produced the exact image of the former, which was conveyed to him by my good friend, father O'Varniſh, who told me next day that Mr. Supple would reviſe it ſuperficially, in order to judge of its ſameneſs with the other, and then give his final anſwer. For this examination I allotted a week; and, in full confidence of ſeeing it acted in a little while, demanded an audience of the manager, when that term was expired. But alas! the ſeaſon had ſlipped away inſenſibly; he convinced me, that, if my play had been put into rehearſal at that time, it could not have been ready for performing until the end of March, when the benefit nights came on; conſequently it would have interfered with the intereſt of the players, whom it was not my buſineſs to diſoblige.

"I was fain to acquieſce in theſe reaſons, which to be ſure were extremely juſt, and to reſerve my performance for the next ſeaſon, when he hoped I would not be ſo unlucky: Although it was a grievous diſappointment to me, who by this time began to want both money and neceſſaries: having, on the ſtrength of my expectation from the theatre, launched out into ſome extravagancies, by which the ſum I brought to town was already almoſt conſumed. Indeed, I ought to be aſhamed at this circumſtance of my conduct: For my finances were ſufficient, with good economy, to have maintained me comfortably a whole year. You will perhaps be amazed when I tell you, that in ſix months I expended not a farthing leſs than ten guineas: But when one conſiders the temptations to which a young man is expoſed in this great city, eſpecially if he is addicted to pleaſure, as I am, the wonder will vaniſh, or at leaſt abate. Nor was the cauſe of my concern limited to my own ſituation entirely: I had writ an account of my good reception to my kinſman the

farmer, and desired him to depend upon me for the money he had kindly accommodated me with about the end of February; which promise I now found myself unable to perform. However, there was no remedy but patience: I applied to my landlord, who was a very good-natured man, candidly owned my distress, and begged his advice in laying down some plan for my subsistence. He readily promised to consult his confessor on this subject, and told me, I was welcome, in the mean time, to lodge and board with him, until fortune should put it in my power to make restitution.

"Mr. O'Varnish, being informed of my necessity, offered to introduce me to the author of a weekly paper, who, he did not doubt, would employ me in that way, provided he should find me duly qualified; but, upon inquiry, I understood that this journal was calculated to foment divisions in the commonwealth, and therefore I desired to be excused from engaging in it. He then proposed that I should write something in the poetical way, which I might dispose of to a bookseller for a pretty sum of ready money, and perhaps establish my own character into the bargain; this event would infallibly procure friends, and my tragedy would appear next season to the best advantage, by being supported both by interest and reputation. I was charmed with this prospect, and having heard what friends Mr. Pope acquired by his pastorals, set about a work of that kind, and in less than six weeks composed as many eclogues, which I forthwith offered to an eminent bookseller, who desired me to leave them for his perusal, and he would give me an answer in two days. At the end of that time, I went to him, when he returned the poems, telling me, they would not answer his purpose, and sweetened his refusal by saying there were some good clever lines in them. Not a little dejected at this rebuff, which I learned from Mr. O'Varnish, was owing to the opinion of another author, whom this bookseller always consulted on these occasions, I applied to another person of the same profession, who told me, the town was cloyed with pastorals, and advised me, if I intended to profit by my talents, to write something satirical or luscious, such as the

Button Hole, Shockey and Towzer, the Leaky Veſſel, &c. —and yet this was a man in years, who wore a reverend periwig, looked like a ſenator, and went regularly to church. Be that as it will, I ſcorned to proſtitute my pen in the manner he propoſed, and carried my papers to a third, who aſſured me, that poetry was entirely out of his way; and aſked if I had got never a piece of ſecret hiſtory, thrown into a ſeries of letters, or a volume of adventures, ſuch as thoſe of Robinſon Cruſoe and Colonal Jack, or a collection of conundrums, wherewith to entertain the plantations. Being quite unfurniſhed for this dealer, I had recourſe to another with as little ſucceſs; and I verily believe was rejected by the whole trade.

"I was afterwards perſuaded to offer myſelf as a tranſlator, and accordingly repaired to a perſon, who was ſaid to entertain numbers of that claſs in his pay; he aſſured me he had already a great deal of that work on his hands, which he did not know what to do with; obſerved that tranſlation was a mere drug, that branch of literature being overſtocked with an inundation of authors from North Britain; and aſked what I would expect per ſheet, for rendering the Latin claſſics into Engliſh? —That I might not make myſelf too cheap, I determined to ſet a high price upon my qualifications, and demanded half a guinea for every tranſlated ſheet, "Half a guinea!" (cried he, ſtaring at me), then paufed a little, and ſaid, he had no occaſion for my ſervice at preſent. I found my error, and, reſolving to make amends, fell one half in my demand; upon which he ſtared at me again, and told me his hands were full. I attempted others, without finding employment, and was actually reduced to a very uncomfortable proſpect, when I bethought myſelf of offering my talents to the printers of halfpenny ballads, and other ſuch occaſional eſſays as are hawked about the ſtreets. With this view, I applied to one of the moſt noted and vociferous of this tribe, who directed me to a perſon whom I found entertaining a whole crowd of them with gin, bread, and cheeſe; he carried me into a little back parlour, very neatly furniſhed, where I ſignified my deſire of being enrolled

among his writers; and was aſked what kind of compoſition I profeſſed? underſtanding that my inclination leaned towards poetry, he expreſſed his ſatisfaction, telling me one of his poets had loſt his ſenſes, and was confined in bedlam, and the other was become dozed with drinking drams; ſo that he had not done any thing tolerable theſe many weeks. When I propoſed that we ſhould enter into terms of agreement, he gave me to underſtand, that his bargains were always conditional, and his authors paid in proportion to the ſale of their works.

"Having therefore ſettled theſe conditions, which (I do aſſure you) were not very advantageous to me, he aſſigned me a ſubject for a ballad, which was to be finiſhed in two hours; and I retired to my garret in order to perform his injunction. As the theme happened to ſuit my fancy, I completed a pretty ſort of an ode, within the time preſcribed, and brought it to him, big with hope of profit and applauſe. He read it in a twinkling, and, to my utter aſtoniſhment, told me, it would not do, though indeed he owned I wrote a good hand, and ſpelled very well, but my language was too high flown, and of conſequence not at all adapted to the capacity and taſte of his cuſtomers. I promiſed to rectify that miſtake, and in half an hour humbled my ſtyle to the comprehenſion of vulgar readers; he approved of the alteration, and gave me ſome hopes of ſucceeding in time, though he obſerved, that my performance was very deficient in the quaintneſs of expreſſion that pleaſes the multitude; however, to encourage me, he ventured the expence of printing and paper, and, if I remember aright, my ſhare of the ſale amounted to four pence halfpenny.

"From that day I ſtudied the Grub-ſtreet manner with great diligence, and at length became ſuch a proficient, that my works were in great requeſt among the moſt polite of the chairmen, draymen, hackney coachmen, footmen, and ſervant maids: Nay, I have enjoyed the pleaſure of ſeeing my productions adorned with cuts, paſted upon the wall as ornaments in beer-cellars and coblers ſtalls, and have actually heard them ſung in clubs of ſubſtantial tradeſmen. But empty praiſe (you know, my dear friend) will not ſupply the cravings of nature,

I found myſelf in danger of ſtarving in the midſt of all ny fame; for of ten ſongs I compoſed, it was well if wo had the good fortune to pleaſe. For this reaſon I urned my thoughts to proſe, and, during a tract of gloomy weather, publiſhed an apparition, on the ſubſtance of which I ſubſiſted very comfortably a whole nonth: I have made many a good meal upon a monſter; a rape has often afforded me great ſatisfaction; but a murder, well timed, was my never-failing reſource. What then? I was a moſt miſerable ſlave to my employers, who expected to be furniſhed at a minute's warning with proſe and verſe, juſt as they thought the circumſtances of the times required, whether the inclination was abſent or preſent. Upon my ſincerity, Mr. Random, I have been ſo much peſtered and beſieged by thoſe children of clamour, that life became a burden to me.

CHAPTER LXIII.

The continuation and concluſion of Mr. Melopoyn's ſtory.

I MADE ſhift, notwithſtanding, to maintain myſelf till the beginning of next winter, when I renewed my addreſſes to my friend Mr. Supple, and was moſt graciouſly received. "I have been thinking of your affair, Mr. Melopoyn (ſaid he), and am determined to ſhow how far I have your intereſt at heart, by introducing you to a young nobleman of my acquaintance who is remarkable for his fine taſte in dramatic writings, and is, beſides, a man of ſuch influence, that, if once he ſhould approve of your play, his patronage will ſupport it againſt all the efforts of envy and ignorance: For I do aſſure you, that merit alone will not bring ſucceſs. I have already ſpoke of your performance to Lord Rattle, and if you will call at my houſe in a day or two, you ſhall have a letter of introduction to his lordſhip." I was ſenſibly touched with this mark of Mr. Supple's friendſhip, and looking upon my affair as already done, went home and imparted my good fortune to my landlord, who, to render my ap-

pearance more acceptable to my patron, procured a ſuit of new clothes for me on his own credit.

" Not to trouble you with idle particulars, I carried my tragedy to his lordſhip's lodgings, and ſent it up, along with Mr. Supple's letter, by one of his ſervants, who deſired me, by his lord's order, to return in a week. I did ſo, and was admitted to his lordſhip, who received me very courteouſly, told me he had peruſed my play, which he thought, on the whole, was the beſt *coup d'eſſai* he had ever ſeen; but that he had marked ſome places in the margin, which he imagined might be altered for the better. I was tranſported with this reception, and promiſed (with many acknowledgments of his lordſhip's generoſity) to be governed ſolely by his advice and direction. " Well then (ſaid he), write another fair copy with the alterations I have propoſed, and bring it to me as ſoon as poſſible; for I am reſolved to have it brought on the ſtage this winter." You may be ſure I ſet about this taſk with alacrity; and although I found his lordſhip's remarks much more numerous, and of leſs importance, than I expected, I thought it was not my intereſt to diſpute upon trifles with my patron; therefore new modelled it, according to his deſire, in leſs than a month.

" When I waited upon him with the manuſcript, I found one of the actors at breakfaſt with his lordſhip, who immediately introduced him to my acquaintance, and deſired him to read a ſcene of my play. This taſk he performed very much to my ſatisfaction, with regard to emphaſis and pronunciation; but he ſignified his diſguſt at ſeveral words in every page, which I preſuming to defend, Lord Rattle told me, with a peremptory look, I muſt not pretend to diſpute with him, who had been a player theſe twenty years, and underſtood the economy of the ſtage better than any man living. I was forced to ſubmit, and his lordſhip propoſed the ſame actor ſhould read the whole play in the evening, before ſome gentlemen of his acquaintance, whom he would convene at his lodgings for that purpoſe.

I was preſent at the reading; and I proteſt to you, my dear friend, I never underwent ſuch a ſevere trial in the whole courſe of my life as at that juncture; for

although the player might be a very honeſt man, and a good performer, he was exceſſively illiterate and aſſuming, and made a thouſand frivolous objections, which I was not permitted to anſwer: However, the piece was very much applauded on the whole; the gentlemen preſent, who, I underſtood, were men of fortune, promiſed to countenance and ſupport it as much as they could; and Lord Rattle aſſuring me that he would act the part of a careful nurſe to it, deſired me to carry it home, and alter it immediately according to their remarks: I was fain to acquieſce in his determination, and fulfilled his injunctions with all the expedition in my power; but, before I could preſent the new copy, my good friend Mr. Supple had diſpoſed of his property and patent to one Mr. Brayer; ſo that freſh intereſt was to be made with the new manager. This taſk Lord Rattle undertook, having ſome acquaintance with him, and recommended my performance ſo ſtrongly that it was received.

"I looked upon myſelf now as upon the eve of reaping the fruits of all my labour: I waited a few days in expectation of its being put into rehearſal, and wondering at the delay, applied to my worthy patron, who excuſed Mr. Brayer, on account of the multiplicity of buſineſs in which he was involved, and bade me beware of teazing the patentee. I treaſured up this caution, and exerted my patience three weeks longer; at the end of which his lordſhip gave me to underſtand that Mr. Brayer had read my play, and owned it had indubitable merit; but as he had long been pre-engaged to another author, he could not poſſibly repreſent it that ſeaſon; though, if I would reſerve it for the next, and, in the interim, make ſuch alterations as he had propoſed by obſervations on the margin, I might depend upon his compliance.

"Thunderſtruck at this diſappointment, I could not, for ſome minutes, utter one ſyllable: At length, however, I complained bitterly of the manager's inſincerity in amuſing me ſo long, when he knew from the beginning that he could not gratify my deſire. But his lordſhip reprimanded me for my freedom, ſaid Mr. Brayer was a man of honour, and imputed his behaviour with

reſpect to me to nothing elſe but forgetfulneſs. And indeed I have had ſome reaſon, ſince that time, to be convinced of his bad memory; for, in ſpite of appearances, I will not allow myſelf to interpret his conduct any other way. Lord Rattle, obſerving me very much affected with my diſappointment, offered his intereſt to bring on my play at the other houſe, which I eagerly accepting, he forthwith wrote a letter of reccomendation to Mr. Bellower, actor, and prime miniſter to Mr. Vandal, proprietor of that theatre; and deſired me to deliver it with my tragedy without loſs of time. Accordingly, I haſtened to his houſe, where, after having waited a whole hour in a lobby, I was admitted to his preſence, and my performance received with great ſtate. He told me he was extremely buſy at preſent, but he would peruſe it as ſoon as poſſible, and bade me call again in a week. I took my leave not a little aſtoniſhed at the port and ſupercilious behaviour of this ſtage-player, who had not treated me with good manners; and began to think the dignity of a poet greatly impaired ſince the days of Euripides and Sophocles; but all this was nothing in compariſon of what I have ſince obſerved.

"Well, Mr. Random, I went back at the appointed time, and was told that Mr. Bellower was engaged, and could not ſee me. I repeated my viſit a few days after, and, having waited a conſiderable time, was favoured with an audience, during which, he ſaid, he had not as yet read my play. Nettled at this uſage, I could contain myſelf no longer, but telling him, I imagined he would have paid more deference to Lord Rattle's recommendation, demanded my manuſcript with ſome expreſſions of reſentment. "Ay (ſaid he, in a theatrical tone), with all my heart." Then pulling out a drawer of the bureau at which he ſat, he took out a bundle, and threw it upon a table that was near him, pronouncing the word "There," with great diſdain. I took it up, and perceiving, with ſome ſurpriſe, that it was a comedy, told him it did not belong to me; upon which he offered me another, which I alſo diſclaimed. A third was produced, and rejected for the ſame reaſon. At

length he pulled out a whole handful, and ſpread them before me, ſaying, "There are ſeven—take which you pleaſe—or take them all." I ſingled out my own, and went away, ſtruck dumb with admiration at what I had ſeen—not ſo much on account of his inſolence, as of the number of new plays, which from this circumſtance I concluded were yearly offered to the ſtage. You may be ſure, I did not fail to carry my complaint to my patron, who did not receive it with all the indignation I expected; but taxed me with precipitation, and told me I muſt lay my account with bearing the humours of the players, if I intended to write for the ſtage. "There is now no other remedy (ſaid he) but to keep it till the next ſeaſon for Mr. Brayer, and alter it at your leiſure, in the ſummer, according to his directions." I was now reduced to a terrible alternative, either to quit all hopes of my tragedy, from which I had all along promiſed myſelf a large ſhare of fortune and reputation, or to encounter eight long months of adverſity in preparing for, and expecting its appearance. This laſt penance, painful as it was, ſeemed moſt eligible to my reflection at that time, and therefore I reſolved to undergo it.

"Why ſhould I tire you with particulars of no conſequence? I wreſtled with extreme poverty until the time of my probation was expired; and went to my Lord Rattle, in order to remind him of my affair, when I underſtood, to my great concern, that his lordſhip was juſt on the point of going abroad, and, which was ſtill more unfortunate for me, Mr. Brayer had gone into the country, ſo that my generous patron had it not in his power to introduce me perſonally, as he intended: However, he wrote a very ſtrong letter to the manager in my favour, and put him in mind of the promiſe he had made in behalf of my play.

"As ſoon as I was certified of Brayer's return, I went to his houſe with this letter, but was told he was gone out. I called again next day early in the morning, received the ſame anſwer, and was deſired to leave my name and buſineſs; I did ſo, and returned the day after, when the ſervant ſtill affirmed that his maſter was

gone abroad, though I perceived him as I retired, obſerving me through a window. Incenſed at this diſcovery, I went to a coffeehouſe hard by, and encloſing his lordſhip's letter in one from myſelf, demanded a categorical anſwer. I ſent it to his houſe by a porter, who returned in a few minutes, and told me Mr. Brayer would be glad to ſee me at that inſtant. I obeyed the ſummons, and was received with ſuch profuſion of compliments and apologies, that my reſentment immediately ſubſided, and I was even in pain for the concern which this honeſt man ſhowed at the miſtake of his ſervant, who, it ſeems, had been ordered to deny him to every body but me. He expreſſed the utmoſt veneration for his good and noble friend Lord Rattle, whom he ſhould always be proud to ſerve; promiſed to peruſe the play with all diſpatch, and give me a meeting upon it; and, as a teſtimony of his eſteem, made me a preſent of a general order for the ſeaſon, by which I ſhould be admitted to any part of the theatre. This was a very agreeable compliment to me, whoſe greateſt pleaſure conſiſted in ſeeing dramatic performances, and you need not doubt that I often availed myſelf of my privilege. As I had an opportunity of being behind the ſcenes when I pleaſed, I frequently converſed with Mr. Brayer about my play, and aſked when he intended to put it into rehearſal; but he had always ſo much buſineſs upon his hands, that it remained with him unopened a conſiderable while; and I became very uneaſy about the ſeaſon, that waſted apace, when I ſaw in the papers another new play advertiſed, which had been written, offered, accepted, and rehearſed in the compaſs of three months. You may eaſily gueſs how much I was confounded at this event. I own to you, that, in the firſt tranſports of my anger, I ſuſpected Mr. Brayer of having acted towards me in the moſt pitiful perfidious manner; and was actually glad at his diſappointment in the ſucceſs of his favourite piece, which, by the ſtrength of art, lingered till the third night, and then died in a deplorable manner. But, now that paſſion has no ſhare in my reflection, I am willing to aſcribe his behaviour to his

want of memory or want of judgment, which, you know, are natural defects, that are more worthy of compaſſion than reproach.

"About this time I happened to be in company with a gentlewoman, who, having heard of my tragedy, told me, ſhe was acquainted with the wife of a gentleman, who was very well known to a lady, who had great intereſt with a perſon who was intimate with Earl Sheerwit, and that, if I pleaſed, ſhe would uſe her influence in my behalf. As this nobleman had the character of a Mæcenas in the nation, and could ſtamp a value upon any work by his ſole countenance and approbation, I accepted her offer with eagerneſs, in full confidence of ſeeing my reputation eſtabliſhed, and my wiſhes fulfilled in a very ſhort time, provided that I ſhould have the good fortune to pleaſe his lordſhip's taſte. I withrew the manuſcript from the hands of Mr. Brayer, and committed it to the care of this gentlewoman, who laboured ſo effectually in my intereſt, that in leſs than a month it was conveyed to the earl, and, in a few weeks after, I had the ſatisfaction to hear that he had read and approved it very much. Tranſported with this piece of intelligence, I flattered myſelf with the hopes of his intereſting himſelf in its favour; but hearing no more of this matter in three whole months, I began (God forgive me) to ſuſpect the veracity of the perſon who brought me the good tidings; for I thought it impoſſible that a man of his rank and character, who knew the difficulty of writing a good tragedy, and underſtood the dignity of the work, ſhould read and applaud an eſſay of this kind, without feeling an inclination to befriend the author, whom his countenance alone could raiſe above dependence. But it was not long before I found my friend very much wronged by my opinion.

"You muſt know that the civilities I had received from Lord Rattle, and the deſire he manifeſted to promote the ſucceſs of my play, encouraged me to write an account of my bad fortune to his lordſhip, who condeſcended ſo far as to deſire, by letter, a young ſquire of a great eſtate, with whom he was intimate, to eſpouſe my cauſe, and, in particular, make me acquainted with one

Mr. Marmozet, a celebrated player, who had lately appeared on the ſtage with aſtoniſhing eclat, and bore ſuch ſway in the houſe where he acted, that the managers durſt not refuſe any thing he recommended. The young gentleman whom Lord Rattle had employed for this purpoſe, being diffident of his own intereſt with Mr. Marmozet, had recourſe to a nobleman of his acquaintance, who, at his ſolicitation, was ſo good as to introduce me to him; and the converſation turning upon my performance, I was not a little ſurpriſed, as well as pleaſed, to hear, that Earl Sheerwit had ſpoken very much in its praiſe, and even ſent Mr. Marmozet the copy, with a meſſage expreſſing a deſire that he would act in it next ſeaſon. Nor was the favourite actor backward in commending the piece, which he mentioned with ſome expreſſions of regard, that I do not chooſe to repeat; aſſuring me that he would appear in it, provided he ſhould be engaged to play at all during the enſuing ſeaſon. In the mean time, he deſired I would give him leave to peruſe it in the country, whither he intended to remove next day, that he might have leiſure to conſider and point out ſuch alterations as might, perhaps, be neceſſary for its repreſentation; and took my direction, that he might communicate by letter the obſervations he ſhould make. Truſting to theſe aſſurances, and the intereſt which had been made in my behalf, I hugged myſelf in the expectation of ſeeing it not only acted, but acted to the greateſt advantage; and this I thought could not fail of recompenſing me in an ample manner for the anxiety and affliction I had undergone: But ſix weeks being elapſed, I did not know how to reconcile Mr. Marmozet's ſilence, with his promiſe of writing to me in ten days after he ſet out for the country; however, I was at laſt favoured with a letter, importing that he had made ſome remarks on my tragedy, which he would freely impart at meeting, and adviſing me to put it, without loſs of time, into the hands of that manager who had the beſt company, as he himſelf was quite uncertain whether or not he ſhould be engaged that winter. I was a good deal alarmed at this laſt part of his letter, and adviſed about it with a friend,

who told me, it was a plain indication of Mr. Marmozet's deſire to get rid of his promiſe; that his pretended uncertainty about acting next winter was no other than a ſcandalous evaſion; for, to his certain knowledge, he was already engaged, or at leaſt in terms with Mr. Vandal; and that his deſign was to diſappoint me, in favour of a new comedy, which he had purchaſed of the author, and intended to bring upon the ſtage for his own advantage. In ſhort, my dear Sir, this perſon, who, I muſt own, is of a ſanguine complexion, handled the moral character of Mr. Marmozet with ſuch ſeverity, that I began to ſuſpect him of ſome particular prejudice, and put myſelf upon my guard againſt his inſinuations. I ought to crave pardon for this tedious narration of trivial circumſtances, which, however intereſting they may be to me, muſt certainly be very dry and inſipid to the ear of one unconcerned in the affair. But I underſtand the meaning of your looks, and will proceed. Well, Sir, Mr. Marmozet, upon his return to town, treated me with uncommon complaiſance, and invited me to his lodgings, where he propoſed to communicate his remarks, which I confeſs were more unfavourable than I expected; but I anſwered his objections, and, as I thought, brought him over to my opinion; for, on the whole, he ſignified the higheſt approbation of the performance. In the courſe of our diſpute, I was not a little ſurpriſed to find this poor gentleman's memory ſo treacherous, as to let him forget what he had ſaid to me, before he went out of town, in regard to Earl Sheerwit's opinion of my play, which he now profeſſed himſelf ignorant of; and I was extremely mortified at hearing from his own mouth, that his intereſt with Mr. Vandal was ſo very low, as to be inſufficient of itſelf to bring a new piece upon the ſtage. I then begged his advice; and he counſelled me to apply to Earl Sheerwit for a meſſage in my favour to the manager, who would not preſume to refuſe any thing recommended by ſo great a man; and he was ſo kind as to promiſe to ſecond this meſſage with all his power. I had immediate recourſe to the worthy gentlewoman my friend already mentioned, who opened the channels of

her conveyance with ſuch expedition, that in a few days I had a promiſe of the meſſage, provided I could aſſure myſelf of Mr. Vandal's being unengaged to any other author; for his lordſhip did not chooſe to condeſcend ſo far, until he ſhould underſtand that there was a probability (at leaſt) of ſucceeding; at the ſame time that bleſſed me with this piece of news, I was ſtartled at another, by the ſame channel of communication; which was, that Mr. Marmozet, before he adviſed me to this application, had informed the earl, that he had read my play, and found it altogether unfit for the ſtage. Though I could not doubt the certainty of this intelligence, I believed there was ſome miſapprehenſion in the caſe; and without taking any notice of it, told Mr. Marmozet the anſwer I had been favoured with; and he promiſed to aſk Mr. Vandal the queſtion propoſed. I waited upon him in a day or two, when he gave me to underſtand, that Mr. Vandal having profeſſed himſelf free of all engagements, he had put my play into his hands, and repreſented it as a piece ſtrongly recommended by Earl Sheerwit, who (he aſſured him) would honour him with a meſſage in its favour; and he deſired me to call for an anſwer at Mr. Vandal's houſe in three days. I followed his directions, and found the manager, who, being made acquainted with my buſineſs, owned that Mr. Marmozet had given him a manuſcript play, but denied that he had mentioned Earl Sheerwit's name. When I informed him of the circumſtances of the affair, he ſaid he had no engagement with any author; that he would read my tragedy forthwith, and did not believe he ſhould venture to reject it in contradiction to his lordſhip's opinion, for which he had the utmoſt veneration, but put it into rehearſal without loſs of time. I was ſo much intoxicated with this encouragement, that I overlooked the myſterious conduct of Mr. Marmozet, and attended the manager at the time appointed, when, to my infinite confuſion, he pronounced my play improper for the ſtage, and rejected it accordingly. As ſoon as I could recollect myſelf from the diſorder into which this unexpected refuſal had thrown me, I expreſſed a deſire of hearing his objec-

tions, which were ſo groundleſs, indiſtinct, and unintelligible, that I perſuaded myſelf he had not at all peruſed the piece, but had been prompted by ſomebody, whoſe leſſons he had not rightly retained. However, I have been ſince informed, that the poor man's head, which was not naturally very clear, had been diſordered with ſuperſtition, and that he laboured under the tyranny of a wife, and the terrors of hell fire at the ſame time. Precipitated in this manner, from the higheſt pinnacle of hope, to the abyſs of deſpondence, I was ready to ſink under the burden of my affliction, and, in the bitterneſs of my anguiſh, could not help entertaining ſome doubts of Mr. Marmozet's integrity, when I recollected and compared the circumſtances of his conduct towards me. I was encouraged in this ſuſpicion, by being told, that my Lord Sheerwit had ſpoke of his character with great contempt, and, in particular, reſented his inſolence in oppoſing his own taſte to that of his lordſhip concerning my tragedy. While I heſitated between different opinions of the matter, that friend, who (as I told you before) was a little hot-headed, favoured me with a viſit, and having heard a circumſtantial account of the whole affair, could not contain his indignation, but affirmed without ceremony, that Marmozet was the ſole occaſion of my diſappointment; that he had acted from firſt to laſt with the moſt perfidious diſſimulation, cajoling me with inſinuating civilities, while he underhand employed all his art and influence to prejudice the ignorant manager againſt my performance; that nothing could equal his hypocriſy but his avarice, which engroſſed the faculties of his ſoul ſo much, that he ſcrupled not to be guilty of the meaneſt practices to gratify that ſordid appetite; that, in conſequence of this diſpoſition, he had proſtituted his honour in betraying my inexperience, and in undermining the intereſt of another author of eſtabliſhed reputation, who had alſo offered a tragedy to the ſtage, which he thought would interfere with the ſucceſs of the comedy he had bought, and determined to bring on at all events.

"I was ſhocked at the deſcription of ſuch a monſter, which I could not believe exiſted in the world, bad as

it is, and argued againſt the aſſeverations of my friend, by demonſtrating the bad policy of ſuch behaviour, which could not fail of entailing infamy upon the author; and the ſmall temptation that a man of Mr. Marmozet's figure and ſucceſs could have to conſult his intereſt in ſuch a groveling manner, which muſt create contempt and abhorrence of him in his patrons, and effectually deprive him of the countenance and protection he now enjoys in ſuch an eminent degree. He pretended to laugh at my ſimplicity, and aſked if I knew for which of his virtues he was ſo much careſſed by the people of faſhion. "It is not (ſaid he) for the qualities of his heart, that this little paraſite is invited to the tables of dukes and lords, who hire extraordinary cooks for his entertainment: His avarice they ſee not, his ingratitude they feel not, his hypocriſy accommodates itſelf to their humours, and is of conſequence pleaſing; but he is chiefly courted for his buffoonery, and will be admitted into the choiceſt parties of quality for his talent of mimicking Punch and his wife Joan, when a poet of the moſt exquiſite genius is not able to attract the leaſt regard." God forbid, Mr. Random, that I ſhould credit aſſertions that degrade the dignity of our ſuperiors ſo much, and repreſent that poor man as the moſt abject of all beings! No! I looked upon them as the hyperboles of paſſion; and though that comedy of which he ſpoke did actually appear, I dare not doubt the innocence of Mr. Marmozet, who, I am told, is as much as ever in favour with the earl; a circumſtance that ſurely could not be, unleſs he had vindicated his character to the ſatisfaction of his lordſhip. Pray forgive this long digreſſion, and give me the hearing a little longer; for, thank heaven! I am now near the goal.

"Baffled in all my attempts, I deſpaired of ſeeing my play acted; and bethought myſelf of chooſing ſome employment, that might afford a ſure, though mean ſubſiſtence; but my landlord, to whom I was by this time conſiderably indebted, and who had laid his account with having his money paid all in a heap, from the profits of my third night, could not bruik his diſappointment, therefore made another effort in my behalf, and, by dint

of intereſt, procured a meſſage from a lady of faſhion to Mr. Brayer, who had always profeſſed a great veneration for her, deſiring that he would ſet up my play forthwith, and aſſuring him that ſhe and all her friends would ſupport it in the performance: To ſtrengthen my intereſt, ſhe engaged his beſt actors in my cauſe; and, in ſhort, exerted herſelf ſo much, that it was again received, and my hopes began to revive. But Mr. Brayer, honeſt man, was ſo much engroſſed by buſineſs of vaſt conſequence, though to appearance he had nothing at all to do, that he could not find time to read it until the ſeaſon was pretty far advanced; and read it he muſt, for, notwithſtanding his having peruſed it before, his memory did not retain one circumſtance of the matter.

"At length he favoured it with his attention, and, having propoſed certain alterations, ſent his duty to the lady who patronized it, and promiſed, on his honour, to bring it on next winter, provided theſe alterations ſhould be made, and the copy delivered to him before the end of April. With an aching heart, I ſubmitted to theſe conditions, and performed them accordingly: But fortune owed me another unforeſeen mortification; Mr. Marmozet, during the ſummer, became joint patentee with Mr. Brayer; ſo that, when I claimed performance of articles, I was told, he could do nothing without the conſent of his partner, who was pre-engaged to another author.

"My condition was rendered deſperate by the death of my good friend and landlord, whoſe executors obtained a judgment againſt my effects, which they ſeized, turned me out into the ſtreets naked, friendleſs, and forlorn; there I was arreſted at the ſuit of my tailor, and thrown into this priſon, where I have made ſhift to live theſe five weeks on the bounty of my fellow-priſoners, who, I hope, are not the worſe for the inſtruction and good offices by which I manifeſt my gratitude; but, in ſpite of all their charitable endeavours, my life was ſcarce tolerable, until your uncommon benevolence enabled me to enjoy it with comfort."

CHAPTER LXIV.

I am ſeized with a deep melancholy, and become a ſloven—am relieved by my uncle—he prevails upon me to engage with his owners, as ſurgeon of the ſhip which he commands—he makes me a conſiderable preſent—entertains Strap as his ſteward—I take leave of my friends, and go on board—the ſhip arrives in the Downs.

I SHALL not make any reflections on this ſtory, in the courſe of which the reader muſt perceive how egregiouſly the ſimplicity and milky diſpoſition of this worthy man had been duped and abuſed by a ſet of ſcoundrels, who were ſo habituated to falſehood and equivocation, that I verily believe, they would have found the utmoſt difficulty in uttering one ſyllable of truth, though their lives had depended upon their ſincerity. Notwithſtanding all I had ſuffered from the knavery and ſelfiſhneſs of mankind, I was amazed and incenſed at the baſe indifference which ſuffered ſuch uncommon merit as he poſſeſſed to languiſh in obſcurity, and ſtruggle with all the miſeries of a lothſome jail; and ſhould have bleſſed the occaſion that ſecluded me from ſuch a perfidious world, had not the remembrance of the amiable Narciſſa preſerved my attachment to that ſociety of which ſhe conſtituted a part. The picture of that lovely creature was the conſtant companion of my ſolitude: How often did I contemplate the reſemblance of thoſe enchanting features that firſt captivated my heart! How often did I weep over thoſe endearing ſcenes which her image recalled; and how often did I curſe my perfidious fate for having robbed me of the fair original! In vain did my imagination flatter me with ſchemes of future happineſs; ſurly reaſon always interpoſed, and, in a moment, overthrew the unſubſtantial fabric, by chaſtiſing the extravagance of my hope, and repreſenting my unhappy ſituation in the right point of view: In vain did I fly for refuge to the amuſements of the place, and engage in the parties of Jackſon, at cards, billiards, nine-pins, and fives; a train of melancholy thoughts took poſſeſſion of my ſoul, which even the converſation of Melopoyn could not divert. I ordered Strap to inquire every day at

Banter's lodgings, in expectation of hearing again from my charmer; and my diſappointment conſiderably augmented my chagrin. My affectionate valet was infected with my ſorrow, and often ſat with me whole hours without ſpeaking, uttering ſigh for ſigh, and ſhedding tear for tear. This fellowſhip increaſed our diſtemper; he became incapable of buſineſs, and was diſcarded by his maſter; while I, ſeeing my money melt away, without any certainty of deliverance, and, in ſhort, all my hopes fruſtrated, grew negligent of life, loſt all appetite, and degenerated into ſuch a ſloven, that during the ſpace of two months, I was neither waſhed, ſhifted, nor ſhaved; ſo that my face, rendered meagre with abſtinence, was obſcured with dirt, and overſhadowed with hair, and my whole appearance ſqualid and even frightful; when, one day, Strap brought me notice, that there was a man below who wanted to ſpeak with me. Rouſed at this intelligence, and in full hopes of receiving a letter from the dear object of my love, I ran down ſtairs with the utmoſt precipitation, and found, to my infinite ſurpriſe, my generous uncle Mr. Bowling. Tranſported at the ſight, I ſprung forward to embrace him. Upon which he ſtarted aſide with great agility, drew his hanger, and put himſelf upon his guard, crying, "Avaſt, brother, avaſt! ſheer off?—Yo ho! you turnkey, why don't you keep a better look-out? here's one of your crazy priſoners broke from his laſhings, I do ſuppoſe." I could not help laughing heartily at his miſtake; but this I ſoon rectified by my voice, which he inſtantly recollected, and ſhook me by the hand with great affection, teſtifying his concern at ſeeing me in ſuch a miſerable condition.

I conducted him to my apartment, where, in preſence of Strap, whom I introduced to him as one of my beſt friends, he gave me to underſtand, that he was juſt arrived from the coaſt of Guinea, after having made a pretty ſucceſsful voyage, in which he had acted as mate, until the ſhip was attacked by a French privateer; that the captain being killed during the engagement, he had taken the command, and was ſo fortunate as to ſink the enemy; after which exploit he fell in with a merchant

ſhip from Martinico, laden with ſugar, indigo, and ſome ſilver; and, by virtue of his letter of marque, attacked, took, and brought her ſafe into Kinſale, in Ireland, where ſhe was condemned as a lawful prize; by which means he had not only got a pretty ſum of money, but alſo acquired the favour of his owners, who had already conferred upon him the command of a large ſhip, mounted with twenty nine-pounders, ready to ſail upon a very advantageous voyage, which he was not at liberty to diſcover. And he aſſured me, that it was with the greateſt difficulty he had found me, in conſequence of a direction left for him at his lodgings at Wapping.

I was rejoiced beyond meaſure at this account of his good fortune; and, at his deſire, recounted all the adventures that had happened to me ſince we parted. When he underſtood the particulars of Strap's attachment to me, he ſqueezed his hand very cordially, and promiſed to make a man of him; then giving me ten guineas for my preſent occaſion, took a direction for the tailor who arreſted me, and went away in order to diſcharge the debt, telling me at parting, that he would ſoon fetch up all my lee-way with a wet ſail.

I was utterly confounded at this ſudden tranſition, which affected me more than any reverſe I had formerly felt; and a crowd of incoherent ideas ruſhed ſo impetuouſly upon my imagination, that my reaſon could neither ſeparate nor connect them, when Strap, whoſe joy had manifeſted itſelf in a thouſand fooleries, came into my room with his ſhaving utenſils, and, without any previous intimation, began to lather my beard, whiſtling with great emotion all the while. I ſtarted from my reverie, and being too well acquainted with Strap, to truſt myſelf in his hands while he was under ſuch agitation, deſired to be excuſed, ſent for another barber, and ſuffered myſelf to be trimmed. Having performed the ceremony of ablution, I ſhifted, and dreſſing in my gayeſt apparel, waited for the return of my uncle, who was agreeably ſurpriſed at my ſudden transformation.

This beneficent kinſman had ſatisfied my creditor, and obtained an order for my diſcharge, ſo that I was no longer a priſoner; but as I had ſome reluctance to pay

with my friends and fellows in diſtreſs, I prevailed upon Mr. Bowling to favour us with his company, and invited Mr. Melopoyn and Jackſon to ſpend the evening at my apartment, where I regaled them with a ſupper, good wine, and the news of my releaſe, on which they heartily congratulated me, notwithſtanding the loſs of my company, which, they were pleaſed to ſay, they ſhould ſeverely feel. As for Jackſon, his misfortune made ſo little impreſſion on himſelf, and he was altogether ſo looſe, indifferent, and indiſcreet, that I could ſcarce pity his ſituation: But I had conceived a veneration and friendſhip for the poet, who was, in all reſpects, an object much more worthy of compaſſion and regard. When our gueſts withdrew, and my uncle had retired, with an intention to viſit me next morning, I made up a bundle of ſome linen, and other neceſſaries, and bidding Strap carry them to Mr. Melopoyn's lodging, went thither myſelf, and preſſed it upon his acceptance, with five guineas, which, with much difficulty, he received, aſſuring me at the ſame time, that he ſhould never have it in his power to make ſatisfaction. I then aſked if I could ſerve him any other way: To which he anſwered, "You already have done too much;" and unable to contain the emotions of his ſoul any longer, burſt into tears, and wept aloud. Moved at this ſpectacle, I left him to his repoſe; and when my uncle returned in the morning, repreſented his character in ſuch a favourable light, that the honeſt ſeaman was affected with his diſtreſs, and determined to follow my example, in preſenting him with five pieces more: Upon which, that I might ſave him ſome confuſion, I adviſed Mr. Bowling to encloſe it in a letter to be delivered by Strap after we ſhould be gone.

This was accordingly done. I took a formal leave of all my acquaintance in the jail; and juſt as I was about to ſtep into a hackney-coach at the gate, Jackſon calling me, I returned, and he aſked me in a whiſper, if I could lend him a ſhilling? His demand being ſo moderate, and in all likelihood the laſt he would make upon me, I ſlipped a guinea into his hand, which he no ſooner perceived, than he cried, "O Jeſus! a guinea!" then laying hold of a button of my coat, broke out into an immode-

rate fit of laughter; and when his convulſion was ended, told me, I was an honeſt fellow, and let me go. The coachman was ordered to drive to Mr. Bowling's lodgings, where, when we arrived, he entered into a ſerious diſcourſe with me on the ſubject of my ſituation, and propoſed that I ſhould ſail with him in quality of his ſurgeon; in which caſe he would put me in a method of getting a fortune in a few years by my own induſtry; and aſſured me, that I might expect to inherit all that he ſhould die poſſeſſed of, provided I ſhould ſurvive him. Though I was penetrated with a ſenſe of his generoſity, I was ſtartled at a propoſal that offered violence to my love, and ſignified my ſentiments on that head, which he did not ſeem to reliſh, but obſerved, that love was the fruit of idleneſs; that, when once I ſhould be employed in buſineſs, and my mind engaged in making money, I ſhould be no more troubled with theſe ſilly notions, which none but your fair-weather Jacks, who have nothing but their pleaſure to mind, ought to entertain. I was piqued at this inſinuation, which I looked upon as a reproach, and, without giving myſelf time to deliberate, accepted his offer. He was overjoyed at my compliance, carried me immediately to his chief owner, with whom a bargain was ſtruck; ſo that then I could not retract with honour, had I been ever ſo much averſe to the agreement. That I might not have time to cool, he bade me draw out a liſt of medicines for a complement of five hundred men, adapted to the diſtempers of hot climates, and ſufficient for a voyage of eighteen months, and carry it to a certain wholeſale apothecary, who would alſo provide me in two well qualified mates. While I was thus employed, Strap came in, and looked very blank, when he underſtood my reſolution: However, after a pauſe of ſome minutes, he inſiſted upon going along with me; and at my deſire was made ſhip's ſteward by Captain Bowling, who promiſed to be at the expence of fitting him out, and to lend him two hundred pounds to purchaſe an adventure.

When I had delivered my liſt of medicines, choſen a couple of my own countrymen for mates, and beſpoke a ſet of chirurgical inſtruments, my uncle told me, that,

by his laſt voyage, he had cleared almoſt three thouſand pounds, one third of which he would immediately make over and put into my hands; that he would procure for me credit to the value of as much more, in ſuch goods as would turn to beſt account in the country to which we were bound; and that, although he looked upon my intereſt as his own, he would keep the remaining part of his fortune in his own diſpoſal, with a view of preſerving his independence, and a power of puniſhing me, in caſe I ſhould not make a good uſe of what he had already beſtowed.

Without troubling the reader with an account of the effect which this ſurpriſing generoſity had upon my mind, I ſhall only ſay, that his promiſes were inſtantly performed, and an invoice of merchandiſe proper for the voyage preſented to me, that I might purchaſe the goods, and ſhip them with all expedition. In the midſt of this hurry, the remembrance of my charming Narciſſa often interpoſed, and made me the moſt miſerable of all mortals. I was diſtracted with the thought of being torn from her, perhaps, for ever; and though the hope of ſeeing her again might have ſupported me under the torments of ſeparation, I could not reflect upon the anguiſh ſhe muſt feel at parting with me, and the inceſſant ſorrows to which her tender boſom would be expoſed during my abſence, without being pierced with the deepeſt affliction. As my imagination was daily and nightly upon the rack to invent ſome method of mitigating this cruel ſtroke, or at leaſt of acquitting my love and honour in the opinion of this gentle creature, I at length ſtumbled upon an expedient, with which the reader will be made acquainted in due time; and, in conſequeuce of my determination, became leſs uneaſy and diſturbed.

My buſineſs being finiſhed, and the ſhip ready to ſail, I reſolved to make my laſt appearance among my acquaintance at the other end of the town, where I had not been ſeen ſince my impriſonment; and as I had, by the advice of my uncle, taken off ſome very rich clothes for ſale, I put on the gayeſt ſuit in my poſſeſſion, and went in a chair to the coffee-houſe I uſed to frequent, where I found my friend Banter ſo confounded at the

magnificence of my dreſs, that, when I made up to him, he gazed at me with a look of aſtoniſhment, without being able, for ſome minutes, to open his lips; then pulling me aſide by the ſleeve, and fixing his eyes on mine, accoſted me in this manner: "Random, where the devil have you been? eh!—What is the meaning of all this finery?—Oho! I underſtand you.—You are juſt arrived from the country! what! the roads are good, eh! —Well, Random, you are a bold fellow, and a lucky fellow!—but take care, the pitcher goes often to the well, but is broke at laſt." So ſaying, he pointed to his collar; by which geſture, and the broken hints he had ejaculated, I found he ſuſpected me of having robbed on the highway; and I laughed very heartily at his ſuppoſition. Without explaining myſelf any further, I told him he was miſtaken in his conjecture; that I had been for ſome time paſt with the relation of whom he had frequently heard me ſpeak; and that, as I ſhould ſet out next day upon my travels, I had come to take my leave of my friends, and to receive of him the money he had borrowed from me, which, now that I was going abroad, I ſhould certainly have occaſion for. He was a little diſconcerted at this demand; but, recollecting himſelf in a moment, ſwore in an affected paſſion, that I had uſed him extremely ill, and he would never forgive me, for having, by this ſhort warning, put it out of his power to free himſelf of an obligation he could no longer bear. I could not help ſmiling at this pretended delicacy, which I commended highly, telling him, he needed not to be uneaſy on that ſcore, for I would give him a direction to a merchant in the city, with whom I would leave a diſcharge for the ſum, to be delivered upon payment. He profeſſed much joy at this expedient, and with great eagerneſs aſked the perſon's name and place of abode, which he forthwith wrote in his pocket-book, aſſuring me, that he ſhould not be long in my debt. This affair, which I knew he would never after think of, being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, I ſent cards to all my friends, deſiring the favour of their company at a tavern in the evening, when they honoured my invitation, and I had the pleaſure of treating them in a very elegant manner,

at which they expreſſed equal admiration as applauſe. Having enjoyed ourſelves till midnight, I took my leave of them, and was well nigh ſtifled with careſſes: Next day I ſet out with Strap in a poſt chaiſe for Graveſend, where we went on board, and, the wind ſerving, weighed anchor in leſs than twelve hours. Without meeting with any accident, we reached the Downs, where we were obliged to come to an anchor, and wait for an eaſterly wind to carry us out of the Channel.

CHAPTER LXV.

I ſet out for Suſſex—conſult Mrs. Sagely—atchieve an interview with Narciſſa—return to the ſhip—we get clear of the Channel—I learn our deſtination—we are chaſed by a large ſhip—the company are diſmayed, and encouraged by the captain's ſpeech—our purſuer happens to be an Engliſh man of war—we arrive at the coaſt of Guinea, purchaſe 400 negroes, ſail for Paraguay, get ſafe into the river of Plate, and ſell our cargo to great advantage.

It was now I put in execution the ſcheme I had projected at London; and aſking leave of the captain for Strap and me to ſtay on ſhore till the wind ſhould become favourable, my requeſt was granted, becauſe he had orders to remain in the Downs until he ſhould receive ſome diſpatches from London, which he did not expect in leſs than a week. Having imparted my reſolution to my truſty valet, who (though he endeavoured to diſſuade me from ſuch a raſh undertaking) would not quit me in the enterpriſe, I hired horſes, and ſet out immediately for that part of Suſſex where my charmer was confined, which was not above thirty miles diſtant from Deal, where we mounted. As I was perfectly well acquainted with the extent of the Squire's eſtate and influence, I halted within five miles of his houſe, where we remained till the twilight, at which time we ſet forward, and, by the favour of a dark night, reached a copſe about half a mile from the village where Sagely lived. Here we left our horſes tied to [redacted] to the houſe of my old benefactor, the way, and venting ejac[redacted]

for our ſafety. Her habitation being quite ſolitary, we arrived at the door without being obſerved, when I ordered my companion to enter by himſelf, and, in caſe there ſhould be company with her, deliver a letter which I had writ for that purpoſe, and ſay that a friend of hers in London, underſtanding that he intended to travel this road, had committed it to his care. He rapped at the door, to which the good old matron coming, told him, that being a lone woman, he muſt excuſe her if ſhe did not open it until he had declared his name and buſineſs. He anſwered, that his name was unknown to her, and that his buſineſs was to deliver a letter, which (to free her from all manner of apprehenſion) he would convey to her through the ſpace between the door and threſhold. This he inſtantly performed; and ſhe no ſooner read the contents, which ſpecified my being preſent, than ſhe cried, "If the perſon who wrote this letter be at hand, let him ſpeak, that I may be aſſured by his voice whether or not I may ſafely admit him." I forthwith applied my mouth to the key-hole, and pronounced, "Dear mother, you need not be afraid, it is I, ſo much indebted to your goodneſs, who now crave admittance." She knew my voice, and, opening the door immediately, received me with a truly maternal affection, manifeſting by the tears ſhe let fall her concern leſt I ſhould be diſcovered, for ſhe had been informed of every thing that had happened between Narciſſa and me, from the dear captive's own mouth. When I explained the motive of my journey, which was no other than a deſire of ſeeing the object of my love before I ſhould quit the kingdom, that I might in perſon convince her of the neceſſity I was under to leave her, reconcile her to that event, by deſcribing the advantages that in all probability would attend it, repeat my vows of eternal conſtancy, and enjoy the melancholy pleaſure of a tender embrace at parting; I ſay, when I had thus ſignified my intention, Mrs. Sagely told me, that Narciſſa, upon her return from Bath, had been ſo ſtrictly watched, that nobody but one or two of the ſervants, devoted to her brother, was admitted to her preſence; that afterwards ſhe had been a little enlarged, and was

permitted to ſee company, during which indulgence ſhe had been ſeveral times at her cottage; but of late ſhe had been betrayed by one of the ſervants, who diſcovered to the ſquire, that he had once carried a letter from her to the poſt-houſe, directed to me; upon which information ſhe was now more confined than ever, and that I could have no chance of ſeeing her, unleſs I would run the riſk of getting into the garden, where ſhe and her maid were every day allowed to take the air, and lie hid until I ſhould have an opportunity of ſpeaking to them—an adventure attended with ſuch danger, that no man in his right wits would attempt it. This enterpriſe, hazardous as it was, I reſolved to perform, in ſpite of all the arguments of Mrs. Sagely, who reaſoned, chid, and entreated by turns, and the tears and prayers of Strap, who conjured me, on his knees, to have more regard to myſelf, as well as to him, than to attempt my own deſtruction in ſuch a precipitate manner. I was deaf to every thing but the ſuggeſtions of my love; and ordering him to return immediately with the horſes to the inn from whence we ſet out, and wait for my coming in that place, he at firſt peremptorily refuſed to leave me, until I perſuaded him, that, if our horſes ſhould remain where they were till day-light, they would certainly be diſcovered, and the whole county alarmed. On this conſideration, he took his leave in a ſorrowful plight, kiſſed my hand, and weeping, cried, "God knows if ever I ſhall ſee yon again."—My kind landlady, finding me obſtinate, gave me her beſt advice how to behave in the execution of my project; and, after having perſuaded me to take a little refreſhment, accommodated me with a bed, and left me to my repoſe. Early in the morning, I aroſe, and armed with a couple of loaded piſtols and a hanger, went to the back of the ſquire's garden, climbed over the wall, and, according to Mrs. Sagely's direction, concealed myſelf in a thicket, hard by an alcove that terminated a walk at a good diſtance from the houſe, which (I was told) my miſtreſs chiefly frequented. Here I ab[illegible] from five o'clock in the morning to fix in t[illegible] human creature; at la[illegible]

proaching, whom, by my throbbing heart, I ſoon recognized to be the adorable Narciſſa and Miſs Williams. I felt the ſtrongeſt agitation of ſoul at the ſight; and gueſſing that they would repoſe themſelves in the alcove, ſtepped into it unperceived, and laid upon the ſtone table a picture of myſelf in miniature, for which I had ſat in London, purpoſing to leave it with Narciſſa before I ſhould go abroad. I expoſed it in this manner, as an introduction to my own appearance, which, without ſome previous intimation, I was afraid might have an unlucky effect upon the delicate nerves of my fair enſlaver; and then withdrew into the thicket, where I could hear their diſcourſe, and ſuit myſelf to the circumſtances of the occaſion. As they advanced, I obſerved an air of melancholy in the countenance of Narciſſa, blended with ſuch unſpeakable ſweetneſs, that I could ſcarce refrain from flying into her arms, and kiſſing away the pearly drop that ſtood collected in each bewitching eye. According to my expectation, ſhe entered the alcove, and perceiving ſomething on the table, took it up. No ſooner did ſhe caſt her eye upon the features, than, ſtartled at the reſemblance, ſhe cried, "Good God!" and the roſes inſtantly vaniſhed from her cheeks. Her confident, alarmed at this exclamation, looked at the picture, and, ſtruck with the likeneſs, exclaimed, "O Jeſus! the very features of Mr. Random!" Narciſſa having recollected herſelf a little, ſaid, "Whatever angel brought it hither as a comfort to me in my affliction, I am thankful for the benefit, and will preſerve it as the deareſt object of my care." So ſaying, ſhe kiſſed it with ſurpriſing ardour, ſhed a flood of tears, and then depoſited the lifeleſs image in her lovely boſom. Tranſported at theſe ſymptoms of her unaltered affection, I was about to throw myſelf at her feet, when Miſs Williams, whoſe reflection was leſs engaged than that of her miſtreſs, obſerved, that the picture could not tranſport itſelf hither, and that ſhe could not help thinking I was not far off. The gentle Narciſſa ſtartling at this conjecture, anſwered, "Heaven forbid! for although nothing in the univerſe could yield me ſatisfaction equal to that of his preſence for one poor moment,

in a proper place, I would rather forfeit his company—almoſt for ever, than ſee him here, where his life would be expoſed to ſo much danger." I could no longer reſtrain the impulſe of my paſſion, but, breaking from my concealment, ſtood before her, when ſhe uttered a fearful ſhriek, and fainted in the arms of her companion. I flew towards the treaſure of my ſoul, claſped her in my embrace, and, with the warmth of my kiſſes, brought her again to life. O! that I were endowed with the expreſſion of a Raphael, the graces of a Guido, the magic touches of a Titian, that I might repreſent the fond concern, the chaſtened rapture, and ingenuous bluſh, that mingled in her beauteous face when ſhe opened her eyes upon me, and pronounced, "O heavens! is it you?"

I am afraid I have already encroached upon the reader's patience, with the particulars of this amour, on which (I own) I cannot help being impertinently circumſtantial. I ſhall therefore omit the leſs material paſſages of this interview, during which I convinced her reaſon, though I could not appeaſe the ſad preſages of her love, with regard to the long voyage and dangers I muſt undergo. When we had ſpent an hour (which was all ſhe could ſpare from the barbarity of her brother's vigilance) in lamenting over our hard fate, and in repeating our reciprocal vows, Miſs Williams reminded us of the neceſſity there was for our immediate parting; and ſure, lovers never parted with ſuch ſorrow and reluctance as we. But becauſe my words are incapable of doing juſtice to this affecting circumſtance, I am obliged to draw a veil over it, and obſerve, that I returned in the dark to the houſe of Mrs. Sagely, who was overjoyed to hear of my ſucceſs, and oppoſed the tumults of my grief with ſuch ſtrength of reaſon, that my mind regained in ſome meaſure its tranquillity; and that very night, after having forced upon the good gentlewoman a purſe of twenty guineas, as a token of my gratitude and eſteem, I took my leave of her, and ſet out on foot for the inn, where my arrival found [redacted] neſt Strap from the horrors of unutterable

We took horſe immediately, and

morning at Deal, where I found my uncle in great concern on account of my abſence, becauſe he had received his diſpatches, and muſt have weighed with the firſt fair wind, whether I had been on board or not. Next day, a briſk eaſterly gale ſpringing up, we ſet ſail, and in eight and forty hours got clear of the Channel.

When we were about two hundred leagues to weſtward of the Land's-end, the captain taking me apart into the cabin, told me, that, now he was permitted by his inſtructions, he would diſcloſe the intent aud deſtination of our voyage: "The ſhip, ſaid he, which has been fitted out at a great expence, is bound for the coaſt of Guinea, where we ſhall exchange part of our cargo for ſlaves and gold duſt; from thence we will tranſport our negroes to Buenos Ayres in New Spain, where (by virtue of paſſports obtained from our own court, and that of Madrid) we will diſpoſe of them and the goods that remain on board for ſilver, by means of our ſupercargo, who is perfectly well acquainted with the coaſt, the lingo, and inhabitants." Being thus let into the ſecret of our expedition, I borrowed of the ſupercargo a Spaniſh grammar, dictionary, and ſome other books of the ſame language, which I ſtudied with ſuch application, that, before we arrived in New Spain, I could maintain a converſation with him in that tongue. Being arrived in the warm latitudes, I ordered (with the captain's conſent) the whole ſhip's company to be blooded and purged, myſelf undergoing the ſame evacuation, in order to prevent thoſe dangerous fevers to which northern conſtitutions are ſubject in hot climates; and I have reaſon to believe that this precaution was not unſerviceable, for we loſt but one ſailor during our whole paſſage to the coaſt.

One day, when we had been about five weeks at ſea, we deſcried to windward a large ſhip bearing down upon us with all the ſail ſhe could carry. Upon which my uncle ordered the ſtudding ſails to be hoiſted, and the ſhip to be cleared for engaging; but finding that (to uſe the ſeaman's phraſe) we were very much wronged by the ſhip which had us in chaſe, and which by this time had hoiſted French colours, he commanded the ſtudding-

ſails to be taken in, the courſes to be clewed up, the main-top ſail to be backed, the tompions to be taken out of the guns, and every man to repair to his quarters. While every body was buſied in the performance of theſe orders, Strap came upon the quarter-deck, trembling, and looking aghaſt, and, with a voice half ſuppreſſed by fear, aſked if I thought we were a match for the veſſel in purſuit of us. Obſerving his conſternation, I ſaid, "What! are you afraid, Strap?" "Afraid! (he replied) n-n-no; what ſhould I be afraid of? I thank God, I have a clear conſcience; but I believe it will be a bloody battle, and I wiſh you may not have occaſion for another hand to aſſiſt you in the cock-pit." I immediately perceived his drift, and making the captain acquainted with his ſituation, deſired he might be ſtationed below with me and my mates. My uncle, incenſed at his puſillanimity, bade me ſend him down inſtantly, that his fear might not infect the ſhip's company; whereupon I told the poor ſteward, that I had begged him for my aſſiſtant, and deſired him to go down and help my mates to get ready the inſtruments and dreſſings. Notwithſtanding the ſatisfaction he muſt have felt at theſe tidings, he affected a ſhyneſs of quitting the upper-deck; and ſaid, he hoped I did not imagine he was afraid to do his duty above board; for he believed himſelf as well prepared for death as any man in the ſhip, no diſparagement to me or the captain. I was diſguſted at this affectation, and, in order to puniſh his hypocriſy, aſſured him, he might take his choice either of going down to the cock-pit with me, or of ſtaying upon deck during the engagement. Alarmed at this indifference, he replied, "Well, to oblige you, I'll go down; but, remember, it is more for your ſake than my own." So ſaying, he diſappeared in a twinkling, without waiting for an anſwer. By this time we could obſerve two tier of guns in the ſhip which purſued us, and which was now but two ſhort miles aſtern. This diſcovery had an evident effect upon the ſailors, who did not ſcruple to ſay, that we ſhould be tore to pieces, and blown out of the water, and that, if in caſe any of them ſhould loſe their precious limbs, they muſt go a-begging for life, for there

was no proviſion made by the merchants for thoſe poor ſouls who were maimed in their ſervice. The captain, underſtanding this backwardneſs, ordered the crew abaft, and ſpoke to them thus: "My lads, I am told you hang an a—ſe.—I have gone to ſea thirty years man and boy, and never ſaw Engliſh ſailors afraid before. Mayhap you think I want to expoſe you for the lucre of gain. Whoſoever thinks ſo, thinks a damned lie, for my whole cargo is inſured; ſo that, in caſe I ſhould be taken, my loſs would not be great. The enemy is ſtronger than we, to be ſure. What then? have we not a chance for carrying away one of her maſts, and ſo get clear of her? If we find her too hard for us, 'tis but ſtriking at laſt. If any man is hurt in the engagement, I promiſe, on the word of an honeſt ſeaman, to make him a recompence according to his loſs. So now, you that are lazy, lubberly, cowardly dogs, get away, and ſkulk in the hold and bread room; and you that are jolly boys, ſtand by me, and let us give one broad-ſide for the honour of Old England." This eloquent harangue was ſo well adapted to the diſpoſition of his hearers, that one and all of them, pulling off their hats, waved them over their heads, and ſaluted him with three cheers; upon which he ſent his boy for two large caſe bottles of brandy, and having treated every man with a dram, they repaired to their quarters, and waited impatiently for the word of command. I muſt do my uncle the juſtice to ſay, that, in the whole of his diſpoſition, he behaved with the utmoſt intrepidity, conduct, and deliberation. The enemy being very near, he ordered me to my ſtation, and was juſt going to give the word for hoiſting the colours, and firing, when the ſuppoſed Frenchman hauled down his white pennant, jack, and enſign, hoiſted Engliſh ones, and fired a gun a-head of us: This was a joyful event to Captain Bowling, who immediately ſhowed his colours, and fired a gun to leeward: Upon which the other ſhip ran along-ſide of us, hailed him, and giving him to know that ſhe was an Engliſh man of war of forty guns, ordered him to hoiſt out his boat and come on board. This command he obeyed with the more alacrity, becauſe, upon inquiry, he found that ſhe was commanded

by an old meſs-mate of his, who was overjoyed to ſee him, detained him to dinner, and ſent his barge for the ſupercargo and me, who were very much careſſed on his account. As this commander was deſtined to cruize upon the French, in the latitude of Martinico, his ſtem and quarters were adorned with white flowers-de-lis, and the whole ſhell of the ſhip ſo much diſguiſed for a decoy to the enemy, that it was no wonder my uncle did not know her, although he had ſailed on board of her many years. We kept company with her four days, during which time the captains were never aſunder, and then parted, our courſe lying different from hers.

In leſs than a fortnight after our ſeparation, we made the land of Guinea, near the mouth of the river Gambia, and trading along the coaſt as far to the ſouthward of the line as Angola and Bengula, in leſs than ſix months diſpoſed of the greateſt part of our cargo, and purchaſed four hundred negroes, my adventure having been laid out in gold duſt.

Our compliment being made up, we took our departure from Cape Negroe, and arrived in the Rio de la Plata in ſix weeks, having met with nothing remarkable in our voyage, except an epidemic fever, not unlike the jail diſtemper, which broke out among our ſlaves, and carried off a good many of the ſhip's company; among whom I loſt one of my mates, and poor Strap had well nigh given up the ghoſt. Having produced our paſſport to the Spaniſh governor, we were received with great courteſy, ſold our ſlaves in a very few days, and could have put off five times the number at our own price; though we were obliged to ſmuggle the reſt of our merchandiſe, conſiſting of European bale goods, which, however, we made ſhift to diſpoſe of at a great advantage.

CHAPTER LXVI.

I am invited to the villa of a Spaniſh Don, where we meet with an Engliſh gentleman, and make a very intereſting diſcovery—we leave Buenos Ayres, and arrive at Jamaica.

Our ſhip being freed from the diſagreeable lading of negroes, to whom indeed I had been a miſerable ſlave ſince our leaving the coaſt of Guinea, I began to enjoy myſelf, and breathe with pleaſure the pure air of Paraguay, this part of which is reckoned the Montpelier of South America, and has obtained, on account of its climate, the name of Buenos Ayres. It was in this delicious place that I gave myſelf entirely up to the thoughts of my dear Narciſſa, whoſe image ſtill kept poſſeſſion of my breaſt, and whoſe charms, enhanced by abſence, appeared to my imagination, if poſſible, more engaging than ever! I calculated the profits of my voyage, which even exceeded my expectation; reſolved to purchaſe a handſome ſineçure upon my arrival in England, and, if I ſhould find the ſquire as averſe to me as ever, marry his ſiſter by ſtealth; and in caſe our family ſhould increaſe, rely upon the generoſity of my uncle, who was by this time worth a conſiderable ſum.

While I amuſed myſelf with theſe agreeable projects, and the tranſporting hopes of enjoying Narciſſa, we were very much careſſed by the Spaniſh gentlemen, who frequently formed parties of pleaſure for our entertainment, in which we made excurſions a good way into the country. Among thoſe who ſignalized themſelves by their civility to us, there was one Don Antonio de Ribera, a very polite young gentleman, with whom I had contracted an intimate friendſhip, who invited us one day to his country houſe, and, as a further inducement to our compliance, promiſed to procure for us the company of an Engliſh ſignior, who had been ſettled in thoſe parts many years, and acquired the love and eſteem of the whole province, by his affability, good ſenſe, and honourable behaviour.

We accepted his invitation, and ſet out for his villa,

where we had not been longer than an hour, when the perſon arrived in whoſe favour I had been ſo much prepoſſeſſed. He was a tall man, remarkably well-ſhaped, of a fine mien and appearance, commanding reſpect, and ſeemed to be turned of forty; the features of his face were ſaddened with a reſerve and gravity, which in other countries would have been thought the effect of melancholy; but here appeared to have been contracted by his commerce with the Spaniards, who are remarkable for that ſeverity of countenance. Underſtanding from Don Antonio that we were his countrymen, he ſaluted us all round very complaiſantly, and fixing his eyes very attentively on me, uttered a deep ſigh. I had been ſtruck with a profound veneration for him at his firſt coming into the room; and no ſooner obſerved this expreſſion of his ſorrow, directed, as it were, in a particular manner to me, than my heart took part in his grief. I ſympathized involuntarily, and ſighed in my turn. Having aſked leave of our entertainer, he accoſted us in Engliſh, profeſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing ſo many of his countrymen in ſuch a remote place, and aſked the captain, who went by the name of Signior Thoma, from what part of Britain he had ſailed, and whither he was bound. My uncle told him that we had ſailed from the river Thames, and were bound for the ſame place, by the way of Jamaica, where we intended to take in a lading of ſugar.

Having ſatisfied myſelf in theſe and other particulars about the ſtate of the war, he gave us to underſtand that he had a longing deſire to reviſit his native country, in conſequence of which he had already tranſmitted to Europe the greateſt part of his fortune in neutral bottoms, and would willingly embark the reſt of it with himſelf, in our ſhip, provided the captain had no objection to ſuch a paſſenger. My uncle very prudently replied, that for his part he ſhould be glad of his company, if he could procure the conſent of the governor, without which he durſt not admit him on board, whatever inclination he had to oblige him. The gentleman approved of his diſcretion, and, telling him that there would be no difficulty in obtaining the connivance of the governor, who was

his good friend, ſhifted the converſation to another ſubject.

I was overjoyed to hear his intention, and already intereſted myſelf ſo much in his favour, that, had he been diſappointed, I ſhould have been very unhappy: In the courſe of our entertainment, he eyed me with uncommon attachment; I felt a ſurpriſing attraction towards him! when he ſpoke, I liſtened with attention and reverence; the dignity of his deportment filled me with affection and awe; and, in ſhort, the emotions of my ſoul, in preſence of this ſtranger, were ſtrong and unaccountable.

Having ſpent the beſt part of the day with us, he took his leave, telling Captain Thoma, that he ſhould hear from him in a ſhort time. He was no ſooner gone, than I aſked a thouſand queſtions about him of Don Antonio, who could give me no other ſatisfaction, than that his name was Don Rodrigo, that he had lived fifteen or ſixteen years in theſe parts, was reputed rich, and ſuppoſed to have been unfortunate in his younger years, becauſe he was obſerved to nouriſh a penſive melancholy, even from the time of his firſt ſettlement among them; but that nobody had ventured to inquire into the cauſe of his ſorrow, in conſideration of his peace, which might ſuffer in the recapitulation of his misfortunes.

I was ſeized with an irreſiſtible deſire of knowing the particulars of his fate, and enjoyed not one hour of repoſe during the whole night, by reaſon of the eager conceptions that inſpired me with regard to his ſtory, which I reſolved (if poſſible) to learn. Next morning, while we were at breakfaſt, three mules richly capariſoned arrived with a meſſage from Don Rodrigo, deſiring our company, and that of Don Antonio, at his houſe, which was ſituated about ten miles farther up in the country. I was pleaſed with this invitation, in conſequence of which we mounted the mules which he had provided for us, and alighted at his houſe before noon. Here we were ſplendidly entertained by the generous ſtranger, who ſtill ſeemed to ſhow a particular regard for me, and, after dinner, made me a preſent of a ring ſet with a beautiful amethyſt, the production of that country, ſaying at the

ſame time, that he was once bleſſed with a ſon, who, had he lived, would have been nearly of my age. This obſervation, delivered with a profound ſigh, made my heart throb with violence; a crowd of confuſed ideas ruſhed upon my imagination, which while I endeavoured to unravel, my uncle perceived my abſence of thought, and tapping me on the ſhoulder, ſaid, "Oons! are you aſleep, Rory!" Before I had time to reply, Don Rodrigo, with uncommmon eagerneſs of voice and look, pronounced, "Pray, Captain, what is the young gentleman's name?"—"His name (ſaid my uncle) is Roderick Random." "Gracious Powers!" (cried the ſtranger, ſtarting up)—"And his mother's!"—"His mother (anſwered the Captain amazed) was called Charlotte Bowling." "O bounteous Heaven! (exclaimed Don Rodrigo, ſpringing acroſs the table, and claſping me in his arms), my ſon! my ſon! have I found thee again?—do I hold thee in my embrace, after having loſt and deſpaired of ſeeing thee ſo long?" So ſaying, he fell upon my neck and wept aloud with joy; while the power of nature operating ſtrongly in my breaſt, I was loſt in rapture, and while he preſſed me to his heart, let fall a ſhower of tears into his boſom. His utterance was choked up a good while by the agitation of his ſoul: At length he broke out into, "Myſterious Providence!—O my dear Charlotte! there yet remains a pledge of our love; and ſuch a pledge!—ſo found!—O infinite goodneſs; let me adore thy all-wiſe decrees!" Having thus expreſſed himſelf, he kneeled upon the floor, lifted up his eyes and hands to heaven, and remained ſome minutes in a ſilent ecſtaſy of devotion: I put myſelf in the ſame poſture, adored the All-good Diſpoſer in a prayer of mental thankſgiving; and when his ejaculation was ended, did homage to my father, and craved his parental bleſſing. He hugged me again with unutterable fondneſs, and having implored the protection of Heaven upon my head, raiſed me from the ground, and preſented me as his ſon to the company, who wept in concert over this affecting ſcene. Among the reſt, my uncle did not fail to diſcover the goodneſs and joy of his heart: *Albeit unuſed to the melting mood*, he blubbered

with great tenderneſs, and wringing my father's hand, cried, "Brother Random, I'm rejoiced to ſee you—God be praiſed for this happy meeting." Don Rodrigo, underſtanding that he was his brother-in-law, embraced him affectionately, ſaying, "Are you my Charlotte's brother?—Alas! unhappy Charlotte! but why ſhould I repine? we ſhall meet again nevermore to part!—Brother, you are truly welcome.—Dear ſon, I am tranſported with unſpeakable joy!—This day is a jubilee—my friends and ſervants ſhall ſhare my ſatisfaction."

While he diſpatched meſſengers to the gentlemen in the neighbourhood, to announce this event, and gave orders for a grand entertainment, I was ſo much affected with the tumults of paſſion, which aſſailed me on this great, ſudden, and unexpected occaſion, that I fell ſick, fevered, and in leſs than three hours became quite delirious; ſo that the preparations were countermanded, and the joy of the family converted into grief and deſpair. Phyſicians were inſtantly called; I was plentifully blooded in the foot, my lower extremities were bathed in a decoction of ſalutiferous herbs; in ten hours after I was taken ill I enjoyed a critical ſweat, and next day felt no remains of the diſtemper, but an agreeable laſſitude, which did not hinder me from getting up. During the progreſs of this fever, which, from the term of its duration, is called *Ephemera*, my father never once quitted my bed-ſide, but adminiſtered the preſcriptions of the phyſicians with the moſt pious care; while Captain Bowling manifeſted his concern by the like attendance. I no ſooner found myſelf delivered from the diſeaſe, than I bethought myſelf of my honeſt friend, Strap; and reſolving to make him happy forthwith in the knowledge of my good fortune, told my father in general, that I had been infinitely obliged to this faithful adherent, and begged he would indulge me ſo far as to ſend for him, without letting him know my happineſs, until he could receive an account of it from my own mouth.

My requeſt was inſtantly complied with, and a meſſenger with a ſpare mule detached to the ſhip, carrying orders from the captain to the mate to ſend the ſteward

by the bearer. My health being, in the mean time, re-eſtabliſhed, and my mind compoſed, I began to reliſh this important turn of my fortune, in reflecting upon the advantages with which it muſt be attended; and as the idea of my lovely Narciſſa always joined itſelf to every ſcene of happineſs I could imagine, I entertained myſelf now with the proſpect of poſſeſſing her in that diſtinguiſhed ſphere to which ſhe was entitled by her birth and qualifications. Having often mentioned her name while I was deprived of my ſenſes, my father gueſſed that there was an intimate connection between us, and diſcovering the picture which hung in my boſom by a ribbon, did not doubt that it was the reſemblance of my amiable miſtreſs: In this belief he was confirmed by my uncle, who told him that it was the picture of a young woman, to whom I was under promiſe of marriage. Alarmed at this piece of information, Don Rodrigo took the firſt opportunity of queſtioning me about the particulars of this affair, which when I had candidly recounted, he approved of my paſſion, and promiſed to contribute all in his power towards its ſucceſs. Though I never doubted his generoſity, I was tranſported on this occaſion, and throwing myſelf at his feet, told him, he had now completed my happineſs; for, without the poſſeſſion of Narciſſa, I ſhould be miſerable among all the pleaſures of life. He raiſed me with a ſmile of paternal fondneſs; ſaid, he knew what it was to be in love; and obſerved, that if he had been as tenderly beloved by his father as I was by mine, he ſhould not now perhaps have cauſe—Here he was interrupted by a ſigh, the tear ruſhed into his eye, he ſuppreſſed the dictates of his grief, and the time being opportune, deſired me to relate the paſſages of my life, which my uncle had told him were manifold and ſurpriſing. I recounted the moſt material circumſtances of my fortune, to which he liſtened with wonder and attention, manifeſting from time to time thoſe different emotions which my different ſituations may be ſuppoſed to have raiſed in a parent's breaſt, and, when my detail was ended, bleſſed God for the adverſity I had undergone, which, he ſaid, enlarged the underſtanding, im-

proved the heart, ſteeled the conſtitution, and qualified a young man for all the duties and enjoyments of life, much better than any education which affluence could beſtow.

When I had thus ſatisfied his curioſity, I diſcovered an inclination to hear the particulars of his ſtory, which he gratified, by beginning with his marriage, and proceeded to the day of his diſappearing, as I have related in the firſt part of my memoirs. "Careleſs of life (continued he), and unable to live in a place where every object recalled the memory of my dear Charlotte, whom I had loſt through the barbarity of an unnatural parent, I took my leave of you, my child, then an infant, with a heart full of unutterable woe, but little ſuſpecting that my father's unkindneſs would have deſcended to my innocent orphan; and ſetting out alone at midnight for the neareſt ſea-port, early next morning got on board a ſhip, bound, as I had heard, for France, and bargaining with the maſter for my paſſage, bade a long adieu to my native country, and put to ſea with the firſt fair wind. The place of our deſtination was Granville; but we had the misfortune to run upon a ridge of rocks near the iſland of Alderney, called the Caſkets, where the ſea running high, the ſhip went to pieces, the boat ſunk along-ſide, and every ſoul on board periſhed, except myſelf, who, by the aſſiſtance of a grating, got aſhore on the coaſt of Normandy. I went directly to Caen, where I was ſo lucky as to meet with a count, whom I had formerly known in my travels: With this gentleman I ſet out for Paris, where I was recommended by him and other friends, as a tutor to a young nobleman, whom I accompanied to the court of Spain. There we remained a whole year, at the end of which my pupil being recalled by his father, I quitted my office, and ſtaid behind, by the advice of a certain Spaniſh grandee, who took me into his protection, and introduced me to another nobleman, who was afterwards created viceroy of Peru. He inſiſted on my attending him to his government in the Indies, where, however, by reaſon of my religion, it was not in his power to make my fortune any other way than by encouraging me to trade, which

I had not long proſecuted, when my patron died, and I found myſelf in the midſt of ſtrangers, without one friend to ſupport or protect me. Urged by this conſideration, I ſold my effects, and removed to this country, the governor of which having been appointed by the viceroy, was my intimate acquaintance. Here has Heaven proſpered my endeavours, during a reſidence of ſixteen years, in which my tranquillity was never invaded, but by the remembrance of your mother, whoſe death I have in ſecret mourned without ceaſing, and the reflection of you, whoſe fate I could never learn, notwithſtanding all my inquiries, by means of my friends in France, who, after the moſt ſtrict examination, could give me no other account, than that you went abroad ſix years ago, and was never after heard of. I could not reſt ſatisfied with this imperfect information, and though my hope of finding you was but languid, reſolved to go in queſt of you in perſon; for which purpoſe, I have remitted to Holland the value of twenty thouſand pounds, and am in poſſeſſion of fifteen thouſand more, with which I intended to embark myſelf on board of Captain Bowling, before I diſcovered this amazing ſtroke of Providence, which you may be ſure has not altered my intention."

My father having entertained us with this agreeable ſketch of his life, withdrew, in order to relieve Don Antonio, who, in his abſence, had done the honours of his houſe; and I was juſt dreſſed for my appearance among the gueſts, when Strap arrived from the ſhip.

He no ſooner entered the grand apartment in which I was, and ſaw the magnificence of my apparel, than his ſpeech was loſt in amazement, and he gaped in ſilence at the objects that ſurrounded him. I took him by the hand, obſerved that I had ſent for him to be a witneſs and ſharer of my happineſs, and told him I had found a father. At theſe words he ſtarted, and after having continued ſome minutes with his mouth and eyes wide open, cried, "Aha!—odd, I know what! go thy ways, poor Narciſſa, and go thy ways, ſomebody elſe—well—Lord, what a thing is love!—God help us! are all our mad pranks and proteſtations come to this? and

have you fixed your habitation in this diſtant land? God proſper you!—I find we muſt part at laſt—for I would not leave my poor carcaſe ſo far from my native home for all the wealth of the univerſe!" With theſe ejaculations, he began to ſob and make wry faces; upon which I aſſured him of his miſtake, both in regard to Narciſſa, and my ſtaying in Paraguay, and informed him, as briefly as I could, of the great event which had happened. Never was rapture more ludicrouſly expreſſed, than in the behaviour of this worthy creature, who cried, laughed, whiſtled, ſung, and danced, all in a breath: His tranſport was ſcarce over, when my father entered, who no ſooner underſtood that this was Strap, than he took him by the hand, ſaying, "Is this the honeſt man, who befriended you ſo much in your diſtreſs? you are welcome to my houſe, and I will ſoon put it in the power of my ſon to reward you for your good offices in his behalf; in the mean time, go with us, and partake of the repaſt that is provided." Strap, wild as he was with joy, would by no means accept of the proffered honour, crying, "God forbid!—I know my diſtance—your worſhip ſhall excuſe me." And Don Rodrigo finding his modeſty invincible, recommended him to his major domo, to be treated with the utmoſt reſpect; while he carried me into a large ſaloon, where I was preſented to a numerous company, who loaded me with compliments and careſſes, and congratulated my father in terms not proper for me to repeat.

Without ſpecifying the particulars of our entertainment, let it ſuffice to ſay, it was at the ſame time elegant and ſumptuous, and the rejoicings laſted two days: After which, Don Rodrigo ſettled his affairs, converted his effects into ſilver and gold, viſited and took leave of all his friends, who were grieved at his departure, and honoured me with conſiderable preſents; and coming on board of my uncle's ſhip, with the firſt favourable wind we ſailed from the Rio de la Plata, and in two months came ſafe to an anchor in the harbour of Kingſton, in the iſland of Jamaica.

CHAPTER LXVII.

I viſit my old friend Thomſon—we ſet ſail for Europe—meet with an odd adventure—arrive in England—I ride acroſs the country from Portſmouth to Suſſex—converſe with Mrs. Sagely, who informs me of Narciſſa's being in London—in conſequence of this intelligence, I proceed to Canterbury—meet with my old friend Morgan—arrive at London—viſit Narciſſa—introduce my father to her—he is charmed with her good ſenſe and beauty—we come to a determination of demanding her brother's conſent to our marriage.

I INQUIRED, as ſoon as I got aſhore, about my generous companion, Mr. Thomſon; and hearing that he lived in a flouriſhing condition upon the eſtate left him by his wife's father, who had been dead ſome years, I took horſe immediately, with the conſent of Don Rodrigo, who had heard me mention him with great regard, and in a few hours reached the place of his habitation.

I ſhould much wrong the delicacy of Mr. Thomſon's ſentiments, to ſay barely he was glad to ſee me: He felt all that the moſt ſenſible and diſintereſted friendſhip could feel on this occaſion; introduced me to his wife, a very amiable young lady, who had already bleſſed him with two fine children; and being as yet ignorant of my circumſtances, frankly offered me the aſſiſtance of his purſe and intereſt. I thanked him for his generous intention, and made him acquainted with my ſituation, on which he congratulated me with great joy, and after I had ſtaid with him a whole day and night, accompanied me back to Kingſton, to wait upon my father, whom he invited to his houſe. Don Rodrigo complied with his requeſt, and, having been handſomely entertained during the ſpace of a week, returned extremely well ſatisfied with the behaviour of my friend and his lady, to whom, at parting, he preſented a very valuable diamond ring, as a token of his eſteem. During the courſe of my converſation with Mr. Thomſon, he gave me to underſtand, that his and my old commander, Captain Oakum, was dead ſome months; and that, immediately after his death, a diſcovery had been made of ſome valuable effects that he had feloniouſly ſecreted out

of a prize, by the aſſiſtance of Dr. Mackſhane, who was now actually in priſon on that account, and being deſtitute of friends, ſubſiſted ſolely on the charity of my friend, whoſe bounty he had implored in the moſt abject manner, after having been the barbarous occaſion of driving him to that terrible extremity on board of the Thunder, which we have formerly related. Whatſoever this wretch might have been guilty of, I applauded Mr. Thomſon's generoſity towards him in his diſtreſs, which wrought ſo much upon me alſo, that I ſent him ten piſtoles, in ſuch a private manner, that he could never know his benefactor.

While my father and I were careſſed among the gentlemen on ſhore, Captain Bowling had written to his owners, by the packet, which ſailed a few days after our arrival, ſignifying his proſperous voyage hitherto, and deſiring them to enſure his ſhip and cargo homeward-bound; after which precaution, he applied himſelf ſo heartily to the taſk of loading his ſhip, that, with the aſſiſtance of Mr. Thomſon, ſhe was full in leſs than ſix weeks. This kind gentleman likewiſe procured for Don Rodrigo bills upon London for the greateſt part of his gold and ſilver, by which means it was ſecured againſt the riſk of the ſeas and the enemy; and, before we ſailed, ſupplied us with ſuch large quantities of all kinds of ſtock, that not only we, but the ſhip's company, fared ſumptuouſly during the voyage.

Every thing being ready, we took our leave of our kind entertainers, and, going on board at Port Royal, ſet ſail for England on the firſt day of June. We beat up to windward, with fine eaſy weather; and one night, believing ourſelves near Cape Tiberoon, lay to, with an intention to wood and water next morning in the bay. While we remained in this ſituation, a ſailor, having drank more new rum than he could carry, ſtaggered overboard, and, notwithſtanding all the means that could be uſed to preſerve him, went to the bottom and diſappeared. About two hours after this melancholy accident happened, as I enjoyed the cool air on the quarter deck, I heard a voice riſing, as it were, out of the ſea, and calling, "Ho, the ſhip, ahoy!" Upon

which one of the men upon the forecaſtle, cried, "I'll be damn'd, if that an't Jack Marlinſpike, who went overboard!" Not a little ſurpriſed at this event, I jumped into the boat that lay along-ſide, with the ſecond mate and four men, and, rowing towards the place from whence the voice (which repeated the hail) ſeemed to proceed, we perceived ſomething floating upon the water; when we had rowed a little farther, we diſcerned it to be a man riding upon a hencoop, who, ſeeing us approach, pronounced with a hoarſe voice, "Damn your bloods! why did you not anſwer when I hailed?" Our mate, who was a veritable ſeaman, hearing this ſalute, ſaid, "By G—, my lads, this is none of our man. This is the devil—pull away for the ſhip." The fellows obeyed his command, without queſtion, and were already ſome fathoms on our return, when I inſiſted on their taking up the poor creature, and prevailed upon them to go back to the wreck; which when we came near the ſecond time, and ſignified our intention, we received an anſwer of, "Avaſt, avaſt—what ſhip, brother?" Being ſatisfied in this particular, he cried, "Damn the ſhip, I was in hopes it had been my own—where are you bound?" We ſatisfied his curioſity in this particular too; upon which he ſuffered himſelf to be taken on board, and, after having been comforted with a dram, told us, he belonged to the Veſuvio man of war, upon a cruize off the iſland of Hiſpaniola; he had fallen overboard about four and twenty hours ago, and the ſhip being under ſail, they did not chooſe to bring to, but toſſed a hencoop overboard for his convenience, upon which he was in good hopes of reaching the Cape next morning; howſomever, he was as well content to be a-board of us, becauſe he did not doubt that we ſhould meet his ſhip; and, if he had gone aſhore in the bay, he might have been taken priſoner by the French. My uncle and father were very much diverted with the account of this fellow's unconcerned behaviour; and, in two days, meeting with the Veſuvio, as he expected, ſent him on board of her, according to his deſire.

Having beat up ſucceſsfully the Windward Paſſage,

we ſtretched to the northward, and falling in with a weſterly wind, in eight weeks arrived in ſoundings, and in two days after made the Lizard. It is impoſſible to expreſs the joy I felt at the ſight of Engliſh ground! Don Rodrigo was not unmoved, and Strap ſhed tears of gladneſs. The ſailors profited by our ſatisfaction; the ſhoe that was nailed to the maſt being quite filled with our liberality. My uncle reſolved to run up into the Downs at once; but the wind ſhifting when we were abreaſt of the Iſle of Wight, he was obliged to turn into St. Helen's, and come to Spithead, to the great mortification of the crew, thirty of whom were immediately preſſed on board of a man of war.

My father and I went aſhore immediately at Portſmouth, leaving Strap with the Captain to go round with the ſhip and take care of our effects; and I diſcovered ſo much impatience to ſee my charming Narciſſa, that my father permitted me to ride acroſs the country to her brother's houſe; while he ſhould hire a poſt chaiſe for London, where he would wait for me at a place to which I directed him.

Fired with all the eagerneſs of paſſion, I took poſt that very night, and in the morning reached an inn, about three miles from the 'ſquires habitation; here I remained till next morning, allaying the torture of my impatience with the rapturous hope of ſeeing that divine creature, after an abſence of eighteen months, which, far from impairing, had raiſed my love to the moſt exalted pitch! Neither were my reflections free from apprehenſions, that ſometimes intervened in ſpite of all my hope, and repreſented her as having yielded to the importunity of her brother, and bleſſed the arms of an happy rival. My thoughts were even maddened with the fear of her death; and when I arrived in the dark at the houſe of Mrs. Sagely, I had not for ſome time courage to deſire admittance, leſt my ſoul ſhould be ſhocked with diſmal tidings. At length, however, I knocked, and no ſooner certified the good gentlewoman of my voice, than ſhe opened the door and received me with a moſt affectionate embrace, that brought tears into her aged eyes: "For Heaven's ſake! dear

mother (cried I), tell me, how is Narciſſa? is ſhe the ſame that I left her?" She bleſſed my ears with ſaying, "She is as beautiful, in as good health, and as much yours as ever." Tranſported at this aſſurance, I begged to know if I could not ſee her that very night; when this ſage matron gave me to underſtand that my miſtreſs was in London, and that things were ſtrangely altered in the 'ſquire's houſe ſince my departure; that he had been married a whole year to Melinda, who at firſt found means to wean his attention ſo much from Narciſſa, that he became quite careleſs of that lovely ſiſter, comforting himſelf with the clauſe in his father's will, by which ſhe ſhould forfeit her fortune by marrying without his conſent; that my miſtreſs being but indifferently treated by her ſiſter-in-law, had made uſe of her freedom ſome months ago, and gone to town, where ſhe was lodged with Miſs Williams, in expectation of my arrival; and had been peſtered with the addreſſes of Lord Quiverwit, who finding her heart engaged, had fallen upon a great many ſhifts to perſuade her that I was dead; but finding all his artifices unſucceſsful, and deſpairing of gaining her affection he had conſoled himſelf for her indifference, by marrying another lady ſome weeks ago, who had already left him on account of ſome family uneaſineſs. Beſides this intereſting information, ſhe told me, that there was not a great deal of harmony between Melinda and the 'ſquire, who was ſo much diſguſted at the number of gallants who continued to hover about her even after marriage, that he had hurried her down into the country much againſt her own inclination, where their mutual animoſities had riſen to ſuch a height, that they preſerved no decency before company or ſervants, but abuſed one another in the groſſeſt terms.

This good old gentlewoman, to give me a convincing proof of my dear Narciſſa's unalterable love, gratified me with a ſight of the laſt letter ſhe had favoured her with, in which I was mentioned with ſo much honour, tenderneſs, and concern, that my ſoul was fired with impatience, and I determined to ride all night, that I might have it the ſooner in my power to make

her happy. Mrs. Sagely perceiving my eagerneſs, and her maternal affection being equally divided between Narciſſa and me, begged leave to remind me of the ſentiments with which I went abroad, that would not permit me for any ſelfiſh gratification to prejudice the fortune of that amiable young lady, who muſt entirely depend upon me, after having beſtowed herſelf in marriage. I thanked her for her kind concern, and as briefly as poſſible deſcribed my flouriſhing ſituation, which afforded this humane perſon infinite wonder and ſatisfaction. I told her, that now I had an opportunity to manifeſt my gratitude for the obligations I owed, I would endeavour to make her old age comfortable and eaſy; as a ſtep to which, I propoſed ſhe ſhould come and live with Narciſſa and me. This venerable gentlewoman was ſo much affected with my words, that the tears ran down her ancient cheeks; ſhe thanked Heaven that I had not belied the preſages ſhe had made, on her firſt acquaintance with me; acknowledging my generoſity, as ſhe called it, in the moſt elegant and pathetic expreſſions; but declined my propoſal, on account of her attachment to the dear melancholy cottage where ſhe had ſo peacefully conſumed her ſolitary widowhood. Finding her immoveable on this ſubject, I inſiſted on her accepting a preſent of thirty guineas, and took my leave, reſolving to accommodate her with the ſame ſum annually, for the more comfortable ſupport of the infirmities of old age.

Having rode all night, I found myſelf at Canterbury in the morning, where I alighted to procure freſh horſes; and, as I walked into the inn, perceived an apothecary's ſhop on the other ſide of the ſtreet, with the name of Morgan over the door. Alarmed at this diſcovery, I could not help thinking that my old meſsmate had ſettled in this place; and, upon inquiry, found my conjecture true, and that he was married lately to a widow in that city, by whom he had got three thouſand pounds. Rejoiced at this intelligence, I went to his ſhop as ſoon as it was open, and found my friend behind the counter, buſy in preparing a glyſter. I ſaluted him at entrance, with "Your ſervant,

Mr. Morgan." Upon which he looked at me, and replying, "Your moſt humble ſervant, goot Sir!" rubbed his ingredients in the mortar, without any emotion, "What! (ſaid I), Morgan, have you forgot your old meſs-mate?" At theſe words, he looked up again, and ſtarting, cried, "As Got is my—ſure it cannot—yes, by my ſalfation, I pelieve it is my dear friend Mr. Rantom." He was no ſooner convinced of my identity, than he threw down the peſtle, overſet the mortar, and jumping over the board, ſwept up the contents with his clothes, flew about my neck, hugged me affectionately, and daubed me all over with turpentine and the yolks of eggs, which he had been mixing when I came in. Our mutual congratulations being over, he told me, that he found himſelf a widower upon his return from the Weſt Indies; that he had got intereſt to be appointed ſurgeon of a man of war, in which capacity he had ſerved ſome years, until he married an apothecary's widow, with whom he now enjoyed a pretty good ſum of money, peace and quiet, and an indifferent good trade. He was very deſirous of hearing my adventures, which I aſſured him I had not time to relate, but told him in general, my circumſtances were very good, and that I hoped to ſee him when I ſhould not be in ſuch a hurry as at preſent. He inſiſted, however, on my ſtaying breakfaſt, and introduced me to his wife, who ſeemed to be a decent ſenſible woman, pretty well ſtricken in years. In the courſe of our converſation, he ſhowed the ſleeve buttons I had exchanged with him at our parting in the Weſt Indies, and was not a little proud to ſee that I had preſerved his with the ſame care. When I informed him of Mackſhane's condition, he ſeemed at firſt to exult over his diſtreſs; but, after a little recollection, ſaid, "Well, he has paid for his malice, I forgiſe him, and may Got forgiſe him likewiſe." He expreſſed great concern for the ſoul of Captain Oakhum, which he believed was now gnaſhing its teeth; but it was ſome time before I could convince him of Thomſon's being alive, at whoſe good fortune, nevertheleſs, he was extremely glad.

Having renewed our proteſtations of friendſhip, I bade the honeſt Welchman and his ſpouſe farewel, and taking poſt horſes, arrived at London that ſame night, where I found my father in good health, to whom I imparted what I had learned of Narciſſa. This indulgent parent approved of my intention of marrying her, even without a fortune, provided her brother's conſent could not be obtained; promiſed to make over to me in a few days a ſufficiency to maintain her in a faſhionable manner, and expreſſed a deſire of ſeeing this amiable creature, who had captivated me ſo much. As I had not ſlept the night before, and was beſides fatigued with my journey, I found myſelf under a neceſſity of taking ſome repoſe, and went to bed accordingly; next morning about ten o'clock, took a chair, and according to Mrs. Sagely's directions, went to my charmer's lodgings, and inquired for Miſs Williams. I had not waited in the parlour longer than a minute, when this young woman entered, and no ſooner perceived me, than ſhe ſhrieked and ran backward; but I got between her and the door, and claſping her in my arms, brought her to herſelf with an embrace. "Good Heaven! (cried ſhe), Mr. Random, is it you indeed! my miſtreſs will run diſtracted with joy." I told her, it was from an apprehenſion that my ſudden appearance might have ſome bad effect on my dear Narciſſa, that I had deſired to ſee her firſt, in order to concert ſome method of acquainting her miſtreſs gradually with my arrival. She approved of my conduct, and, after having yielded to the ſuggeſtions of her own friendſhip, in aſking if my voyage had been ſucceſsful, charged herſelf with that office, and left me glowing with deſire of ſeeing and embracing the object of my love. In a very little time I heard ſomebody come down ſtairs in haſte, and the voice of my angel pronounce, with an eager tone, "O Heaven! is it poſſible! where is he?" How were my faculties arouſed at this well-known ſound! and how was my ſoul tranſported, when ſhe broke in upon my view, in all the bloom of ripened beauty! *Grace was in all her ſteps, heaven in her eye, in every geſture dignity and love!*—You whoſe ſouls are ſuſceptible of the moſt

delicate impreſſions, whoſe tender boſoms have felt the affecting viciſſitudes of love, who have ſuffered an abſence of eighteen long months from the dear object of your hope, and found at your return the melting fair, as kind and as conſtant as your heart could wiſh, do me juſtice on this occaſion, and conceive what unutterable rapture poſſeſſed us both, while we flew into each other's arms! This was no time for ſpeech,—locked in a mutual embrace, we continued ſome minutes in a ſilent trance of joy!—When I thus encircled all that my ſoul held dear,—while I hung over her beauties,—beheld her eyes ſparkle, and every feature flush with virtuous fondneſs; when I ſaw her enchanting boſom heave with undiſſembled rapture, and knew myſelf the happy cauſe—Heavens! what was my ſituation! I am tempted to commit my paper to the flames, and to renounce my pen for ever, becauſe its moſt ardent and lucky expreſſion ſo poorly deſcribes the emotions of my ſoul. O adorable Narciſſa! (cried I), O miracle of beauty, love, and truth! I at laſt fold thee in my arms! I at laſt can call thee mine! No jealous brother ſhall thwart our happineſs again; fortune hath at length recompenſed me for all my ſufferings, and enabled me to do juſtice to my love. The dear creature ſmiled ineffably charming, and with a look of bewitching tenderneſs, ſaid, "And ſhall we never part again?" "Never! (I replied), thou wondrous pattern of all earthly perfection! never, until death ſhall divide us! By this ambroſial kiſs, a thouſand times more fragrant than the breeze that ſweeps the orange grove, I never more will leave thee!"

As my firſt tranſport abated, my paſſion grew turbulent and unruly. I was giddy with ſtanding on the brink of bliſs, and all my virtue and philoſophy were ſcarce ſufficient to reſtrain the inordinate ſallies of deſire. Narciſſa perceived the conflict within me, and, with her uſual dignity of prudence, called off my imagination from the object in view, and with eager expreſſions of intereſted curioſity, deſired to know the particulars of my voyage. In this I gratified her inclination, bringing my ſtory down to the preſent hour.

She was infinitely ſurpriſed at the circumſtance of my finding my father, which brought tears into her lovely eyes. She was tranſported at hearing that he approved my flame, diſcovered a longing deſire of being introduced to him, congratulated herſelf and me upon my good fortune, and obſerved that this great and unexpected ſtroke of fate ſeemed to have been brought about by the immediate direction of Providence. Having entertained ourſelves ſome hours with the genuine effuſions of our ſouls, I obtained her conſent to complete my happineſs as ſoon as my father ſhould judge it proper, and applying with my own hands a valuable necklace, compoſed of diamonds and amethyſts ſet alternately, which an old Spaniſh lady at Paraguay had preſented me with, I took my leave, promiſing to return in the afternoon with Don Rodrigo. When I went home, this generous parent inquired very affectionately about the health of my dear Narciſſa, to whom that I might be the more agreeable, he put into my hand a deed, by which I found myſelf in poſſeſſion of fifteen thouſand pounds, excluſive of the profits of my own merchandiſe, which amounted to three thouſand more. After dinner I accompanied him to the lodging of my miſtreſs, who being dreſſed for the occaſion, made a moſt dazzling appearance. I could perceive him ſtruck with her figure, which I really think was the moſt beautiful that ever was created under the ſun. He embraced her tenderly, and told her, he was proud of having a ſon who had a ſpirit to attempt, and qualifications to engage the affections of ſuch a fine lady. She bluſhed at this compliment, and with eyes full of the ſofteſt languiſhment turned upon me, ſaid, ſhe ſhould have been unworthy of Mr. Random's attention, had ſhe been blind to his extraordinary merit. I made no other anſwer than a low bow. My father, ſighing, pronounced, "Such once was my Charlotte!" while the tear ruſhed into his eye, and the tender heart of Narciſſa manifeſted itſelf in two precious drops of ſympathy, which, but for his preſence, I would have kiſſed away. Without repeating the particulars of our converſation, I ſhall only obſerve, that Don Rodrigo was as much charmed with her good ſenſe as with her appearance; and ſhe

was no leſs pleaſed with his underſtanding and polite addreſs. It was determined that he ſhould write to the ſquire, ſignifying his approbation of my paſſion for his ſiſter, and offering a ſettlement which he ſhould have no reaſon to reject; and that, if he ſhould refuſe the propoſal, we would crown our mutual wiſhes without any farther regard to his will.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

My father makes a preſent to Narciſſa—the letter is diſpatched to her brother—I appear among my acquaintance—Banter's behaviour—the Squire refuſes his conſent—my uncle comes to town—approves of my choice—I am married—we meet the Squire and his lady at the play—our aquaintance is courted.

AFTER having ſpent the evening to the ſatisfaction of all preſent, my father addreſſed himſelf thus to Narciſſa, "Madam, give me leave to conſider you hereafter as my daughter, in which capacity I inſiſt upon your accepting this firſt inſtance of my paternal duty and affection. With theſe words he put into her hand a bank-note of 500l. which ſhe no ſooner examined, than with a low curtſey ſhe replied, "Dear Sir, though I have not the leaſt occaſion for this ſupply, I have too great a veneration for you to refuſe this proof of your generoſity and eſteem, which I the more freely receive, becauſe I already look upon Mr. Random's intereſt as inſeparably connected with mine." He was extremely well pleaſed with her frank and ingenuous reply; upon which we ſaluted, and wiſhed her good night. The letter, at my requeſt, was diſpatched to Suſſex by an expreſs, and in the mean time, Don Rodrigo, to grace my nuptials, hired a ready furniſhed houſe, and ſet up a very handſome equipage.

Though I paſſed the greateſt part of the day with the darling of my ſoul, I found leiſure ſometimes to be among my former acquaintance, who were aſtoniſhed at the magnificence of my appearance: Banter in particular was confounded at the ſtrange viciſſitudes of my fortune, the cauſes of which he endeavoured in

vain to diſcover, until I thought fit to diſcloſe the whole ſecret of my laſt voyage, partly in conſideration of our former intimacy, and partly to prevent unfavourable conjectures which he and others, in all probability, would have made in regard to my circumſtances. He profeſſed great ſatisfaction at this piece of news, and I had no cauſe to believe him inſincere, when I conſidered that he would now look upon himſelf as acquitted of the debt he owed me, and at the ſame time flatter himſelf with hopes of borrowing more. I carried him home to dinner with me, and my father liked his converſation ſo much, that, upon hearing his difficulties, he deſired me to accommodate him for the preſent, and inquire if he would accept of a commiſſion in the army, towards the purchaſe of which he would willingly lend him money. Accordingly, I gave my friend an opportunity of being alone with me, when, as I expected, he told me that he was juſt on the point of being reconciled to an old rich uncle, whoſe heir he was, but wanted a few pieces for immediate expence, which he deſired I would lend him, and take his bond for the whole. His demand was limited to ten guineas; and when I put twenty into his hand, he ſtared at me for ſome moments; then putting it into his purſe, ſaid, "Ay, 'tis all one,—you ſhall have the whole in a very ſhort time." When I had taken his note, to ſave the expence of a bond, I expreſſed ſome ſurpriſe that a fellow of his ſpirit ſhould loiter away his time in idleneſs, and aſked why he did not chooſe to make his fortune in the army. What! (ſaid he), throw away my money upon a ſubaltern's commiſſion, to be under the command of a parcel of ſcoundrels, who have raiſed themſelves above me by the moſt infamous practices! no, I love independency too well to ſacrifice my life, health, and pleaſure, for ſuch a pitiful conſideration."—Finding him averſe to this way of life, I changed the ſubject, and returned to Don Rodrigo, who had juſt received the following epiſtle from the ſquire.

"SIR,

"CONCERNING a letter which I received, ſubſcribed

R. Random, this is the anſwer. As for you, I know nothing of you. Your ſon, or pretended ſon, I have ſeen;—if he marries my ſiſter, at his peril be it; I do declare, that he ſhall not have one farthing of her fortune, which becomes my property, if ſhe takes a huſband without my conſent. Your ſettlement, I do believe, is all a ſham, and yourſelf no better than you ſhould be; but if you had all the wealth of the Indies, your ſon ſhall never match in our family, with the conſent of

ORSON TOPEHALL."

My father was not much ſurpriſed at this polite letter, after having heard the character of the author; and as for me, I was even pleaſed at his refuſal, becauſe I now had an opportunity of ſhowing my diſintereſted love. By his permiſſion I waited on my charmer; and, having imparted the contents of her brother's letter, at which ſhe wept bitterly, in ſpite of all my conſolation and careſſes, the time of our marriage was fixed at the diſtance of two days. During this interval, in which my ſoul was wound up to the laſt ſtretch of rapturous expectation, Narciſſa endeavoured to reconcile ſome of her relations in town to her marriage with me; but, finding them all deaf to her remonſtrances, either out of envy or prejudice, ſhe told me with the moſt enchanting ſweetneſs, while the tears bedewed her lovely cheeks, "Sure the world will no longer queſtion your generoſity, when you take a poor forlorn beggar to your arms." Affected with her ſorrow, I preſſed the fair mourner to my breaſt, and ſwore that ſhe was more dear and welcome on that account, becauſe ſhe had ſacrificed her friends and fortune to her love for me. My uncle, for whoſe character ſhe had a great veneration, being by this time come to town, I introduced him to my bride; and although he was not very much ſubject to refined ſenſations, he was ſtruck dumb with admiration at her beauty. After having kiſſed and gazed at her for ſome time, he turned to me, ſaying, Odds bobs, Rory! here's a notable prize indeed! finely built and gloriouſly rigged, i'faith! if I when you have the

command of her, ſirrah, you deſerve to go to ſea in a cockle ſhell. No offence, I hope, niece; you muſt not mind what I ſay, being (as the ſaying is) a plain ſea-faring man, thof mayhap I have as much regard for you as another." She received him with great civility, told him ſhe had longed a great while to ſee a perſon to whom ſhe was ſo much indebted for his generoſity to Mr. Random; that ſhe looked upon him as her uncle, by which name ſhe begged leave to call him for the future; and that ſhe was very ſure he could ſay nothing that would give her the leaſt offence. The honeſt Captain was tranſported at her courteous behaviour, and inſiſted upon giving her away at the ceremony, ſwearing that he loved her as well as if ſhe was his own child, and that he would give two thouſand guineas to the firſt fruit of our love, as ſoon as it could ſqueak. Every thing being prepared for the ſolemnization of our nuptials, which were to be performed privately at my father's houſe, the auſpicious hour arrived, when Don Rodrigo and my uncle went in the coach to fetch the bride and Miſs Williams; leaving me with a parſon, Banter, and Strap, neither of whom had as yet ſeen my charming miſtreſs. My faithful valet, who was on the rack of impatience to behold a lady of whom he had heard ſo much, no ſooner underſtood that the coach was returned, than he placed himſelf at a window to have a peep at her as ſhe alighted; and when he ſaw her, clapped his hands together, turned up the white of his eyes, and, with his mouth wide open, remained in a ſort of ecſtaſy, which broke out into, "*O Dea certe! qualis in Eurotæ ripis, aut per juga Cynthi, exercet Diano chorus!*" —The doctor and Banter were ſurpriſed to hear my man ſpeak Latin; but when my father led Narciſſa into the room, the object of their admiration was ſoon changed, as appeared in the countenances of both. Indeed they muſt have been the moſt inſenſible of all beings, could they have beheld, without emotion, the divine creature that approached! She was dreſſed in a ſack of white ſattin, embroidered on the breaſt with gold; the crown of her head was covered with a ſmall French cap, from whence deſcended her beautiful hair in ring-

lets that waved upon her ſnowy neck, which dignified the necklace I had given her; her looks glowed with modeſty and love; and her boſom, through the veil o gauze that ſhaded it, afforded a proſpect of Elyſium!—I received this ineſtimable gift of Providence as became me; and in a little time the clergyman did his office, my uncle, at his own earneſt requeſt, acting the part of a father to my dear Narciſſa, who trembled very much, and had ſcarce ſpirits ſufficient to ſupport her under this great change of ſituation. Soon as ſhe was mine by the laws of heaven and earth, I printed a burning kiſs upon her lips, my father embraced her tenderly, my uncle hugged her with great affection, and I preſented her to my friend Banter, who ſaluted her in a very polite manner; Miſs Williams hung round her neck, and wept plentifully; while Strap fell upon his knees, and begged to kiſs his lady's hand, which ſhe preſented with great affability.—I ſhall not pretend to deſcribe my own feelings at this juncture; let it ſuffice to ſay, that, after having ſupped and entertained ourſelves till ten o'clock, I cautioned my Narciſſa againſt expoſing her health by ſitting up too late, and ſhe was prevailed upon to withdraw with her maid to an apartment deſtined for us. When ſhe left the room, her face was overſpread with a bluſh that ſet all my blood in a ſtate of fermentation, and made every pulſe beat with tenfold vigour! She was ſo cruel as to let me remain in this condition a full half hour; when no longer able to reſtrain my impatience, I broke from the company, burſt into her chamber, puſhed out her confident, locked the door, and found her —O heaven and earth!—a feaſt, a thouſand times more delicious than my moſt ſanguine hope preſaged!—But let me not profane the chaſte myſteries of Hymen. I was the happieſt of men!

In the morning I was waked by three or four drums, which Banter had placed under the window; upon which I withdrew the curtain, and enjoyed the unſpeakable ſatisfaction of contemplating thoſe angelic charms, which were now in my poſſeſſion! *Beauty! which, whether ſleeping or awake, ſhot forth peculiar graces!*—The light darting upon my Narciſſa's eyes, ſhe awoke alſo, and, recollect-

ing her ſituation, hid her bluſhes in my boſom. I was diſtracted with joy! I could not believe the evidence of my ſenſes, and looked upon all that had happened as the fictions of a dream! In the mean time my uncle knocked at the door, and bade me turn out, for I had had a long ſpell. I roſe accordingly, and ſent Miſs Williams to her miſtreſs, myſelf receiving the congratulations of Captain Bowling, who rallied me in his ſea-phraſe with great ſucceſs. In leſs than an hour, Don Rodrigo led my wife in to breakfaſt, where ſhe received the compliments of the company on her looks, which, they ſaid, if poſſible, were improved by matrimony. As her delicate ears were offended with none of thoſe indecent ambiguities, which are too often ſpoke on ſuch occaſion, ſhe behaved with dignity, unaffected modeſty, and eaſe; and, as a teſtimony of my affection and eſteem, I preſented her, in preſence of them all, with a deed, by which I ſettled the whole fortune I was poſſeſſed of on her and her heirs for ever. She accepted it with a glance of moſt tender acknowledgment, obſerved, that ſhe could not be ſurpriſed at any thing of this kind I ſhould do, and deſire my father to take the trouble of keeping it, ſaying, "Next to my own Mr. Random, you are the perſon in whom I ought to have the greateſt confidence." Charmed with her prudent and ingenuous manner of proceeding, he took the paper, and aſſured her that it ſhould not loſe its value while in his cuſtody.

As we had not may viſits to give and receive, the little time we ſtaid in town was ſpent in going to public diverſions, where I have the vanity to think Narciſſa was ſeldom eclipſed. One night in particular, we had ſent our footman to keep one of the ſtage boxes, which we no ſooner entered, than we perceived in the oppoſite box the ſquire and his lady, who ſeemed not a little ſurpriſed at ſeeing us. I was pleaſed at this opportunity of confronting them; the more, becauſe Melinda was robbed of all her admirers by my wife, who happened that night to outſhine her ſiſter both in beauty and dreſs. She was piqued at Narciſſa's victory, toſſed her head a thouſand different ways, flirted her fan, looked at us with diſdain, then whiſpered to her huſband, and broke

out into an affected giggle; but all arts proved ineffectual, either to diſcompoſe Mrs. Random, or to conceal her own mortification, which at length forced her away long before the play was done. The news of our marriage being ſpread with many circumſtances to our diſadvantage, by the induſtry of this malignant creature, a certain ſet of perſons, fond of ſcandal, began to inquire into the particulars of my fortune, which they no ſooner underſtood to be independent, than the tables were turned, and our acquaintance courted as much as it had been deſpiſed before. But Narciſſa had too much dignity of pride to encourage this change of conduct, eſpecially in her relations, whom ſhe could never be prevailed upon to ſee, after the malicious reports they had raiſed to her prejudice.

CHAPTER LXIX.

My father intends to reviſit the place of his nativity—we promiſe to accompany him—my uncle renews his will in my favour, determining to go to ſea again—we ſet out for Scotland,—arrive at Edinburgh—purchaſe our paternal eſtate—proceed to it—halt at the town where I was educated—take up my bond to Crab—the behaviour of Potion and his wife, and one of my female couſins—our reception at the eſtate—Strap marries Miſs Williams, and is ſettled by my father to his own ſatisfaction—I am more and more happy.

My father intending to reviſit his native country, and pay the tribute of a few tears at my mother's grave, Narciſſa and I reſolved to accompany him in the execution of his pious office, and accordingly prepared for the journey; in which, however, my uncle would not engage, being reſolved to try his fortune once more at ſea. In the mean time, he renewed his will in favour of my wife and me, and depoſited it in the hands of his brother-in-law: While I (that I might not be wanting to my own intereſt) ſummoned the ſquire to produce his father's will at Doctor's Commons, and employed a proctor to manage the affair in my abſence.

Every thing being thus ſettled, we took leave of all our friends in London, and ſet out for Scotland, Don

Rodrigo, Narciſſa, Miſs Williams, and I, in the coach, and Strap with two men in livery on horſeback. As we made eaſy ſtages, my charmer held it out very well till we arrived at Edinburgh, where we propoſed to reſt ourſelves ſome weeks.

Here Don Rodrigo having intelligence that the fox-hunter had ſpent his eſtate, which was to be expoſed to ſale by public auction, he determined to make a purchaſe of the ſpot where he was born, and actually bought all the land that belonged to his father.

In a few days after this bargain was made, we left Edinburgh, in order to go and take poſſeſſion; and, by the way, halted one night in that town where I was educated. Upon inquiry, I found that Mr. Crab was dead; whereupon I ſent for his executor, paid the ſum I owed, with intereſt, and took up my bond. Mr. Potion and his wife hearing of our arrival, had the aſſurance to come to the inn where we lodged, and ſend up their names, with a deſire of being permitted to pay their reſpects to my father and me; but their ſordid behaviour towards me, when I was an orphan, had made too deep an impreſſion on my mind, to be effaced by this mean mercenary piece of condeſcenſion: I therefore rejected their meſſage with diſdain, and bade Strap tell them, that my father and I deſired to have no communication with ſuch low minded wretches as they were.

They had not been gone half an hour, when a woman, without any ceremony, opened the door of the room where we ſat, and, making towards my father, accoſted him with, "Uncle, your ſervant—I am glad to ſee you." This was no other than one of my female couſins, mentioned in the firſt part of my memoirs, to whom Don Rodrigo replied, "Pray, who are you, madam?" "O! (cried ſhe) my couſin Rory there knows me very well.—Don't you remember me, Rory!" "Yes, madam (ſaid I), for my own part, I ſhall never forget you. Sir, this is one of the young ladies, who (as I formerly told you) treated me ſo humanely in my childhood!" When I pronounced theſe words, my father's reſentment glowed in his viſage, and he ordered her to be gone, with ſuch a commanding aſpect, that ſhe retired in a

fright, muttering curſes as ſhe went down ſtairs. We afterwards learned that ſhe was married to an enſign, who had already ſpent all her fortune; and that her ſiſter had bore a child to her mother's footman, who is now her huſband, and keeps a petty ale-houſe in the country.

The fame of our flouriſhing condition having arrived at this place before us, we got notice that the magiſtrates intended next day to compliment us with the freedom of their town; upon which my father, conſidering their complaiſance in the right point of view, ordered the horſes to the coach early in the morning.

We proceeded to our eſtate, which lay about twenty miles from this place; and when we came within half a league of the houſe, were met by a prodigious number of poor tenants, men, women, and children, who teſtified their joy by loud acclamations, and accompanied our coach to the gate. As there is no part of the world in which the peaſants are more attached to their lords than in Scotland, we were almoſt devoured by their affection. My father had always been their favourite, and now that he appeared their maſter, after having been thought dead ſo long, their joy broke out into a thouſand extravagances: When we entered the court-yard, we were ſurrounded by a vaſt number, who crouded together ſo cloſely to ſee us, that ſeveral were in danger of being ſqueezed to death; thoſe who were near Don Rodrigo fell upon their knees, and kiſſed his hand, or the hem of his garment, praying aloud for long life and proſperity to him; others approached Narciſſa and me in the ſame manner; while the reſt clapped their hands at a diſtance, and invoked Heaven to ſhower its choiceſt bleſſings on our heads! In ſhort, the whole ſcene, though rude, was ſo affecting, that the gentle partner of my heart wept over it, and my father himſelf could not refrain from dropping a tear.

Having welcomed his daughter and me to his houſe, he ordered ſome bullocks to be killed, and ſome hogſheads of ale to be brought from the neighbouring village, to regale theſe honeſt people, who had not enjoyed ſuch a holiday for many years before.

Next day we were viſited by the gentleman in the neighbourhood, moſt of them our relations, one of whom brought along with him my couſin, the foxhunter, who had ſtaid at his houſe ſince he was obliged to leave his own. My father was generous enough to receive him kindly, and even promiſe to purchaſe for him a commiſſion in the army, for which he expreſſed great thankfulneſs and joy.

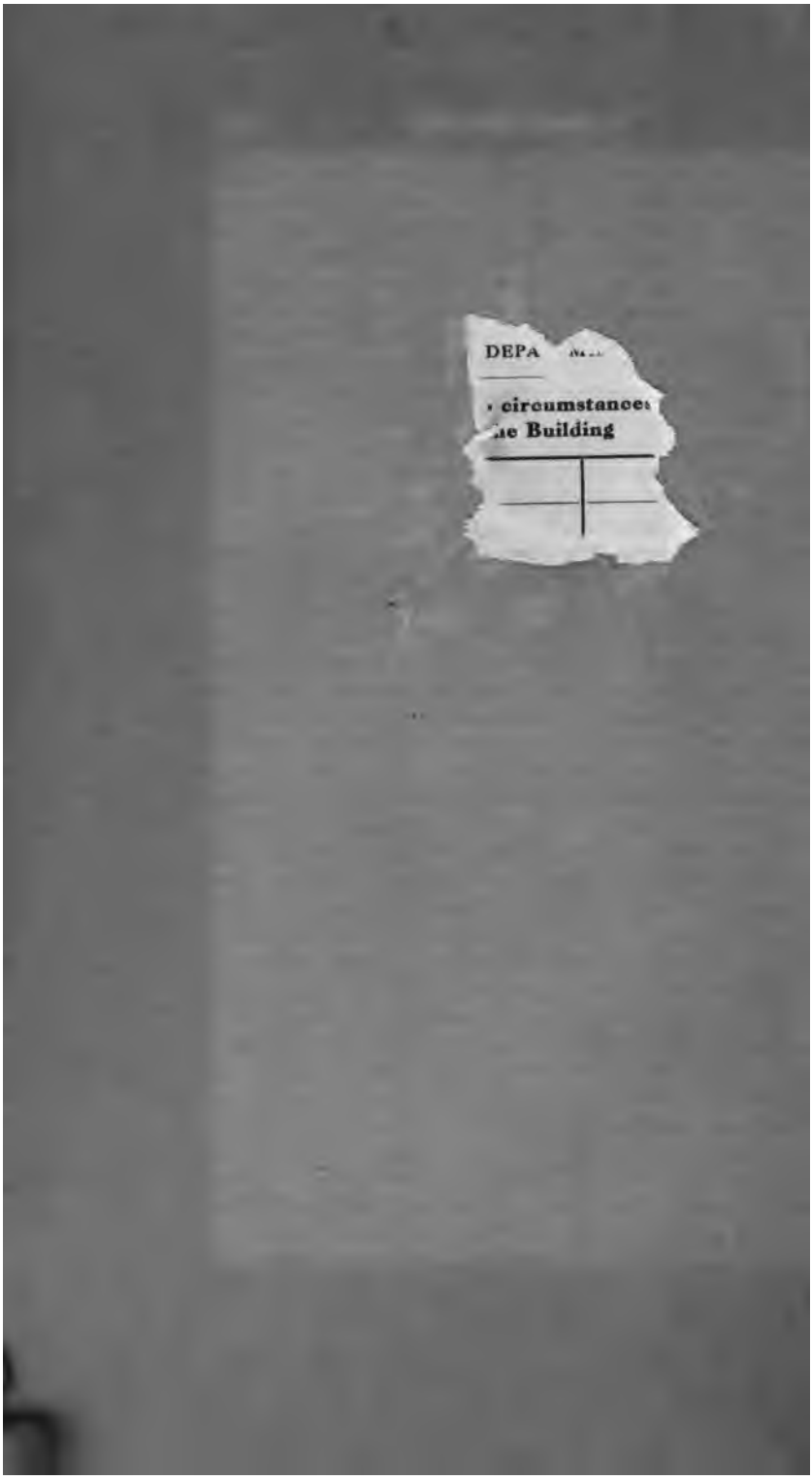
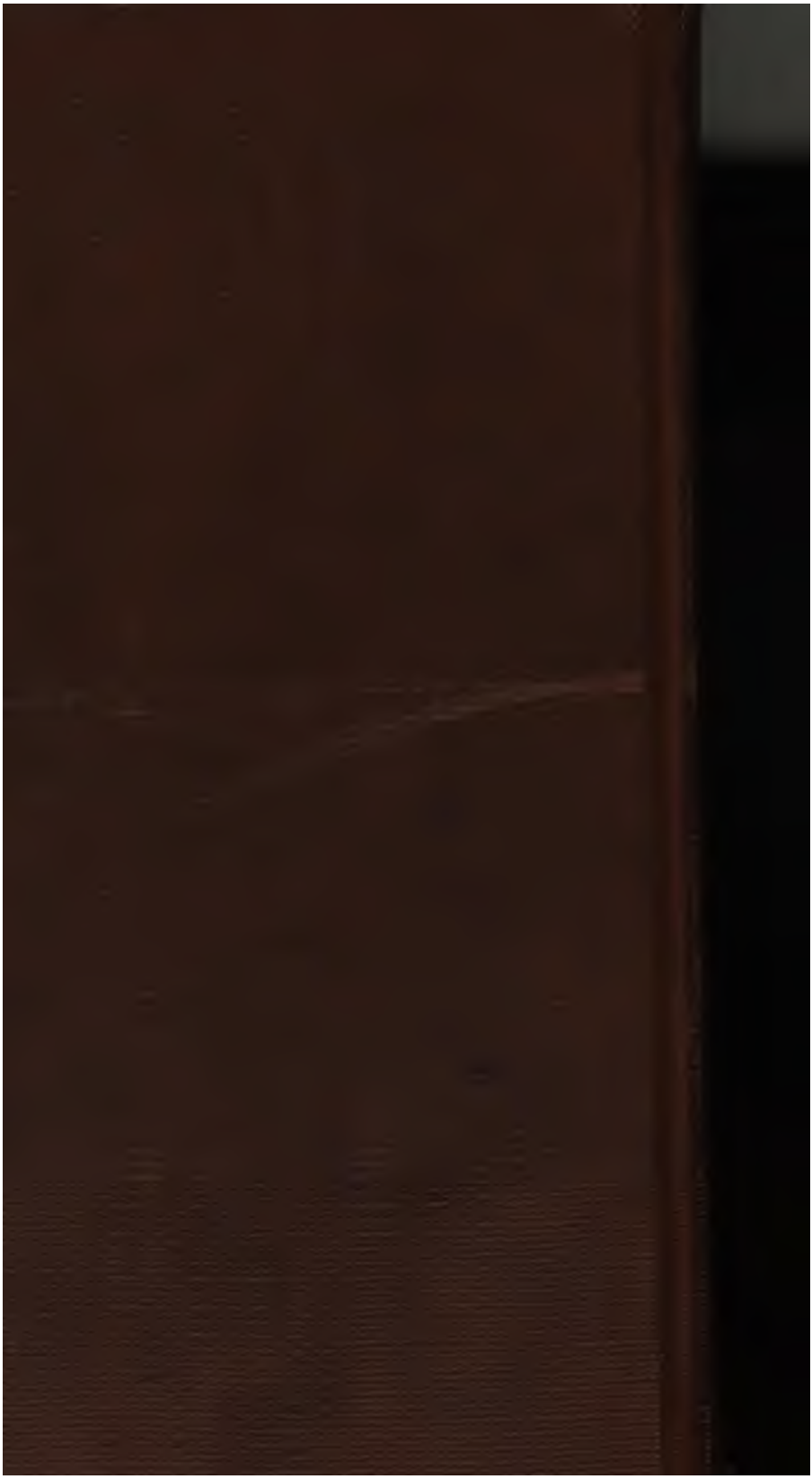
My charming Narciſſa was univerſally admired and loved for her beauty, affability, and good ſenſe; and ſo well pleaſed with the ſituation of the place, and the company round, that ſhe has not, as yet, diſcovered the leaſt deſire of changing her habitation.

We had not been many days ſettled, when I prevailed upon my father to pay a viſit to the village where I had been at ſchool. Here we were received by the principal inhabitants, who entertained us in the church, where Mr. Syntax the ſchoolmaſter (my tyrant being dead) pronounced a Latin oration in honour of our family. And none exerted themſelves more than Strap's father and relations, who looked upon the honeſt valet as the firſt gentleman of their race, and honoured his benefactors accordingly. Having received the homage of this place, we retired, leaving forty pounds for the benefit of the poor of the pariſh; and that very night, Strap being a little elevated with the regard that had been ſhown to him, and to me on his account, ventured to tell me, that he had a ſneaking kindneſs for Miſs Williams, and that, if his lady and I would uſe our intereſt in his behalf, he did not doubt that ſhe would liſten to his addreſſes. Surpriſed at this propoſal, I aſked if he knew the ſtory of that unfortunate young gentlewoman: Upon which he replied, "Yes, yes, I know what you mean—ſhe has been unhappy I grant you—but what of that? I am convinced of her reformation; or elſe you and my good lady would not treat her with ſuch reſpect—As for the cenſure of the world, I value it not a fig's end—beſides, the world knows nothing of the matter." I commended his philoſophy, and intereſted Narciſſa in his cauſe; who interceded ſo effectually, that, in a little time, Miſs Williams yielded

her conſent, and they were married with the approbation of Don Rodrigo, who gave him five hundred pounds to ſtock a farm, and made him overſeer of his eſtate. My generous bedfellow gave her maid the ſame ſum; ſo that they live in great peace and plenty within half a mile of us, and daily put up prayers for our preſervation.

If there be ſuch a thing as true happineſs on earth I enjoy it. The impetuous tranſports of my paſſion are now ſettled and mellowed into endearing fondneſs and tranquillity of love, rooted by that intimate connection and interchange of hearts, which nought but virtuous wedlock can produce—Fortune ſeems determined to make ample amends for her former cruelty; for my proctor writes, that, notwithſtanding the clauſe in my father-in-law's will, on which the ſquire founds his claim, I ſhall certainly recover my wife's fortune, in conſequence of a codicil annexed, which explains that clauſe, and limits her reſtriction to the age of nineteen, after which ſhe was at her own diſpoſal. I would have ſet out for London immediately after receiving this piece of intelligence, but my dear angel has been qualmiſh of late, and begins to grow remarkably round in the waiſt; ſo that I cannot leave her in ſuch an intereſting ſituation, which I hope will produce ſomething to crown my felicity.

END OF VOLUME FIRST.


DEPA
circumstance
ue Building